

Post-predicate elements in the Western Asian Transition Zone

A corpus-based approach to areal typology

Edited by

Geoffrey Haig

Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand

Donald Stilo

Laurentia Schreiber

Nils N. Schiborr

Contact and Multilingualism

No series description provided

Post-predicate elements in the Western Asian Transition Zone

A corpus-based approach to areal
typology

Edited by

Geoffrey Haig

Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand

Donald Stilo

Laurentia Schreiber

Nils N. Schiborr

Geoffrey Haig, Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand, Donald Stilo, Laurentia Schreiber & Nils N. Schiborr (eds.). 2024. *Post-predicate elements in the Western Asian Transition Zone: A corpus-based approach to areal typology* (Contact and Multilingualism). Berlin: Language Science Press.

This title can be downloaded at:

`redefine\lsURL`

© 2024, the authors

Published under the Creative Commons Attribution 4.0 Licence (CC BY 4.0):

<http://creativecommons.org/licenses/by/4.0/>

ISBN: no digital ISBN

no print ISBNs!

no DOI

ID not assigned!

Cover and concept of design: Ulrike Harbort

Fonts: Libertinus, Arimo, DejaVu Sans Mono

Typesetting software: X_EL^AT_EX

`redefine \publisherstreetaddress`

`redefine \publisherurl`

Storage and cataloguing done by `redefine \storageinstitution`

Contents

| | |
|--|-----|
| Short biography of the editors | iii |
| Preface | v |
| Acknowledgments | vii |
| 1 Post-predicate elements in the Western Asian Transition Zone: Data, theory, and methods | |
| Geoffrey Haig 0000-0002-5410-3692, Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand, Donald Stilo, Laurentia Schreiber 0000-0002-0051-1164 & Nils Schiborr | 1 |
| 2 Word order in the speech of Kurmanji-Turkish bilinguals | |
| Kateryna Iefremenko 0000-0003-3711-0935 | 53 |
| 3 Post-predicate prosody in OV languages | |
| Stavros Skopeteas 0000-0002-2827-0518 | 85 |
| 4 Balochi: a cross-dialect investigation of post-verbal elements | |
| Maryam Nourzaei ORCHID & Geoffrey Haig 0000-0002-5410-3692 | 117 |
| 5 Notes on word order in Bashkardi | |
| Agnes Korn 0000-0003-0302-6751 | 151 |
| 6 Kholosi | |
| Maryam Nourzaei | 171 |
| 7 Post-predicate elements in modern colloquial Persian: a multifactorial analysis | |
| Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand, Elham Izadi, Mehdi Parizadeh, Geoffrey Haig & Nils Schiborr | 191 |
| 8 Post-predicate elements in Early New Persian (10–13th Century CE) | |
| Mehdi Parizadeh & Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand | 225 |

Contents

| | |
|--|------------|
| 9 Zagros region: The Kurdish-Gorani continuum Masoud Mohammadirad 0000-0002-8531-5524 | 241 |
| 10 Post-predicate elements in Kartvelian and East Caucasian Diana Forker 0000-0003-4247-9163 | 279 |
| 11 Post-predicate elements in Adyghe Diana Forker 0000-0003-4247-9163 | 305 |
| 12 Word order variation in Romeyka Laurentia Schreiber 0000-0002-0051-1164 & Mark Janse 0000-0002-2824-3894 | 333 |
| 13 Post-predicate arguments in Modern Eastern Armenian Katherine Hodgson 0000-0002-1767-9262, Victoria Khurshudyan & Pollet Samvelian | 371 |
| 14 Khuzestani Arabic Bettina Leitner 0000-0001-6712-302X | 407 |
| 15 Neo-Aramaic in Iran and northeastern Iraq Paul M. Noorlander 0000-0002-9407-1453 | 425 |
| 16 Arabic and Aramaic in eastern Anatolia Paul M. Noorlander 0000-0002-9407-1453 | 465 |
| Index | 511 |

Short biography of the editors

Geoffrey Haig is professor of linguistics at the University of Bamberg. He specializes in language typology and areal linguistics, with a focus on quantitative methodologies drawing on multi-lingual spoken-language corpora.

Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand is professor of linguistics at Bu-Ali Sina University, Hamedan, Iran. His research centres on the syntax of Persian and other new Iranian languages. He has published on issues connected with word order, clitics, definiteness, transitivity, aspect and evidentiality.

Donald L. Stilo has a B.S. in Languages from Georgetown University, and an M.A. and Ph.D. from the University of Michigan in Linguistics with a concentration in Iranian languages. He taught Persian in various universities in the United States, was a scientist at the Max Planck Institute for Evolutionary Anthropology in Leipzig, Germany, for ten years, and in 2005/2006 was a fellow at the Swedish Collegium for Advanced Studies in Uppsala. He has been retired since 2012 and splits his time between the United States and the Netherlands.

Laurentia Schreiber is a researcher at the Department of General Linguistics at the University of Bamberg. She focuses on language contact and multilingualism in minority languages and obtained her PhD recently with a grammar of endangered Romeyka in Turkey.

Nils Schiborr is a postdoctoral research associate at the Department of General Linguistics at the University of Bamberg. He has worked on discourse processing, referential choice, and the interface of discourse and grammar, chiefly from a corpus-based typological perspective.

Preface

Acknowledgments

Chapter 1

Post-predicate elements in the Western Asian Transition Zone: Data, theory, and methods

Geoffrey Haig^a, Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand^b, Donald Stilo^c, Laurentia Schreiber^a & Nils Schiborr^a

^aUniversity of Bamberg ^bBu-Ali Sina University Hamedan ^cMax Plank Institute, Leipzig (retired)

This chapter spells out the conceptual and methodological foundations for the volume, summarizes previous research, illustrates the methodology and analysis, and presents the results of two case studies. We provide evidence in support of a semantically finer-grained approach to word order that distinguishes between various non-subject constituents, and illustrate how this can be leveraged to detect areal effects in syntax. We implement this approach on a sample of language corpora from 35 languages, including Turkic, Iranian, Semitic, Hellenic, Kartvelian, and Armenian from what we term the Western Asian Transition Zone (WATZ). In a first case study, we demonstrate the existence of a robust Goals Last effect across the entire database and formulate a revised hierarchy for postverbal placement. Our approach identifies the specific properties of spatial goals that distinguish them from metaphorically related roles such as recipient, addressee, and benefactive, which previous studies had conflated. In a second case study, we investigate weight effects on post-verbal placement, concluding that overall, the impact of weight is minimal, a finding reflected in several chapters to the volume. The final section summarizes the contributions to the volume, and the Appendices provide raw data summaries across the entire WOWA data set, and information on sources.

Geoffrey Haig, Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand, Donald Stilo, Laurentia Schreiber & Nils Schiborr

1 Theoretical preliminaries

1.1 General background

This volume represents the collaborative outcome of a team of researchers, all of whom contributed expertise and data on languages of what we loosely refer to as the Western Asian Transition Zone (WATZ, cf. Section 1.2). The companion enterprise to this volume is a portfolio of online accessible, multiply-reusable digital resources, comprising of two data-sets: WOWA (*Word Order in Western Asia*), a multi-lingual corpus containing approximately 40 data sets from a sample of languages across WATZ (Haig et al. 2022), and HamBam (*The Hamedan-Bamberg Corpus of Contemporary Spoken Persian*, Haig & Rasekh-Mahand 2022). HamBam is a richly annotated corpus of a single language, colloquial Spoken Persian, based on the Multi-CAST architecture (Haig 2015a, Schnell et al. 2023).¹ It is designed for finer-grained investigations of word order, prosody, and register in a single language (Persian), while WOWA is a multi-lingual data base designed to investigate the transition-zone phenomena outlined in the following paragraphs. Most of the research reported here is based on WOWA.

Our research is intended to satisfy the requirements of ‘reproducible research’, in the spirit of Berez-Kroeker et al. (2018), and the emphasis on accessibility and accountability of primary data, and maximal transparency of analysis procedures have been guiding principles throughout: research should be conducted in a manner “which allows readers to confirm claims about language structure through direct access to the original observational data” (Berez-Kroeker et al. 2018: 6). In this overview chapter, we introduce and exemplify the data sources, the theoretical concepts and research questions, and illustrate the main findings with two case-studies. Figure 1 shows the location of the doculects in WOWA at the time of writing; an overview of all data sources is available in the Appendix to this chapter.

1.2 The Western Asian Transition Zone (WATZ)

The concept of ‘transition zone’ has been discussed in various guises (e.g. ‘buffer zone’ Stilo 2005, ‘intersection zone’ Stilo 2009, or ‘typological sandwich’ Szeto & Yurayong 2021, see Haig et al. in press). Here, we continue the terminology introduced in Haig & Khan (2019); we define a transition zone as a geographic area lying at the intersection of two contiguous regions characterized by diametrically opposing values for some linguistic feature. The choice of feature is essentially

¹For WOWA see <https://multicast.aspra.uni-bamberg.de/resources/wowa/>; for HamBam see <https://multicast.aspra.uni-bamberg.de/resources/hambam/>.

1 Post-predicate elements in the Western Asian Transition Zone

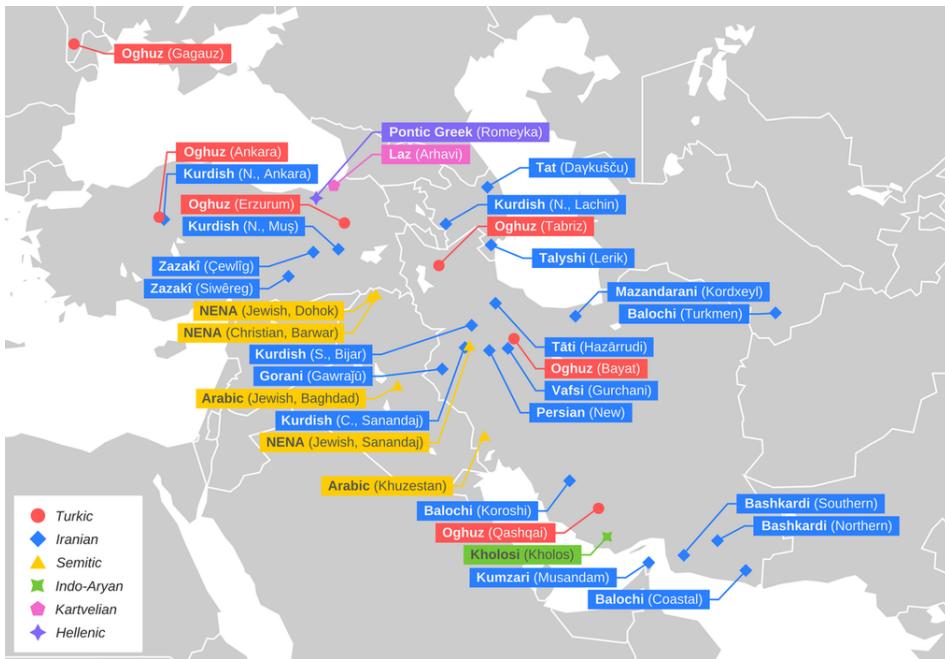


Figure 1: Locations of doculects in WOWA (November 2023)

unrestrained, and determined primarily by the research questions of the investigators, though considerations of general theoretical pertinence, availability of appropriate data, and operationalizability of the feature values concerned, will also play a role. It is clear that a transition zone, as just defined, can be identified at very different degrees of granularity: even a dialect isogloss, separating related dialects characterized by, for example, the presence versus absence of nasalized vowels, could be considered a transition zone, albeit at the micro-level of structural differentiation.

The Western Asian Transition Zone is at the other extreme of granularity. It is defined by the overlap of two areas of continental scale, which differ with regard to the following features (and a number of ancillary features, which are taken up at various points below): OV versus VO word order, and adpositional type (prepositions vs. postpositions, with some additional complications). An approximation of the global distribution of these two features can be found by considering the two maps in WALS (Dryer 2013b,c), Feature 83A (OV / VO) and Feature 85A (adposition order). On both maps, two adjacent macro-areas can be identified within Eurasia and the Indian Sub-Continent, each dominated by languages with opposing feature values: The first is the central and eastern Asian land block, domi-

Geoffrey Haig, Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand, Donald Stilo, Laurentia Schreiber & Nils Schiborr

nated by Robbeets' (2017) 'Transeurasian languages' (Turkic, Mongolic, Tungusic, Japonic, Koreanic), which are uniformly characterized by OV and postpositions. These features flow seamlessly into the Indian Sub-Continent, dominated by Eastern Iranian, Dravidian, and Indo-Aryan. The second macro-area is to the southwest, where we find the VO and prepositional languages of North Africa, Western Europe and the Circum-Mediterranean region (Afro-Asiatic, Romance, Hellenic). The area of overlap between these two macro-areas is what we refer to as the Western Asian Transition Zone (WATZ). The core of WATZ is the upper catchment areas of the Euphrates and Tigris valleys, springing from the elevated plateau of today's Eastern Turkey and descending to the alluvial plains of northern Iraq and Syria. Today, this region is divided between four nation states, Turkey, Syria, Iraq and Iran.

Like most of the units that have been suggested in areal linguistics,² the geographic boundaries of WATZ cannot be precisely defined. Partly this is due to the nature of a transition zone, which often implies fade-out phenomena (Stilo 2012), rather than abrupt transitions from one feature value to another. An example of such a fade-out phenomenon is the feature 'order of spatial Goals relative to their governing predicate', as in a clause such as *the girl went to the market*. We can distinguish two options: the goal precedes the verb (GV), or it follows the verb (VG). Mapping the frequencies of these two orders across the languages of WATZ reveals an increase in the frequency of Verb-Goal (VG) ordering as one progresses westwards. For example, Iranian languages with long-standing Semitic influence, from the southern and westernmost peripheries of WATZ, show almost 100% post-verbal Goals (in the sense of 'Goals of movement'; see below on terminology), matching the figure that characterizes most of Semitic, and of the westernmost branches of Indo-European. Similarly, Turkic languages such as Qashqai, which are under heavy influence from western Iranian languages, also show high rates (>60%) of post-verbal Goals (Haig et al. in press). Note that both Iranian and Turkic are generally considered to be OV (sometimes erroneously equated with 'verb final'), so the high frequency of post-verbal goals is not expected for these languages. For OV languages situated further northward and eastward, the figures drop, for example in the Balochi variety of Turkmenistan (Nourzaei & Haig 2024 [Chapter 4, this volume]), or Mazandarani of the Caspian region (Stilo & Haig 2022). Furthermore, initial counts from related OV languages further eastward beyond WATZ suggest they drop still further; in Indo-Iranian

²Friedman & Joseph (2017: 75) discuss the issue of defining the boundaries of Sprachbünde, noting "the boundaries are as elastic as the micro-zones of convergence that add up to the larger convergence area." The boundaries, and even the set of languages and varieties involved, remain disputed even for intensely-researched linguistic areas such as the Balkan Sprachbund.

1 Post-predicate elements in the Western Asian Transition Zone

(Dardic) Kalasha (Northern Pakistan, bordering Afghanistan), provisional counts of the texts in Petersen (2015) suggest rates of post-verbal Goals below 30%, while in the texts from Dukhan, a Turkic variety from Northern Mongolia, the figure approaches zero. If the basic hypothesis behind WATZ is correct, then we might predict similar low values of VG for unrelated OV languages toward the eastern fringe of Asia, such as spoken Japanese and Korean, but this remains to be tested.

Although our current data coverage is low-density and uneven, we tentatively hypothesize that in the OV languages of Asia, increasing rates of post-verbal Goals roughly correlate with increasing proximity to the Mesopotamian core of WATZ.³ But we can identify no precise geographical isogloss that constitutes a categorical border separating VG from GV. Rather, we are dealing with a continuum of values, which we assume extends beyond the region defined by the sample in Figure 1.

Returning to the broader theoretical interest of transition zones, it has been suggested that regions of intense contact (a hallmark of transition zones) are havens for typologically rare constructions. Harris & Campbell (1995: 137) note that certain word-order constellations only emerge in contact situations, and our data lend some credence to this view. Furthermore, transition zones are overall smaller than the macro-areas that engender them, and are therefore likely to contain fewer languages. The probability that any random language sample includes languages from transition zones is thus lower than the probability of selecting languages from within established linguistic areas. To this extent, the contributions to this volume are thus intended to counterbalance an existing bias in language sampling. To conclude, transition zones are not definable in terms of a precisely circumscribed geographic region. Rather, they should be seen as hypotheses which demarcate a potentially fruitful set of languages located at a region of conflicting feature values, which can serve as an experimental setting for investigating the broader question: what happens when languages with opposing feature values collide?

1.3 Word order

The term ‘word order’ is often taken as synonymous for the traditional Greenbergian six-way typology (S/V/O). In our work, however, we follow Dryer (1997,

³It is worth noting that areality alone does not fully account for the findings; the phylogenies of the languages concerned are also relevant, with the Iranian languages apparently the most prone to areally-induced word-order variation; see Haig et al. (in press), Bickel (2017: 42) on the interplay of areality, inheritance, universal principles in co-determining language structure, and Haig & Schiborr (In review), for arguments in favour of a universal Goals Last principle.

Geoffrey Haig, Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand, Donald Stilo, Laurentia Schreiber & Nils Schiborr

2013a), who proposes decomposing the traditional six-way typology into two binary sub-features, S/V and V/O. Here we focus almost exclusively on the relative ordering of direct object and verb (V/O), while setting aside the position of subjects (S); see below for empirical justification, and Dryer (1997, 2013a) for the arguments against the six-way typology. In line with recent work in corpus-based typology (see Section 1.4), we extend the typology to include the position of other verbal arguments, such as Recipients, Locatives, copula complements, Goals, Addressees, relative to the verb. Our motivation for this is entirely data-driven: a large body of research (see Section 2) on the languages of Western Asia suggests that beyond direct objects, other less prominent and often overlooked constituent types provide sensitive indicators for contact influence (Haig et al. *in press*). Furthermore, the default assumption that the position of direct objects (i.e. OV vs. VO) can be generalized across other verbal arguments, is falsified in many languages of the region, which exhibit consistent OV order, but simultaneously have post-verbal placement of certain non-direct objects; see Section 4 below for an overview of the relevant findings from WOWA. Word order typology has tended to either ignore non-direct objects, or to subsume them under umbrella terms (e.g. ‘obliques’, Hawkins 2008, Levshina 2019, Jing et al. 2021; or ‘PP’ in Frommer 1981). Our research indicates that a finer-grained semantic approach to non-direct-objects is more appropriate, which we spell out in Section 4 below.

A perennial debate in word order typology concerns how, or indeed whether, one can identify some kind of ‘basic word order’ for a language. There are a number of issues at stake, which we will address here. First, although scholars such as Mithun (1992) have argued against the universality of basic word order, it is important to note that most researchers engaged in word order typology (see e.g. Dryer 2007 and Song 2018 for summaries) have never claimed that every language has a ‘basic word order’. Thus, the global overview of the VO vs. OV word-order parameter in Dryer (2013c) assigns all languages in the sample to one of three types: OV, VO, and “no dominant order,” with the latter comprising some 7% of the 1,518 languages in Dryer’s (2013c) sample. It has always been acknowledged that it is not possible to identify a single order as ‘basic’ for every single language. But that does not invalidate the enterprise of word order typology as a whole, any more than the fact that some languages do not have lexical tone invalidates a cross-linguistic approach to tone systems.

At least three different approaches to basic word order can be identified. First, the frequency of usage. Contrary to what is often claimed, a frequency approach does not necessarily imply a simple majority decision. Dryer (2007: 11) proposes

1 Post-predicate elements in the Western Asian Transition Zone

that the basic (or dominant) order is that variant which is at least twice as frequent as the next most frequent order. In the case of a binary feature such as OV vs. VO, that would mean one order would account for at least 66% of the relevant cases in order to count as the basic order. The frequency approach raises a host of methodological issues related to corpus size and representativity, and ignores many finer nuances, some of which we take up below.

A second approach seeks to define a particular constructional sub-type which is taken as prototypical for the construction under consideration. For example, **provides** a widely-cited rule-of-thumb for identifying the basic S/V/O order cross-linguistically. According to her, the basic order is that which:

[...] occurs in stylistically neutral, independent, indicative clauses with full noun phrase (NP) participants, where the subject is definite, agentive and human, the object is a definite semantic patient, and the verb represents an action, not a state or an event (Siewierska 1988: 8).

This would rule out, for example, interrogatives, subordinate clauses, or clauses in which either S or O is pronominal, and it would also exclude transitive clauses with verbs like ‘see’ or ‘know’, which express states rather than actions and do not involve a ‘semantic patient’. In principle, this is a reasonable approach and has gained some currency. However, we see no obvious justification for ruling out transitive clauses with indefinite direct objects, particularly as overall, direct objects are among the most likely argument types to host indefinite referents (Haig et al. 2021: 164, Schnell et al. 2023).

Another variant of the prototype approach is implemented by Bağrıaçık (2018) and Neocleous (2020), both investigating varieties of Asia Minor Greek.⁴ These authors focus on what is variously termed ‘pragmatically neutral’ or ‘unmarked’ transitive clauses, in which neither argument “is associated with either a topic, or a focus reading” (Bağrıaçık 2018: 150). Such clauses only occur under very specific discourse conditions, three of which are identified by Bağrıaçık as follows: (i) answer to an all focus question (*What happened?*); (ii) introductory clauses of narratives, where both subject and object are newly introduced into the world of discourse; (iii) generic statements (*the Earth orbits around the Sun, Sam knows Tibetan*), (Bağrıaçık 2018: 151–154). Neocleous (2020) adopts a similar approach, though with a different formalization of the concept of ‘pragmatically unmarked’.

⁴ Although both authors work within a Minimalist framework, thus approach ‘word order’ from a rather different perspective to the typologically-oriented approach of Siewierska (1988), they nevertheless attempt to define a ‘basic’ clause type on the basis of certain pragmatic and surface morphosyntactic properties, from which other orders are derived.

Geoffrey Haig, Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand, Donald Stilo, Laurentia Schreiber & Nils Schiborr

Note that Bağrıaçık (2018) concept of pragmatically neutral transitive clause is different from Siewierska's (1988). Siewierska stipulates that in a basic transitive clause, both subject and object are required to be definite, while Bağrıaçık's "introductory clauses," for example, imply that neither would be definite.

Along with prototype, and frequency-based approaches, there are two other connotations of 'basic word order'. The first is the concept of inherited, or historical word order. By this we mean the word order that is reconstructable for the assumed proto-language of the languages under investigation. For example, there is little reason to doubt that both Turkic and Iranian languages had OV word order at the oldest period of attestation, or that proto-Semitic was VO, so these languages can be reasonably classified as historically OV and VO respectively. However, claiming that Semitic is historically VO does not equate to a claim that this is the 'basic order' for all modern Semitic languages; basic order can change.⁵

Finally, a basic word order may be motivated by theory-internal considerations. This is the case for German, for which the basic word order is often claimed to be OV, with VO considered as secondarily derived via (some version of) verb movement. If we strictly applied the criteria of Bağrıaçık (2018), which relies on the concept of pragmatically neutral clause, or Neocleous (2020: 116), which invokes (among other things) word order in main declarative clauses, we would obtain a different result for German, because OV order in German is actually found in subordinate clauses. The fact that different criteria yield different results is reflected in the classification of German as "no dominant order" in Dryer (2013c).

Having briefly considered various interpretations of 'basic word order', we turn to a methodological issue in connection with word order and small corpora. Both Siewierska (1988) and Bağrıaçık (2018) require a transitive clause to have two nominal (as opposed to pronominal) arguments. But for research based on small corpora of spoken language, often without recourse to native speakers' judgements, this approach runs into an immediate problem. Cross-linguistically, in natural discourse very few transitive clauses contain two overt lexical (as opposed to pronominal) arguments. Du Bois (2003: 62–63) provides data from five spoken language corpora indicating that the overall frequency of clauses with two lexical core arguments lies between two and seven percent, and similar

⁵It may seem superfluous to labour this point, but it is nevertheless misunderstood in Asadpour (2022a: 42), who interprets references in the literature to "historical" and "inherited" word order in Neo-Aramaic as claims regarding "basic word order" in contemporary Neo-Aramaic. These are clearly separate claims.

1 Post-predicate elements in the Western Asian Transition Zone

findings are reported in the literature (see contributions in [Du Bois 2003](#)). Additional restrictions, such as requiring both S and O to be “pragmatically neutral” ([Bağrıaçık 2018](#)), or both to be “definite” ([Siewierska 1988](#)), would further reduce the pool of valid tokens. It is no surprise that [Bağrıaçık \(2018\)](#) investigation of word order in Pharasiot Greek is largely informed by the elicitation of grammaticality judgements, rather than a quantitative analysis of naturalistic data.

Cross-linguistic research of spontaneous spoken discourse demonstrates that transitive subjects overwhelmingly express given information (>90%, [Haig et al. 2021: 165](#)), and are consequently predominantly either zero, or pronominal in form, rather than lexical NPs (cf. [Du Bois’ 1987](#) ‘Avoid Lexical A’-constraint; see discussion in [Haig & Schnell 2016](#)). If we were obliged to exclude all clauses with pronominal or zero subjects, we would vastly decrease the number of potentially analysable tokens in the sample. For objects, however, the likelihood of lexical NP expression is very much higher, and the population of analysable tokens correspondingly larger. This is a further motivation to eschew the six-way SVO-typology, and to focus on the relative ordering of verb and direct object only. In the future, we may expand our investigation to include the position of subjects in the WOZA data, which are fully accessible and amenable for additional coding of subjects; see also [Molin \(2022\)](#), [Rasekh-Mahand et al. 2024](#), [Forker 2024b](#), [Forker 2024a](#) [Chapters 7, 10, 11, this volume]). Currently, however, we continue to work with the binary feature OV/VO.

1.4 Corpus-based approaches to word order

Methodologically, we apply a corpus-based typological approach ([Wälchli 2009](#), [Levshina 2019](#), [Futrell et al. 2020](#), [Gerdes et al. 2021](#), [Haig et al. 2021](#), [Schnell & Schiborr 2022](#), among many others). Within such an approach, the emphasis shifts away from assigning a ‘basic word order’ to a particular ‘language’. Rather, in corpus-based approaches, statements on word order refer to frequency distributions derived from actual corpora, and are probabilistic in nature. Strictly speaking, corpus-based approaches to word order yield a characterization of a specific corpus (a ‘doculect’), rather than ‘a language’, though we continue to use the over-simplified terminology here.

Corpus-based typological approaches to word-order typology are dominated by research on large, written corpora of languages with a pre-existing orthographic norm, for which copious quantities of pre-digitalized text are available (see in particular Universal Dependencies (UD)-consortium, [Nivre et al. 2020](#)).⁶

⁶<https://universaldependencies.org/>

Geoffrey Haig, Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand, Donald Stilo, Laurentia Schreiber & Nils Schiborr

Consequently, there is a bias towards standardized (and mostly Eurasian) languages, and more importantly, towards written language. Cross-linguistic research based on spoken language corpora, on the other hand, is still in its infancy (see among others Schnell et al. 2021, Mettouchi & Vanhove 2021, Schnell & Schiborr 2022, Seifart et al. 2022, Levshina et al. 2023). Frommer's (1981) research had already demonstrated significant differences between formal written and Spoken Persian, indicating that written language data cannot be assumed to reliably reflect the structures of spoken language. Any research agenda that purports to investigate the impacts of processing and production constraints on language structure would be well advised to focus on the mode of language production where these constraints are operative in real time – and that would not be written language (see Schnell et al. 2021 for summary arguments). In Section 5, we present an investigation into the role of weight as a predictor for word order, based on our spoken language corpora, which illustrates the importance of controlling for modality.

As mentioned above, we focus on various non-subject constituents, and their position relative to the governing predicate, for example direct object and verb, or Addressee and verb, and so on. Our data base is thus designed to answer the following questions:

- (1) a. What is the probability that non-subject argument A, in doclect X, belonging to language family Y, spoken at location Z, occurs after its governing predicate?
- b. Which variables influence this probability?

From the answers to 1a we could infer word-order 'types', by setting some pre-defined quantitative boundaries. For example, Levshina (2019: 559) provisionally classifies a language (=corpus) with greater than 80% VO as 'VO', with less than 20% VO as 'OV', and 20–80% as 'mixed'. However, this is a matter of heuristic interpretation of the raw data, rather than principled classification of 'Type'. It should be obvious that two doclects with values of 79% and 81% VO respectively are not necessarily exemplars of fundamentally distinct types (see Wälchli 2009 on 'data reduction typology'). The variables that were tested for question 1b are presented in Section 3.2. Questions 1a-1b; they can be investigated both at the level of individual doclects, or by applying appropriate statistical methods to the entire sample or some sub-set thereof. In Sections 4 and 5 below we present case studies for the impact of semantic role (Section 4), and of weight (Section 5). Having outlined the theoretical background and the research questions, we illustrate the structure of the data sets and the methodology in the following sections.

1 Post-predicate elements in the Western Asian Transition Zone

2 Previous research on Western Asia, and terminological issues

The assumptions and aims of the WOWA project were inspired by insights gained over many years of previous research, and it is appropriate to briefly outline the main currents of that research. Typologists have long been aware of the ‘mixed typology’ of Iranian languages, e.g. [Comrie \(1989: 19\)](#) on Persian, a language with OV in the VP, but head-initial NPs, prepositions, and clause-initial complementizers (see [Dabir Moghaddam 2018](#) for a recent summary). Don Stilo developed the idea that the mixed typology of Persian was shared to differing degrees by other West Iranian languages, and that the degree and nature of West Iranian mixed typologies followed an approximate areal distribution. Stilo’s claim was that West Iranian was sandwiched between the opposing typologies of Semitic (consistently head-initial) and Turkic (head-final), with different West Iranian languages synchronizing with the profile of their respective geographic neighbours. These ideas were fleshed out with a survey of adpositional types in [Stilo \(2005, 2006, 2009\)](#), and developed in a number of other publications ([2012, 2018b, 2018a](#)).

[Frommer \(1981\)](#) noted a further non-harmonic aspect of West Iranian syntax: the post-verbal positioning of certain kinds of non-direct-object arguments. [Frommer \(1981\)](#) focussed on the syntax of ‘informal Persian’ (IP), including both spoken and written samples from different registers. This was in fact the crucial breakthrough: formal written Persian, the more usual object of study, is rather consistently ‘verb final’, hence post-verbal elements are a fringe phenomenon that had not been systematically investigated.⁷ [Frommer \(1981\)](#) was the first systematic analysis of post-predicate elements in different registers of informal Persian;⁸ his findings can be summed up as follows: (i) across the different registers of informal Persian, there is a cline of formality such that a lower degree of formality correlates with an increase in post-predicate elements; in-group domestic conversational Persian exhibited the highest levels. (ii) semantic role is crucial,

⁷[Lazard \(1957\)](#) had already noted the predominance of post-verbal goals in informal Spoken Persian, but did not systematically investigate the topic.

⁸Frommer did not actually investigate formal written Persian, and we still lack a systematic study. Parizadeh’s ([Parizadeh & Rasekh-Mahand 2024](#) [Chapter 8, this volume]) study of Early Classical New Persian (11–14th Century CE) demonstrates near 100% verb finality in these written texts, which matches the native speaker intuition of one of our authors regarding contemporary formal written (e.g. academic prose) Persian. More recent corpus-based approaches to written Persian (e.g. [Faghiri et al. 2018](#)) investigate the relative ordering of pre-verbal constituents, while post-verbal constituents lie outside the purview of this research. Formal written Persian is thus essentially considered to be a ‘verb final’ language.

Geoffrey Haig, Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand, Donald Stilo, Laurentia Schreiber & Nils Schiborr

with goals of motion (“destinations” in Frommer’s terminology) as the leaders in post-verbal placement, across all registers; (iii) information status is relevant for post-verbal placement (focal versus non-focal) of direct objects, but appears to be irrelevant for goals of motion; (iv) there is a stronger tendency for post-verbal constituents to lack overt flagging. By and large, these findings have been confirmed on more recent corpora of Spoken Persian (Rasekh-Mahand et al. 2024 [Chapter 7, this volume]).

From a comparative Iranian perspective, the remarkable aspect of Frommer’s findings is that they closely align with findings from the lesser-researched, and generally non-standardized West Iranian languages documented in this volume and elsewhere. What this suggests is that the phenomena which Frommer identified were not merely irregularities specific to informal Spoken Persian, but in fact reflected word order traits of considerable antiquity, which characterize most (perhaps all) West Iranian languages (see Nourzaei & Haig 2024, Korn 2024, Nourzaei 2024, Rasekh-Mahand et al. 2024, Parizadeh & Rasekh-Mahand 2024, Mohammadirad 2024 [Chapters 4, 5, 6, 7, 8, and 9, this volume]). From this perspective, it is the strictly verb-final, formal written Persian that is the exception when it comes to West Iranian word order. This has considerable implications for the diachronic study of word order, which is largely reliant on written language sources.

Research on post-predicate elements in other Iranian languages began with Kurdish (Haig 2015b, Haig & Thiele 2014, Haig 2022d), and has since expanded to neighbouring languages (Haig 2015a, 2017, Stilo 2018a, Jahani 2018, Asadpour 2022a, and contributions to this volume). Most of this research is based on corpora of spoken narrative texts (see below), though increasingly enhanced with experimental data (see Skopeteas 2024 [Chapter 3, this volume]). It has emerged that while all West Iranian languages investigated to date (with the exception of Kumzari, Anonby 2015) are consistently OV (see below), like Spoken Persian, they are not ‘verb final’ because a significant number of non-direct object arguments regularly follow the verb. A similar pattern can also be observed in Turkic languages in contact with Iranian (Schreiber et al. 2021, Stilo 2021b). A second point that quickly emerged from the earlier studies is that the nature, and systematicity, of post-verbal arguments follows an approximate areal distribution, along the lines of Stilo’s (2009) suggestions. Among Iranian OV languages, the highest frequencies, and greatest variety of post-verbal argument types, are attested among varieties of northern Kurdish spoken in Iraqi Kurdistan and adjacent regions of southeastern Turkey, Syria and Iran, a region we provisionally refer to as Mesopotamia. Mesopotamia is of course also home to a number of historically VO Semitic languages, (Neo-)Aramaic and Arabic, which have co-existed with

1 Post-predicate elements in the Western Asian Transition Zone

Kurdish and other OV languages for centuries, and indeed for millennia in the case of Aramaic. In these VO languages, it is universally the case that other non-direct object arguments also follow the verb, and it seems plausible to assume that the syntax of these languages had some impact on the Iranian languages with which they shared territory for at least 2000 years, and ultimately also on Turkic (perhaps via Iranian in many cases).

In a pilot study, [Haig & Thiele \(2014\)](#) compared word order in naturalistic texts from a sample of languages mostly from Mesopotamia.⁹ The authors identified four types of [argument](#) that are predominantly post-verbal in these languages, cited in the original formulation as follows:

- Recipients of verbs of transferred possession (e.g. GIVE)
- Destination or direction of verbs of movement (e.g. GO, RUN, FALL)
- Destination or direction of verbs of caused motion
(e.g. PUT, PLACE, TAKE)
- Addressees of verbs of speech (e.g. SAY, SPEAK, PROMISE)

Examples illustrating these four types, from Badini Kurdish (from the Gullî and Akre dialects of Iraqi Kurdistan, from [Haig & Thiele 2014](#), citing [MacKenzie 1962](#)) are provided in (2-5):

(2) Recipient

Northern Kurdish Akre ([MacKenzie 1962](#))
 $min \quad kič-ā \quad xo \quad dā \quad ta$
 1SG.OBL daughter-EZ.F REFL give.PST.3SG 2SG.OBL
 'I have given my daughter to you.'

(3) Addressee

Northern Kurdish Akre ([MacKenzie 1962](#))
 $Sultān-ī \quad got-a \quad ahmad \quad halwāči$
 Sultan-OBL.M say-PST.3SG-DRCT Ahmad Halwachî
 'The Sultan said to Ahmad Halwachî'

⁹The varieties were Northern Kurdish from Iraqi Kurdistan, Northern Kurdish from Midyat, Southeastern Turkey, Northern Kurdish from Muş and Erzurum; Northeastern Neo-Aramaic (Jewish) from Urmi, West Iran, and from Koy Sanjaq, Iraqi Kurdistan, and Turkish from Erzincan, Turkey. For comparison, they also included corpus data from a dominant VO language, Cypriot Greek. It was already apparent from this small data set that outside of Mesopotamia, Recipients, Addressees, and Goals of motion do not necessarily pattern alike.

Geoffrey Haig, Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand, Donald Stilo, Laurentia Schreiber & Nils Schiborr

(4) Goal of simple motion

Northern Kurdish Akre (MacKenzie 1962)

harduk rābon, hāt-in-a bāžar-ī

both get_up.PST.3PL come.PST-3PL-DRCT town-M.OBL

‘Both of them got up and came **to the town**.’

(5) Goal of caused motion

Northern Kurdish Gullī (MacKenzie 1962)

kir t=sēnīk-ā dayk-ā xwa dā

do.PST.3SG ADP=tray-F.EZ mother-F.EZ REFL ADP

‘(He) put (it) **on his mother’s tray**.’

In the Mesopotamian languages investigated in Haig & Thiele (2014), all four semantic types exhibited broadly similar rates of post-verbal placement, which motivated the authors to define a macro-role, labeled ‘Goal’, that would encompass all four types (and some further types such as final state of a change-of-state verb, see below). In retrospect, this terminological decision proved injudicious, for two reasons. First, it introduced ambiguity to the term ‘Goal’, which could either be understood in the narrower sense of ‘Goal of verb of motion’, or in the broader sense that would include Recipient, Addressee, etc. Second, it has become increasingly evident that many languages of WATZ do not lump Addressees, Recipients, and Goals of verbs of motion together (Section 4 below for data), thus casting doubt on the validity of a macro-category altogether. A broadly similar macro-category was subsequently adopted by Asadpour (2022a,b), who relabels it as ‘Target’, and this terminology has been used in the contributions to Asadpour & Jügel (2022). While the re-labeling alleviates the ambiguity problem, it does not resolve the empirical problem that outside of some varieties of Kurdish with deep historical ties to Semitic languages, Addressees, Recipients, and spatial Goals do not pattern alike among the OV languages of WATZ, so the motivation for assuming *a priori* a meta-category is questionable.¹⁰ In an effort to restore clarity, we therefore eschew the macro-category sense of ‘Goal’ in this volume, reserving the term ‘Goal’ strictly in the sense of ‘Goal or endpoint of a predicate of motion or caused motion’. See end of Section 4.1 for discussion of ‘Recipient’ vs. ‘Goal’, and Table 3 for an overview of roles distinguished in WOWA.

One of the observations in the earlier literature concerned the syntax of ‘final state’ constituents, defined here as expressions indicating the final state of a

¹⁰There is also a lack of consensus about the nature and number of categories that are included under ‘Target’; some researchers include variously Benefactives, and Final States of change-of-state predicates, rendering comparison across different publications difficult.

1 Post-predicate elements in the Western Asian Transition Zone

change-of-state ('become') predicate. [Haig \(2017, 2022d\)](#) noted that in much of Kurdish, the final states are significantly more likely to be post-verbal than the complements of copular expressions that do not imply a change of state, even when the lexical verb is the same;¹¹ compare (6) (change-of-state) and (7) (static state).

- (6) Central Kurdish Sanandaj ([Mohammadirad 2022b](#): I, 1016)

bū-m=a *wirdafirūš*
be.SUBJ-1SG=DRCT peddler
'(I will) become (a) peddler.'

- (7) Southern Kurdish Bijar ([Mohammadirad 2022c](#): D, 0282)

aware kur bī ...
if boy be.SUBJ.3SG
'If it were a boy ...'

Similar phenomena have been noted for unrelated OV languages in close contact with Kurdish. For example, in the Northeastern Neo-Aramaic (NENA) dialect of the Jewish speech community from Urmia (West Iran), "the complement of the verb *qlb* 'turn into' is invariably placed after it" ([Khan 2008a](#): 323). Although post-posing of complements of change-of-state predicates is widespread in the region, it is not grammaticalized to the same extent in all languages. Having outlined some of the main currents in earlier research and clarified terminology, in the remaining sections, we describe the design of the data base, and present two case studies illustrating cross-corpus results.

3 Design of the WOWA (Word Order in Western Asia) database

The WOWA sample includes data sets from 35 languages and varieties, based on monological, unscripted, spoken texts (see Figure 1 and the Appendices for details). As most of the project was conducted during the 2020–2022 pandemic, it was not possible to systematically select locations and languages in which to conduct dedicated fieldwork; rather, we have been obliged to rely on pre-existing

¹¹Interestingly, post-verbal placement of a change-of-state complement is much more likely when the complement is nominal (e.g. 'she became (a) teacher'), rather than adjectival (e.g. 'she became rich').

Geoffrey Haig, Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand, Donald Stilo, Laurentia Schreiber & Nils Schiborr

resources. The result is that we were unable to compile a geographically or phylogenetically balanced sample of varieties. Nevertheless, the present sample represents the largest and most systematic data source currently available for investigating word order across the region.

The data sets stem from a range of distinct research contexts. Some are based on texts extracted from the published output of scholars working within individual philologies (e.g. the Neo-Aramaic texts of Barwar, Northern Iraq, originally published in [Khan 2008b](#), a sub-set of which is analysed for a WOWA data set, [Stilo 2021b](#)). Other data-sets are taken from published sources of national language academies in the framework of dialect surveys (e.g. the Erzurum dialect of Turkish, which feed into [Dogan 2021a](#)), while others stem from contemporary language documentation projects, such as the Hazarrudi Tat texts used in [Izadifar \(2022\)](#) and the Qashqai texts in [Schreiber \(2021a\)](#).

For most data sets, the most widely represented genre is traditional narrative, but some data sets also include stimulus-based narratives (e.g. Pear story ([Chafe 1980](#)) retellings). The texts have been transcribed according to the academic tradition of the original researcher (we have not attempted to impose a common transcription scheme), and translated into English (in one case, into German). Generally, each data set includes more than one text, in most cases from different speakers; the composition of each data set is described in the accompanying metadata, and the source of each token (i.e. the individual text, and speaker) is recoverable. The main criteria for inclusion of a dataset in WOWA are a minimum yield of 500 codable tokens, reliable and authentic spoken data, and no restrictions on data accessibility.

3.1 Content of each data set

The list below provides the downloadable resource types included in WOWA. The first three are available for all data sets, while the other three are accessible to varying degrees, depending on the nature of the source data:

1. All files: Complete data set in a single ZIP-directory.
2. Coded values: The actual coded data (see below), in Excel and TSV format.
3. Metadata: A text document containing information on sources, references, speaker metadata, links, and other relevant information.
4. Source texts: Contains an orthographic rendering of the entire text with a translation, often from a published source, or provided by the contributor.

1 Post-predicate elements in the Western Asian Transition Zone

In some cases, the source texts include additional morphological glossing or other information.

5. Sound files: The original sound files (where available), in .WAV and .MP3 formats.

3.2 Segmentation and token coding

The basic units of the data base are tokens of prosodically independent (rather than bound), referential, non-subject constituents. Creating the data base thus involves identifying the relevant tokens, and coding them for a series of features (see below). Texts selected for inclusion into the corpus are first segmented into strings that correspond approximately to meaningful utterances (in many cases this corresponds to a clause), termed utterance units. Each utterance unit is accompanied by a translation into English (column ‘utterance_translation’ in Table 1 below). Utterance units are consecutively numbered and entered as single rows in the data base, initially implemented in an Excel spreadsheet.

In a second step, all tokens of referential, non-subject constituents are identified and entered into a distinct cell (token) aligned with its source utterance unit. Note that clausal constituents (complement clauses, etc.) are not included as tokens. If an utterance unit contains more than one relevant token, that row of the data is repeated. If an utterance unit contains no relevant token (for example, a simple intransitive clause often does not contain any overt non-subject constituent, see 0001 in Table 1 below), then the token column remains empty. Note that these non-coded utterances remain in the data set, which thus preserves the overall unity of the original text, and maintains its re-usability for future research.

Table 1: Fragment of Hazarrudi Tat data set (Izadifar 2022)

| token ID | utterance unit | utterance translation | token | token_translation |
|----------|--------------------------------------|--|----------------------|-------------------|
| 0001 | <i>bale čemā rustā de i nefar ve</i> | yes, there was a person in our village | <i>čemā rustā de</i> | in our village |
| 0002 | <i>šekārči ve</i> | he was a hunter | <i>šekārči</i> | hunter |
| 0003 | <i>ševi šekār</i> | he had gone for hunting | <i>šekār</i> | hunting |
| 0004 | <i>ševi šekār čemā kua de</i> | he had gone hunting in our mountains | <i>šekār</i> | hunting |
| 0005 | <i>ševi šekār čemā kua de</i> | he had gone hunting in our mountains | <i>čemā kua de</i> | in our mountains |
| 0006 | <i>i jangali ve</i> | there was a forest | (no token) | |
| 0007 | <i>berā de i šekāri bezzeše</i> | he killed (hit) some prey there | <i>i šekāri</i> | some prey |
| 0008 | <i>berā de i šekāri bezzeše</i> | he killed (hit) some prey there | <i>berā de</i> | there |

The basic structure is illustrated in Table 1, from the Hazarrudi Tat data set (Izadifar 2022). The utterance in 0006 does not contain a relevant token, thus the

Geoffrey Haig, Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand, Donald Stilo, Laurentia Schreiber & Nils Schiborr

token columns are empty. The utterance in 0007, on the other hand, contains two relevant tokens ('some prey', and 'there'). Each receives its own ID (0007 and 0008), and the utterance unit is repeated, enabling tokens to be systematically associated with their contexts across all analysis steps. WOWA currently contains approximately 20,000 analyzed tokens in context.

Once identified, each token is coded for a number of features, which fall into the following three types:

Doculect-related features:

- Genetic affiliation (e.g. Iranian, southwestern)
- Doculect location (latitude, longitude)

Context-related features

- Text and speaker identification (unique identifiers are assigned, which are described in the accompanying metadata document)

Linguistic features of the token and immediate context

- Classifiable versus non-classifiable (if an utterance unit contains either no relevant token or none that can be unambiguously classified). Non-classifiable tokens are not included in statistical analyses
- Pronominal versus nominal form
- Animacy
- Definiteness (only applied to direct objects)
- Weight
- Role (see Table 3)
- Flag (adposition, or case-marking)
- Position relative to the governing predicate (the dependent variable): before (0) vs. after (1)
- Comments (free text entry)

Obviously the set of linguistic features could easily be extended to include, for example, main versus subordinate clause, finer-grained metrics of topicality, and so on. The final decision on which features to include was a compromise determined by the partially conflicting demands of theoretical relevance, and practical concerns such as economy of time and resources, simplicity of implementation across multiple languages with multiple coders, and replicability and

1 Post-predicate elements in the Western Asian Transition Zone

transparency of coding-decisions. Previous research has pointed to the importance of pronominal versus nominal (e.g. [Gerdes et al. 2021](#)), animacy, weight (references in Section 5), informativity ([Faghiri & Samvelian 2020](#)), flagging and role (see Section 2 above), and these are also features that best satisfy the practical constraints just mentioned. Note that the raw data are available for coding additional features in the future. For each linguistic feature, coders select from a pre-defined set of options, which are explained in the Coding Guidelines.¹²

Coders work with the project coordinators, and problematic issues are resolved collaboratively to maximize cross-coder consistency. The coding scheme was presented and discussed collectively at two workshops (2019, 2020), and continued to evolve over the course of the project, before a final version was adopted in 2020. It should be evident that in a project of this nature, with multiple contributors working on multiple languages, compromise is inevitable. We have strived to maintain the fine line between maximal simplicity and generality (limiting the number of coding options), while maintaining sufficient flexibility for capturing the range of cross-language variation contained in the data. Nevertheless, some degree of coding indeterminacy is inevitable, and for this reason we include the coding option ‘other’ in all linguistic categories to capture those instances where the analyst cannot decide among the available options. The full list of coding options is available in the Coding Guidelines; by way of illustration, we demonstrate in Table 2 the linguistic coding of the eight items from Table 1 above:

Table 2: Coding the linguistic values for the tokens in Table 1

| token | token translation | pro | anim | weight | weight2 | role | flag | position |
|----------------------------------|-------------------|-----|------|--------|---------|------|-------|----------|
| <i>čemā rustā de</i> | in our village | | inan | 2 | 11 | loc | postp | 0 |
| <i>šekārči</i> | hunter | | hum | 1 | 7 | cop | bare | 0 |
| <i>šekār</i> | hunting | | inan | 1 | 5 | goal | bare | 1 |
| <i>šekār</i> | hunting | | inan | 1 | 5 | goal | bare | 1 |
| <i>čemā kua de</i> (no token) | in our mountains | | inan | 2 | 9 | loc | postp | 1 |
| <i>i šekāri</i> | a prey | | inan | 2 | 7 | do | bare | 0 |
| <i>berā de</i> | there | | adv | 1 | 6 | loc | postp | 0 |

The ‘pro’ column is empty in Table 2, because there are no pronominal tokens in this stretch of discourse. The ‘weight’ column records orthographic words, except function words solely employed as flagging devices (e.g. simple adpositions).

¹²https://multicast.aspra.uni-bamberg.de/resources/wowa/data/_docs/guidelines/wowa_coding-guidelines.pdf

Geoffrey Haig, Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand, Donald Stilo, Laurentia Schreiber & Nils Schiborr

The ‘weight2’ column is a finer-grained weight metric that is automatically generated, based on the number of characters contained in the transcription of the token (thus the first token consists of 11 characters); it provides a rough proxy for the number of phonological segments in each token. The column ‘position’ is the dependent variable, and offers a binary option of <0> (pre-verbal) versus <1> (post-verbal).

The proprietary spreadsheet format used for data entry was dictated by practical considerations; most contributors use MS Excel (or equivalent) and were able to enter their data into the template that we provided. For the actual analysis, data are exported to R, a powerful and flexible programming language and platform for statistical computing.

With regard to the pronoun category, we have included only prosodically independent pronouns as tokens. For languages that make extensive use of clitic object pronouns, this means that the number of classifiable object tokens in these languages may be very low, which has a detrimental impact on the statistical analysis (authors have the option of noting the presence of clitic pronouns in the comments column (e.g. Schreiber 2021b), so the information is available for future analyses.) There are sound empirical reasons for distinguishing free and clitic pronouns, illustrated below from Spoken Persian (Rasekh-Mahand et al. 2024 [Chapter 7, this volume]): around 95% of nominal direct objects precede the verb (OV), as in (8). Clitic object pronouns, on the other hand, frequently right-attach to the verb, and indeed must do so if the verb is the sole available host, as in (9) and (10):

- (8) Colloquial New Persian (Izadi 2022: C, 0263)
doz=râ bord bâlâ
 dosage=ACC carry.PST.3SG upwards
 ‘(He) increased the dosage.’
- (9) Colloquial New Persian (Izadi 2022: V, 2375)
mi-šenâs-im=ešân
 INDIC-know.PRS-1PL=3PL
 ‘We know them.’
- (10) Colloquial New Persian (Haig & Rasekh-Mahand 2022:
oh_f_accident_0166)
be-bar-id=aš
 IMPER-take.PRS-2PL=3SG
 ‘Take him!’

1 Post-predicate elements in the Western Asian Transition Zone

It would make little sense to count constructions such as (9) and (10) as 'VO', apparently in contrast to the OV of (8). Examples (9) and (10) illustrate a language-specific rule of cliticization, which permits no variability of object placement in these examples. Clitic placement is a fascinating issue in its own right, but of limited relevance for the principles operating in the linearization of independent phrases in syntax. Consequently, clitic pronouns hosted by the predicate are not included in calculations of pre- versus post-verbal argument placement. Clitic pronouns hosted by an item distinct from the predicate, on the other hand, are coded as '**bound**', and the normal coding procedures applied. Depending on the analysis, pronominal tokens may be filtered out of a given sample.

4 The impact of semantic role: the '**'Goals Last'** effect

4.1 Background

For the majority of languages in the sample, the variable '**Role**' turned out to be the most influential factor in determining pre- versus post-verbal position. The category '**Role**' in WOWA distinguishes the 19 categories shown in Table 3.

The data reveal very divergent token frequencies of different roles. In fact, some are so infrequent that they offer little leverage for statistical purposes. Figure 2 provides the respective proportions of different roles, whereby we have lumped together those role types that occur only marginally.

The most frequent role type in our data are direct objects, which account for around one third of all tokens. The next most frequent are goals of motion, including both simple motion and caused motion (distinguished in Figure 2 by different shades of blue). Recipients and addressees are relatively infrequent, and are therefore lumped together here (see below). Similarly, roles such as instrument, comitative, stimulus, and benefactive do not occur in sufficient numbers to permit meaningful quantitative analysis, so have been combined under '**other obliques**'. The '**other role**' category includes tokens that were not classifiable under any of the available role-categories.

Turning now to the respective frequencies of post-verbal placement, Table 4 visualizes the general trend discernible across the data set. Four categories are distinguished: Goals (including caused goals), Recipient+Addressee, other obliques, and direct objects. For each of those four categories, we have colour-coded any frequency values for post-verbal placement which exceed 66%.

The data in Table 4 permit a number of generalizations, which to our knowledge have hitherto not been recognized. First of all, the data underscore the exceptional status of spatial Goals when compared to any other role. More than two

Geoffrey Haig, Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand, Donald Stilo, Laurentia Schreiber & Nils Schiborr

Table 3: Role categories recognized in WOWA (see Coding Guidelines, Section 3.2)

| Abbreviation | Explanation |
|--------------|--|
| ABL | source of motion ('she came out of the house') |
| ADDR | addressee of a verb of speech ('they spoke to him/asked her/begged the King') |
| BECM | 'become', i.e. the final state of a change-of-state (inchoative), predicate, such as 'become X', 'turn into X' |
| BECM-C | final state of a caused change-of-state predicate ('they made him King', 'she turned him to stone') |
| BEN | benefactive; a person who benefits, or is disadvantaged, by an event without being directly impinged on by the action |
| COM | comitative; a person who accompanies another participant in some action, or state ('I went to the market with my father') |
| COP | complement of a copular expression ('they were farmers') |
| COP-LOC | locational complement of a copular expression ('she was in the car') |
| DO | direct object, which needs to be identified on language-specific criteria such as typical case marking properties |
| DO-DEF | definite direct object (which will include most pronouns), i.e. an item whose identity is recoverable from the context through previous mention or assumed deictic reference ('she took that cup') |
| GOAL | endpoint or destination of a verb of motion ('it fell on the table') |
| GOAL-C | endpoint or destination of a verb of caused motion ('he put it on the table') |
| INSTR | instrument for carrying out an action |
| LOC | static location (with no implication of movement) of a participant or event |
| OTHER | none of the available categories |
| POSS | possessed in a clause expressing possession 'she had two brothers', unless the language has a HAVE verb and expresses the possessed in the same way as a direct object (do) |
| REC | recipient of a theme in an event of transfer, typically GIVE |
| REC-BEN | recipient-benefactive. This is included for contexts in which it is unclear whether a particular token is the recipient, or a benefactive of an action ('he bought the apples for us' — recipient or benefactive?) |
| STIM | stimulus, typically of verbs of emotion, perception, desire — if they are not coded as direct objects (English 'she was afraid of the snake' (stim), but not 'she hates snakes' (coded as <do>)) |

1 Post-predicate elements in the Western Asian Transition Zone

Table 4: Frequency of post-verbal placement for different roles; shaded values indicate frequencies above 66%. Goals and direct objects include only nominal expressions; Recipients, Addressees, and other oblique roles (Locations, Sources, Instrumentals, Benefactives, and Comitatives) also include pronominal expressions. Two doculects with less than 8 observations in each role category are excluded. See Appendix B for raw data. (NENA = Northeastern Neo-Aramaic).

| Doculect | % post-verbal | | | |
|---|---------------|----------------------------|-------------------|-------------------|
| | Goals | Recipients + Addressees | Other Obliques | Direct Objects |
| ◇ Laz (<i>Arhavi</i>) | 4 | 6 | 1 | 3 |
| ◇ Persian (<i>New, Early Classical</i>) | 5 | 0 | 9 | 2 |
| ● Oghuz (<i>Ankara</i>) | 7 | 19 | 7 | 2 |
| ● Oghuz (<i>Erzurum</i>) | 38 | 8 | 9 | 7 |
| ◇ Balochi (<i>Turkmen</i>) | 48 | 14 | 6 | 2 |
| ◇ Kurdish (<i>Northern, Ankara</i>) | 59 | 13 | 6 | 0 |
| ◇ Kholosi (<i>Kholos</i>) | 62 | 39 | 1 | 1 |
| ◇ Mazandarani (<i>Kordxeyl</i>) | 63 | 12 | 8 | 3 |
| ◇ Balochi (<i>Coastal</i>) | 63 | 28 | 18 | 7 |
| ◇ Bashkardi (<i>Northern</i>) | 63 | 56 | 31 | 27 |
| ● Oghuz (<i>Bayat</i>) | 64 | 43 | 13 | 4 |
| ◇ Zazaki (<i>Cewlig</i>) | 91 | 15 | 0 | 5 |
| ● Oghuz (<i>Tabriz</i>) | 75 | 21 | 13 | 1 |
| ◇ Persian (<i>New</i>) | 84 | 25 | 19 | 5 |
| ◇ Kurdish (<i>Southern, Bijar</i>) | 97 | 27 | 11 | 2 |
| ◇ Tat (<i>Daykuscu</i>) | 78 | 34 | 30 | 15 |
| ◇ Kurdish (<i>Northern, Muš</i>) | 89 | 36 | 5 | 3 |
| ◇ Bashkardi (<i>Southern</i>) | 80 | 38 | 36 | 11 |
| ◇ Vafsi (<i>Gurchani</i>) | 88 | 38 | 11 | 2 |
| ◇ Kurdish (<i>Northern, Lachin</i>) | 81 | 40 | 4 | 2 |
| ◇ Balochi (<i>Koroshi</i>) | 90 | 42 | 27 | 2 |
| ◇ Talyshi (<i>Lerik</i>) | 72 | 45 | 26 | 2 |
| ● Oghuz (<i>Gagauz</i>) | 73 | 47 | 38 | 51 |
| ◇ Zazaki (<i>Siwreg</i>) | 100 | 52 | 8 | 5 |
| ◇ Tati (<i>Hazarrudi</i>) | 92 | 53 | 16 | 3 |
| ● Oghuz (<i>Qashqai</i>) | 71 | 88 | 16 | 8 |
| ◇ Kurdish (<i>Central, Sanandaj</i>) | 94 | 95 | 22 | 1 |
| ◇ Gorani (<i>Gawraju</i>) | 96 | 82 | 36 | 5 |
| ▲ NENA (<i>Jewish, Sanandaj</i>) | 92 | 81 | 40 | 5 |
| ◇ Kumzari (<i>Musandam</i>) | 100 | 97 | 87 | 7 |
| ▲ NENA (<i>Christian, Barwar</i>) | 96 | 100 | 74 | 83 |
| ▲ NENA (<i>Jewish, Dohok</i>) | 99 | 98 | 93 | 90 |
| ▲ Arabic (<i>Jewish, Baghdad</i>) | 100 | 100 | 85 | 97 |

Geoffrey Haig, Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand, Donald Stilo, Laurentia Schreiber & Nils Schiborr

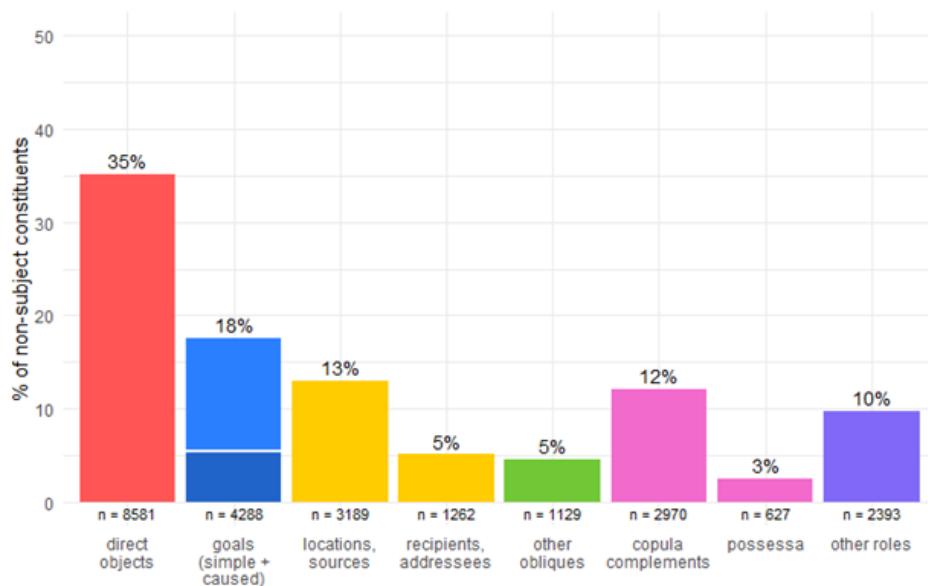


Figure 2: The respective frequency of non-subject roles across the WÖWA sample

thirds of the sample languages have dominant post-verbal placement of Goals (>66%), and for the majority of these languages, dominant post-verbal placement is restricted only to Goals. In several of these languages, the frequency of post-verbal goals is twice as high as the frequency of post-posing any other constituent. In other words, Goals are different. We can formulate this as a potential universal in (11):

- (11) If a language postposes any role with a greater than two-thirds frequency, it will postpone Goals.

Note that Table 4 combines the two roles Recipient and Addressee, due to the low absolute numbers of tokens in these categories. However, this obscures the fact that Recipients and Addressees do not actually pattern consistently across all data sets. In fact, three distinct patterns can be identified in the sample, bearing in mind that the relevant absolute numbers are small:

- (i) both Addressee and Recipient occur before the verb (e.g. Oghuz Erzurum, Zazaki Cewlig, modern Spoken Persian);
- (ii) both occur after the verb (e.g. NENA Jewish Duhok, Central Kurdish Sanandaj, Kumzari);

1 Post-predicate elements in the Western Asian Transition Zone

- (iii) Recipients occur after the verb, but Addressees before the verb (e.g. Vafsi Gurchani, Northern Kurdish Muš, or Armenian of Agulis).

Crucially, no language is attested in the sample that has post-verbal Addressees, but pre-verbal Recipients. Bearing this in mind, we can formulate the following implicational hierarchy indicating the conditions under which a particular role type may occur as dominant (at least 66%) postverbal.¹³

- (12) Goals > Recipients > Addressees > Other > Direct object

The hierarchy in (12) is to be understood as an implicational universal, which can be formulated as follows: based on token frequency in corpora of spontaneous spoken language, and frequencies of nominal as opposed to pronominal constituents, if a language postposes any of the roles in (12) with greater than two-thirds frequency (dominant), then it will also dominantly postpose all higher roles on the hierarchy. Thus for the languages in the WATZ sample – regardless of genetic affiliation – there is no language that has, for example, dominant post-verbal Addressees, but not dominant post-verbal Goals. There are, however, a considerable number that only have dominant post-verbal Goals, and no other roles. Finally, if any language has dominant post-verbal direct objects, then all other roles are likewise dominant post-verbal. Thus there are no languages that, for example, combine dominant post-verbal objects with pre-verbal goals.

Currently it is impossible to say with certainty whether the regularities illustrated in Table 4 and expressed in (11) and (12) represent a peculiarity of the languages in and around WATZ, or whether they reflect a deeper trait of connected spoken language, which should surface in spoken-language corpora of any language. We suggest there are grounds for assuming that (12) does reflect, at least in part, universal tendencies. [Haig & Schiborr \(In review\)](#) compare the two ends of the hierarchy (direct objects and Goals) across a more extensive sample of spoken language corpora and report that in no corpus do frequencies of postverbal objects exceed frequencies of postverbal Goals, regardless of language type or genetic affiliation.

Even if only parts of (12) should turn out to be valid outside of WATZ, this would have considerable implications for understanding, for example, diachronic

¹³The hierarchy in (12) is similar to others that have been formulated in the literature (e.g. [Frommer 1981](#), [Haig & Khan 2019](#), [Stilo 2018b](#)), some of which add additional roles, or employ somewhat different terminology. One role that has often been included is Benefactive; however, our data for this role are sparse, and were unfortunately not always consistently coded, rendering interpretation of the results difficult. Currently they are included under ‘other’; this requires more research.

Geoffrey Haig, Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand, Donald Stilo, Laurentia Schreiber & Nils Schiborr

change in word order. Essentially, (12) predicts an ordered sequence in a shift from OV to VO and vice versa. If a language is, for example, consistently verb-final (i.e. no role is dominant post-verbal), then (12) predicts that any change towards less verb-finality would occur first with Goals, and proceed down the hierarchy, with direct objects the last to shift. For the other direction, i.e. a language that is consistently verb-initial in the VP (like English), the prediction is that if any argument type shifts across the verb, it will be direct objects first, and Goals last. There is thus an asymmetry in the way VO and OV languages can be expected to move closer to one another. Preliminary observation of word-order change in WATZ suggests that this holds, regardless of whether the shift is considered internally motivated, or contact induced.

Before closing the discussion, it is worth briefly addressing the issue of the relationship between recipient and goal roles. In earlier work (Haig 2022d), it was argued, on the basis of Kurdish data, that these roles share a common semantic component, defined as ‘event endpoint’, which motivated the shared post-verbal syntax in Kurdish. However, as we have seen, for the majority of other languages in our sample, recipients and goals do not pattern alike. On the assumption that both share endpoint semantics, the question arises as to what inhibits post-verbal placement of recipients? To understand this, it is important to recall that word order is the product of competing motivations, of which iconicity is but one. These include verb-object adjacency (the tendency for direct objects and verbs not to be separated by other constituents), weight, animacy, and agency considerations. Thus word order in any given context is the product of multiple factors, including information structure, semantics, and configurational constraints. Recipients differ strikingly from goals in a number of dimensions that are relevant here: they are overwhelmingly human, with high frequency pronominal and first or second person, and are treated syntactically as direct objects in many languages (Haspelmath 2015). Thus we suggest that endpoint semantics are simply overridden by other factors in the ordering of recipients. The distinction between goals of verbs of motion, and recipients is clearly maintained in Haspelmath’s (2015) concept of ‘ditransitive construction’, which presupposes an element of transfer of possession, while goals of verbs of caused motion, such as ‘put’, lack such an entailment and are thus outside the purview of the typology of ditransitive constructions. We might add that conversely, transfer of possession does not necessarily entail movement: it is possible to give someone a house, or a piece of land, which involves no actual change of location of the ‘theme’. Our revised conclusion is thus that although shared endpoint semantics mean goals and recipients may pattern alike in some languages, the overall weight of evidence suggests that a distinction should be maintained (see Haig & Schiborr *In review* for a more detailed

1 Post-predicate elements in the Western Asian Transition Zone

discussion).

5 The impact of weight on post-posing

5.1 Background

It is fair to say that in both experimental and corpus-based approaches to word-order typology, considerations of weight (however formalized) have attracted more attention than any other single factor (e.g. Faghiri & Samvelian 2020, Schnell & Schiborr 2022, Wasow 2022: 5–10). However, as Yao (2018) points out, most of the relevant research considers weight as a factor in determining the relative order of **constituents occurring on the same side of the predicate**, for example the relative ordering of the two PP's in (13) (from Wasow 2022: 6).

- (13) *The gamekeeper looked [through his binoculars] [into the blue but slightly overcast sky].*

For languages such as English, which regularly place objects and other non-subject verbal dependents after the verb (the ‘post-verbal domain’, Yao 2018), it seems that short constituents tend to precede longer constituents (‘short before long’), as illustrated in (13). But this trend is apparently reversed for the pre-verbal domain in head-final languages like Japanese, where long constituents reportedly preferably precede short (Yamashita & Chang 2001). However, it is less clear which prediction would hold in languages which permit constituents to occur on either side of the predicate (‘cross-domain NP shift’, Yao 2018). Yao (2018) investigates cross-domain NP shift for object placement in Mandarin, which varies between a post-verbal (VO) and a pre-verbal (*bă*-OV) option. Interestingly, this detailed study reveals no linear correlation between VO versus OV, and NP-length. Levshina (2019: 560) notes a significant effect of length only for VO languages, and most notably for clausal rather than nominal constituents. Research on diachronic syntax does consider cross-domain shift for direct objects, for example pragmatically driven object fronting in VO languages, and ‘heavy NP shift’ in OV languages (Faarlund 2010: 205). However, for other kinds of constituent there is a general lack of research that would guide the expectations of a length effect for constituent order relative to the verb.

5.2 Method and results

In the absence of a clear hypothesis from the literature, here we present an initial exploration of length effects on pre- versus post-verbal placement of different

Geoffrey Haig, Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand, Donald Stilo, Laurentia Schreiber & Nils Schiborr

constituents in the WOWA sample. It is important to note that overall, the leverage of the weight factor is significantly reduced in our spoken-language WOWA data, when compared to the written-language or experimental corpora that form the basis of most previous research. *Schnell & Schiborr (2022: 178)* observe that in the spoken language corpora from the Multi-CAST collection (*Haig & Schnell 2023*), almost 90% of all NPs in the data consist of maximally three words, with the majority being two words or less. In written Universal Dependency corpora on the other hand, 36% of NPs contain four or more words (*Schnell & Schiborr 2022: 178–179*). Note furthermore that for WOWA, we have not included clausal constituents in our analyses, which rules out the kinds of very long tokens that figure in written language corpora (complement clauses, NPs with embedded relative clauses, etc.).

For the WOWA project, we operationalized ‘weight’ with two measures: (i) length of the object phrase in words; and (ii) a finer-grained metric using characters, which provides a proxy for phonological weight. The data shows a strong power law-like distribution of weights, with 64% of analyzed tokens in certain roles (direct objects, Goals, Recipients and Addressees, as well as Locations, Sources, Instrumentals, Benefactives, and Comitatives) consisting of a single word and 91% of two or fewer words. Similarly, for weight in characters, 67% of these tokens contain 8 or fewer characters, and 91% contain 13 or fewer.

Two analyses were conducted both based on the finer-grained character-based weight metric. The first includes 33 data sets in WOWA, split by role; we exclude those data sets that have fewer than 8 observations in a role or display no variation in positioning. Table 5 shows the mean correlation (Pearson) between pre- and post-verbal positioning (0, 1) and weight.

Table 5: Pearson correlation of weight with position

| Roles | R -value | SD | Observations |
|-----------------------|----------|-------|--------------|
| direct objects | +0.007 | 0.117 | 8364 |
| goals | +0.022 | 0.161 | 4172 |
| recipients+addressees | -0.046 | 0.251 | 1340 |
| other obliques | +0.005 | 0.103 | 4444 |

All correlation coefficients hover around zero, with no substantial variation between data sets. Only a small handful of data sets have a coefficient exceeding a value of ± 0.4 in any of the roles, three of which are for Recipients/Addressees,

1 Post-predicate elements in the Western Asian Transition Zone

which due to their comparative rarity unfortunately offer the least robust results in general.

The second analysis takes into consideration the basic word order of each doculect, because as [Wasow \(2022: 11\)](#) notes, different predictions hold for head final versus other languages. Consequently, we follow [Levshina \(2019\)](#) and divide the sample doculects into three groups, based on the frequency of nominal post-verbal direct objects in the corpora (the sample is not balanced across these three groups, due to the dominance of OV Iranian languages): ‘OV’ (<25% VO), N=13; ‘mixed’ (25–75% VO), N=16; and ‘VO’ (>75% VO), N=4. Figure 3 shows the mean weight in characters for four role types, distinguishing pre- and post-verbal placement. For each role type, we present the findings split according to the three word-order types mentioned above (<25% VO; 25–75% VO; >75% VO).



Figure 3: Mean weight in characters of pre- and post-verbal constituents for four role types, split according to word-order type of the doculect

Geoffrey Haig, Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand, Donald Stilo, Laurentia Schreiber & Nils Schiborr

Figure 3 suggests a weak correlation between post-verbal placement and higher weight, for direct objects (bottom right panel) across all word order types, but none of the individual differences reach significance. Any claim for a correlation can only therefore draw on the fact that the minimal differences are in the same direction for each language type. For other roles, no consistent pattern can be identified. Turning to word-order type, it is only the >75% VO languages that consistently exhibit a weak but consistent association of weight and likelihood of post-verbal placement, with the strongest effect occurring for Goals in dominantly VO languages; this would merit closer investigation, but note the low absolute figures (n=15) for pre-verbal Goals in the four VO doculects.

In sum, our investigation of the effect of weight reveals only weak effects for only some roles, and some language types. This is partly attributable to the aforementioned narrow envelope of variation for weight in spoken language, where the overwhelming majority of tokens consist of only one to two words. As noted, clausal constituents were not considered in our data. Equally, we emphasize that our investigation considers weight as a factor in cross-domain shift, i.e. shift across the predicate, as opposed to relative position of constituents on the same side of the predicate, which has been the focus of most existing research (see Wasow 2022). As Yao (2018) notes, research on cross-domain weight effects is scarcely available, and their own results, like ours, reveal no clear weight effects of weight. We provisionally conclude that weight effects noted in the literature do not carry over to cross-domain word order variation in spoken language. This is definitely an area that would merit further research; see Skopeteas 2024 [Chapter 3, this volume], on the contrasting prosodic properties that hold in the pre- and post-verbal domain respectively.

6 Summary and prospects, residual issues

In sections one to three above, we have outlined the rationale, research context, and methodologies implemented in the WOVA project. In Sections 4 and 5, we illustrate two use cases for exploring the entire data base. The results for semantic role provide abundant evidence for the special role of spatial Goals in word order variability, in particular of the dominantly OV languages of Western Asia. The findings for weight, however, do not yield a simple picture, suggesting that cross-domain word-order variation (Yao 2018) requires a distinct set of explanations to those that have been proposed for same-domain word order, which focusses on the respective ordering of constituents occurring on the same side of the verb (Wasow 2022).

1 Post-predicate elements in the Western Asian Transition Zone

We hope that our research will stimulate further research in this direction, and that in the future, the hitherto neglected effects of semantic role are afforded due consideration. In Section 5 we demonstrate that role provides the best overall predictor of post-verbal placement, with Goals outstripping any other roles by a considerable margin. We formulated our findings in the form of an implicational universal (12), which embodies a number of testable hypotheses for future work on spoken-language corpora, and also has considerable implications for understanding word order change.

Our findings also lend broad support for the concept of Transition Zone, indicating a gradual shift towards higher frequencies of verb-final constituents in the westward regions of WATZ. However, we require a more balanced and denser sample of doculects to develop a more robust framework for mapping structural variation to geospatial features, and to control for phylogenetic distance. Other issues that remain to be considered are measures of corpus-internal variation (see Craevschi 2022 for provisional findings), co-argument effects, and the role of additional morphosyntactic features such as agreement, clause type (modality, negation, subordination, etc.), and more nuanced controlling for information structure (see Hodgson et al. 2024, Noorlander 2024a,b [Chapters 12, 15 and 16, this volume]).

Finally, our data point to the potential impact of register and modality (spoken versus written language) on word order. While the overwhelming majority of data in WOWA represents informal spoken language, in those data sets where data from more formal registers are available, they indicate some striking differences in word order (Nourzaei & Haig 2024 [Chapter 4] on Balochi, Chapters Rasekh-Mahand et al. 2024 [Chapter 7] and Parizadeh & Rasekh-Mahand 2024 [Chapter 8] on Persian, Hodgson et al. 2024 [Chapter 13] on East Armenian). These differences invite further research, but in the meantime we urge caution when comparing cross-linguistic data, and emphasize the necessity for controlling for modality and register.

7 The organization of the volume

The volume consists of 16 chapters, divided into four sections, each of which is introduced below:

- I Theoretical and methodological issues (Chapters 1–3);
- II Case studies from Iranian and Indo-Aryan languages (Chapters 4–9);

Geoffrey Haig, Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand, Donald Stilo, Laurentia Schreiber & Nils Schiborr

III Case studies from the Caucasus and Black Sea (Chapters 10–13);

IV Case studies from Semitic languages (Chapters 14–16).

7.1 Section I: Theoretical and methodological issues

Section I includes the current introductory chapter, and two further chapters. Chapter 2 by Kateryna Iefremenko investigates elements in the post-verbal domain of young adult bilingual speakers of Kurmanji and Turkish in Ankara in comparison with Turkish in Erzurum and under consideration of the sociolinguistic dichotomy between Turkish as dominant national language and Kurmanji as regional language. Although the findings on elements in the post-verbal domain in the two languages are generally in line with previous research, the results show that the Turkish dialect of Erzurum tends to have more frequent post-verbal goals than other varieties of Turkish, which only apply post-verbal positions based on information structure and weight considerations. The higher rates of post-verbal goals in the Erzurum dialect may plausibly reflect contact influence from neighbouring Kurmanji Kurdish dialects, which exhibit typical Iranian post-verbal goals of motion and caused motion. In one particular construction *erdê ketin* ‘to fall on the ground’ the goal nevertheless appears predominantly pre-verbal among bilingual Kurmanji Kurdish speakers; it may be potentially modelled on Tr. *yere düşmek* ‘to fall on the ground’. The methodology of this study is unique in the context of the volume, in that explicitly bilingual data were analysed that were elicited from the speakers by means of video prompts.

In Chapter 3, Stavros Skopeteas investigates prosodic structure in the pre-verbal and post-verbal domain in a sample of (primarily OV) languages that includes Turkish, Georgian, Caucasian Urum, Eastern Armenian, and Persian. Skopeteas identifies three main types of OV languages, distinguished according to the nature of constraints that determine whether objects may occur in the post-verbal domain. In some languages, post-verbal objects are very restricted, and are only permitted if they are outside the focus domain of the clause, i.e. express given information, or afterthoughts (e.g. Standard Turkish). In other languages, post-verbal objects are permitted as part of broad sentence focus (e.g. Persian), while in others, even objects with narrow focus are also permitted (e.g. Georgian). In a sense, then, these three types represent increasing levels of tolerance for the integration of focal material into the post-verbal domain. The author reviews extant research on these languages and reports experimental results of that illustrate the typology, and explores the interaction of prosodic and syntactic phrasing. This line of research complements the corpus-based approach of

1 Post-predicate elements in the Western Asian Transition Zone

most contributions, which capture frequency patterns of linear ordering in naturalistic discourse, but leaves little space for systematic investigation of prosodic structure.

7.2 Section II: Case studies from Iranian and Indo-Aryan languages

This is the largest section in the book and contains six chapters, each of which deal with one (or a group of) Iranian or Indo-Aryan languages. In Chapter 4, Maryam Nourzaei and Geoffrey Haig present an overview of word order across three varieties of Balochi, each from areally diverse locations. The results provide further confirmation of the overall trend identified in this volume, that proximity to Mesopotamia correlates with an overall increase in post-verbal constituents; the westernmost variety of Balochi (Koroshi) exhibits both overall higher frequencies of post-verbal constituents, but also a greater range of role types permitted in this position, when compared to the two more easterly varieties. In Chapter 5, Agnes Korn presents data from two varieties of Bashkardi in southern Iran. The data stem from legacy materials recorded in the 1950's, providing a rare opportunity to explore the possibility of recent changes in the language, but also for considering micro-variation across the two varieties.

Chapter 6 (Maryam Nourzaei) illustrates the only Indo-Aryan language in the sample, Kholosi, a language island in southern Iran that has preserved aspects of Indo-Aryan morphosyntax, but has adapted in word order to conform with the post-verbal placement of spatial Goals that characterizes all of its currently neighbouring languages. In Chapter 7, Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand and co-authors provide an in-depth study of Spoken Persian, comparing the recent HamBam data with the results of Frommer (1981). For the least formal registers of Persian, they report stable values over the 40-year time span with regards to most aspects of post-verbal syntax, but note a shift in register distribution in the modern data when compared to the older sample. Chapter 8 is the sole chapter based on written data, and investigates a sample of Early New Persian texts (10–13th Century CE). The texts reveal some internal variation, but an overall remarkably consistent degree of verb-finality, with little evidence for the post-verbal syntax that characterizes all spoken western Iranian languages investigated so far. These findings raise questions regarding the diachronic development of post-verbal syntax in West Iranian, but also regarding the relationship between the spoken and written languages; it is possible (and we believe plausible) that the Early New Persian texts are not representative of the spoken language of the time, any more than today's formal written Persian texts are representative of contemporary Spoken Persian. In Chapter 9, Masoud Mohammadirad takes a

Geoffrey Haig, Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand, Donald Stilo, Laurentia Schreiber & Nils Schiborr

comparative look at three varieties from the Zagros region (Gorani Gawraju; Central Kurdish Sanandaj; Southern Kurdish Bijar). The findings are suggestive of Gorani substrate effects in southernmost dialects of Central Kurdish.

In Chapters 10 and 11, Diana Forker investigates word order in Kartvelian and East Caucasian and Adyghe respectively. The data come from several sources, mostly outside the WOZA framework, but can be interpreted within the same framework. Role effects (Goals) are noticeable, though considerably less prevalent than in the Iranian languages and other languages of Mesopotamia. In Chapter 12, Laurentia Schreiber and Mark Janse investigate word order patterns in Romeyka in bilingual speakers under language shift to Turkish. While information structure and phrase type are the most relevant factors determining the dominant word orders in Romeyka, significant inter-speaker variation indicates the ongoing process of language shift. Chapter 13 presents original spoken-language data from East Armenian (Katherine Hodgson, Victoria Khurshudyan and Pollet Samvelian). This research adds a new perspective to the growing literature on word order in East Armenian, complementing existing research based on experimental and written-language data. The authors confirm a definiteness effect on direct object ordering, with definite direct objects showing greater word-order flexibility with respect to the verb (higher frequency of VO ordering), while indefinite objects remain overwhelmingly OV. They also identify inter-speaker variation and the effect of register. The Goals Last effect documented for most of the language of WATZ (Section 4 above) is also confirmed in these data, though in somewhat weaker magnitude than in the Iranian languages of Mesopotamia.

7.3 Section IV: Case studies from Semitic languages

This section includes three contributions on Semitic languages. In Chapter 14, Bettina Leitner describes the basic word order profile of Khuzestani Arabic, a linguistic island of Arabic in Iran, and discusses reasons for deviations from the default word order VX, such as language contact and internal change. In Chapter 15, Paul Noorlander discusses Neo-Aramaic dialects in Iran and northeastern Iraq, which include at least one dialect that has undergone a complete shift from VO to OV (Jewish Urmia). While the impetus for the shift is almost certainly language contact, Noorlander illustrates how internal factors, in particular information structure, shape the way these changes have played out. Paul Noorlander also contributes Chapter 16 on Arabic and Neo-Aramaic in Eastern Anatolia, a region of high linguistic diversity. Noteworthy findings include the variability in copula constructions, which contrasts with the otherwise fairly regular presence of clause-final copula elements in most of WATZ.

1 Post-predicate elements in the Western Asian Transition Zone

References

- Anonby, Christina van der Wal. 2015. *A grammar of Kumzari: A mixed Perso-Arabian language of Oman*. Leiden: Leiden University. (Doctoral dissertation).
- Asadpour, Hiwa. 2022a. *Typologizing word order variation in northwestern Iran*. Frankfurt am Main: Goethe-Universität. (Doctoral dissertation).
- Asadpour, Hiwa. 2022b. Word order in Mukri Kurdish - The case of incorporated targets. In Hiwa Asadpour & Thomas Jügel (eds.), *Word order variation: Semitic, Turkic and Indo-European languages in contact*, 63–87. Berlin: De Gruyter Mouton.
- Asadpour, Hiwa & Thomas Jügel (eds.). 2022. *Word order variation: Semitic, Turkic and Indo-European languages in contact*. Berlin: De Gruyter Mouton.
- Bağrıaçık, Metin. 2018. *Pharasiot Greek: Word order and clause structure*. Ghent: Ghent University. (Doctoral dissertation).
- Berez-Kroeker, Andrea L, Lauren Gawne, Susan Smythe Kung, Barbara F Kelly, Tyler Heston, Gary Holton, Peter Pulsifer, David I Beaver, Shobhana Chelliah, Stanley Dubinsky, et al. 2018. Reproducible research in linguistics: A position statement on data citation and attribution in our field. *Linguistics* 56(1). 1–18.
- Bickel, Balthasar. 2017. Areas and universals. In Raymond Hickey (ed.), *The Cambridge handbook of areal linguistics*, 40–54. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Chafe, Wallace. 1980. *The pear stories: Cognitive, cultural, and linguistic aspects of narrative production*. Norwood, NJ: Ablex.
- Comrie, Bernard. 1989. *Language universals and linguistic typology*. 2nd edn. Chicago: University of Chicago Press.
- Craevschi, Alexandru. 2022. *Historical contingency and typological tendencies in languages of Western Asia: A quantitative study of word order of non-subject constituents*. Bamberg: University of Bamberg. (MA thesis).
- Dabir Moghaddam, Mohammad. 2018. Typological approaches and dialects. In Anousha Sedighi & Pouneh Shabani-Jadidi (eds.), *The Oxford handbook of Persian linguistics*, 52–88. Oxford: Oxford University Press.
- Demir, Netice & Mahîr C. Doğan. 2021a. Zazakî (Çewlig). In Geoffrey Haig, Donald Stilo, Mahîr C. Doğan & Nils N. Schiborr (eds.), *WOWA – Word Order in Western Asia: A spoken-language-based corpus for investigating areal effects in word order variation*, Updated 24 April 2024. Bamberg: University of Bamberg. multicast.aspra.uni-bamberg.de/resources/wowa/.
- Demir, Netice & Mahîr C. Doğan. 2021b. Zazakî (Siwêreg). In Geoffrey Haig, Donald Stilo, Mahîr C. Doğan & Nils N. Schiborr (eds.), *WOWA – Word Order in Western Asia: A spoken-language-based corpus for investigating areal effects in*

Geoffrey Haig, Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand, Donald Stilo, Laurentia Schreiber & Nils Schiborr

- word order variation*, Updated 24 April 2024. Bamberg: University of Bamberg. <multicast.aspra.uni-bamberg.de/resources/wowa/>.
- Dogan, Mahîr. 2021a. Oghuz (Erzurum). In Geoffrey Haig, Donald Stilo, Nils N. Schiborr & Mahîr Dogan (eds.), *WOWA — Word Order in Western Asia: A spoken-language-based corpus for investigating areal effects in word order variation*. (accessed on October 20, 2022). Bamberg: University of Bamberg. <multicast.aspra.uni-bamberg.de/resources/wowa/>.
- Dogan, Mahîr. 2021b. Oghuz (Gagauz). In Geoffrey Haig, Donald Stilo, Nils N. Schiborr & Mahîr Dogan (eds.), *WOWA — Word Order in Western Asia: A spoken-language-based corpus for investigating areal effects in word order variation*. Bamberg: University of Bamberg. <multicast.aspra.uni-bamberg.de/resources/wowa/>.
- Dogan, Mahîr. 2022. Vafsi (Gurchani). In Geoffrey Haig, Donald Stilo, Nils N. Schiborr & Mahîr Dogan (eds.), *WOWA — Word Order in Western Asia: A spoken-language-based corpus for investigating areal effects in word order variation*. Bamberg: University of Bamberg. <multicast.aspra.uni-bamberg.de/resources/wowa/>.
- Dryer, Matthew S. 1997. On the six-way word-order typology. *Studies in Language* 21(1). 69–103.
- Dryer, Matthew S. 2007. Word order. In Timothy Shopen (ed.), *Language typology and syntactic description*, vol. 1, 61–131. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Dryer, Matthew S. 2013a. Against the six-way order typology, again. *Studies in Language* 37. 267–301.
- Dryer, Matthew S. 2013b. Order of adposition and noun phrase. In Matthew S. Dryer & Martin Haspelmath (eds.), *The world atlas of language structures online*. Leipzig: Max Planck Institute for Evolutionary Anthropology.
- Dryer, Matthew S. 2013c. Order of object and verb. In Matthew S. Dryer & Martin Haspelmath (eds.), *The world atlas of language structures online*. Leipzig: Max Planck Institute for Evolutionary Anthropology.
- Du Bois, John. 1987. The discourse basis of ergativity. *Language* 63(4). 805–855.
DOI: [10.2307/415719](https://doi.org/10.2307/415719).
- Du Bois, John. 2003. Argument structure: Grammar in use. In John Du Bois, Lorraine Kumpf & William Ashby (eds.), *Preferred argument structure*, 11–60. Amsterdam: Benjamins.
- Faarlund, Jan Terje. 2010. Word order. In Silvia Luraghi & Vít Bubeník (eds.), *Continuum companion to historical linguistics*, 201–211. London/New York: Continuum.

1 Post-predicate elements in the Western Asian Transition Zone

- Faghiri, Pegah & Pollet Samvelian. 2020. Word order preferences and the effect of phrasal length in SOV languages: Evidence from sentence production in Persian. *Glossa: A journal of general linguistics* 5(1). DOI: [10.5334/GJGL.1078](https://doi.org/10.5334/GJGL.1078).
- Faghiri, Pegah, Pollet Samvelian & Barbara Hemforth. 2018. Is there a canonical order in Persian ditransitive constructions? Corpus based and experimental studies. In Agnes Korn & Andrej Malchukov (eds.), *Ditransitive constructions in a cross-linguistic perspective*, 165–185. Wiesbaden: Reichert.
- Forker, Diana. 2024a. Post-predicate elements in Adyghe. In Geoffrey Haig, Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand, Donald Stilo, Laurentia Schreiber & Nils N. Schiborr (eds.), *Post-predicate elements in the Western Asian Transition Zone: A corpus-based approach to areal typology*, 289–315. Berlin: Language Science Press.
- Forker, Diana. 2024b. Post-predicate elements in Kartvelian and East Caucasian. In Geoffrey Haig, Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand, Donald Stilo, Laurentia Schreiber & Nils N. Schiborr (eds.), *Post-predicate elements in the Western Asian Transition Zone: A corpus-based approach to areal typology*, 265–287. Berlin: Language Science Press.
- Friedman, Victor A & Brian D Joseph. 2017. Reassessing Sprachbunds: A view from the Balkans. In Raymond Hickey (ed.), *The Cambridge handbook of areal linguistics*, 55–87. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Frommer, Paul. 1981. *Post-verbal phenomena in colloquial Persian syntax*. Los Angeles: University of Southern California. (Doctoral dissertation).
- Futrell, Richard, Roger P Levy & Edward Gibson. 2020. Dependency locality as an explanatory principle for word order. *Language* 96(2). 371–412.
- Gerdes, Kim, Sylvain Kahane & Xinying Chen. 2021. Typometrics from implicational to quantitative universals in word order typology. *Glossa: A journal of general linguistics* 6(1). 17.1–31.
- Haig, Geoffrey. 2015a. Verb-goal (VG) word order in Kurdish and Neo-Aramaic: Typological and areal considerations. In Geoffrey Khan & Lidia Napiorkowska (eds.), *Neo-Aramaic and its linguistic context*, 407–425. Piscataway, NJ: Gorgias Press.
- Haig, Geoffrey. 2015b. VG-word order in Kurdish and Neo-Aramaic: Typological and areal factors. *Presentation at the Cambridge Neo-Aramaic Conference, Cambridge University, 6-8th July 2011*. Cambridge.
- Haig, Geoffrey. 2017. Western Asia: East Anatolia as a transition zone. In Raymond Hickey (ed.), *The Cambridge handbook of areal linguistics*, 396–423. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Haig, Geoffrey. 2022a. Balochi (Turkmenistan). In Geoffrey Haig, Donald Stilo, Nils N. Schiborr & Mahîr Dogan (eds.), *WOWA – Word Order in Western Asia: A spoken-language-based corpus for investigating areal effects in word order vari-*

Geoffrey Haig, Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand, Donald Stilo, Laurentia Schreiber & Nils Schiborr

- ation. Bamberg: University of Bamberg. multicast.aspra.uni-bamberg.de/resources/wowa/.
- Haig, Geoffrey. 2022b. Kumzari (Musandam). In Geoffrey Haig, Donald Stilo, Nils N. Schiborr & Mahír Dogan (eds.), *WOWA – Word Order in Western Asia: A spoken-language-based corpus for investigating areal effects in word order variation*. Bamberg: University of Bamberg. multicast.aspra.uni-bamberg.de/resources/wowa/.
- Haig, Geoffrey. 2022c. Kurdish (Northern, Muş). In Geoffrey Haig, Donald Stilo, Nils N. Schiborr & Mahír Dogan (eds.), *WOWA – Word Order in Western Asia: A spoken-language-based corpus for investigating areal effects in word order variation*. Bamberg: University of Bamberg. multicast.aspra.uni-bamberg.de/resources/wowa/.
- Haig, Geoffrey. 2022d. Post-predicate constituents in Kurdish. In Yaron Matras, Geoffrey Haig & Ergin Öpentin (eds.), *Structural and typological variation in the dialects of Kurdish*, 335–377. Cham: Springer International Publishing. DOI: [10.1007/978-3-030-78837-7_8](https://doi.org/10.1007/978-3-030-78837-7_8).
- Haig, Geoffrey & Geoffrey Khan. 2019. Introduction. In Geoffrey Haig & Geoffrey Khan (eds.), *The languages and linguistics of Western Asia: An areal perspective*, 1–29. Berlin: De Gruyter Mouton. DOI: [10.1515/9783110421682-001](https://doi.org/10.1515/9783110421682-001).
- Haig, Geoffrey, Paul M. Noorlander & Nils N. Schiborr. in press. Which word order features are stable in a contact setting? Corpus-based evidence from the Western Asian transition zone. In Jeroen Darquennes, Joe Salmons & Wim Vandenbussche (eds.), *Language contact: An international handbook*, vol. 2. Berlin: De Gruyter Mouton.
- Haig, Geoffrey & Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand. 2022. *HamBam: The Hamedan-Bamberg corpus of contemporary spoken Persian*. multicast.aspra.uni-bamberg.de/resources/hambam/ (10 July, 2023).
- Haig, Geoffrey & Nils N. Schiborr. In review. Goals last in grammar and discourse.
- Haig, Geoffrey & Stefan Schnell. 2016. The discourse basis of ergativity revisited. *Language* 92(3). 591–618.
- Haig, Geoffrey & Stefan Schnell. 2023. *Multi-CAST: Multilingual corpus of annotated spoken texts*. (Version 2311). Published: multicast.aspra.uni-bamberg.de/.
- Haig, Geoffrey, Stefan Schnell & Nils N. Schiborr. 2021. Universals of reference in discourse and grammar: Evidence from the multi-CAST collection of spoken corpora. In Geoffrey Haig, Stefan Schnell & Frank Seifart (eds.), *Doing corpus-based typology with spoken language data: State of the art*, 141–177. Honolulu: University of Hawai'i Press.

1 Post-predicate elements in the Western Asian Transition Zone

- Haig, Geoffrey, Donald Stilo, Mahîr C. Doğan & Nils N. Schiborr. 2022. *WOWA – Word Order in Western Asia: A spoken-language-based corpus for investigating areal effects in word order variation*. Bamberg. multicast.aspra.uni-bamberg.de/resources/wowa/.
- Haig, Geoffrey & Hannah Thiele. 2014. Post-predicate Goals in Northern Kurdish and neighbouring a pilot study in quantitative areal linguistics languages. Paper presented at the *Second International Conference on Variation and Change in Kurdish*. Mardin Artuklu University, Turkey. 8-9 October 2014.
- Harris, Alice C. & Lyle Campbell. 1995. *Historical syntax in cross-linguistic perspective*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Haspelmath, Martin. 2015. Ditransitive constructions. *Annual Review of Linguistics* 1(1). 19–41. DOI: [10.1146/annurev-linguist-030514-125204](https://doi.org/10.1146/annurev-linguist-030514-125204).
- Hawkins, John A. 2008. An asymmetry between VO and OV languages: The ordering of obliques. In Greville Corbett & Michael Noonan (eds.), *Case and grammatical relations: Studies in honor of Bernard Comrie*, 167–190. Amsterdam: Benjamins. DOI: doi.org/10.1075/tsl.81.08ana.
- Hodgson, Katherine, Victoria Khurshudyan & Pollet Samvelian. 2024. Post-predicate arguments in Modern Eastern Armenian. In Geoffrey Haig, Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand, Donald Stilo, Laurentia Schreiber & Nils N. Schiborr (eds.), *Post-predicate elements in the Western Asian Transition Zone: A corpus-based approach to areal typology*, 353–385. Berlin: Language Science Press.
- Iefremenko, Kateryna. 2021a. Kurdish (Northern, Ankara). In Geoffrey Haig, Donald Stilo, Mahîr C. Doğan & Nils N. Schiborr (eds.), *WOWA – Word Order in Western Asia: A spoken-language-based corpus for investigating areal effects in word order variation*. (accessed on October 20, 2022). Bamberg: University of Bamberg. multicast.aspra.uni-bamberg.de/resources/wowa.
- Iefremenko, Kateryna. 2021b. Oghuz (Ankara). In Geoffrey Haig, Donald Stilo, Mahîr C. Doğan & Nils N. Schiborr (eds.), *WOWA – Word Order in Western Asia: A spoken-language-based corpus for investigating areal effects in word order variation*. (accessed on April 11, 2023). Bamberg: University of Bamberg. multicast.aspra.uni-bamberg.de/resources/wowa/#turkic.
- Izadi, Elham. 2022. Persian (New). In Geoffrey Haig, Donald Stilo, Nils N. Schiborr & Mahîr Dogan (eds.), *WOWA – Word Order in Western Asia: A spoken-language-based corpus for investigating areal effects in word order variation*. Bamberg: University of Bamberg. multicast.aspra.uni-bamberg.de/resources/wowa/.
- Izadifar, Raheleh. 2022. Tâti (Hazârrudi). In Geoffrey Haig, Donald Stilo, Nils N. Schiborr & Mahîr Dogan (eds.), *WOWA – Word Order in Western Asia: A spoken-language-based corpus for investigating areal effects in word order vari-*

Geoffrey Haig, Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand, Donald Stilo, Laurentia Schreiber & Nils Schiborr

- ation. Bamberg: University of Bamberg. multicast.aspra.uni-bamberg.de/resources/wowa/.
- Jahani, Carina. 2018. Post-verbal arguments in Balochi. Paper presented at *the International Conference on Anatolia-Caucasus-Iran: Ethnic and linguistic contacts (ACIC)*, Yerevan University, 10–12 May.
- Jing, Yingqi, Paul Widmer & Balthasar Bickel. 2021. Word order variation is partially constrained by syntactic complexity. *Cognitive Science* 45(11). 1–25.
- Khan, Geoffrey. 2008a. *The Jewish Neo-Aramaic dialect of Urmi*. Piscataway, NJ: Gorgias Press.
- Khan, Geoffrey. 2008b. *The Neo-Aramaic dialect of Barwar*. Leiden: Brill. <http://dx.doi.org/10.1163/ej.9789004167650.i-2198>.
- Korn, Agnes. 2024. Notes on word order in Bashkardi. In Geoffrey Haig, Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand, Donald Stilo, Laurentia Schreiber & Nils N. Schiborr (eds.), *Post-predicate elements in the Western Asian Transition Zone: A corpus-based approach to areal typology*, 145–162. Berlin: Language Science Press.
- Korn, Agnes & Ilya Gershevitch. 2023a. Bashkardi (Northern): Recordings by Ilya Gershevitch (1914–2001), transcription and analysis by Agnes Korn. In Geoffrey Haig, Donald Stilo, Mahîr C. Doğan & Nils N. Schiborr (eds.), *WOWA – Word Order in Western Asia: A spoken-language-based corpus for investigating areal effects in word order variation*, Updated 10 July 2024. Bamberg: University of Bamberg. multicast.aspra.uni-bamberg.de/resources/wowa/.
- Korn, Agnes & Ilya Gershevitch. 2023b. Bashkardi (Southern): Recordings by Ilya Gershevitch (1914–2001), transcription and analysis by Agnes Korn. In Geoffrey Haig, Donald Stilo, Mahîr C. Doğan & Nils N. Schiborr (eds.), *WOWA – Word Order in Western Asia: A spoken-language-based corpus for investigating areal effects in word order variation*, Updated 10 July 2024. Bamberg: University of Bamberg. multicast.aspra.uni-bamberg.de/resources/wowa/.
- Lazard, Gilbert. 1957. *Grammaire du Persan contemporain*. Paris: Klincksieck.
- Leitner, Bettina. 2021. Arabic (Khuzestan). In Geoffrey Haig, Donald Stilo, Mahîr C. Doğan & Nils N. Schiborr (eds.), *WOWA – Word Order in Western Asia: A spoken-language-based corpus for investigating areal effects in word order variation*. Accessed on 06.03.2023. Bamberg. <http://multicast.aspra.uni-bamberg.de/resources/wowa/>.
- Levshina, Natalia. 2019. Token-based typology and word order entropy: A study based on universal dependencies. *Linguistic Typology* 23(3). 533–572. DOI: [10.1515/lingty-2019-0025](https://doi.org/10.1515/lingty-2019-0025).
- Levshina, Natalia, Savithry Namboodiripad, Marc Allasonnière-Tang, Mathew Kramer, Luigi Talamo, Annemarie Verkerk, Sasha Wilmoth, Gabriela Garrido Rodriguez, Timothy Michael Gupton, Evan Kidd, Zoey Liu, Chiara Naccarato,

1 Post-predicate elements in the Western Asian Transition Zone

- Rachel Nordlinger, Anastasia Panova & Natalia Stoynova. 2023. Why we need a gradient approach to word order. *Linguistics* 61(4). 825–883. DOI: [10.1515/ling-2021-0098](https://doi.org/10.1515/ling-2021-0098).
- MacKenzie, David N. 1962. *Kurdish dialect studies Vol. II*. London/New York: Oxford University Press.
- Mettouchi, Amina & Martine Vanhove. 2021. Prosodic segmentation and cross-linguistic comparison in corpafroas and cortypo: corpus-driven and corpus-based approaches. In Geoffrey Haig, Stefan Schnell & Frank Seifart (eds.), *Doing corpus-based typology with spoken language corpora: State of the art (language documentation & conservation special publication 25)*, 59–113. Honolulu, HI: University of Hawai'i Press.
- Mithun, Marianne. 1992. Is basic word order universal? Grounding and coherence in discourse. In Doris Payne (ed.), *The pragmatics of word-order flexibility*, 15–61. Amsterdam: Benjamins.
- Mohammadirad, Masoud. 2022a. Gorani (Gawrajū). In Geoffrey Haig, Donald Stilo, Mahîr C. Doğan & Nils N. Schiborr (eds.), *WOWA — Word Order in Western Asia: A spoken-language-based corpus for investigating areal effects in word order variation*. Bamberg: Bamberg University Press. multicast.aspra.uni-bamberg.de/resources/wowa/.
- Mohammadirad, Masoud. 2022b. Kurdish (Central, Sanandaj). In Geoffrey Haig, Donald Stilo, Mahîr C. Doğan & Nils N. Schiborr (eds.), *WOWA — Word Order in Western Asia: A spoken-language-based corpus for investigating areal effects in word order variation*. Bamberg: University of Bamberg. multicast.aspra.uni-bamberg.de/resources/wowa/.
- Mohammadirad, Masoud. 2022c. Kurdish (Southern, Bijar). In Geoffrey Haig, Donald Stilo, Mahîr C. Doğan & Nils N. Schiborr (eds.), *WOWA — Word Order in Western Asia: A spoken-language-based corpus for investigating areal effects in word order variation*. Bamberg: Bamberg University Press. multicast.aspra.uni-bamberg.de/resources/wowa/.
- Mohammadirad, Masoud. 2024. Zagros region: The Kurdish-Gorani continuum. In Geoffrey Haig, Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand, Donald Stilo, Laurentia Schreiber & Nils N. Schiborr (eds.), *Post-predicate elements in the Western Asian Transition Zone: A corpus-based approach to areal typology*, 231–264. Berlin: Language Science Press.
- Molin, Dorota. 2022. NE Neo-Aramaic (Jewish Dohok). In Geoffrey Haig, Donald Stilo, Mahîr C. Doğan & Nils N. Schiborr (eds.), *WOWA — Word Order in Western Asia: A spoken-language-based corpus for investigating areal effects in word order variation*. Bamberg: University of Bamberg. multicast.aspra.uni-bamberg.de/resources/wowa (5 July, 2023).

Geoffrey Haig, Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand, Donald Stilo, Laurentia Schreiber & Nils Schiborr

- Neocleous, Nicolaos. 2020. *Word order and information structure in Romeyka: A syntax and semantics interface account of order in a minimalist system*. Cambridge: University of Cambridge. (Doctoral dissertation).
- Nivre, Joakim, Marie-Catherine de Marneffe, Filip Ginter, Jan Hajič, Christopher D Manning, Sampo Pyysalo, Sebastian Schuster, Francis Tyers & Daniel Zeman. 2020. Universal dependencies v2: An evergrowing multilingual treebank collection. In *Proceedings of the 12th language Resources and Evaluation Conference*, 4034–4043. Marseille: European Language Resources Association.
- Noorlander, Paul M. 2022a. Arabic (Jewish, Baghdad). In Geoffrey Haig, Donald Stilo, Mahîr C. Doğan & Nils N. Schiborr (eds.), *WOWA – Word Order in Western Asia: A spoken-language-based corpus for investigating areal effects in word order variation*. Bamberg: University of Bamberg. multicast.aspra.uni-bamberg.de/resources/wowa/.
- Noorlander, Paul M. 2022b. NE Neo-Aramaic (Jewish Sanandaj). In Geoffrey Haig, Donald Stilo, Mahîr C. Doğan & Nils N. Schiborr (eds.), *WOWA – Word Order in Western Asia: A spoken-language-based corpus for investigating areal effects in word order variation*. Bamberg: University of Bamberg. multicast.aspra.uni-bamberg.de/resources/wowa/.
- Noorlander, Paul M. 2024a. Arabic and Aramaic in eastern Anatolia. In Geoffrey Haig, Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand, Donald Stilo, Laurentia Schreiber & Nils N. Schiborr (eds.), *Post-predicate elements in the Western Asian Transition Zone: A corpus-based approach to areal typology*, 443–482. Berlin: Language Science Press.
- Noorlander, Paul M. 2024b. Neo-Aramaic in Iran and northeastern Iraq. In Geoffrey Haig, Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand, Donald Stilo, Laurentia Schreiber & Nils N. Schiborr (eds.), *Post-predicate elements in the Western Asian Transition Zone: A corpus-based approach to areal typology*, 405–441. Berlin: Language Science Press.
- Nourzaei, Maryam. 2021a. Balochi (Coastal). In Geoffrey Haig, Donald Stilo, Nils N. Schiborr & Mahîr Dogan (eds.), *WOWA – Word Order in Western Asia: A spoken-language-based corpus for investigating areal effects in word order variation*. Bamberg: University of Bamberg. multicast.aspra.uni-bamberg.de/resources/wowa/.
- Nourzaei, Maryam. 2021b. Balochi (Koroshi). In Geoffrey Haig, Donald Stilo, Nils N. Schiborr & Mahîr Dogan (eds.), *WOWA – Word Order in Western Asia: A spoken-language-based corpus for investigating areal effects in word order variation*. Bamberg: University of Bamberg. multicast.aspra.uni-bamberg.de/resources/wowa/.

1 Post-predicate elements in the Western Asian Transition Zone

- Nourzaei, Maryam. 2022. Kholosi (Kholos). In Geoffrey Haig, Donald Stilo, Mahîr C. Doğan & Nils N. Schiborr (eds.), *WOWA — Word Order in Western Asia: A spoken-language-based corpus for investigating areal effects in word order variation*. Bamberg: University of Bamberg. multicast.aspra.uni-bamberg.de/resources/wowa/.
- Nourzaei, Maryam. 2024. Kholosi. In Geoffrey Haig, Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand, Donald Stilo, Laurentia Schreiber & Nils N. Schiborr (eds.), *Post-predicate elements in the Western Asian Transition Zone: A corpus-based approach to areal typology*, 163–182. Berlin: Language Science Press.
- Nourzaei, Maryam & Geoffrey Haig. 2024. Balochi: A cross-dialect investigation of post-verbal elements. In Geoffrey Haig, Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand, Donald Stilo, Laurentia Schreiber & Nils N. Schiborr (eds.), *Post-predicate elements in the Western Asian Transition Zone: A corpus-based approach to areal typology*, 111–143. Berlin: Language Science Press.
- Parizadeh, Mehdi. 2022. Persian (Early new). In Geoffrey Haig, Donald Stilo, Mahîr C. Doğan & Nils N. Schiborr (eds.), *WOWA — Word Order in Western Asia: A spoken-language-based corpus for investigating areal effects in word order variation*. Bamberg: University of Bamberg. multicast.aspra.uni-bamberg.de/resources/wowa/.
- Parizadeh, Mehdi & Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand. 2024. Post-predicate elements in Early New Persian (10-13th Century CE). In Geoffrey Haig, Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand, Donald Stilo, Laurentia Schreiber & Nils N. Schiborr (eds.), *Post-predicate elements in the Western Asian Transition Zone: A corpus-based approach to areal typology*, 217–229. Berlin: Language Science Press.
- Petersen, Jan Heegård. 2015. Kalasha texts with introductory grammar. *Acta Linguistica Hafniensia* 47(S1). 1–275. DOI: [10.1080/03740463.2015.1069049](https://doi.org/10.1080/03740463.2015.1069049).
- Rasekh-Mahand, Mohammad, Elham Izadi, Mehdi Parizadeh, Geoffrey Haig & Nils N. Schiborr. 2024. Post-predicate elements in modern colloquial Persian: A multifactorial analysis. In Geoffrey Haig, Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand, Donald Stilo, Laurentia Schreiber & Nils N. Schiborr (eds.), *Post-predicate elements in the Western Asian Transition Zone: A corpus-based approach to areal typology*, 183–216. Berlin: Language Science Press.
- Robbeets, Martine. 2017. The Transeurasian languages. In Raymond Hickey (ed.), *The Cambridge handbook of areal linguistics*, 586–626. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Schnell, Stefan, Geoffrey Haig, Nils N. Schiborr & Maria Vollmer. 2023. Are referent introductions sensitive to forward planning in discourse? Evidence from Multi-CAST. In Simone Mattiola & Alessandra Barotto (eds.), *Discourse phenomena in typological perspective*, 231–268. Amsterdam: Benjamins.

Geoffrey Haig, Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand, Donald Stilo, Laurentia Schreiber & Nils Schiborr

- Schnell, Stefan, Geoffrey Haig & Frank Seifart. 2021. The role of language documentation in corpus-based typology. In Geoffrey Haig & Stefan Schnell (eds.), *Doing corpus-based typology with spoken language data: State of the art*, 1–28. ISSN: 19345275. Honolulu: University of Hawai'i Press.
- Schnell, Stefan & Nils N. Schiborr. 2022. Crosslinguistic corpus studies in linguistic typology. *Annual Review of Linguistics* 8(1). 171–191. DOI: [10.1146/annurev-linguistics-031120-104629](https://doi.org/10.1146/annurev-linguistics-031120-104629).
- Schreiber, Laurentia. 2021a. Oghuz (Qashqai). In Geoffrey Haig, Donald Stilo, Nils N. Schiborr & Mahîr Dogan (eds.), *WOWA – Word Order in Western Asia: A spoken-language-based corpus for investigating areal effects in word order variation*. Bamberg: University of Bamberg. multicast.aspra.uni-bamberg.de/resources/wowa/.
- Schreiber, Laurentia. 2021b. Pontic Greek (Romeyka). In Geoffrey Haig, Donald Stilo, Nils N. Schiborr & Mahîr Dogan (eds.), *WOWA – Word Order in Western Asia: A spoken-language-based corpus for investigating areal effects in word order variation*. Bamberg: University of Bamberg. multicast.aspra.uni-bamberg.de/resources/wowa/.
- Schreiber, Laurentia, Mortaza Taheri-Ardali, Geoffrey Haig & Erik Anonby. 2021. Contact-induced change in the morphosyntax of Turkic in Boldaji, Chahar Mahal va Bakhtiari province, Iran. *Turkic Languages* 25(2). 210–242.
- Seifart, Frank, Ludger Paschen & Matthew Stave (eds.). 2022. *Language documentation reference corpus (DoReCo)*. Berlin/Lyon: Leibniz-Zentrum Allgemeine Sprachwissenschaft & Laboratoire Dynamique Du Langage. DOI: [10.34847/nkl.7cbfq779](https://doi.org/10.34847/nkl.7cbfq779).
- Siewierska, Anna. 1988. *Word order rules*. London: Croom Helm.
- Skopeteas, Stavros. 2024. Post-predicate prosody in OV languages. In Geoffrey Haig, Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand, Donald Stilo, Laurentia Schreiber & Nils N. Schiborr (eds.), *Post-predicate elements in the Western Asian Transition Zone: A corpus-based approach to areal typology*, 81–110. Berlin: Language Science Press.
- Song, Jae Jung. 2018. *Linguistic typology*. Oxford: Oxford University Press.
- Stilo, Don. 2021a. Talyshi (Lerik). In Geoffrey Haig, Donald Stilo, Nils N. Schiborr & Mahîr Dogan (eds.), *WOWA – Word Order in Western Asia: A spoken-language-based corpus for investigating areal effects in word order variation*. Bamberg: University of Bamberg. multicast.aspra.uni-bamberg.de/resources/wowa/.
- Stilo, Don. 2022a. Kurdish (Northern, Lachin). In Geoffrey Haig, Donald Stilo, Nils N. Schiborr & Mahîr Dogan (eds.), *WOWA – Word Order in Western Asia: A spoken-language-based corpus for investigating areal effects in word order vari-*

1 Post-predicate elements in the Western Asian Transition Zone

- ation. Bamberg: University of Bamberg. multicast.aspra.uni-bamberg.de/resources/wowa/.
- Stilo, Donald. 2005. Iranian as a buffer zone between the universal typology of Turkic and Semitic. In Éva Csató, Bo Isaksson & Carina Jahani (eds.), *Linguistic convergence and areal diffusion. Case studies from Iranian, Semitic and Turkic*, 35–63. London/New York: Routledge Curzon.
- Stilo, Donald. 2006. Circumpositions as an areal response: The case study of the Iranian zone. In Lars Johanson & Christiane Bulut (eds.), *Turkic-Iranian contact areas: Historical and linguistic aspects*, 310–333. Wiesbaden: Harrassowitz.
- Stilo, Donald. 2009. Circumpositions as an areal response: the case study of the Iranian zone. *Turkic Languages* 13. 3–33.
- Stilo, Donald. 2012. Intersection zones, overlapping isoglosses, and “Fade-out/Fade-in” phenomena in Central Iran. In Mohammad R. Ghanoonparvar & Behrad Aghaei (eds.), *Iranian languages and culture: Essays in honor of Gernot Ludwig Windfuhr*, 134–155. Costa Mesa, CA: Mazda Publisher.
- Stilo, Donald. 2018a. Investigating shared features in the Araxes-Iran linguistic area and its subareas. In Christiane Bulut (ed.), *Linguistic minorities in Turkey and Turkic-speaking minorities of the periphery*, 427–452. Wiesbaden: Harrassowitz.
- Stilo, Donald. 2018b. Preverbal and postverbal peripheral arguments in the Araxes-Iran linguistic area. Paper presented at the *Conference Anatolia-Caucasus-Iran: Ethnic and Linguistic Contacts* 10–12 May 2018. Yerevan University, Yerevan, Armenia.
- Stilo, Donald. 2021b. Oghuz (Tabriz). In Geoffrey Haig, Donald Stilo, Nils N. Schiborr & Mahîr Dogan (eds.), *WOWA – Word Order in Western Asia: A spoken-language-based corpus for investigating areal effects in word order variation*. Bamberg: University of Bamberg. multicast.aspra.uni-bamberg.de/resources/wowa/.
- Stilo, Donald. 2022b. NE Neo-Aramaic (Christian) Barwar. In Geoffrey Haig, Donald Stilo, Mahîr C. Doğan & Nils N. Schiborr (eds.), *WOWA – Word Order in Western Asia: A spoken-language-based corpus for investigating areal effects in word order variation*. Bamberg: Bemberg University. multicast.aspra.uni-bamberg.de/resources/wowa/.
- Stilo, Donald & Geoffrey Haig. 2022. Mazandarani (Kordxeyl). In Geoffrey Haig, Donald Stilo, Nils N. Schiborr & Mahîr Dogan (eds.), *WOWA – Word Order in Western Asia: A spoken-language-based corpus for investigating areal effects in word order variation*. Bamberg: University of Bamberg. multicast.aspra.uni-bamberg.de/resources/wowa/.

Geoffrey Haig, Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand, Donald Stilo, Laurentia Schreiber & Nils Schiborr

- Stilo, Donald & René Lacroix. 2021. Laz (Arhavi). In Geoffrey Haig, Donald Stilo, Mahîr C. Doğan & Nils N. Schiborr (eds.), *WOWA — Word Order in Western Asia: A spoken-language-based corpus for investigating areal effects in word order variation*. Bamberg: University of Bamberg. multicast.aspra.uni-bamberg.de/resources/wowa/.
- Szeto, Pui Yiu & Chingduang Yurayong. 2021. Sinitic as a typological sandwich: Revisiting the notions of altaicization and taicization. *Linguistic Typology* 25(3). 551–599.
- Wälchli, Bernhard. 2009. Data reduction typology and the bimodal distribution bias. *Linguistic Typology* 13(1). 77–94.
- Wasow, Thomas. 2022. Factors influencing word ordering. In Hiwa Asadpour & Thomas Jügel (eds.), *Word order variation: Semitic, Turkic and Indo-European languages in contact*, 1–14. Berlin: De Gruyter Mouton.
- Yamashita, Hiroko & Franklin Chang. 2001. "Long before short" preference in the production of a head-final language. *Cognition* 81(2). B45–B55. DOI: [10.1016/S0010-0277\(01\)00121-4](https://doi.org/10.1016/S0010-0277(01)00121-4).
- Yao, Yao. 2018. NP weight effects in word order variation in Mandarin Chinese. *Lingua Sinica* 4(5). 1–31.

Appendices: Data sources and raw figures

1 Post-predicate elements in the Western Asian Transition Zone

Table 6: 35 doculects in WOWA (April 2024). Legend for abbreviations: OV = object-verb word order; VO = verb-object word order; NENA = North Eastern Neo-Aramaic. “Unpubl.” indicates data-sets which are fully annotated, but due to unresolved accessibility issues cannot be published online; they are available on request from the first author of this chapter.

| doculect | affiliation | source |
|---------------------------------------|--------------------|--------------------------|
| <i>Oghuz (Ankara)</i> | ● Turkic | Iefremenko 2021b |
| <i>Oghuz (Bayat)</i> | ● Turkic | Unpubl. |
| <i>Oghuz (Erzurum)</i> | ● Turkic | Dogan 2021a |
| <i>Oghuz (Gagauz)</i> | ● Turkic | Dogan 2021b |
| <i>Oghuz (Qashqai)</i> | ● Turkic | Schreiber 2021a |
| <i>Oghuz (Tabriz)</i> | ● Turkic | Stilo 2021b |
| <i>Balochi (Coastal)</i> | ◆ Iranian, western | Nourzaei 2021a |
| <i>Balochi (Koroshi)</i> | ◆ Iranian, western | Nourzaei 2021b |
| <i>Balochi (Turkmen)</i> | ◆ Iranian, western | Haig 2022a |
| <i>Bashkardi (Northern)</i> | ◆ Iranian, western | Korn & Gershevitch 2023a |
| <i>Bashkardi (Southern)</i> | ◆ Iranian, western | Korn & Gershevitch 2023b |
| <i>Gorani (Gawraju)</i> | ◆ Iranian, western | Mohammadirad 2022a |
| <i>Kumzari (Musandam)</i> | ◆ Iranian, western | Haig 2022b |
| <i>Kurdish (Central, Sanandaj)</i> | ◆ Iranian, western | Mohammadirad 2022b |
| <i>Kurdish (Northern, Ankara)</i> | ◆ Iranian, western | Iefremenko 2021a |
| <i>Kurdish (Northern, Lachin)</i> | ◆ Iranian, western | Stilo 2022a |
| <i>Kurdish (Northern, Muš)</i> | ◆ Iranian, western | Haig 2022c |
| <i>Kurdish (Southern, Bijar)</i> | ◆ Iranian, western | Mohammadirad 2022c |
| <i>Mazandarani (Kordxeyl)</i> | ◆ Iranian, western | Stilo & Haig 2022 |
| <i>Persian (New)</i> | ◆ Iranian, western | Izadi 2022 |
| <i>Persian (New, Early Classical)</i> | ◆ Iranian, western | Parizadeh 2022 |
| <i>Talyshi (Lerik)</i> | ◆ Iranian, western | Stilo 2021a |
| <i>Tat (Daykušu)</i> | ◆ Iranian, western | Unpubl. |
| <i>Tati (Hazārudi)</i> | ◆ Iranian, western | Izadifar 2022 |
| <i>Vafsi (Gurchani)</i> | ◆ Iranian, western | Dogan 2022 |
| <i>Zazakî (Çewlig)</i> | ◆ Iranian, western | Demir & Doğan 2021a |
| <i>Zazakî (Swêreg)</i> | ◆ Iranian, western | Demir & Doğan 2021b |
| <i>NENA (Christian, Barwar)</i> | ▲ West Semitic | Stilo 2022b |
| <i>NENA (Jewish, Dohok)</i> | ▲ West Semitic | Molin 2022 |
| <i>NENA (Jewish, Sanandaj)</i> | ▲ West Semitic | Noorlander 2022b |
| <i>Arabic (Jewish, Baghdad)</i> | ▲ West Semitic | Noorlander 2022a |
| <i>Arabic (Khuzestan)</i> | ▲ West Semitic | Leitner 2021 |
| <i>Kholosi (Kholos)</i> | ★ Indo-Aryan | Nourzaei 2022 |
| <i>Laz (Arhavi)</i> | ★ Kartvelian | Stilo & Lacroix 2021 |
| <i>Pontic Greek (Romeyka)</i> | ◆ Hellenic | Schreiber 2021b |

Geoffrey Haig, Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand, Donald Stilo, Laurentia Schreiber & Nils Schiborr

Table 7: Raw figures for the WOWA data sets, corpus size and mean token weights in words and characters

| doclect | texts | words | tokens | valid | | token weight in words | | token weight in characters | |
|---------------------------------------|-------|-------|--------|-------|------|-----------------------|------|----------------------------|----|
| | | | | mean | SD | mean | SD | mean | SD |
| <i>Oghuz (Ankara)</i> | 28 | 4145 | 587 | 1.42 | 0.68 | 8.80 | 5.18 | | |
| <i>Oghuz (Bayat)</i> | 1 | 3037 | 835 | 1.46 | 0.72 | 7.62 | 4.17 | | |
| <i>Oghuz (Erzurum)</i> | 3 | 3860 | 636 | 1.35 | 0.58 | 7.63 | 3.77 | | |
| <i>Oghuz (Gagauz)</i> | 2 | 5220 | 594 | 1.39 | 0.65 | 7.63 | 4.12 | | |
| <i>Oghuz (Qashqai)</i> | 5 | 2915 | 557 | 1.52 | 0.82 | 7.84 | 4.56 | | |
| <i>Oghuz (Tabriz)</i> | 13 | 3468 | 851 | 1.47 | 0.71 | 8.37 | 4.88 | | |
| <i>Balochi (Coastal)</i> | 3 | 6768 | 1535 | 1.42 | 0.60 | 8.11 | 4.79 | | |
| <i>Balochi (Koroshi)</i> | 2 | 3083 | 573 | 1.53 | 0.73 | 9.11 | 4.63 | | |
| <i>Balochi (Turkmen)</i> | 4 | 4323 | 580 | 1.60 | 0.84 | 8.25 | 4.94 | | |
| <i>Bashkardi (Southern)</i> | 5 | 947 | 234 | 1.35 | 0.63 | 6.85 | 3.37 | | |
| <i>Bashkardi (Northern)</i> | 6 | 2744 | 596 | | | | | | |
| <i>Gorani (Gawraju)</i> | 7 | 8782 | 1015 | 1.35 | 0.64 | 7.21 | 4.12 | | |
| <i>Kumzari (Musandam)</i> | 2 | 4496 | 592 | 1.25 | 0.58 | 5.49 | 3.04 | | |
| <i>Kurdish (Central, Sanandaj)</i> | 11 | 8502 | 1180 | 1.37 | 0.62 | 7.48 | 3.91 | | |
| <i>Kurdish (Northern, Ankara)</i> | 30 | 4728 | 507 | 1.45 | 0.60 | 8.03 | 4.31 | | |
| <i>Kurdish (Northern, Lachin)</i> | 28 | 3714 | 773 | 1.84 | 0.76 | 7.37 | 4.25 | | |
| <i>Kurdish (Northern, Mus)</i> | 2 | 2711 | 693 | 1.47 | 0.64 | 4.84 | 1.99 | | |
| <i>Kurdish (Southern, Bijar)</i> | 8 | 7251 | 1150 | 1.45 | 0.72 | 7.53 | 4.61 | | |
| <i>Mazandarani (Kordxeyl)</i> | 7 | 3193 | 676 | 1.56 | 0.70 | 7.30 | 4.16 | | |
| <i>Persian (New)</i> | 30 | 12564 | 1628 | 1.65 | 0.84 | 9.71 | 6.02 | | |
| <i>Persian (New, Early Classical)</i> | 3 | 6751 | 1278 | 1.59 | 0.86 | 9.40 | 6.67 | | |
| <i>Talyshi (Lerik)</i> | 3 | 2872 | 650 | 1.76 | 0.73 | 7.16 | 3.80 | | |
| <i>Tat (Daykusu)</i> | 1 | 1316 | 320 | 1.38 | 0.54 | 7.38 | 3.52 | | |
| <i>Tati (Hazarrudi)</i> | 8 | 4068 | 665 | 1.37 | 0.68 | 7.00 | 4.08 | | |
| <i>Vafsi (Gurchani)</i> | 10 | 4751 | 733 | 1.56 | 0.76 | 7.89 | 3.75 | | |
| <i>Zazaki (Cewlig)</i> | 1 | 2444 | 410 | 1.43 | 0.66 | 5.89 | 3.28 | | |
| <i>Zazaki (Siwereg)</i> | 1 | 1972 | 352 | 1.39 | 0.59 | 5.99 | 3.19 | | |
| <i>NENA (Christian, Barwar)</i> | 5 | 3517 | 963 | 1.38 | 0.66 | 7.83 | 4.68 | | |
| <i>NENA (Jewish, Dohok)</i> | 11 | 3295 | 514 | 1.26 | 0.54 | 6.85 | 3.56 | | |
| <i>NENA (Jewish, Sanandaj)</i> | 4 | 7166 | 1184 | 1.25 | 0.52 | 6.74 | 3.05 | | |
| <i>Arabic (Jewish, Baghdad)</i> | 4 | 3057 | 490 | 1.39 | 0.68 | 9.01 | 5.14 | | |
| <i>Arabic (Khuzestan)</i> | 6 | 6391 | 546 | 1.33 | 0.65 | 7.90 | 3.94 | | |
| <i>Kholosi (Kholos)</i> | 2 | 3171 | 516 | 1.54 | 0.77 | 8.72 | 4.89 | | |
| <i>Laz (Arhavi)</i> | 11 | 1389 | 400 | 1.22 | 0.51 | 7.72 | 4.43 | | |
| <i>Pontic Greek (Romeyka)</i> | 5 | 2946 | 501 | 1.66 | 0.72 | 8.37 | 3.76 | | |

1 *Post-predicate elements in the Western Asian Transition Zone*

Table 8: Raw figures of the WOWA data sets, rates of post-verbal placement of nominal direct objects and goals

| doclect | nominal direct objects | | | nominal goals | | |
|---------------------------------------|------------------------|--------|---------|---------------|--------|---------|
| | n(post) | n(all) | %(post) | n(post) | n(all) | %(post) |
| <i>Oghuz (Ankara)</i> | 2 | 88 | 2 | 9 | 123 | 7 |
| <i>Oghuz (Bayat)</i> | 10 | 283 | 4 | 75 | 117 | 64 |
| <i>Oghuz (Erzurum)</i> | 16 | 229 | 7 | 46 | 120 | 38 |
| <i>Oghuz (Gagauz)</i> | 78 | 154 | 51 | 64 | 88 | 73 |
| <i>Oghuz (Qashqai)</i> | 12 | 147 | 8 | 58 | 82 | 71 |
| <i>Oghuz (Tabriz)</i> | 2 | 219 | 1 | 88 | 117 | 75 |
| <i>Balochi (Coastal)</i> | 23 | 338 | 7 | 71 | 112 | 63 |
| <i>Balochi (Koroshi)</i> | 4 | 182 | 2 | 77 | 86 | 90 |
| <i>Balochi (Turkmen)</i> | 3 | 192 | 2 | 20 | 42 | 48 |
| <i>Bashkardi (Southern)</i> | 8 | 73 | 11 | 41 | 51 | 80 |
| <i>Bashkardi (Northern)</i> | 50 | 182 | 27 | 58 | 92 | 63 |
| <i>Gorani (Gawraju)</i> | 13 | 275 | 5 | 233 | 243 | 96 |
| <i>Kumzari (Musandam)</i> | 8 | 115 | 7 | 83 | 83 | 100 |
| <i>Kurdish (Central, Sanandaj)</i> | 3 | 295 | 1 | 267 | 283 | 94 |
| <i>Kurdish (Northern, Ankara)</i> | 0 | 81 | 0 | 70 | 119 | 59 |
| <i>Kurdish (Northern, Lachin)</i> | 3 | 197 | 2 | 90 | 111 | 81 |
| <i>Kurdish (Northern, Muš)</i> | 6 | 217 | 3 | 107 | 120 | 89 |
| <i>Kurdish (Southern, Bijar)</i> | 7 | 298 | 2 | 272 | 281 | 97 |
| <i>Mazandarani (Kordxeyl)</i> | 8 | 319 | 3 | 68 | 108 | 63 |
| <i>Persian (New)</i> | 19 | 377 | 5 | 218 | 258 | 84 |
| <i>Persian (New, Early Classical)</i> | 4 | 257 | 2 | 1 | 21 | 5 |
| <i>Talyshi (Lerik)</i> | 4 | 164 | 2 | 73 | 102 | 72 |
| <i>Tat (Daykuscu)</i> | 15 | 100 | 15 | 35 | 45 | 78 |
| <i>Tati (Hazarrudi)</i> | 4 | 153 | 3 | 111 | 121 | 92 |
| <i>Vafsi (Gurchani)</i> | 4 | 257 | 2 | 146 | 166 | 88 |
| <i>Zazaki (Cewlig)</i> | 4 | 85 | 5 | 90 | 99 | 91 |
| <i>Zazaki (Siwereg)</i> | 4 | 86 | 5 | 46 | 46 | 100 |
| <i>NENA (Christian, Barwar)</i> | 262 | 315 | 83 | 105 | 109 | 96 |
| <i>NENA (Jewish, Dohok)</i> | 188 | 210 | 90 | 105 | 106 | 99 |
| <i>NENA (Jewish, Sanandaj)</i> | 18 | 331 | 5 | 171 | 185 | 92 |
| <i>Arabic (Jewish, Baghdad)</i> | 159 | 164 | 97 | 77 | 77 | 100 |
| <i>Arabic (Khuzestan)</i> | 267 | 308 | 87 | 77 | 81 | 95 |
| <i>Kholosi (Kholos)</i> | 2 | 138 | 1 | 34 | 55 | 62 |
| <i>Laz (Arhavi)</i> | 4 | 128 | 3 | 2 | 54 | 4 |
| <i>Pontic Greek (Romeyka)</i> | 116 | 175 | 66 | 62 | 78 | 7 |

Geoffrey Haig, Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand, Donald Stilo, Laurentia Schreiber & Nils Schiborr

Table 9: Raw figures of the WOWA data sets, rates of post-verbal placement of pronominal direct objects and goals

| doculect | pronominal direct objects | | | pronominal goals | | |
|---------------------------------------|---------------------------|--------|---------|------------------|--------|---------|
| | n(post) | n(all) | %(post) | n(post) | n(all) | %(post) |
| <i>Oghuz (Ankara)</i> | 1 | 14 | 7 | 2 | 19 | 11 |
| <i>Oghuz (Bayat)</i> | 6 | 70 | 9 | 4 | 8 | 50 |
| <i>Oghuz (Erzurum)</i> | 4 | 54 | 7 | 1 | 11 | 9 |
| <i>Oghuz (Gagauz)</i> | 26 | 64 | 41 | 7 | 11 | 64 |
| <i>Oghuz (Qashqai)</i> | 1 | 28 | 4 | 6 | 11 | 55 |
| <i>Oghuz (Tabriz)</i> | 6 | 59 | 10 | 11 | 16 | 69 |
| <i>Balochi (Coastal)</i> | 27 | 99 | 27 | 1 | 2 | 50 |
| <i>Balochi (Koroshi)</i> | 0 | 18 | 0 | 0 | 1 | 0 |
| <i>Balochi (Turkmen)</i> | 2 | 55 | 4 | 0 | 5 | 0 |
| <i>Bashkardi (Southern)</i> | 0 | 9 | 0 | 0 | 1 | 0 |
| <i>Bashkardi (Northern)</i> | 2 | 23 | 9 | 1 | 5 | 20 |
| <i>Gorani (Gawraju)</i> | 0 | 32 | 0 | 3 | 4 | 75 |
| <i>Kumzari (Musandam)</i> | 52 | 81 | 64 | 40 | 40 | 100 |
| <i>Kurdish (Central, Sanandaj)</i> | 0 | 24 | 0 | 11 | 13 | 85 |
| <i>Kurdish (Northern, Ankara)</i> | 1 | 11 | 9 | 5 | 9 | 56 |
| <i>Kurdish (Northern, Lachin)</i> | 0 | 34 | 0 | 3 | 5 | 60 |
| <i>Kurdish (Northern, Muš)</i> | 2 | 41 | 5 | 4 | 12 | 33 |
| <i>Kurdish (Southern, Bijar)</i> | 0 | 45 | 0 | 2 | 2 | 100 |
| <i>Mazandarani (Kordxeyl)</i> | 6 | 62 | 10 | 8 | 13 | 62 |
| <i>Persian (New)</i> | 1 | 63 | 2 | 1 | 3 | 33 |
| <i>Persian (New, Early Classical)</i> | 0 | 63 | 0 | 0 | 4 | 0 |
| <i>Talyshi (Lerik)</i> | 2 | 73 | 3 | 8 | 14 | 57 |
| <i>Tat (Daykucusu)</i> | 7 | 17 | 41 | 4 | 4 | 100 |
| <i>Tati (Hazarrudi)</i> | 4 | 60 | 7 | 13 | 17 | 76 |
| <i>Vafsi (Gurchan)</i> | 3 | 46 | 7 | 2 | 2 | 100 |
| <i>Zazaki (Cewlig)</i> | 4 | 41 | 10 | 11 | 13 | 85 |
| <i>Zazaki (Siwereg)</i> | 3 | 30 | 10 | 3 | 7 | 43 |
| <i>NENA (Christian, Barwar)</i> | 15 | 44 | 34 | 14 | 17 | 82 |
| <i>NENA (Jewish, Dohok)</i> | 21 | 31 | 68 | 6 | 6 | 100 |
| <i>NENA (Jewish, Sanandaj)</i> | 1 | 48 | 2 | 17 | 21 | 81 |
| <i>Arabic (Jewish, Baghdad)</i> | 13 | 18 | 72 | 0 | 2 | 0 |
| <i>Arabic (Khuzestan)</i> | 5 | 10 | 50 | 0 | 1 | 0 |
| <i>Kholosi (Kholos)</i> | 2 | 16 | 12 | 1 | 1 | 100 |
| <i>Laz (Arhavi)</i> | 0 | 35 | 0 | 0 | 5 | 0 |

1 Post-predicate elements in the Western Asian Transition Zone

Table 10: Raw figures for the WOVA data sets, rates of post-verbal placement of nominal and pronominal addressees/recipients and various other obliques (locations, sources, instruments, benefactives, comitatives)

| doculect | recipients/addressees | | | other obliques | | |
|---------------------------------------|-----------------------|--------|---------|----------------|--------|---------|
| | n(post) | n(all) | %(post) | n(post) | n(all) | %(post) |
| <i>Oghuz (Ankara)</i> | 3 | 16 | 19 | 13 | 199 | 7 |
| <i>Oghuz (Bayat)</i> | 21 | 49 | 43 | 20 | 152 | 13 |
| <i>Oghuz (Erzurum)</i> | 4 | 52 | 8 | 10 | 116 | 9 |
| <i>Oghuz (Gagauz)</i> | 7 | 15 | 47 | 43 | 114 | 38 |
| <i>Oghuz (Qashqai)</i> | 7 | 8 | 88 | 13 | 81 | 16 |
| <i>Oghuz (Tabriz)</i> | 11 | 53 | 21 | 24 | 190 | 13 |
| <i>Balochi (Coastal)</i> | 31 | 112 | 28 | 25 | 138 | 18 |
| <i>Balochi (Koroshi)</i> | 10 | 24 | 42 | 17 | 64 | 27 |
| <i>Balochi (Turkmen)</i> | 3 | 21 | 14 | 7 | 110 | 6 |
| <i>Bashkardi (Southern)</i> | 3 | 8 | 38 | 5 | 14 | 36 |
| <i>Bashkardi (Northern)</i> | 23 | 41 | 56 | 15 | 49 | 31 |
| <i>Gorani (Gawraju)</i> | 27 | 33 | 82 | 37 | 102 | 36 |
| <i>Kumzari (Musandam)</i> | 93 | 96 | 97 | 61 | 70 | 87 |
| <i>Kurdish (Central, Sanandaj)</i> | 21 | 22 | 95 | 44 | 200 | 22 |
| <i>Kurdish (Northern, Ankara)</i> | 2 | 15 | 13 | 12 | 209 | 6 |
| <i>Kurdish (Northern, Lachin)</i> | 22 | 55 | 40 | 9 | 244 | 4 |
| <i>Kurdish (Northern, Muš)</i> | 16 | 45 | 36 | 7 | 139 | 5 |
| <i>Kurdish (Southern, Bijar)</i> | 11 | 41 | 27 | 17 | 148 | 11 |
| <i>Mazandarani (Kordxeyl)</i> | 6 | 50 | 12 | 9 | 119 | 8 |
| <i>Persian (New)</i> | 17 | 67 | 25 | 51 | 262 | 19 |
| <i>Persian (New, Early Classical)</i> | 0 | 41 | 0 | 16 | 176 | 9 |
| <i>Talyshi (Lerik)</i> | 23 | 51 | 45 | 37 | 142 | 26 |
| <i>Tat (Daykuscu)</i> | 12 | 35 | 34 | 17 | 57 | 30 |
| <i>Tati (Hazarrudi)</i> | 9 | 17 | 53 | 33 | 212 | 16 |
| <i>Vafsi (Gurchani)</i> | 14 | 37 | 38 | 8 | 72 | 11 |
| <i>Zazaki (Cewlig)</i> | 4 | 27 | 15 | 0 | 49 | 0 |
| <i>Zazaki (Siwerek)</i> | 15 | 29 | 52 | 4 | 49 | 8 |
| <i>NENA (Christian, Barwar)</i> | 13 | 13 | 100 | 148 | 200 | 74 |
| <i>NENA (Jewish, Dohok)</i> | 41 | 42 | 98 | 50 | 54 | 93 |
| <i>NENA (Jewish, Sanandaj)</i> | 58 | 72 | 81 | 57 | 141 | 40 |
| <i>Arabic (Jewish, Baghdad)</i> | 11 | 11 | 100 | 70 | 82 | 85 |
| <i>Arabic (Khuzestan)</i> | 5 | 5 | 100 | 32 | 34 | 94 |
| <i>Kholosi (Kholos)</i> | 7 | 18 | 39 | 1 | 84 | 1 |
| <i>Laz (Arhavi)</i> | 2 | 36 | 6 | 1 | 87 | 1 |
| <i>Pontic Greek (Romeyka)</i> | 3 | 5 | 60 | 43 | 114 | 38 |

Chapter 2

Word order in the speech of Kurmanji-Turkish bilinguals

Kateryna Iefremenko^{a,b}

^aLeibniz-Centre General Linguistics ^bUniversity of Potsdam

The paper investigates word order, particularly the domain of post-predicate position, in Turkish and Kurmanji as two languages located in the Western Asian Transition Zone that are in an intense and long-term contact with each other. Both languages are OV; however, each of them allows placement of constituents in post-predicate position. The results of the analysis show that there is an effect of flagging and semantic role in Kurmanji, which is in line with previous research on word order in Kurmanji, and an effect of weight in Turkish on the employment of post-predicate elements. At the same time, the qualitative analysis showed that there are instances of noncanonical placement of case-flagged goals in Kurmanji that occur in one particular construction *erdê ketin* ‘to fall on the ground.’

1 Introduction

In this paper, I investigate a possible structural convergence in the word order, namely the post-predicate domain, of Turkish and Kurmanji as two languages located in the Western Asian Transition Zone (for a definition, see Chap. 1, this volume). Both languages are OV languages, but each of them employs the post-predicate position to some extent. In Turkish, word order is determined by information structural requirements, and thus the post-predicate position is reserved for background information. In Kurmanji, the post-predicate position is driven by verb semantics, i.e., goal arguments are placed in the post-predicate position.

Kateryna Iefremenko

1.1 Factors of language change

In situations of language contact, it is typical for languages to influence each other. According to [Thomason \(2001\)](#), linguistic factors of contact-induced language change determine what will change once social factors have created the situation where something will change. However, linguistic factors can be overridden by social factors, and therefore [Thomason & Kaufman \(1988\)](#) define the intensity of contact as the most important social factor for the prediction of a contact-induced language change. [Thomason \(2001\)](#) provides a four-stage borrowing scale depending on the intensity of contact. In casual contact, when borrowers are not fluent in the source language, only content words are borrowed. In a slightly more intense contact setting when borrowers are fluent bilinguals but form a minority in the community, function words as well as content words can be borrowed at the lexical level, and some minor structural borrowing is possible. In a moderately intense contact setting when there are more borrowers than in the previous stage and social factors favor borrowing, more change can be expected on the structural level; word order features, clause-combining strategies, or inflectional affixes might be borrowed. And finally, in an intense contact setting when there is extensive bilingualism among the speakers and social factors strongly favor borrowing, anything can be borrowed, resulting even in major typological change of the borrowing language.

The intensity of contact is determined by the duration of the contact and the number of speakers in the community. The contact between Turkish and Kurmanji has begun in the Ottoman Empire and intensified with the establishment of the Turkish Republic where Turkish became the country's sole official language ([Yağmur 2001](#)). Nowadays, Turkish is dominant and even the only language in official spheres as education, government, business, while Kurmanji is used mostly in the families. As for the number of speakers in the community, the size of the Kurmanji-speaking communities varies depending on the region: in the eastern and south-eastern regions of Turkey, Kurmanji is spoken by the majority of the population, while in the western regions, Turkish prevails even in informal contexts. Thus, on the borrowability scale, the contact between Kurmanji and Turkish in Turkey can be referred to as stage 3 (a setting of moderately intense contact) where structural changes, including word order alternations, can be expected.

Another social factor, which is not provided in [Thomason & Kaufman \(1988\)](#) as one of the most important factors for predicting the outcome of the contact, but which I find relevant for my particular research is the societal status of a language: minority and majority language. It is believed that typically a more prestigious donor language influences a less prestigious recipient language ([Johanson](#)

2 Word order in the speech of Kurmanji-Turkish bilinguals

2002). As has been noted above, Turkish in Turkey is the dominant language in such spheres of life as education, business, media, and in the western regions of Turkey it prevails also in the informal settings. Thus, Turkish is clearly the majority language of the society. As for Kurmanji in Turkey, its societal status heavily depends on the region: while in the eastern and south-eastern regions Kurmanji is the dominant language of the majority of speakers (though only in informal settings), in the western regions, it is the minority language. For my study, the data from Kurmanji-Turkish bilinguals in Turkey were collected in Ankara, the capital of Turkey, where Turkish is the dominant language, and Kurmanji is a minority language in this context.

1.2 Word order in language contact situations

A number of studies (Thomason & Kaufman 1988; Thomason 2001; Heine 2008) pointed that word order is prone to change in language contact scenarios. Following this, there are studies that exemplify this claim for Turkic languages. For example, the word order in Karaim changed from OV to VO due to the contact with Slavic and Baltic languages (Csató 2002). Similar to Karaim, Gagauz, which has stayed in a long term contact with Slavic languages, underwent change that resulted in a VO order becoming dominant (Menz 1999). Another study by Keskin (2023) investigated word order across numerous Turkic varieties in the Balkans where Turkish has been in contact mostly with Indo-European languages for centuries. Analysis of the post-predicate domain in these Turkic varieties showed that the further the Turkic variety is located from the borders of Turkey, the higher is the frequency of the VX order in this variety. On the other hand, studies that investigated comparatively recent contact of Turkish with Indo-European languages, i.e., Turkish as a heritage language in the Netherlands, Germany and the U.S., did not find a shift from OV to VO order in these varieties (Doğruöz & Backus 2007; Schroeder et al. in press). Finally, as for research on word order in Turkish in contact with another language in a context where Turkish is the majority language of the society, there are no studies, at least to my knowledge, apart from those done by our research group based on the same data set as the one presented in this paper (Iefremenko et al. 2023; Iefremenko Submitted).

With respect to word order in Kurmanji in Turkey, there are studies that investigate the post-predicate position across different dialects of Kurmanji (Haig 2015; Haig 2019; Gündoğdu 2019), but the focus is more on word order typology and its diachronic change due to contact with other languages. Besides, Asadpour (2022) investigated the placement of goals in Mukri Kurdish spoken in Iran and in the contact languages (such as Armenian, Azeri Turkic and Northeastern

Kateryna Iefremenko

Neo-Aramaic) and found that in fact the combination of several factors such as information structure, semantics and morphosyntax explains the placement of constituents in the post-predicate position in the analyzed languages.

Thus, this study will try to fill a gap first by investigating possible changes in the word order in Turkish in contact with another language in a context where Turkish is the majority language of the society; second, by investigating word order, namely the post-predicate position, in Kurmanji, that is in intense contact with Turkish and is the minority language of the society. The analysis is based on the data that come from 30 Kurmanji-Turkish adult bilingual speakers residing in the Turkish-dominant region in Turkey (Iefremenko 2021a,b).

2 Word order in Kurmanji

Kurdish is a macro-language that consists of a continuum of closely related languages spoken by Kurds over a large geographic area spanned across several countries, such as Turkey, Iran, Iraq, Syria, among others (Sheyholislami 2015). Northern Kurmanji is one of the Kurdish languages, predominantly spoken in southeast Turkey, northwest and northeast Iran, northern Iraq, and northern Syria. It is classified as a member of the northwest Iranian branch of the west Iranian languages, within the Iranian branch of Indo-European language family (Haig & Matras 2002).

Like other West Iranian languages, Kurmanji is an OV language, although it is not always verb-final (Haig 2015). Kurmanji indeed systematically places certain elements after the verb. According to Haig & Thiele (2014), the post-predicate position is reserved for “goals”, where it is a cover term for:

- a) locational goals of verbs of motion (e.g., *go*, *run*, *fall*) and caused motion (e.g., *put*, *place*, *take*)
 - (1) Northern Kurdish Yavuzeli (Matras et al. 2016: K002)

| | | |
|----------------|-----------------|--------------|
| <i>ez</i> | <i>çû-m-e</i> | <i>mal-ê</i> |
| 1SG | go.PST-1SG-DRCT | house-OBL.F |
| ‘I went home.’ | | |
 - (2) Karakoçan (Matras et al. 2016: K075)

| | | | |
|---|-----------------|--------------|--------------|
| <i>jinik</i> | <i>qutîk-ek</i> | <i>anî</i> | <i>mal-ê</i> |
| woman | box-INDEF | move.PST.3SG | house-OBL.F |
| ‘The woman moved a box into the house.’ | | | |

2 Word order in the speech of Kurmanji-Turkish bilinguals

b) recipients of verbs of transfer (e.g., *give*)

- (3) Northern Kurdish Elbistan (Matras et al. 2016: K022)

we ew ne-dê mi
2PL this NEG-give.PST.3SG 1SG.OBL
'You didn't give it to me.'

c) addressees of verbs of speech (e.g., *say, speak, promise*)

- (4) Northern Kurdish Siirt (Matras et al. 2016: K008)

min got-e wî
1SG.OBL say.PST.3SG-DRCT 3SG.OBL
'I said it to him.'

In other words, the word order of Kurmanji is not a pure OV, but rather OVX. Goals are systematically yet not consistently placed in the post-predicate position in Kurmanji. Haig (2022) states that the position of post-predicate elements in Kurmanji is syntactically fixed and is not the result of pragmatically driven scrambling or stylistic variation, i.e., factors that account for example for the post-predicate position in Turkish. Factors that influence the position of goals are flagging and regional variation (Haig 2015; Gündoğdu 2019). On the other hand, a recent study by Asadpour (2022) on Mukri Kurdish spoken in Iran showed that information structure also plays a role in the placement of goal arguments. Namely, accessible inferable information occurs in the post-predicate position, while topicalized goals are placed in the preverbal position. Nonetheless, considering that Kurdish varieties are spoken across several countries and as a result come into contact with different languages, the variations observed in the studies could potentially stem from distinctions between these varieties.

I will now elaborate on the relation between the word order in Kurmanji and the type of flagging of goal arguments. Goals in Kurmanji can be flagged by case (as demonstrated in 5) or by an adposition (see examples 7–9).

- (5) Northern Kurdish Tatvan (Matras et al. 2016: K024)

min xarin anî od-ê
1SG.OBL food bring.PST.3SG room-OBL.F
'I brought the food to the room.'

Case-flagged goal arguments are always placed right after the predicate and cannot be separated by an adverb or any other argument. Importantly, the goal

Kateryna Iefremenko

argument cannot be placed immediately before the verb. As Gündoğdu (2019: 110) emphasizes, “in a Kurmanji clause, at most two case-flagged NPs (subject and direct object) are licensed in the preverbal position”. Thus, example 6 below where the argument *odê* (to the room) is placed in the immediate pre-predicate position would be considered noncanonical.

- (6) Northern Kurdish Tatvan (constructed example)

min xarin od-ê anî
1SG.OBL food room-OBL bring.PST.3SG
'I brought the food to the room.'

The second means of marking goals is by the help of an adposition. In Kurmanji, there are several types of adpositions, namely basic prepositions, locational nouns which can be used together with a preposition (see example 7), postpositions, and circumpositions.

- (7) Northern Kurdish Pertek (Matras et al. 2016: K028)

lawik-ê qıçık di-bez-e ber bi dî-ya xwe
boy-EZ.M little PRS-run.3SG-DRCT towards mother-EZ.F own
'The little boy is running to his mother.'

In general, the position of goal arguments flagged by adpositions is more flexible compared to those flagged by case. The only exception are locational nouns that are not preceded by a preposition: they are always placed in post-predicate position. The reason for such position is that this type of adpositions historically evolved from nouns. Hence, similar to case-flagged goals, locational nouns are placed in the post-predicate position (Haig 2015; Haig & Thiele 2014). As for the position of the other types of adpositions, it is largely dependent on dialect. As it is noted in Haig (2015) and Haig & Thiele (2014), initially the OVX word order of Kurmanji emerged due to the contact with early Aramaic/Iranian languages. As a result, there are different preferences in placing goals across the modern dialects of Kurmanji: namely, goals are predominantly post-predicative in the southernmost dialects where the language stayed in a long-lasting contact with Neo-Aramaic, while in the northern and western dialects goals are overwhelmingly pre-predicative due to their extensive contact with Armenian and Turkish. Besides, in the south, there is a tendency for post-predicative goals to be accompanied by a preposition or a circumposition. At the same time, in the dialects of Central Anatolia, the combination of a post-predicative goal accompanied by a preposition is very restricted.

2 *Word order in the speech of Kurmanji-Turkish bilinguals*3 **Word order in Turkish**

Turkish is considered to have a relatively free word order, with basic word order being (S)OV, which means that even though word order variation is possible, in some instances word order must stay fixed. In Turkish, variation in word order serves pragmatic purposes such as signaling topics and distinguishing between old and new information (Erguvanlı 1984). Hence, word order in Turkish is strongly motivated by information structure: a link to the previous context or topicalized information appears sentence-initially, new information occurs immediately before the verb, and backgrounded information can be placed post-predicatively (Erguvanlı 1984; Kornfilt 1997). Thus, (8a) has pragmatically neutral unmarked order, whereas (8b–8f) are pragmatically marked.

- (8) a. Turkish (self-constructed examples)

SOV

Murat arabə-yi sat-tı.

Murat car-ACC sell-PST.3SG

‘Murat sold the car.’

- b. OSV

Arabə-yi Murat sat-tı.

car-ACC Murat sell-PST.3SG

‘It is Murat who sold the car.’

- c. SVO

Murat sat-tı arabə-yi.

Murat sell-PST.3SG car-ACC

‘Murat sold the car.’ (emphasis on the verb)

- d. OVS

Arabə-yi sat-tı Murat.

car-ACC sell-PST.3SG Murat

‘It is the car that Murat sold.’

- e. VSO

Sat-tı Murat arabə-yi.

sell-PST.3SG Murat car-ACC

‘It (the car) was sold by Murat.’

- f. VOS

Sat-tı arabə-yi Murat.

sell-PST.3SG car-ACC Murat

‘The car was sold (by Murat).’

Kateryna Iefremenko

Furthermore, it is important to note that there are differences in the employment of post-predicate structures in spoken and written modes as well as formal and informal language. Particularly, there seem to be restrictions on the use of post-predicate structures in formal written situations. For example, in legal documents as well as news items (both written in newspapers and journals as well as read on radio or TV), post-predicate structures are extremely rare (Erguvanlı 1984: 67). Exceptions are columns in papers when authors deliberately choose more informal style, or literature pieces where an author uses their own style and may employ backgrounding techniques for specific pragmatic reasons (Erguvanlı 1984: 67). On the other hand, elements placed in post-predicate position frequently occur in informal spoken mode, which is usually characterized as spontaneous and unplanned (Schroeder 1995). Thus, spoken language is full of (self-)corrections and afterthoughts, while the same process in written language can be employed with the help of editing and corrections. Another reason of a higher number of post-predicate structures in spoken language compared to written one is that utterances are limited in size due to speaker's awareness of the listener's capacity limitations (Chafe 1985). Thus, as Schroeder (1995: 206) emphasizes, the employment of the post-predicate position helps the listener to keep track of the topical development and the deictic framework in which the predication holds.

4 Research questions

To summarize the preceding discussion, both languages in contact that are under research here have OV word order, but both employ the post-predicate position in a different way. While Kurmanji systematically places goal arguments – particularly those flagged with case – in the post-predicate position, word order in Turkish is determined by information structural requirements, and the post-predicate position is reserved for background information, regardless of the semantic role of the elements.

As discussed in Section 1, the contact between the two languages has lasted for centuries and is fairly intense, and according to Thomason & Kaufman's (1988) borrowability scale, we can expect structural changes, including the ones concerning word order. In the paper, I will investigate potential convergences in word order, in particular in the post-predicate domain, in Turkish and Kurmanji in Turkey, basing the analysis on the variables encoded in WOWA (see Chap. 1, this volume). For the reason that WOWA categories do not incorporate information structure as one of the variables, I do not explore its effect on the word order changes in the investigated languages. This is a limitation of the current paper.

2 Word order in the speech of Kurmanji-Turkish bilinguals

5 Methodology

5.1 Participants

The data for this study come from 30 Kurmanji-Turkish bilinguals (9 females and 21 males). The participants were exposed to Kurmanji from birth or an early age in their family and started acquiring Turkish mainly when they entered school (though some participants were already exposed to Turkish in their families). The place of birth of the participants varies: the majority of the speakers were born and raised in the east and the south-east of Turkey, but some were born and grew up in the western cities of Turkey. At the time of data collection, all participants were living in Ankara, where the dominant language of the society is Turkish. In an urban city, such as Ankara, speakers of different dialects interact between each other on a daily basis; hence, such contact may lead to dialect levelling. Therefore, my data were not controlled for the dialect of Kurmanji. The age of the participants varies between 23 and 37 years, with the mean age being 28.1; thus, all the participants are young adults. All 30 participants had a high school degree, and most of them completed bachelor's or master's degree. So, all the speakers are highly proficient in Turkish since it is the language of education in Turkey. As for the education in Kurmanji, 14 participants stated that they had taken at least a several-month language course in Kurmanji, one participant had earned a master's degree from a Kurmanji language and literature department, and several participants indicated that they actively used Kurmanji for business purposes. However, the results of the section on the self-rated proficiency in the questionnaire showed that on average the speakers rate their proficiency in Kurmanji lower ($\bar{x} = 17.53$ out of 20 possible) compared to their proficiency in Turkish ($\bar{x} = 19.32$ out of 20 possible).

5.2 Data collection

The data used for this study were collected with the help of the 'Language Situations' method (Wiese 2020). This method combines controlled elicitation with spontaneous data, and thus is suitable for systematic comparisons across contact-linguistic constellations as well as different languages. It captures quasi-naturalistic productions across different communicative situations, including informal versus formal, and written versus spoken communicative situations. The elicitation comprised two sessions (one in Kurmanji and one in Turkish), with at least three days between the sessions. Participants were shown a short video of a car accident and were asked to imagine themselves having witnessed it. After that they were asked to recount the incident in four different imagined situations:

Kateryna Iefremenko

to a friend via a WhatsApp voice message (informal spoken), to a friend via a WhatsApp text message (informal written), to the police via a voice mail (formal spoken), to the police in a form of a written witness report (formal written). To exclude a possible effect of priming, the order of the communicative situations and the order of the languages were balanced.

At the end of the second session, each participant was asked to fill out an extensive questionnaire. The questionnaire comprised nine sections: participants' general information, educational and professional background of the participants, family information, information about the languages, self-assessment of their language skills (in Kurmanji, Turkish, as well as in foreign languages, on a five-point scale), participants' language use with family members and peers, a section concerning media use and free time (texting WhatsApp messages or writing emails in Kurmanji, Turkish, as well as in foreign languages, three scores of frequency), questions concerning personal character traits, and feedback on the participation in the study. The questionnaire was available in Turkish as it is the language for official documents in Turkey. It was always filled out by the participants themselves in the presence of an elicitor.

5.3 Annotation and statistical analysis

For the current study on the post-predicate elements in Iranian and neighboring languages, only the informal spoken productions of the speakers were analyzed.¹ The Kurmanji data comprised 745 communication units², out of which 507 were analyzed because they contained pre- or post-predicate arguments (Iefremenko 2021a). The Turkish data consisted of 799 communication units, out of which 587 were analyzed (Iefremenko 2021b). Data coding was done in line with the WOWA coding method (Haig et al. 2024 [Chapter 1 Introduction, this volume]) and annotated for animacy, weight, semantic role, flagging, and position. What is important for the current analysis is that afterthoughts and self-repairings, which usually occur in the post-predicate position in OV languages, were not excluded from the analysis. Besides, there are several aspects of coding that are important for the analysis of Turkish and Kurmanji data. First, adpositions are not counted as part of the weight because they are considered to be part of the flagging. Thus, for instance, in the example (9) the token *rê da* (on the street) is considered to have weight 1 because the postposition *da* is not counted in.

¹(In-)formality and mode as factors that might influence the word order in Turkish and Kurmanji are analyzed and discussed in another study by Iefremenko (Submitted).

²A communication unit is an independent clause with its modifiers and dependent (subordinate) clauses.

2 Word order in the speech of Kurmanji-Turkish bilinguals

- (9) Northern Kurdish Ankara (Iefremenko 2021a: A, 3)

iii ez rē da di-çû-m
 hmm 1SG street on PROG-go.PST-1SG
 'I was going on the street.'

Second, subjects were excluded from the analysis across all the analyzed languages in WOWA. This has to be taken into account when interpreting the results for Turkish because as indicated in Section 3, unlike Kurmanji, the word order in Turkish is determined by information structure and as a result, subjects can also be placed in the post-predicate position as long as they are not new information.

The statistical analyses were run in R (R Core Team 2023). In addition to the base package of R, I used tidyverse for data manipulation and visualization (Wickham et al. 2019). I ran binomial generalized linear regression models using the lme4 package (Bates et al. 2015).

6 Results

6.1 Kurmanji

First, I will start with the analysis of post-predicate constituents in Kurmanji.

Figure 1 shows the percentage of tokens in the pre- and post-predicate position in the Kurmanji data. The line inside each box indicates the median, while a dot represents the percentage of tokens used in pre- or post-predicate position by one speaker, calculated in relation to the total number of communication units in each speaker. Figure 1 demonstrates that the majority of the communication units have pre-predicate arguments, with around 20% taking post-predicate arguments. Also, we can see that individual variability in the group is high: some participants place tokens post-predicatively in up to 70% of their utterances, while in some speakers all utterances are pre-predicate.

As stated in Section 2, word order in Kurmanji is determined by verb semantics where goals are placed in post-predicate position. Therefore, high individual variability in the group might be caused by some speakers' frequent use of goals. In order to establish whether there is an effect of one of the variables from the WOWA coding scheme, namely animacy, weight, role or flagging (as described in Section 5.3), I ran four binomial generalized linear regression models with the dependent variable Position (preverbal, coded as 0 vs. postverbal, coded as 1) and the independent variables Animacy, Weight, Flagging, and Role.

Animacy: Animacy is a categorical independent variable with seven levels in the Kurmanji data. The results of the regression given in Table 1 show that there

Kateryna Iefremenko

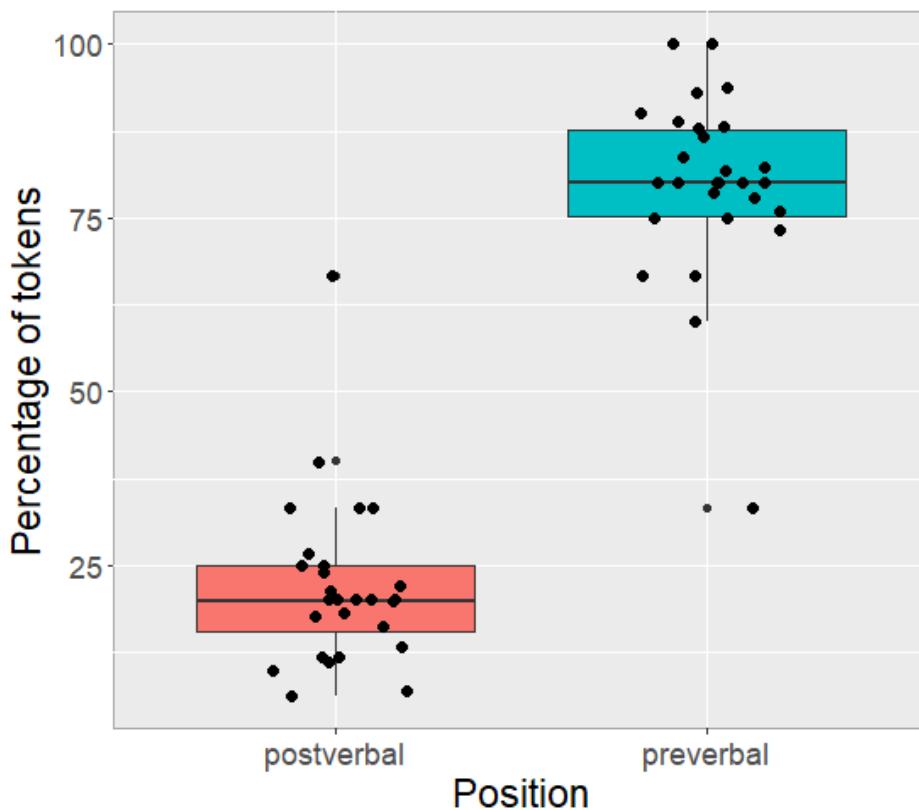


Figure 1: Percentage of tokens in pre- or post-predicate position in Kurmanji

is no correlation between animacy and the position of the tokens in the Kurmanji data.

Weight: Weight is a discrete numeric variable, ranging from one to four and more phonological words. The results of the regression provided in Table 2 show that there is no correlation between the weight of the constituents and the position of the tokens in relation to the verb.

Flagging: Flagging is a categorical independent variable with eight levels in the Kurmanji data. The results of the regression analysis presented in Table 3 show that there is an effect of Flagging on the placement of arguments in the pre- or post-predicate position in Kurmanji.

The model showed that arguments flagged with case (see example 10), locational nouns (see example 11), or a preposition together with a locational noun

2 *Word order in the speech of Kurmanji-Turkish bilinguals*

Table 1: Regression table for binomial GLM with the dependent variable Position and the independent variable Animacy in Kurmanji.

| fixed effect | $\beta (\sigma)$ | p-value |
|--------------|-----------------------|-----------|
| (intercept) | -1.65e+01 (5.656e+02) | 0.97 (ns) |
| Anim-adv | 1.28e+01 (5.656e+02) | 0.98 (ns) |
| Anim-anim | 1.36e+01 (5.656e+02) | 0.98 (ns) |
| Anim-bp | 1.35e+01 (5.656e+02) | 0.98 (ns) |
| Anim-hum | 1.45e+01 (5.656e+02) | 0.97 (ns) |
| Anim-inan | 1.56e+01 (5.656e+02) | 0.97 (ns) |
| Anim-other | -9.53e-09 (2.465e+03) | 1.00 (ns) |

Table 2: Regression table for binomial GLM with the dependent variable Position and the independent variable Weight in Kurmanji

| fixed effect | $\beta (\sigma)$ | p-value |
|--------------|------------------|-----------|
| (intercept) | -1.26 (0.30) | < .0001 |
| Weight | -0.15 (0.19) | 0.43 (ns) |

Table 3: Regression table for binomial GLM with the dependent variable Position and the independent variable Flagging in Kurmanji

| fixed effect | $\beta (\sigma)$ | p-value |
|-------------------|------------------|------------|
| (intercept) | -2.67 (0.36) | < .0001 |
| Flag-case | 2.23 (0.43) | < .0001*** |
| Flag-circ | -0.09 (0.69) | 0.88 (ns) |
| Flag-lvc-poss | -11.89 (882.74) | 0.98 (ns) |
| Flag-postp | 0.84 (0.57) | 0.11 (ns) |
| Flag-prep | -0.06 (0.51) | 0.89 (ns) |
| Flag-prep-relnoun | 1.91 (0.58) | 0.001 ** |
| Flag-relnoun | 3.84 (0.52) | < .0001*** |

Kateryna Iefremenko

(see example 12) are more likely to be placed in the post-predicate position than in the pre-predicate one.

- (10) Northern Kurdish Ankara (Iefremenko 2021a: Y, 629)

kûçik xe avêt-e top-e
dog oneself throw.PST.3SG-DRCT ball-OBL.F
'The dog threw itself towards the ball.'

- (11) Northern Kurdish Ankara (Iefremenko 2021a: Y, 626)

çû iii ser rê
go.PST.3SG hm to street
'He went to the street.'

- (12) Northern Kurdish Ankara (Iefremenko 2021a: C, 57)

iii di rê da iii jin-ekî kûçik-ê wî ew ê derbas
hm in street CIRC hm woman-INDEF dog-EZ.M her they FUT passing
bû-n-a li_hemberê rê
become.PST-3PL-DRCT across street

'Hm, on the street, (there was) a woman (and) her dog, they were about to cross the street to the opposite side.'

Role: Role is a categorical independent variable with 15 levels in the Kurmanji data. The results of the regression provided in Table 4 show that there is an effect of role on the placement of arguments in the post-predicate position.

Figure 2 shows the percentage of tokens with a particular role in the pre- and post-predicate position in the Kurmanji data, which was calculated in relation to the total number of tokens in the data. The line inside each box indicates the median, while dots represent the percentage of tokens used in pre- or post-predicate position by one speaker.

The model as well as Figure 2 show that goals of motion (see example 13) and caused motion (see example 14) are more likely to be placed in the post-predicate position than in the pre-predicate one.

- (13) Northern Kurdish Ankara (Iefremenko 2021a: C, 69)

çû ber.bi ereba
go.PST.3SG towards car
'He went towards the car.'

2 Word order in the speech of Kurmanji-Turkish bilinguals

Table 4: Regression table for binomial GLM with the dependent variable Position and the independent variable Role in Kurmanji

| fixed effect | $\beta (\sigma)$ | p-value |
|--------------|------------------|------------|
| (intercept) | -2.85 (0.59) | < .0001 |
| Role-addr | 0.28 (1.19) | 0.8 (ns) |
| Role-ben | 0.9 (1.22) | 0.45 (ns) |
| Role-com | 1.06 (0.96) | 0.27 (ns) |
| Role-cop | -14.71 (907.61) | 0.98 (ns) |
| Role-cop-loc | -14.71 (3956.1) | 0.99 (ns) |
| Role-do | -1.61 (1.16) | 0.16 (ns) |
| Role-do-def | -14.71 (1978.09) | 0.99 (ns) |
| Role-goal | 3.65 (0.63) | < .0001*** |
| Role-goal-c | 2.39 (0.66) | < .0001*** |
| Role-instr | -14.71 (1318.72) | 0.99 (ns) |
| Role-loc | -0.15 (0.72) | 0.83 (ns) |
| Role-other | -0.51 (1.17) | 0.66 (ns) |
| Role-rec | 20.41 (3956.1) | 0.99 (ns) |
| Role-stim | 2.85 (1.53) | 0.06 (ns) |

- (14) Northern Kurdish Ankara (Iefremenko 2021a: E, 108)

û kûçik jî xe awêt-e top-ê
 and dog also oneself throw.PST.3SG-DRCT ball-OBL.F
 'And the dog threw itself to the ball.'

Thus, the analysis demonstrated that in Kurmanji goals of motion and caused motion, which are flagged with case, locational noun, or sometimes a preposition and a locational noun, are likely to be placed in post-predicate position. This is in fact what is known from previous literature on the post-predicate position in Kurmanji (Haig 2015; Haig 2019; Gündoğdu 2019).

Regarding the other types of goals, as shown in Figure 2, there are no examples of addressees placed in post-predicate position in my data, and all examples containing an addressee argument are placed in pre-predicate position. The reason for this might be flagging: all pre-predicate examples are flagged with a circumposition (example 15) or a postposition (example 16).

Kateryna Iefremenko

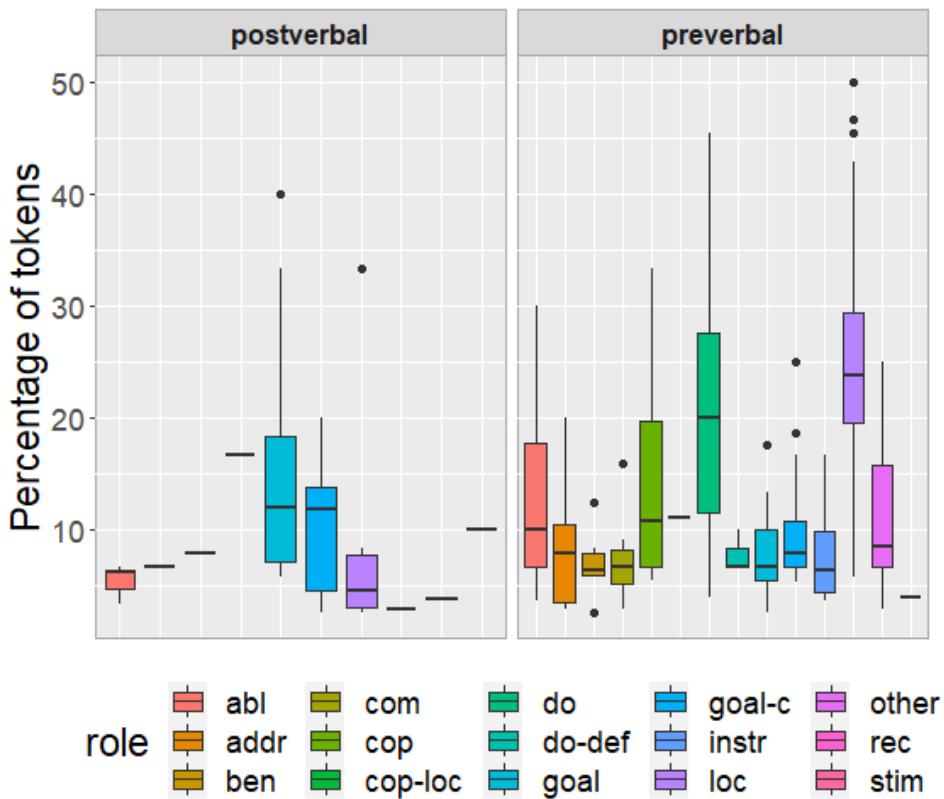


Figure 2: Percentage of tokens with a particular role in the pre- and post-predicate position in Kurmanji.

- (15) Northern Kurdish Ankara (Iefremenko 2021a: F, 134)

mi go e ji te ra bi-bêj-im
 1SG.OBL say.PST hm to 2SG.OBL CIRC SUBJ-say.PRS-1SG
 'I said, I am telling this to you.'

- (16) Northern Kurdish Ankara (Iefremenko 2021a: F, 114)

mi go es te re bêj-im
 1SG.OBL say.PST 1SG 2SG.OBL POSTP SUBJ.say.PRS-1SG
 'I said, I am telling this to you.'

With regard to recipients, there are only two examples in the Kurmanji data, and they are placed post-predicatively (example 17). Presumably, the reason for

2 Word order in the speech of Kurmanji-Turkish bilinguals

a small number of recipients in the data is the method: the video shown to the participants did not trigger the use of verbs of transfer.

- (17) Northern Kurdish Ankara (Iefremenko 2021a: T, 498)

xeber-ê bi-di-m te
news-OBL SUBJ-give.PRS-1SG 2SG.OBL
'Let me tell (lit. give) you the news.'

Apart from goals of (caused) motion, addressees, and recipients, Figure 2 shows that locations (abbreviated in Figure 2 as 'loc' – see example 18) and sources of motion (abbreviated in Figure 2 as 'abl' – see example 19) can also be placed in post-predicate position in Kurmanji.

- (18) Northern Kurdish Ankara (Iefremenko 2021a: F, 126)

du erebe piştî hevdu di-çû him iii li_ser rê da
two car after each.other PROG-go.PST.3SG both hmm on street CIRC
'Two cars were coming one after another on the street.'

- (19) Northern Kurdish Ankara (Iefremenko 2021a: A, 28)

e du erebe di-hat-in ji wî alî
hm two car PROG-come.PST-3PL from his side
'Hm, two cars were coming from his side.'

Another interesting observation is placement of case-flagged goals of motion. As the previous literature (Haig 2015; Haig 2019; Gündoğdu 2019) shows, goals of motion flagged with case are always placed in immediate post-predicate position. Yet there are examples in my data where case-flagged goals of motion are placed in pre-predicate position (see example 20 and 21).

- (20) Northern Kurdish Ankara (Iefremenko 2021a: N, 373)

nan û av erd-î ket
bread and water ground-OBL.M fall.PST.3SG
'Bread and water fell on the ground.'

- (21) Northern Kurdish Ankara (Iefremenko 2021a: O, 386)

pişte zilam iii gok-ê xwe imm (-) ji dest-ê xwa imm (-)
after man hmm ball-EZ.F own hmm from hand-EZ.M own hmm
erdêk/_erd-ê ket
ground-OBL.M fall.PST.3SG
'Afterwards, the man, hm, his ball, hm, fell from his hands on the ground.'

Kateryna Iefremenko

In total in the data there are four examples with a case-flagged goal of motion placed in pre-predicate position, and all four examples are actually the same construction³ *erdē ketin* “to fall on the ground”. In the contact language Turkish, *erdē ketin* is rendered as *yere düşmek*. In Turkish, *yere düşmek* is a fixed construction. This is also supported by the Turkish data from Kurmanji-Turkish bilinguals in Ankara: there are 10 instances of *yere düşmek*, and in all of them the argument *yere* “on the ground” is placed in the immediate pre-predicate position. Besides, I have also checked other data collected with the help of the same method, namely Turkish monolingual speakers from Izmir and Eskişehir (Wiese et al. 2021) as well as Kurmanji-Turkish heritage speakers in Berlin, and found that in all the instances of *yere düşmek*, the argument *yere* was placed in the immediate pre-predicate position. Thus, I argue that the stable position of the argument *yere* in Turkish leads to transfer of the whole construction into Kurmanji and as a result, the argument *erdē* is placed pre-predicatively. Besides, in Kurmanji there are other constructions with the verb *ketin*, which are set phrases and where the goal is always placed in pre-predicate position, e.g., *bi rē ketin* “to set off (on a journey)”. This might explain the fact why I do not find examples of transfer of constructions with other verbs.

Thus, the analysis of the post-predicate position in Kurmanji of Kurmanji-Turkish bilingual speakers in Ankara showed that Kurmanji is an OV language where goals of motion and caused motion flagged with case, a locational noun, or a preposition used together with a locational noun, are systematically placed in post-predicate position.⁴ However, the analysis showed that other elements, such as location and source of motion, can also be placed in post-predicate position in Kurmanji. Apart from this, the data demonstrated that some speakers employ the pre-predicate position for case-flagged goals of motion, which is a non-canonical position for such arguments.

6.2 Turkish

In this section, I will present the results of the analysis of the majority language of the society the speakers live in – which is Turkish.

Figure 3 shows frequency distribution of the coded tokens used in pre- or post-predicate position. The percentage was calculated in relation to the total number of utterances that contain tokens placed pre- or post-predicatively. Each dot represents the mean use of tokens by a speaker. In Figure 3, we can see that in

³For a definition of a construction see Croft & Cruse (2004: 257–262).

⁴As for addressees and recipients, there is not enough data in the data set to make conclusions about their position in a sentence in relation to the verb.

2 Word order in the speech of Kurmanji-Turkish bilinguals

general the pre-predicate position of arguments is preferred: only 10% of utterances contain post-predicate elements. However, the figure also shows that there is individual variability: some speakers use up to 25% of post-predicate structures in their narrations.

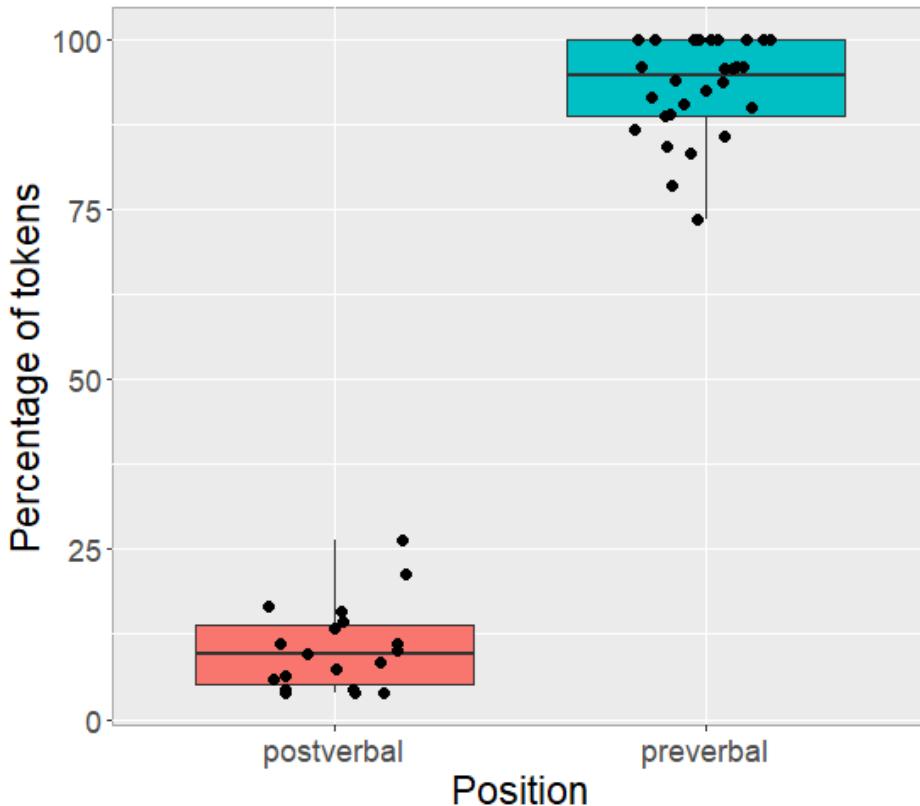


Figure 3: Percentage of tokens in pre- or post-predicate position in Turkish.

Similar to Kurmanji, in Turkish, each token was annotated for animacy, weight, role and flagging (see Chap. 1, this volume). To find out whether there is an effect of one of these variables, I ran four binomial generalized linear regression models with the dependent variable Position (preverbal, coded as 0 vs. postverbal, coded as 1) and the independent variables Animacy, Weight, Flagging, and Role.

Animacy: Animacy is a categorical independent variable with six levels in the Turkish data. The results of the regression given in Table 5 show that there is no correlation between Animacy and the Position of the tokens in the Turkish data.

Kateryna Iefremenko

Table 5: Regression table for binomial GLM with the dependent variable Position and the independent variable Animacy in Turkish

| fixed effect | $\beta (\sigma)$ | p-value |
|--------------|------------------------|-----------|
| (intercept) | -1.757e+01 (2.284e+03) | 0.99 (ns) |
| Anim-adv | 1.512e+01 (2.284e+03) | 0.99 (ns) |
| Anim-anim | -5.966e-08 (2.412e+03) | 1.00 (ns) |
| Anim-bp | 1.498e+01 (2.284e+03) | 0.99 (ns) |
| Anim-hum | 1.612e+01 (2.284e+03) | 0.99 (ns) |
| Anim-inan | 1.446e+01 (2.284e+03) | 0.99 (ns) |

Weight: Weight is a discrete numeric variable, ranging from one to four and more phonological words. The results of the regression provided in Table 6 show that there is a positive effect of weight on the placement of the elements in post-predicate position, meaning that heavier elements (those that consist of three or four phonological words) are more likely to be placed in post-predicate position than those with the weight of one or two phonological words.

Table 6: Regression table for binomial GLM with the dependent variable Position and the independent variable Weight in Turkish

| fixed effect | $\beta (\sigma)$ | p-value |
|--------------|------------------|----------|
| (intercept) | -3.32 (0.35) | < .0001 |
| Weight | 0.5 (0.19) | 0.008 ** |

Thus, for instance, in example (22) the structure *yolun diğer tarafından* ‘from the other side of the street’ consists of three phonological words and is placed in post-predicate position.

- (22) Turkish (Iefremenko 2021b: U, 622)
- | | | |
|---|-------------------|------------------------------|
| <i>bi tane araba gel-iyor-du</i> | <i>yol-un</i> | <i>diğer taraf-in-dan</i> |
| one piece car | come-PROG-PST.3SG | road-GEN other side-POSS-ABL |
| ‘There was a car coming from the other side of the street.’ | | |

Flagging: Flagging is a categorical independent variable with four levels in the Turkish data. The result of the regression analysis presented in Table 7 shows that there is no effect of flagging on the placement of arguments in pre- or post-predicate position in Turkish.

2 Word order in the speech of Kurmanji-Turkish bilinguals

Table 7: Regression table for binomial GLM with the dependent variable Position and the independent variable Flagging in Turkish

| fixed effect | $\beta (\sigma)$ | p-value |
|--------------------|------------------|-----------|
| (intercept) | -2.25 (0.37) | < .0001 |
| Flag-case | -0.38 (0.41) | 0.35 (ns) |
| Flag-postp | 0.05 (0.71) | 0.94 (ns) |
| Flag-postp-relnoun | -0.5 (0.81) | 0.47 (ns) |

Role: Role is a categorical independent variable with 16 levels in the Turkish data. The results of the regression provided in Table 8 show that there is no correlation between the Role of a token and its Position in relation to the verb.

Table 8: Regression table for binomial GLM with the dependent variable Position and the independent variable Role in Turkish

| fixed effect | $\beta (\sigma)$ | p-value |
|--------------|------------------|-----------|
| (intercept) | -2.68 (0.46) | < .0001 |
| Role-addr | 1.38 (0.79) | 0.08 (ns) |
| Role-ben | 0.93 (0.71) | 0.19 (ns) |
| Role-com | 1.29 (0.79) | 0.10 (ns) |
| Role-cop | -15.88 (3261.3) | 0.99 (ns) |
| Role-cop-loc | -15.88 (4612.2) | 0.99 (ns) |
| Role-do | -0.67 (0.74) | 0.36 (ns) |
| Role-do-def | -15.88 (1171.5) | 0.98 (ns) |
| Role-goal | 0.16 (0.56) | 0.77 (ns) |
| Role-goal-c | 0.19 (1.13) | 0.86 (ns) |
| Role-instr | -15.88 (1966.64) | 0.99 (ns) |
| Role-loc | -0.3 (0.65) | 0.63 (ns) |
| Role-other | 0.65 (0.61) | 0.28 (ns) |
| Role-poss | -15.88 (6522.6) | 0.99 (ns) |
| Role-rec | -15.88 (4621.2) | 0.99 (ns) |
| Role-stim | 21.24 (6522.6) | 0.99 (ns) |

Thus, the analysis of word order in Turkish of Kurmanji-Turkish bilingual speakers showed that the only significant predictor is the weight of the elements: those constituents consisting of three and four phonological words are

Kateryna Iefremenko

more likely to be placed in post-predicate position. Unlike Kurmanji, in Turkish such variables as Role or Flagging do not have an effect on the placement of arguments in post-predicate position in my data.

Before proceeding to the discussion of results, I would like to briefly discuss the findings from the Turkish data from Erzurum (and Erzurum Province) (Dogan 2021) that were analysed using the same scheme of the WOWA project. From the first look at the normalized numbers of different roles of the tokens, it is evident that the data sets from Ankara and Erzurum differ in the distribution of post-predicate arguments. For this reason, I have conducted similar analyses for the Erzurum data as I did for the data from Ankara (see Appendix for the results of the regression analyses).

First of all, the Turkish data from Erzurum is substantially pre-predicate (with around 12% of the utterances containing post-predicate positions), that is very similar to the Turkish data collected in Ankara. However, the regression analyses run on the Turkish data from Erzurum showed that there is no effect of weight, meaning that regardless of the number of phonological words that tokens consist of, they can be placed in the pre- or post-predicate position with no preference. But the two variables that have a positive effect on the employment of the post-predicate position are Role and Flagging. Namely, the model with Role as an independent variable showed that goals of motion are often placed in post-predicate position in Turkish. At the same time, the regression model with Flagging as an independent variable demonstrated that tokens flagged with case or a postpositional relational noun are likely to be placed in post-predicate position.

Looking back at the results of the Kurmanji data from Ankara, we see that these two variables, Role and Flagging, were also found to be significant. Namely, the analysis of the Kurmanji data showed that goals of motion, and tokens flagged with case or a locational noun (sometimes in a combination with a preposition) are likely to be placed in post-predicate position in Kurmanji. Hence, similar factors influence the employment of the post-predicate position in the data sets from Kurmanji in Ankara and Turkish in Erzurum, while there are no common factors in the Turkish data sets collected in Ankara and Erzurum.

Nevertheless, it must be acknowledged that the two Turkish data sets (from Ankara and Erzurum) are not exactly comparable. First, the Turkish data from Erzurum come from three speakers, whereby one speaker is a young adult and two speakers are in their sixties, and their educational status is not known, unlike the speakers in Ankara who are all educated young adults. Second, the data were collected in the 90ties, nearly 30 years prior to the data collection in Ankara. But

2 *Word order in the speech of Kurmanji-Turkish bilinguals*

what is most important is that it is not known whether the speakers from Erzurum are in fact bilingual in Turkish and Kurmanji, or if they are Turkish monolingual speakers. But what definitely differentiates the speakers in Erzurum from the speakers in Ankara is the number of Kurmanji speakers in the community in general and the societal status of Turkish. Even though Turkish certainly remains the language of formal contexts (such as education, business, etc.), Kurmanji is used more extensively in informal contexts, compared to Ankara (though we cannot compute the index of language use for the Erzurum data due to the absence of metadata for the speakers).

7 Discussion

In the study, I investigated word order, namely the post-predicate domain, in Turkish and Kurmanji that have been in a long-lasting contact with each other. Both languages are OV, but each of them employs the post-predicate position in a different way. While in Turkish the word order is determined by information structural requirements and the post-predicate position is reserved for background information, in Kurmanji the post-predicate position is the position for goal arguments, particularly those flagged with case. Taking into account the different conditions encoded in WOWA, I investigated whether there is a structural convergence in word order in Turkish and in Kurmanji in Turkey.

First of all, the quantitative analysis showed that both languages predominantly place arguments in the pre-predicate position: with around 20% of the utterances in Kurmanji and 10% of the utterances in Turkish being post-predicate. Thus, both languages retain OV word order.

For Kurmanji, the regression analyses showed that the employment of the post-predicate position depends on the semantic role of the elements in the respective clause and their flagging. Namely, goals of motion and caused motion are likely to be placed in post-predicate position, and this is in line with what has been described in previous research on Kurmanji word order (Haig 2015; Haig 2019; Gündoğdu 2019). As for addressees and recipients, the regression analysis did not show that there is a tendency to place them post-predicatively in my data. The main reason for this is different types of flagging: while the post-predicatively placed goals are flagged with case, all the pre-predicate examples of addressees and recipients are flagged with a circumposition or a postposition. Besides, in general I have not found many examples of addressees and recipients in my data possibly because the video shown to the participants did not trigger the use of verbs of speech and verbs of transfer. In fact, another variable that showed an

Kateryna Iefremenko

effect on the placement of tokens in post-predicate position in Kurmanji is flagging. That is, tokens that are flagged with case, locational noun, or a preposition together with a locational noun are likely to be placed in post-predicate position. Thus, so far the analysis showed that the Kurmanji data is in line with most of the previous studies on word order in Kurmanji: goal arguments flagged with case or a locational noun are placed post-predicatively.

At the same time, the qualitative analysis of the Kurmanji data showed that, albeit infrequently, such elements as location and source of motion are placed in the post-predicate position. Nevertheless, it is not clear whether the use of these elements in post-predicate position is language contact-induced, for two reasons: First, I did not find enough examples of this kind, and second, the analysed data is spoken and therefore is full with afterthoughts and self-repairings, and it is not fully clear whether certain post-predicative elements are in fact afterthoughts or self-corrections.

Another interesting observation from the Kurmanji data is that there are examples where case-flagged goals of motion are placed in pre-predicate position. Remember that in Section 2, I emphasized that case-flagged goals are licensed in post-predicate position. However, my data demonstrate that such constructions in Kurmanji can also be pre-predicate, but this concerns only one construction *erdê ketin* ‘to fall on the ground’, whereby *erdê* ‘on the ground’ as a case-flagged goal argument is placed before the verb *ketin* ‘to fall’. Interestingly, the same construction in the contact language Turkish is rendered as *yere düşmek*, whereby the goal argument *yere* ‘on the ground’ is always placed in pre-predicate position. I argue that the pre-predicate position of the argument *erdê* occurs due to transfer of the whole construction from the dominant language Turkish. Besides, the reason why transfer occurs only with this particular construction might lie in the verb itself: in Kurmanji there are other set phrases with the verb *ketin* where the goal is always placed in pre-predicate position, e.g., *bi rê ketin* ‘to set off (on a journey)’.

As for the post-predicate position in Turkish, the analysis showed that the only significant predictor of the employment of the post-predicate position, among those encoded in WOWA, is the weight of tokens, that is, tokens that consist of three and four phonological words are likely to be placed in post-predicate position. The placement of heavier constituents in post-predicate position is generally a phenomenon typical of spoken language. As [Schroeder \(1995\)](#) emphasizes, in spoken discourse information is conveyed in smaller chunks to make it more accessible to the hearer and the post-predicate position allows the hearer to keep track of the topical development and the deictic framework in which a predication takes place. On the other hand, the analysis of the Turkish data from Erzu-

2 Word order in the speech of Kurmanji-Turkish bilinguals

rum, where the contact with Kurmanji is more intense and Kurmanji is present in more spheres of life compared to Ankara, showed that Turkish speakers in Erzurum tend to place goals of motion, particularly those flagged with case and relational noun, in post-predicate position. At the same time, weight of constituents did not have an effect on the placement of constituents in the data from Erzurum.

In sum, the results of the analysis based on the WOWA encoding scheme show a minimal degree of convergence between the two languages of Kurmanji-Turkish speakers in Ankara. In Kurmanji semantic role of constituents and their flagging are determining factors in the placement of the constituents in relation to the verb, which is in line with the previous research (Haig 2015; Haig 2019; Gündoğdu 2019). In Turkish weight was proven to be a significant factor: longer constituents are more likely to be placed in the post-predicate position. The result that points to possible signs of an ongoing contact-induced language change is the changes in the word order of particular constructions. However, such changes are observed only in the minority language Kurmanji and not the majority language Turkish. Thus, such results point to the effect of societal status of the languages on the direction of the language change: a more prestigious language Turkish influences a less prestigious Kurmanji in Ankara.

At the same time, the analysis of the Erzurum Turkish data suggests that another social factor – the intensity of contact – has an impact on the occurrence of changes in word order of the languages in contact. Unlike Turkish in Ankara, in Erzurum Turkish semantic role and flagging have an effect on the employment of the post-predicate position. Hence, when Kurmanji is present in more spheres of life and the community size is bigger, changes also happen in the majority language Turkish. Even though it is not clear whether the speakers in the Erzurum data set are in fact bilinguals, the predictors for the placement of tokens post-predicatively are the same as in Kurmanji.

Finally, it is important to emphasize that information structure was not encoded in WOWA and, consequently, has not been analyzed in this chapter. Therefore, it remains unclear whether information structural constraints are loosened in the Turkish of bilinguals and whether information structure plays a role in the word order of Kurmanji as a result of contact with Turkish. This presents a limitation of the current study; however, the role of information structure on word order in Turkish and Kurmanji of the same speakers is discussed in another study by Iefremenko (Submitted).

Kateryna Iefremenko

Abbreviations

| | | | |
|-------|----------------|------|-------------|
| ABL | ablative | NEG | negation |
| ACC | accusative | OBL | oblique |
| CIRC | circumposition | PL | plural |
| DRCT | directional | POSS | possessive |
| EZ | ezafe | PROG | progressive |
| F | feminine | PRS | present |
| GEN | genitive | PST | past |
| INDEF | indefinite | SG | singular |
| M | masculine | SUBJ | subjunctive |

Acknowledgements

I would like to thank all members of the project "Post-predicate Elements in Iranian: Inheritance, Contact, and Information Structure" and the participants of the project's workshops for their invaluable feedback and comments. I also extend my gratitude to Prof. Dr. Christoph Schroeder, the anonymous reviewer and the editors of this volume for their helpful and highly constructive suggestions. Special thanks to Dr. Shuan Karim for the assistance with LaTeX. The research was supported through funding by the Deutsche Forschungsgemeinschaft (DFG, German Research Foundation) for the Research Unit "Emerging Grammars in Language Contact Situations", project P9 (313607803) and the Alexander-von-Humboldt-Stiftung.

References

- Asadpour, Hiwa. 2022. *Typologizing word order variation in northwestern Iran*. Frankfurt am Main: Goethe-Universität. (Doctoral dissertation).
- Bates, Douglas, Martin Mächler, Ben Bolker & Steve Walker. 2015. Fitting linear mixed-effects models using lme4. *Journal of Statistical Software* 67. 1–48.
- Chafe, Wallace. 1985. Linguistic differences produced by differences between speaking and writing. In David Richard Olson, Nancy Torrance & Angela Hildyard (eds.), *Literacy, language and learning: The nature and consequences of reading and writing*, 105–123. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Croft, William & D. Alan Cruse. 2004. *Cognitive linguistics*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.

2 *Word order in the speech of Kurmanji-Turkish bilinguals*

- Csató, Éva Ágnes. 2002. Karaim: A high-copying language. In Mari C. Jones & Edith Esch (eds.), *Language change. The interplay of internal, external and extra-linguistic factors*, 315–328. Berlin: De Gruyter Mouton.
- Dogan, Mahîr. 2021. Oghuz (Erzurum). In Geoffrey Haig, Donald Stilo, Nils N. Schiborr & Mahîr Dogan (eds.), *WOWA — Word Order in Western Asia: A spoken-language-based corpus for investigating areal effects in word order variation*. (accessed on October 20, 2022). Bamberg: University of Bamberg. multicast.aspra.uni-bamberg.de/resources/wowa.
- Doğruöz, A. Seza & Ad Backus. 2007. Postverbal elements in immigrant Turkish: Evidence of change? *International Journal of Bilingualism* 11(2). 185–220. DOI: [10.1177/13670069070110020301](https://doi.org/10.1177/13670069070110020301).
- Erguvanlı, Eser. 1984. *The function of word order in Turkish grammar*. Berkeley: University of California Press.
- Gündoğdu, Songül. 2019. Asymmetries in Kurmanji morphosyntax. In Songül Gündoğdu, Ergin Öpentin, Geoffrey Haig & Erik Anonby (eds.), *Current issues in Kurdish linguistics*, 93–115. Bamberg: University of Bamberg Press.
- Haig, Geoffrey. 2015. Verb-goal (VG) word order in Kurdish and Neo-Aramaic: Typological and areal considerations. In Geoffrey Khan & Lidia Napiorkowska (eds.), *Neo-Aramaic and its linguistic context*, 407–425. Piscataway, NJ: Gorgias Press.
- Haig, Geoffrey. 2019. Northern Kurdish (Kurmanji). In Geoffrey Haig & Geoffrey Khan (eds.), *The languages and linguistics of Western Asia: An areal perspective*, 106–158. Berlin: De Gruyter Mouton.
- Haig, Geoffrey. 2022. Post-predicate constituents in Kurdish. In Yaron Matras, Geoffrey Haig & Ergin Öpentin (eds.), *Structural and typological variation in the dialects of Kurdish*, 335–377. Cham: Springer International Publishing. DOI: [10.1007/978-3-030-78837-7_8](https://doi.org/10.1007/978-3-030-78837-7_8).
- Haig, Geoffrey & Yaron Matras. 2002. Kurdish linguistics: A brief overview. *STUF-Language Typology and Universals* 55(1). 3–14.
- Haig, Geoffrey, Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand, Donald Stilo, Laurentia Schreiber & Nils N. Schiborr. 2024. Post-predicate elements in the Western Asian Transition Zone: Data, theory, and methods. In Geoffrey Haig, Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand, Donald Stilo, Laurentia Schreiber & Nils N. Schiborr (eds.), *Post-predicate elements in the Western Asian Transition Zone: A corpus-based approach to areal typology*, 1–49. Berlin: Language Science Press.
- Haig, Geoffrey & Hannah Thiele. 2014. Post-predicate Goals in Northern Kurdish and neighbouring a pilot study in quantitative areal linguistics languages. Paper presented at the *Second International Conference on Variation and Change in Kurdish*. Mardin Artuklu University, Turkey. 8–9 October 2014.

Kateryna Iefremenko

- Heine, Bernd. 2008. Contact-induced word order change without word order change. In Peter Siemund & Noemi Kintana (eds.), *Language contact and contact languages*, 33–60. Amsterdam: Benjamins. DOI: [10.1075/hsm.7.04hei](https://doi.org/10.1075/hsm.7.04hei).
- Iefremenko, Kateryna. 2021a. Kurdish (Northern, Ankara). In Geoffrey Haig, Donald Stilo, Mahîr C. Doğan & Nils N. Schiborr (eds.), *WOWA — Word Order in Western Asia: A spoken-language-based corpus for investigating areal effects in word order variation*. (accessed on October 20, 2022). Bamberg: University of Bamberg. multicast.aspra.uni-bamberg.de/resources/wowa.
- Iefremenko, Kateryna. 2021b. Oghuz (Ankara). In Geoffrey Haig, Donald Stilo, Mahîr C. Doğan & Nils N. Schiborr (eds.), *WOWA — Word Order in Western Asia: A spoken-language-based corpus for investigating areal effects in word order variation*. (accessed on April 11, 2023). Bamberg: University of Bamberg. multicast.aspra.uni-bamberg.de/resources/wowa/#turkic.
- Iefremenko, Kateryna. Submitted. *Word order in Turkish and Kurmanji Kurdish in language contacts*. Potsdam: University of Potsdam. (Doctoral dissertation).
- Iefremenko, Kateryna, Cem Keskin & Christoph Schroeder. 2023. The post-predicate position in Turkish in language contact situations: How resistant to change? Paper presented at the *45th Annual Meeting of the German Linguistic Society* (DGfS) in Cologne, Germany 7-10 March 2023.
- Johanson, Lars. 2002. *Structural factors in Turkic language contacts*. Richmond/Surrey: Curzon Press.
- Keskin, Cem. 2023. On the directionality of the Balkan Turkic verb phrase: Variationist and theoretical perspectives. *Languages* 8(1). 2. DOI: [10.3390/languages8010002](https://doi.org/10.3390/languages8010002).
- Kornfilt, Jaklin. 1997. *Turkish*. London/New York: Routledge.
- Matras, Yaron et al. 2016. *The dialects of Kurdish*. University of Manchester. <https://www.kratylos.org/~raphael/kurdish/database/>.
- Menz, Astrid. 1999. *Gagausische Syntax: Eine Studie zum kontaktinduzierten Sprachwandel*. Wiesbaden: Harrassowitz.
- R Core Team. 2023. *R: A Language and Environment for Statistical Computing*. R Foundation for Statistical Computing. Vienna. <https://www.R-project.org/>.
- Schroeder, Christoph. 1995. Post-predicate arguments in Turkish. *Sprachtypologie und Universalienforschung* 48. 204–218.
- Schroeder, Christoph, Kateryna Iefremenko & Mehmet Öncü. in press. The postverbal position in heritage Turkish. A comparative perspective with a focus on non-clausal elements. In Zeynep Kalkavan-Aydin & Yazgül Şimşek (eds.), *Zweisprachigkeit Deutsch-Türkisch*. Münster: Waxmann.

2 Word order in the speech of Kurmanji-Turkish bilinguals

- Sheyholislami, Jaffer. 2015. Language varieties of the Kurds. In Wolfgang Taucher, Mathias Vogl & Peter Webinger (eds.), *The Kurds: History–religion–language–politics*, 30–51. Vienna: Austrian Federal Ministry of the Interior.
- Thomason, Sarah G. 2001. *Language contact*. Edinburgh: Edinburgh University Press.
- Thomason, Sarah G. & Terrence Kaufman. 1988. *Language contact, creolization, and genetic linguistics*. Berkeley: University of California Press.
- Wickham, Hadley, Mara Averick, Jennifer Bryan, Winston Chang, Lucy McGowan D'Agostino McGowan, Roman François, Garrett Grolemund, Alex Hayes, Lionel Henry, Jim Hester, Max Kuhn, Thomas Lin Pedersen, Evan Miller, Stephan Milton Bache, Kirill Müller, Jeroen Ooms, David Robinson, Dana Paige Seidel, Vitalie Spinu, Kohske Takahashi, Davis Vaughan, Claus Wilke, Kara Woo & Hiroaki Yutani. 2019. Welcome to the Tidyverse. *Journal of Open Source Software* 4(43). 1686. DOI: [10.21105/joss.01686](https://doi.org/10.21105/joss.01686).
- Wiese, Heike. 2020. Language situations: A method for capturing variation within speakers' repertoires. In Yoshiyuki Asahi (ed.), *Methods in dialectology XVI*, 105–117. Frankfurt a. M.: Lang.
- Wiese, Heike, Artemis Alexiadou, Shanley Allen, Oliver Bunk, Natalia Gagarina, Kateryna Iefremenko, Esther Jahns, Martin Klotz, Thomas Krause, Annika Labrenz, et al. 2021. *RUEG Corpus*. Available online. (accessed on October 28, 2022). DOI: [10.5281/ZENODO.3236068](https://doi.org/10.5281/ZENODO.3236068).
- Yağmur, Kutlay. 2001. Turkish and other languages in Turkey. In Guus Extra & Durk Gorter (eds.), *The other languages of Europe. Demographic, sociolinguistic and educational perspectives*, 407–426. Clevedon: Multilingual Matters.

Kateryna Iefremenko

Appendix A: Erzurum Turkish (Turkic, Dogan 2021)

Table 9: **Animacy**: Regression table for binomial GLM with the dependent variable Position and the independent variable Animacy in Turkish spoken in Erzurum

| fixed effect | $\beta (\sigma)$ | p-value |
|-------------------|------------------------|-----------|
| (intercept) | -1.557e+01 (1.029e+03) | 0.98 (ns) |
| Anim-adv | 1.439e+01 (1.029e+03) | 0.98 (ns) |
| Anim-anim | 1.279e+01 (1.029e+03) | 0.99 (ns) |
| Anim-bp | 1.339e+01 (1.029e+03) | 0.99 (ns) |
| Anim-hum | 1.331e+01 (1.029e+03) | 0.99 (ns) |
| Anim-inan | 1.383e+01 (1.029e+03) | 0.98 (ns) |
| Anim-other | 2.205e-08 (1.188e+03) | 1.00 (ns) |

Table 10: **Weight**: Regression table for binomial GLM with the dependent variable Position and the independent variable Weight in Turkish spoken in Erzurum

| fixed effect | $\beta (\sigma)$ | p-value |
|---------------|------------------|-----------|
| (intercept) | -2.10 (0.29) | < .0001 |
| Weight | 0.16 (0.19) | 0.39 (ns) |

Table 11: **Flagging**: Regression table for binomial GLM with the dependent variable Position and the independent variable Flagging in Turkish spoken in Erzurum

| fixed effect | $\beta (\sigma)$ | p-value |
|---------------------------|------------------|-------------|
| (intercept) | -3.20 (0.45) | < .0001 *** |
| Flag-case | 1.46 (0.47) | 0.02 ** |
| Flag-postp-relnoun | 2.25 (0.63) | 0.0003 *** |

2 *Word order in the speech of Kurmanji-Turkish bilinguals*

Table 12: **Role**: Regression table for binomial GLM with the dependent variable Position and the independent variable Role in Turkish spoken in Erzurum

| fixed effect | $\beta (\sigma)$ | p-value |
|--------------------|------------------------|------------|
| (intercept) | -2.30 (6.05) | < .0001*** |
| Role-addr | 5.129e-02 (9.588e-01) | 0.95 (ns) |
| Role-becm | -9.531e-02 (1.207e+00) | 0.93 |
| Role-ben | 1.386e+00 (8.466e-01) | 0.1 (ns) |
| Role-cop | -1.526e+01 (9.890e+02) | 0.98 (ns) |
| Role-do | -7.793e-01 (7.588e-01) | 0.3 (ns) |
| Role-do-def | -2.632e-02 (6.632e-01) | 0.96 (ns) |
| Role-goal | 2.042e+00 (6.438e-01) | 0.001 ** |
| Role-goal-c | 1.022e+00 (7.032e-01) | 0.14 (ns) |
| Role-instr | -1.526e+01 (1.251e+03) | 0.99 (ns) |
| Role-loc | -6.592e-01 (1.251e+03) | 0.43 (ns) |
| Role-other | 1.372e-14 (9.574e-01) | 1.00 (ns) |
| Role-poss | -1.526e+01 (2.797e+03) | 0.99 (ns) |
| Role-rec | -3.365e-01 (9.499e-01) | 0.72 (ns) |
| Role-stim | -1.526e+01 (3.956e+03) | 0.99 (ns) |

Chapter 3

Post-predicate prosody in OV languages

Stavros Skopeteas^a

^aUniversity of Göttingen

This article examines the prosodic properties of post-predicate material in OV languages of the Western Asian Transition Zone. The core question is whether the right edge of the predicate is associated with the edge of a prosodic domain. The facts reported for these languages are summarized in two major phenomena that reveal an asymmetry between the material at the left and right side of the predicate. In some languages (e.g., in Standard Turkish), the nuclear stress must be realized within the domain preceding the right edge of the predicate, that is the pre-predicate material or the predicate itself. In some languages (e.g., in Georgian), the post-predicate material is separated from the predicate with a prosodic event that demarcates a prosodic constituent. Both phenomena provide evidence for a syntactic constituent that is mapped on prosody and separates the post-predicate elements from the core clause.

1 Introduction

In a study on the punctuation of the Georgian translation of the *Physiologus* (11th c. CE), Boeder (1991) reports that scribes often used punctuation within clauses indicating – or possibly prescribing – the prosodic phrasing of subclausal units. The use of punctuation in this manuscript revealed an interesting asymmetry between material at the left and the right side of the verb: setting clitics aside, arguments or adjuncts at the following the verb were often separated by punctuation, as indicated by the colon in (1), which did not apply when the same elements appeared preverbally.

Stavros Skopeteas

- (1) Old Georgian (*Physiologus* 6.177.29, edited by [Marr 1904](#), cited from [Boeder 1991](#))

da sameupo-s i-pov-eb-in : kalandr-i igi
 and realm-NOM PASS-[3SG]find-SM-PASS charadrius-NOM DEM.REM
 ‘and it is found in the realm, that charadrius (bird).’

The asymmetry between the left and the right side of the predicate, as reported in [Boeder \(1991\)](#), opens an interesting agenda: is there a difference between pre-predicate and post-predicate elements regarding their prosodic properties? Under which conditions does the post-predicate material appear outside the phonological domain that contains the predicate? In particular for languages with OV properties, a reasonable hypothesis is that the prosodic separation of the post-predicate domain may reflect properties of a predicate-final constituent structure. In many languages, prosodic structure is used for the demarcation information structural domains. At the empirical side, the challenge is to disentangle effects of constituent structure and effects on information structure. At the analytical side, the interesting question is whether the information structural options of a language can be partially predicted from the array of possible prosodic structures in this language.

In order to tackle these questions, the present study examines selected OV languages of the Western Asian Transition Zone, which comprises the area of Northern Iran, Northern Iraq, Eastern Turkey and the Caucasus ([Stilo 2015](#): 350); see Chapter 1, this vol. The languages in this area are not syntactically uniform, but most languages generally share several “OV” properties, such as preverbal placement of bare objects and auxiliaries following the lexical verb, which at least distinguish them from VO languages. The contextual conditions of OV and VO differs very much between languages, as established by various studies ([Stilo 2018](#), [Haig et al. in press](#), Chapter 1, this vol.), which will be one of the main issues in the following discussion (see Section 2).

The primary data discussed in the present study was elicited with native speakers of Turkish, Georgian, Caucasian Urum, Eastern Armenian, and Persian. The aim of this elicitation was to obtain comparable data that illustrate the phenomena at issue; however, the main source of the discussed generalizations is the available research on these languages.¹ Information about further languages of

¹The data were collected in qualitative interviews with native speakers, who were raised in the object language and currently use it in their everyday life. Beyond their native language, these speakers were also competent in English or German. The Caucasian Urum speaker was also native in Russian and Georgian; the further speakers did not speak other languages of the area. The speakers prepared the sentences in collaboration with the instructor and were instructed to imagine a conversation in which the scripted utterances are performed as answers

3 Post-predicate prosody in OV languages

this area is drawn from the available research. The majority of the available sources is based on controlled data, either scripted speech or controlled speech-production tasks. This method comes with limitations in the generalizability of the findings, which should not be neglected.

Based on the available comparisons between spontaneous and controlled data in the area at issue, the major issue is that elicited data may present 'idealizations' of what happens in real discourse. A comparison between scripted speech and semi-spontaneous narratives in Georgian reports that post-predicate elements are often separated by a high prosodic boundary from the predicate in either type of data: spontaneous narratives differ from controlled speech in that they display greater variability (Skopeteas et al. 2018: 44). This means that controlled data present an 'idealization' of patterns that are learnt in real life (Stokhof & van Lambalgen 2011). Idealization of phonological events may have the form of hyper-articulation, e.g., expansion of the pitch range of tonal events that are less salient in spontaneous speech. In a study on Persian, spontaneous data were found to be often under-specified in comparison to controlled data: since prosodic demarcation is often not necessary for conveying the intended content, it is expected that real communication will be less rich in prosodic marking than the performance in careful speech (Sadat-Tehrani 2017: 28-31). Finally, the difference does not only lie in the clarity of signaling a certain information structure, but also in the intention of the speaker to convey the information structure of the utterance or not. Information structure is not an automatic reflex of the context, which often results in discrepancies between the intuitions of the speakers and what we find in corpora. For instance, Forker & Belyaev (2016: 243) report that some speakers of Tsakhur do not accept postverbal objects in narrow focus (with reference to Testelets 1999), but postverbal objects appear in Tsakhur texts as answers to questions that license a narrow focus on the object. This discrepancy may have two explanations: (a) the speakers report wrong generalizations about their native language; (b) since the information structure of the answer is made clear through the context, an answer that does not necessarily mark narrow focus is fully adequate in view of the communicative goals. Hence, these cases involve the challenge of identifying the intention of the speaker in producing an utterance in a certain context. This is not trivial of course, but it is relevant for the interpretation of the facts – if we do not assume that the relation between context and target utterance is deterministic. Finally, either type of speech production may be influenced by phenomena that are not related to the matter at issue: scripted

to context questions. They were free to repeat their performance until they were confident that it corresponds to a natural way to produce the target utterance in the given context.

Stavros Skopeteas

speech may be performed with listing intonation (i.e., continuation rises at the end of declarative clauses), if the native speakers are not instructed to realize the utterances as complete discourse units; spontaneous data often show reflexes of speech planning, e.g., hesitation pauses, which lead to shorter intonational units than in controlled settings (Sadat-Tehrani 2017: 31-33).

With this background, the goal of the present study is to identify prosodic properties of post-predicate elements in the available data and to set up hypotheses about their relation to syntax and/or information structure. The properties of post-predicate elements are not uniform across constructions: at least in many Iranian languages, the verb governs direct objects on its left and oblique objects (especially goal arguments) on its right side, as it has been demonstrated with rich data in Haig & Rasekh-Mahand (2019), Haig et al. (in press), and Chapter 7, this vol. This difference is also reflected in the focus options and prosodic properties of the different classes of complements (Sadat-Tehrani 2007: 138–139), which means that post-predicate elements form different types of domains with the predicate, which are also reflected in prosody. In order to restrict the sources of variation, we will only examine preverbal and postverbal direct objects in the present study.

The following exposition starts with an overview of the variation between languages in the information structure of post-predicate objects; see Section 2. After a short summary of the necessary assumptions for prosodic description in Section 3, the core part of the study is organized around the information structure of post-predicate objects. The basic distinction is whether the post-predicate object is part of the partition of the utterance that is focused (i.e., the focus domain) or not. In the former case, it can be part of a larger focus domain that contains the post-predicate and the predicate: these are instances of “broad focus,” that may contain a VP or an entire sentence (see Section 4). Alternatively, the focus domain of the utterance may be exactly the post-predicate object; these are cases of “narrow focus” (i.e., a focus domain only containing a simple lexical projection such as a noun phrase) (see Section 5). Finally, the post-predicate object may be outside the focus domain (or simply “out of focus”), in which case it is background information (see Section 6). Based on the properties introduced in these sections, Section 7 draws conclusions about the interaction between syntax and prosody in the realization of post-predicate elements.

2 Focus options

V-final languages of the Western Asian Transition Zone differ regarding the focus possibilities of post-predicate objects. They either cannot be focused (Turkish),

3 Post-predicate prosody in OV languages

or they can be part of a narrow/broad focus domain (Georgian) or of a broad focus domain only (Persian).

Post-predicate elements in Modern Standard Turkish can be either background information (discourse given information that is outside the focus domain of the utterance) or afterthoughts (discourse new information that completes the utterance) (see [Taylan 1984](#): 50-56, [İşsever 2003](#), [Kilicaslan 2004](#): 727-728). Afterthoughts are a different type of phenomenon since they were not part of the sentence plan at the critical time point that the speaker selected the linearization of her utterance. Leaving afterthoughts aside, post-predicate elements in this type of language cannot be focused. This phenomenon is reported for Western Armenian ([Donabedian-Demopoulos 2018](#): §2.7), Laz ([Lacroix 2019](#): 852), and Balochi ([Delforooz 2010](#): 66-68). Northwest Caucasian languages presumably belong to this group as well – at least those languages like Ubykh in which postverbal constituents are rare ([Forker 2021](#): 977).

In a second type of languages, post-predicate objects are contextually unrestricted. In Georgian, postverbal objects can be either part of a broad focus (e.g., a focus domain encompassing the entire clause) or a narrow focus (e.g., focus on the postverbal object) ([Skopeteas & Fanselow 2010](#), [Gosby 2016](#): 170, [Borise 2019](#): 106, 235, Chapter 10, this vol.). Similar facts are reported for Mingrelian and Svan ([Forker 2021](#): 994), Caucasian Urum ([Schröter 2017](#): 221), Ossetic ([Erschler 2012](#): 686), and at least some Nakh-Daghestanian languages (see summary in [Forker 2021](#): 977). In Eastern Armenian, the same flexibility of the post-predicate domain applies to synthetic verbs (in contrast to periphrastic verbs, in which case the auxiliary cliticizes to the element bearing the nuclear stress, such that the material following the auxiliary is de-accented ([Comrie 1984](#), [Kahnemuyipour & Megerdoomian 2011](#), [Samvelian et al. 2023](#)).

The difference between languages with and languages without postverbal foci is well established in the research on V-final languages. Interestingly, there is a third pattern that deserves more attention. [Forker & Belyaev \(2016](#): 243) (with reference to [Testelets 1999](#)) report that some speakers of Tsakhur accept postverbal objects in broad focus, but not so in narrow focus. A similar asymmetry is gathered through speaker judgments in Persian: *specific* objects can follow the predicate when they are part of a broad focus domain, but they are judged to be impossible in narrow focus (see [Karimi 2003](#): 115 and [Sadat-Tehrani 2007](#): 68, 138–139 for the latter statement); see (2).²

²These intuitions imply that speakers will use a preverbal object whenever they intend to signal that this constituent is narrowly focused. The prediction for corpus observations is that preverbal objects are *more likely* in contexts licensing a narrow focus on the object than in

Stavros Skopeteas

(2) Persian (Y. Sanei, p.c.)

a. Broad focus (entire clause)

A: 'What happened?'

B: *Nâzanin livân-am-o var-dâšt.*

Nazanin glass-POSS.1SG-RA up-have:PST[3SG]

'Nazanin picked up my glass.'

B': *Nâzanin var-dâšt livân-am-o.*

Nazanin up-have:PST[3SG] glass-POSS.1SG-RA

'Nazanin picked up my glass.'

b. Narrow focus (on the object)

A: 'What did Nazanin pick up?'

B: *Nâzanin livân-am-o var-dâšt.*

B': #*Nâzanin var-dâšt livân-am-o.*

OV languages of this area share some properties in common. First, postverbal arguments can be background information. Furthermore, in all these languages there is evidence for a preverbal position for narrow focus, which is immediately left adjacent to the verb: Turkish (Göksel & Özsoy 2000), Laz (Lacroix 2019: 852), Georgian (Borise 2019: 235), Chechen (Komen 2013: 322), Nakh-Daghestanian (in general) (Forker 2021: 977), Northwest Caucasian (in general) (Forker 2021: 986), Ossetic (Erschler 2012: 686, Borise & Erschler 2023), Eastern Armenian (Comrie 1984: 19, Samvelian et al. 2023: 464-467), Persian (Kahnemuyipour 2001). Beyond the preverbal option, there is a lot of variation regarding the exact focus options in the preverbal domain, e.g., whether the preverbal elements can be marked for focus in their canonical position, whether contrastive foci may have an effect on linear order, as in Persian (Karimi 2003: 92), which is out of the scope of the present study. In contrast to preverbal foci, postverbal foci are not restricted to a certain position that is designated to focus: any element within the post-predicate domain can be focused by prosodic means.

contexts licensing a broader focus domain including the object (assuming that a subset of the data from speech production are under-specified for information structure). The only corpus study that offers data for this comparison is a small-size corpus study on written Persian, showing that SVO appears rarely in sentence/predicate focus and never in narrow focus (Majidi & Dabir Moghaddam 2012: 861) – but the size of the corpus does not allow for strong statements. The corpus study by Roberts (2009: 139–141) on written/oral Persian shows that postverbal specific objects may be part of the focus domain, but does not consider instances of narrow focus. Forker & Belyaev (2016: 243) present examples with postverbal objects in Tsakhur that are answers to questions licensing a narrow focus on the object, which contradict the speakers' intuitions, but without excluding that these answers are underspecified for information structure since this is clearly indicated by the context (see discussion in Section 1).

3 Post-predicate prosody in OV languages

The language types presented so far are summarized in Figure 1. The first node contains the already established distinction between languages in which the post-predicate domain cannot be focused and languages allowing for focus on post-predicate elements. Within the latter type, there is a distinction between languages that allow for any type of focus and those that only allow for broad focus in the post-predicate domain.

Can a post-predicate object be part of a broad focus domain?

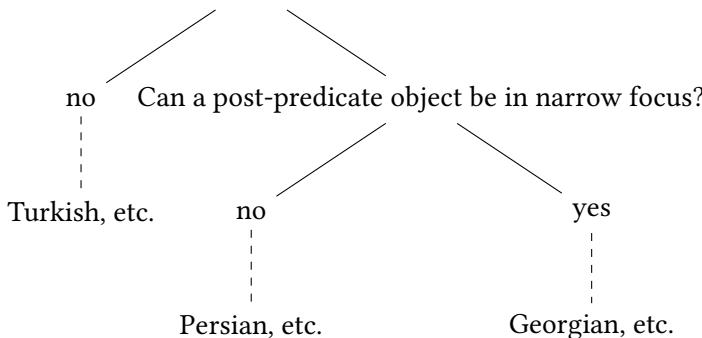


Figure 1: Focus options of post-predicate objects in OV languages of the Western Asian Transition Zone

Note that Figure 1 reveals an implicative relation between the focus options of post-predicate objects, since no language in this sample expresses narrow but not broad focus in the post-predicate domain (see 3).

- (3) Between focus options of post-predicate objects
 Broad focus \leftarrow Narrow focus

The origin of this asymmetry will be discussed in Section 7.2 in the light of the prosodic properties of the languages at issue, which are examined in the subsequent sections.

3 Prosodic assumptions

The description of the collected data in the following sections is built upon some basic assumptions about the relevant prosodic events and the syntax-prosody interface, that are introduced in the following. Prosodic constituents form a prosodic hierarchy such that constituents of higher layers optionally contain constituents of lower layers. The correspondence between prosodic constituents

Stavros Skopeteas

and syntactic constituents is roughly as follows: prosodic words (ω) correspond to morphological words including clitics; phonological phrases (φ) correspond to syntactic phrases; intonation phrases (i) to clauses (Selkirk 2011: 437). These correspondences are modulated by purely phonological rules (e.g., constraints on the size of prosodic constituents), by other functions reflected in prosodic phrasing (e.g., focus) and by aspects relating to speech performance, such as speech tempo and hesitation breaks. For instance, the expression of focus may create prosodic constituents that do not correspond to syntactic phrases; see $(SV)_{\varphi}$ in example (7b) below. We assume that prosodic constituents allow for recursion, such that φ -phrases can be embedded in other φ -phrases as in $(\alpha (\beta)_{\varphi})_{\varphi}$ (see discussion in Ladd 1986, Selkirk 2011: 455, Féry 2018: 78–85).

The pitch track annotations in the following examples follow the conventions of the Autosegmental-Metrical framework (Pierrehumbert 1980). Tonal events represent the assumed phonological entities that underlie the pitch contour – and not every peak or dip in the pitch excursion. The labels indicate the scaling of tonal targets with respect to their environment (H for ‘high’, L for ‘low’, L+H for ‘rise’, etc.), and for their association with two classes of entities: (a) edge tones are associated with the edges of prosodic constituents (H_{φ} : is a high tone associated with the right edge of a φ -phrase, $_{\varphi}H$ is a high tone associated with the left edge of a φ -phrase) and (b) pitch accents are associated with stressed syllables (H^* is a high tone associated with the stressed syllable; L+H* is a rise, whose H-target is associated with the stressed syllable). Languages often mark the constituent that hosts the nuclear stress of the intonation phrase (i.e., the constituent that is perceived with maximal prominence) with different tonal events from the prosodic constituents that precede or follow it (“prenuclear” or “post-nuclear” prosodic constituents).

The phonetic cues of prosodic constituents are language specific. Prosodic constituents may be demarcated by tonal events or breaks at their edges as well as by effects on the duration of edge syllables (e.g., final lengthening). Further evidence for prosodic constituents comes from register lowering: the pitch scaling of tonal events at sister constituents incrementally decreases (Ladd 1988, Féry 2013).

4 Broad focus

A broad focus encompassing the entire utterance is elicited with a context question that does not introduce any presuppositions, such as ‘What happened?’. Figure 2 illustrates the contrast between the SOV and the SVO order in this context

3 Post-predicate prosody in OV languages

in Georgian. The SOV utterance (LEFT PANEL) is realized with a series of rising contours ($_{\varphi}L \dots H_{\varphi}$), stretching from a low target at the left edge to a high target at the right edge of the φ -phrase (see various analyses in [Skopeteas et al. 2009](#), [Vicenik & Jun 2014](#), [Skopeteas et al. 2018](#), [Borise 2021a](#)). The second H_{φ} is scaled lower than the first H_{φ} . The final verb is realized with low intensity and creaky voice, which results to a fragmentary pitch signal and ends with a final lowering, represented by the L target at the right edge of the ι -phrase (L_{ι}). The SVO realization (RIGHT PANEL) differs (see detailed discussion in [Skopeteas & Féry 2010](#), [Skopeteas et al. 2018](#)): the subject and the verb are integrated in a single phonological domain that is determined by a $_{\varphi}H$ tone at the left edge and a H_{φ} tone at the right edge. Crucially, the latter phrase tone is not lowered with reference to the former one.³

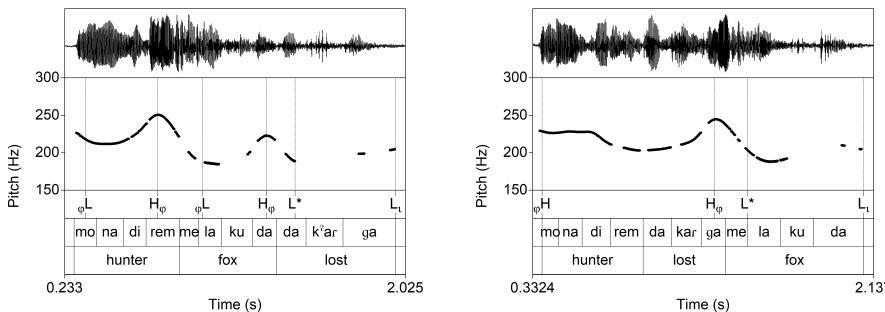


Figure 2: Broad focus in Georgian; answers to ‘What happened?’, LEFT PANEL: SOV; RIGHT PANEL: SVO; morphemic transcription in (4)-(5)

The register lowering of the second H-target in the SOV order (Figure 2/LEFT PANEL) is compatible with two alternative analyses, see (4): (a) the H-targets can be associated with the right edge of two sister φ -phrases that are mapped onto the preverbal arguments; (b) alternatively, the second φ -phrase can be associated with a φ -phrase mapped onto the object, that is nested within the φ -phrase of the VP. Register lowering applies to this case too, since the φ -phrase of the VP is a sister constituent to the φ -phrase of the subject. Hence, both prosodic structures in (4) are possible and the realization of the example does not provide any further cues that would support the one or the other structure.

³The figures in this article contain an oscillogram (Top) and a track of the f0 (MIDDLE) temporally aligned with the phonetic transcription of the utterance (BOTTOM); created in Praat ([Boersma & Weenink 2023](#)).

Stavros Skopeteas

- (4) Georgian (D. Kakashvili, p.c.)

| | | | | |
|--------------------------------|-------------|------------------------------|---|-------|
| φL | H_φ | φL | H_φ | L_t |
| $((monadire-m_\omega)_\varphi$ | | $(melakuda_\omega)_\varphi$ | $da\text{-}k'\text{arg}\text{-}a_\omega$ | $)_t$ |
| $((monadire-m_\omega)_\varphi$ | | $((melakuda_\omega)_\varphi$ | $da\text{-}k'\text{arg}\text{-}a_\omega)_\varphi$ | $)_t$ |

hunter-ERG fox[NOM] PFV-loose-AOR.S.3SG

‘The hunter lost the fox.’

In the SVO utterance (Figure 2/RIGHT PANEL), the verb and the preverbal material are phrased as a single prosodic constituent. The left edge of this constituent is demarcated with a high phrase tone (φH), while the two phrase tones (φH and H_φ) are just interpolated. The relevant issue is that the predicate is phrased together with the preceding material and forms a separate prosodic constituent from the post-predicate. Quantitative studies on controlled and spontaneous data show that the high phrase tone at the right edge of the verb is a frequent (but not necessary) correlate of verb-medial orders (Skopeteas & Féry 2010, Skopeteas et al. 2018).

- (5) Georgian (D. Kakashvili, p.c.)

| | | |
|---|-----------------------------|-------|
| φH | H_φ | L_t |
| $((monadire-m_\omega da\text{-}k'\text{arg}\text{-}a_\omega)_\varphi$ | $(melakuda_\omega)_\varphi$ | $)_t$ |

hunter-ERG PFV-loose-AOR.S.3SG fox[NOM]

‘The hunter lost the fox.’

The special role of the predicate in phrasing is also reported for other languages (see Borise 2021b: 771, 780 for a summary of earlier mentions in Adyghe, Circassian, and Chechen; see Hasan 2012: 275 on preverbal and postverbal quotations in Kurmanji), but more data is required in order to qualify these reports. However, this phenomenon does not apply to all OV languages of the area, as illustrated below for Persian.

The available accounts on Persian prosody do not predict a high phrase tone at the right edge of the verb for independent reasons: the nuclear φ -phrase cannot be after the predicate (except for goal arguments) and this phrase normally ends with a low phrase tone (Sadat-Tehrani 2007: 9, 68).⁴ Prenuclear φ -phrases are realized with rising contours that reach a H-target within the stressed syllable (i.e., a $L+H^*$ pitch accent). This pitch accent is followed by a phrase tone (H_φ) in prenuclear φ -phrases (Sadat-Tehrani 2007: 9, 42, 68) and is tonally compressed

⁴This does not mean that a high phrase tone at the right edge of the verb is impossible (see an example in Mahjani 2003: 54).

3 Post-predicate prosody in OV languages

or totally erased in postnuclear φ -phrases (Abolhasanizadeh et al. 2012). The reflexes of this pitch accent are illustrated in Figure 3 with specific objects, which may precede or follow the V in Persian. The $L+H^*$ pitch accent is aligned with the stress, which is final with nouns (see *Nâza'nin* 'Nazanin') or falls on an earlier syllable in the presence of clitics (see *li'vân-am-o* 'glass-POSS.1SG-RA') or in the verb complex (see *ne'gâh kard* 'look do:PST[3SG]'.⁵ Prenuclear and nuclear pitch excursions differ with respect to the presence of a H_φ phrase tone. In prenuclear φ -phrases, the pitch excursion rises up to the right edge of the phrase (see *li'vân-am-o* 'glass-POSS.1SG-RA' in the LEFT PANEL); in nuclear φ -phrases, the rising in the stressed syllable ($L+H^*$) is followed by a falling pitch excursion (see *ne'gâh kard* 'look do:PST[3SG]' in the RIGHT PANEL), while the postnuclear domain is tonally compressed (Sadat-Tehrani 2007: 7–8, Ardali & Xu 2012). Nuclear rises are scaled lower than prenuclear rises and their H-target (H^*) is aligned with the middle of the stressed syllable while the H-target of phrase tones (H_φ) is aligned with the right edge of the word (Sadat-Tehrani 2009, Hosseini 2014: 104–107).

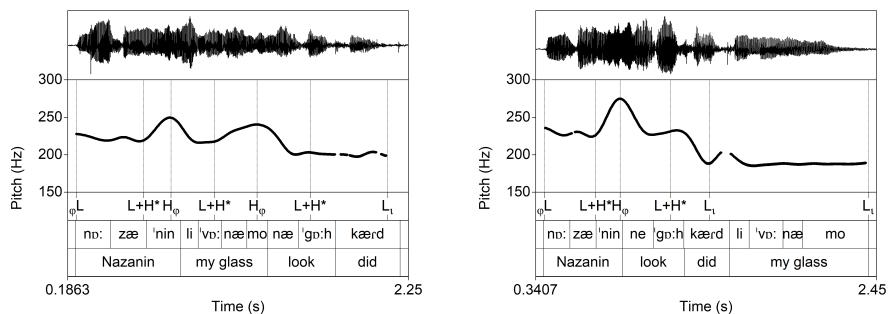


Figure 3: Broad focus in Persian; answers to 'What happened?', LEFT PANEL: SOV; RIGHT PANEL: SVO; morphemic transcription in (6)

In the SOV order with a specific object (LEFT PANEL), the nuclear stress falls on the verb and the φ -phrase of the object precedes the nucleus and is enclosed by a H_φ phrase tone (as expected for specific objects and in contrast to bare objects (Hosseini 2014: 81); see (6a). In the SVO order (RIGHT PANEL), the nuclear stress is again realized within the verb (as indicated by the absence of a H_φ), while the post-predicate domain is realized as a low plateau without any tonal events; see (6b). This realization follows from a general property of Persian prosody: (to

⁵Word stress is located on the final syllable of nouns/adjectives to the exception of unstressed enclitics; with complex verbs, the stress falls on the embedded non-verbal element that expresses the lexical content and not on the light verb (Kahnemuyipour 2003).

Stavros Skopeteas

the exception of goal arguments) the nuclear stress cannot be realized in the domain following the predicate (Sadat-Tehrani 2007: 9, 68). Since the domain of the nuclear stress is the intonation phrase, we conclude that the low edge tone is associated with the right edge of an intonation phrase (L_i).

(6) Persian (Y. Sanei, p.c.)

- a. $L_\varphi \quad L+H^* \quad H_\varphi \quad L+H^* \quad H_\varphi \quad L+H^* \quad L_i$
 $((nâza'nin_\omega)_\varphi \quad (li'vân-am-o_\omega)_\varphi \quad (ne'gâh_\omega kard_\omega)_\varphi \quad)_i$
Nazanin glass-POSS.1SG-RA look do:PST[3SG]
‘Nazanin watched my glass.’
- b. $L_\varphi \quad L+H^* \quad H_\varphi \quad L+H^* \quad L_i \quad L_i$
 $((nâza'nin_\omega)_\varphi \quad (ne'gâh_\omega kard_\omega)_\varphi \quad)_i \quad (li'vân-am-o_\omega)_\varphi \quad)_i$
Nazanin look do:PST[3SG] glass-POSS.1SG-RA
‘Nazanin watched my glass.’

In sum, the examples of broad focus illustrated two distinct phenomena:

- In Georgian, post-predicate objects are prosodically separated from the predicate (by a φ -phrase boundary).
- In Persian, post-predicate objects are outside the phonological domain (presumably an i -phrase) that may host the nuclear stress.

5 Narrow focus

In some languages, the post-predicate domain can host a narrow focus (see Section 2). Since all these languages also have a preverbal position hosting narrow foci (see 2), the relevant question is whether these options differ prosodically. The data presented in this section show that preverbal foci are prosodically integrated to the phonological constituent that contains the verb, while postverbal foci are prosodically separated from verb.

Caucasian Urum is an Anatolian dialect of Turkish spoken by a population that migrated to the Small Caucasus from Kars/Erzurum in the 19th century (Skopeteas 2016). Similar to the Anatolian vernaculars of Turkish – and in contrast to Standard Turkish – Urum allows for postverbal foci (Schröter 2017). Similarly to Turkish, prenuclear phrases are realized with rising contours delimited by a low target at their left edge and a high target at their right edge ($_\varphi L \dots H_\varphi$). A falling pitch accent (H^*+L) appears in the stressed syllable in nuclear φ -phrases or when the word stress precedes the final syllable (e.g., in case of compounds or

3 Post-predicate prosody in OV languages

unstressed enclitics); cf. Kamali (2011: 93), Güneş (2013), Féry (2018: 250–257). In Figure 4/LEFT PANEL, a high phrase tone (H_φ) separates the preverbal focus from the preceding material; the focus is marked with a falling accent (H^*+L), while the postnuclear domain (the verb) is de-accented. The postverbal focus (Figure 4/RIGHT PANEL) does not essentially differ: it is separated from the verb by a high phrase tone (H_φ), while the clause-final nuclear stress is marked with a low pitch accent (L^*).

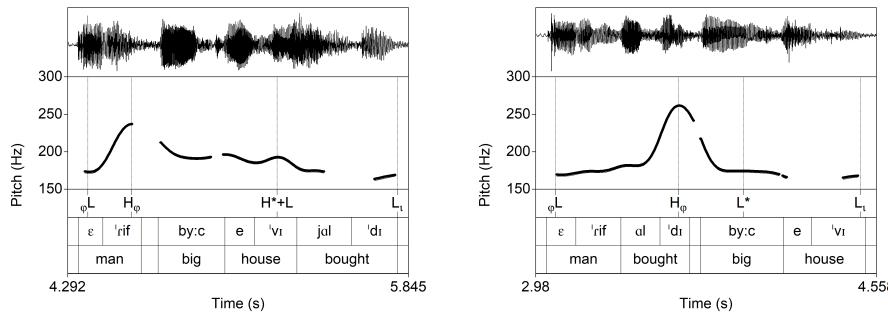


Figure 4: Narrow focus in Caucasian Urum; answers to ‘What did the man buy?’, LEFT PANEL: SO_FV; RIGHT PANEL: SVO_F; morphemic transcription in (7)

There are several indicators of phrasing in the examples of Figure 4. The SOV order (LEFT PANEL) displays a break between the S and O and the SVO order (RIGHT PANEL) between V and O. The epenthetic [j] between *ev-i* and *al-di* in the SOV order is inserted to avoid the hiatus, which indicates that there is no φ -phrase boundary between O and V. Furthermore, the H_φ phrase tones are aligned with the right edge of the subject in SO_FV and of the verb in SVO_F. These facts suggest a phrasing $(S)_\varphi (O_F V)_\varphi$ for preverbal and $(S V)_\varphi (O_F)_\varphi$ for postverbal foci; see (7).

(7) Caucasian Urum (V. Moisidi, p.c.)

- a. $\varphi L \quad H_\varphi \quad H^*+L \quad L_t$
 $((erif_\omega \quad)_\varphi (büyük_\omega ev-i_\omega \quad al-di_\omega)_\varphi \quad)_t$
 man[NOM] big house-ACC buy:PST[3]
 ‘The/a man bought the/a big house.’
- b. $\varphi L \quad H_\varphi \quad L^* \quad L_t$
 $((erif_\omega \quad al-di_\omega \quad)_\varphi (büyük_\omega ev-i_\omega)_\varphi \quad)_t$
 man[NOM] buy:PST[3] big house-ACC
 ‘The/a man bought the/a big house.’

Stavros Skopeteas

The prosody of Eastern Armenian has very similar properties: prenuclear φ -phrases are rising contours with φL and H_φ tones at their edges – independent of word stress (see [Toparlak 2019](#): 61–81 for a pitch-accent based account). Prenuclear φ -phrases show exactly this pattern in Figure 5: see the contour of the subject before a preverbal focus (LEFT PANEL) and the contours of the subject and the verb preceding a postverbal focus (RIGHT PANEL). Nuclear accents have the form of falling contours in declarative clauses ([Dum-Tragut 2009](#): 53), differing from prenuclear accents in that (a) the peak of the H^*+L accent is aligned earlier in the stressed syllable than the peak of the H_φ phrase tone and (b) the nuclear accents are aligned with the stressed syllable and not with the final syllable in words with non-final stress, e.g., with unstressed enclitics; see [Dolatian \(2020: 864\)](#) on stress. In Figure 5, the nuclear accents (H^*+L) are aligned with the stressed syllable of the narrow focus, either preverbal (LEFT PANEL) or postverbal (RIGHT PANEL).

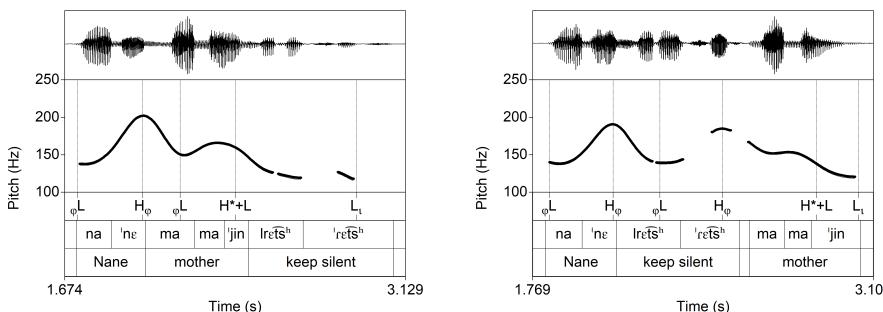


Figure 5: Narrow focus in Eastern Armenian; answers to ‘Whom did Nane keep silent?’, LEFT PANEL: $SO_F V$; RIGHT PANEL: SVO_F ; morphemic transcription in (8)

The prosodic excursions of Figure 5 also differ with respect to the relative pitch scaling of the H-targets: register lowering applies to the second H-target of the LEFT PANEL but not to the second H-target of the RIGHT PANEL. The absence of register-lowering in the latter case is evidence that the right edge of the φ -phrase mapped on the verb is not a sister constituent to the φ -phrase of the subject, but it is a higher prosodic constituent; see $((S)_\varphi (V)_\varphi)_\varphi$ in (8b).

(8) Eastern Armenian (H. Hovhannisyan, p.c.)

3 Post-predicate prosody in OV languages

- a. $\varphi L \quad H_\varphi \varphi L \quad H^*+L \quad L_t$
 $((nane_\omega) \varphi (mama-i-n_\omega) \quad lrre-c'r-ec' \varphi) \varphi \quad)_t$
 Nane[NOM] mother-DAT-DEF silent-CAUS-AOR.3SG
 'Nane kept mother silent.'
- b. $\varphi L \quad H_\varphi \varphi L \quad H_\varphi \quad H^*+L \quad L_t$
 $((nane_\omega) \varphi (lrre-c'r-ec' \varphi) \varphi \quad)_\varphi (mama-i-n_\omega) \varphi \quad)_t$
 Nane[NOM] silent-CAUS-AOR.3SG mother-DAT-DEF
 'Nane kept mother silent.'

The same difference between preverbal and postverbal foci is found in Georgian; see Figure 6. In the preverbal focus (LEFT PANEL), the prenuclear φ -phrase of the subject is separated from the focus with a high phrase tone – similar to the pattern observed in Caucasian Urum and Eastern Armenian. The initial syllable of the focus is realized with a steep fall towards a low target that is reached within the first syllable (L^*). The material after this syllable is realized with low intensity (see oscillogram), very low pitch and creaky voice, which results into inaccurate pitch measurements (the real pitch level is much lower than the displayed pitch level in the pitch track). In contrast to the broad focus in Figure 2/LEFT PANEL, the material after the stressed syllable of the focus is de-phrased such that there is no H_φ at the right edge of the focused object. In the postverbal focus in Figure 6/RIGHT PANEL, the prenuclear domain is mapped on a single φ -phrase, delimited by two high targets and a pitch excursion interpolating between the high edge events. After the high phrase tone at the right edge of the verb, the pitch is falling towards a low target within the first syllable of the focus, while the remainder is realized with a radical intensity drop and creaky voice (see earlier descriptions in Vicensik & Jun 2014: 177, Skopeteas & Féry 2010, Borise 2019: 291).

In either case (preverbal and postverbal focus), the intonational nucleus (i.e., the φ -phrase in narrow focus) is separated by a high phrase tone (H_φ) from the prenuclear material on its left side. This is a robust property of focus expressions in Georgian (Skopeteas & Féry 2010, Féry 2013: 711–713, Borise 2021a, Vicensik & Jun 2014: 181). It results into a difference in phrasing between preverbal and postverbal foci: while the former are phrased together with the verb, the latter are prosodically separated from the verb; see (9).

Stavros Skopeteas

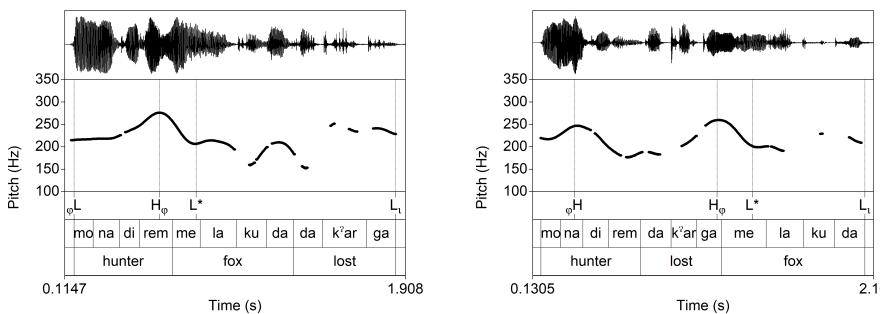


Figure 6: Narrow focus in Georgian; answers to ‘What did the hunter loose?’, LEFT PANEL: SO_FV; RIGHT PANEL: SVO_F; morphemic transcription in (9)

(9) Georgian (D. Kakashvili, p.c.)

- a. $\varphi L \quad H_\varphi \quad L^* \quad L_t$
 $((monadire-m_\omega)_\varphi (melakuda_\omega da-k'arg-a_\omega)_\varphi)_t$
 hunter-ERG fox[NOM] PFV-loose-AOR.S.3SG
 ‘The hunter lost the fox.’
- b. $\varphi H \quad H_\varphi \quad L^* \quad L_t$
 $((monadire-m_\omega da-k'arg-a_\omega)_\varphi (melakuda_\omega)_\varphi)_t$
 hunter-ERG PFV-loose-AOR.S.3SG fox[NOM]
 ‘The hunter lost the fox.’

The examples of this section demonstrate that preverbal foci are integrated to the φ -phrase of the predicate, while postverbal foci are separated by H_φ phrase tones from the predicate. Crucially, the high φ -phrase tone does not depend on the syntactic category of the material preceding the focus: in the examples discussed so far, it appears on the right edge of S in SO_FV and the right edge of V in SVO_F. When a postpredicate focus is not adjacent to the verb, the phrase tone just appears at the right side of the preceding φ -phrase, as in Figure 7 with an adverb intervening between the V and the narrow focus. In the broad focus realization (LEFT PANEL), the first φ -phrase is determined with H phrase tones at its left and right edge; the next H_φ at the right edge of the adverb is lowered with reference to the earlier H_φ . The final object is realized with low pitch and a drop in intensity that renders the pitch indefinable after the stressed syllable. Crucially, when the final object is focused (RIGHT PANEL), the final object is preceded by a high boundary at the right edge of the prenuclear prosodic constituent that contains all material preceding the focus.

3 Post-predicate prosody in OV languages

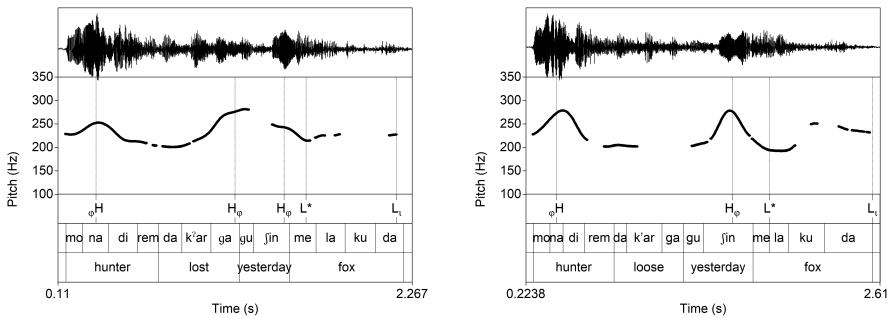


Figure 7: SVAdvO in Georgian; LEFT PANEL: broad focus, answer to ‘What happened?’; RIGHT PANEL: narrow focus, answer ‘What did the hunter loose yesterday?’; morphemic transcription in (10)

In the broad focus realization (LEFT PANEL), the predicate is phrased together with the preceding material, as in (10a), which confirms the observations in broad focus; compare phrasing in (5). Narrow focus on the clause-final object (RIGHT PANEL) induces a major φ -phrase boundary preceding the focus, as in (10b).

- (10) Georgian (D. Kakashvili, p.c.)

- a. φH H_φ H_φ L^* L_l
 $((monadire-m_\omega da-k'arg-a_\omega$ $)_\varphi (gušin_\omega$ $)_\varphi (melakuda_\omega)_\varphi)_l$
 hunter-ERG PFV-loose-AOR.S.3SG yesterday fox[NOM]
 ‘The hunter lost the fox yesterday.’
- b. φH H_φ L^* L_l
 $((monadire-m_\omega da-k'arg-a_\omega$ $gušin_\omega$ $)_\varphi (melakuda_\omega)_\varphi)_l$
 hunter-ERG PFV-loose-AOR.S.3SG yesterday fox[NOM]
 ‘The hunter lost the fox yesterday.’

In sum, preverbal foci are phrased together with the predicate, while postverbal foci are prosodically separated. It is crucial that postverbal foci are separated from the prefocal material of any category, e.g., from a prefocal adverb in (10b). Hence, we are dealing with a prosodic property of focus that does not refer to the constituent structure. In all these languages, the left edge of the focus is aligned with a φ -phrase boundary at its left edge (see typology in Féry 2013), whose exponent is a high phrase tone at the right edge of the preceding φ -phrase. This phenomenon is independent of the syntactic category preceding the focus.

Stavros Skopeteas

6 Out of focus

In all languages that allow for post-predicate elements, the post-predicate material can be background information, which is outside the focus domain of the utterance. Studies on the languages of the area conclude that the material following the nuclear stress (including post-predicate elements) is de-accented, which means that the tonal events are eliminated; see Persian in [Ardali & Xu \(2012\)](#), [Sadat-Tehrani \(2007: 7\)](#), and [Rahmani et al. \(2018\)](#),⁶ and Turkish in [Ipek \(2011\)](#), [Özge & Bozsahin \(2010: 144\)](#), and [Kamali \(2011: 34\)](#), while de-accenting is reported to be optional in Georgian ([Skopeteas et al. 2009: 115](#), [Vicenik & Jun 2014: 177](#)).

The question is whether the predicate has particular effects on prosodic phrasing when the post-predicate material is outside the focus domain. For instance, it is reported for Western Armenian – which belongs to the languages that use post-predicate material only for background information – that constituents following the verb are separated from it by a prosodic break ([Donabedian-Demopoulos 2018: §2.7](#)).

Similar phenomena apply to Standard Turkish, which is a further language that only allows background information to follow the predicate, as illustrated in the following. The nuclear stress cannot be realized after the predicate ([Taylan 1984: 51](#), [Göksel 1998: 103](#), [Özge & Bozsahin 2010: 148–152](#)). This limitation restricts the focus options in this language, as demonstrated with focus-sensitive particles in (11), whose scope depends on the focus ([Kural 1992: 24](#)). The focus particle *yalnızca* ‘only’ can be placed in the postverbal domain. With neutral intonation, the nuclear stress falls on the preverbal object, which is then interpreted as being in the scope of ‘only’. Changing the position of the nuclear stress changes the scope of the focus, e.g., on the subject or on the verb. However, a reading is excluded: the nuclear stress – and correspondingly the scope of ‘only’ – cannot fall on a postverbal element.

⁶A different result is presented in [Abolhasanizadeh et al. \(2012\)](#) on Persian: tonal events associated with the stress (pitch accents) are tonally compressed but still recognizable after the nuclear stress. However, the conclusions of this study are defeated by [Rahmani et al. \(2018\)](#).

3 Post-predicate prosody in OV languages

- (11) Turkish (Kural 1992: 24)

Ahmet o kitab-*i* göster-*miş* yalnızca Berna'-*y-a*.
 Ahmet[NOM] this book-ACC show-PST.EVID[3] only Berna-Ø-DAT
 'Ahmet must have shown only THIS BOOK to Berna.' (with nuclear stress
 on *kitab-i*)
 'Only AHMET must have shown this book to Berna.' (with nuclear stress
 on *Ahmet*)
 'Ahmet only must have SHOWN this book to Berna.' (with nuclear stress
 on *göster-mış*)
 'Ahmet must have shown this book only to BERNA.' (not possible)

These examples show that the nuclear stress of the intonation phrase must be realized within the phonological domain that ends at the right edge of the verb. We conclude from this fact that the verb determines the right edge of an intonation phrase. The Turkish examples in Figure 8 illustrate the difference between V-final utterances in broad focus and non-V-final utterances with postverbal background information. In the broad focus realization (TOP PANEL), the utterance is realized as a series of rising contours mapped onto the preverbal constituents. Constituents with final stress (*maymu'n-u* 'monkey-ACC') are realized with a rising pitch excursion stretching from their left to their right edge (\emptyset L...H \emptyset); non-final stress (*A'lanya-li-lar* 'Alanya-NMLZ-PL', *cu'ma-rtesi* 'Friday-after', *ar-i'yor-mış* 'look-PROG-PST.EVID[3]') is associated with a falling accent (H*+L) (see Kamali 2011: 93, Güneş 2013, Féry 2018: 250–257). When the narrow focus is preverbal, it is realized with a falling pitch accent (H*+L), late aligned with the stressed syllable (see *cu'ma-rtesi* 'Friday-after' in the BOTTOM PANEL). There is no \emptyset -phrase boundary between the focus and the verb, which is shown by the fact that the final /i/ is elided (apocope) to avoid the hiatus. The material following the focus is de-accented, that is, the falling pitch accents in stressed syllables are erased: compare the realization of *A'lanya-li-lar* 'Alanya-NMLZ-PL' in the TOP and BOTTOM PANEL.

Crucially, the postfocal domain is de-accented, but not fully de-phrased: a (compressed) rise is aligned with the right edge of the verb. The tonal events that are associated with stress (pitch accents) are eliminated, but the events that relate to phrasing are tonally compressed. Since the phonological domain that contains the nuclear stress is an intonation phrase, we assume that the right edge of the predicate is aligned with an *i*-phrase boundary.

Stavros Skopeteas

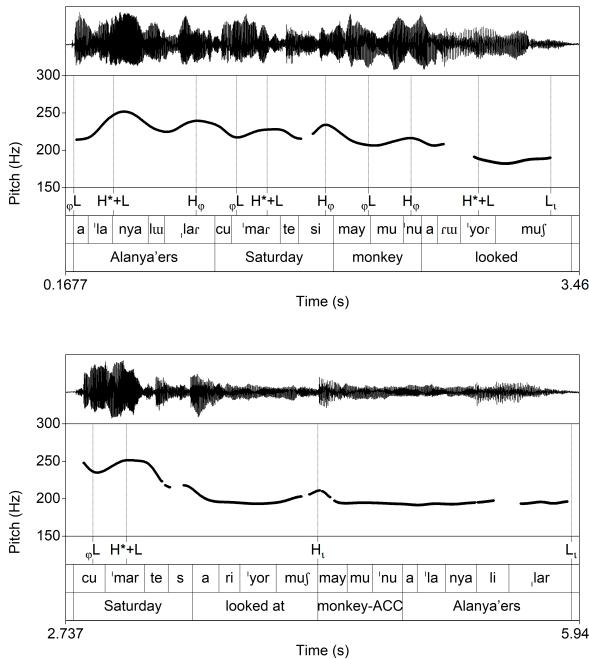


Figure 8: Broad focus vs. background information in Standard Turkish: TOP PANEL $[SAdvOV]_F$, answer to ‘What happened?’; BOTTOM PANEL: $Adv_F VOS$, answer to ‘When did the Alanya’ers seem to have watched a monkey?’; morphemic transcription in (12)

(12) Turkish (D. Balıkçıoğlu and S. Seyis, p.c.)

- a. $\varphi L H^*+L$ $H_\varphi \varphi L H^*+L$ $H_\varphi \varphi L$ H_φ
 $((alanya\text{-}li\text{-}lar_\omega)_{\varphi} (cuma\text{-}rtesi_\omega)_{\varphi} (maymun\text{-}u_\omega)_{\varphi}$
 Alanya-NMLZ-PL[NOM] Friday-after monkey-ACC
 L_i
 $ar\text{-}iyor\text{-}mu\$_\omega)_{\varphi}$
 look-PROG-PST.EVID[3]
- ‘The people from Alanya seem to have watched a monkey on Saturday.’
- b. $\varphi L H^*+L$ H_i
 $((cuma\text{-}rtesi_\omega)_{\varphi} ar\text{-}iyor\text{-}mu\$_\omega)_{\varphi} (maymun\text{-}u_\omega)$
 Friday-after look-PROG-PST.EVID[3] monkey-ACC

3 Post-predicate prosody in OV languages

$alanya$ -*li*-*lar*_ω)_φ)_t
 Alanya-NMLZ-PL[NOM]

‘It was on SATURDAY that the people from Alanya seem to have watched a monkey.’

In this section, we demonstrated two prosodic properties of post-predicate elements. For some languages that do not have postverbal foci, it is reported that post-predicate elements are separated by a prosodic boundary from the predicate (Western Armenian). Anecdotal data from Turkish show that the right edge of the predicate may be aligned with a tonally compressed high tone boundary, even if this tonal event is within the de-accented domain that follows the nuclear stress. Second, in some languages, the post-predicate domain cannot bear the nuclear stress and can only contain information outside the focus domain of the utterance – as demonstrated for Standard Turkish.

7 Outlook

7.1 Left-right asymmetries

The prosodic facts presented in sections 4-6 reveal two major asymmetries between the left and the right side of the predicate in languages with OV properties. The typology must refer to constructions (instead of languages), because these observations do not necessarily generalize for all constructions of a language (see discussion about postverbal objects and obliques in Persian in Section 1).

- LEFT-RIGHT ASYMMETRY IN PROMINENCE

In some constructions, the nuclear stress cannot be hosted by elements after the predicate.

- LEFT-RIGHT ASYMMETRY IN PHRASING

In some constructions, post-predicate material is prosodically separated from the predicate, while pre-predicate material does not do so.

The LEFT-RIGHT ASYMMETRY IN PROMINENCE is consistently reported in earlier research on Standard Turkish (Taylan 1984, İşsever 2003, etc.) and Persian (Karimi 2003, Sadat-Tehrani 2007, to the exception of postverbal goals). The fact that the nuclear stress cannot follow the predicate excludes any element that needs to be accented from this domain: bare objects, focused constituents, *wh*-

Stavros Skopeteas

pronouns in ordinary questions, etc. If these elements do not bear the nuclear stress, they may follow the predicate: bare objects can follow the predicate if the focus is on the verb in Turkish (İşsüver 2003: 1047); polar questions with fronted verbs (i.e., nuclear stress on the verb) may have postverbal bare objects in Persian (Karimi 2003: 123).

The limitation on nuclear stress placement indicates that post-predicate elements belong to a phonological domain whose potential nucleus cannot take scope over the core clause. This view does not exclude that an accent follows the predicate (this can be the case in afterthoughts for instance), but a post-predicate accent cannot be the nuclear stress of the intonation phrase encompassing the predicate and the material preceding it. In terms of prosody-syntax mapping, this phenomenon implies that post-predicate elements are outside the core clause in these constructions, that is, they are right dislocated, as schematically represented in (13).

$$(13) \quad ((S V)_l \quad O)_l \\ \quad [[S V]_{\text{core}} \quad O]_{\text{clause}}$$

The LEFT-RIGHT ASYMMETRY IN PHRASING between the left and the right side of the predicate has been observed in contexts in which the predicate and the post-predicate elements are both part of the same information structural domain (broad focus or out of focus):

- In Old Georgian manuscripts, the verb is often separated by a colon from the post-predicate material; see Section 1 (Boeder 1991);
- In Modern Georgian, the right edge of the verb is often aligned with the boundary of a prosodic constituent, reflected in a high phrase tone that is not within the domain of register lowering of earlier high tones; see Section 4.
- Anecdotal evidence from Turkish shows that when the postnuclear material is not completely de-phrased, the right edge of the predicate is a natural way to split a background domain in prosodic constituents; see Section 6.
- For various languages of the area, it is reported that non-final verbs appear with phonetic cues (tonal events or breaks) indicating a prosodic boundary at their right edge: Western Armenian (Donabedian-Demopoulos 2018) as well as Adyghe, Circassian, and Chechen (summaries in Borise 2021b); see sections 4 and 6.

3 Post-predicate prosody in OV languages

The prosodic separation of the predicate from post-predicate elements cannot be accounted for by information structure, since in all these cases the predicate and the post-predicate material are part of the same information-structural domain (e.g. a broad focus domain or a domain of background information). There are two possible ways to account for this data.

It may be that this phrasing pattern stems from purely phonological rules that are accidentally correlated with the right edge of the predicate. For instance, it may be that the phrasing of the final element in Georgian SVO clauses is just an indicator of a nuclear stress hosted by the final object. This hypothesis would apply to a part of the data (only broad focus) but is fatally defeated by the prosodic realization in Figure 7/LEFT PANEL, since this example does not involve a major phrasal boundary between the V and the material following it, while the nuclear φ -phrase does not immediately follow the predicate.

An alternative hypothesis is that the phrasing of the verb reflects the V-final properties of these languages. The post-predicate material is part of the domain that can host the nuclear stress in languages such as Georgian, which means that there is no reason to assume a lower domain for ι -phrases in this case; compare (13) and (14). Consequently, the φ -phrase containing the material preceding the verb can only be accounted for by assuming a syntactic phrase containing the subject and the predicate – to the exclusion of the object. We label this constituent as a projection expanding the verb (V). This conclusion follows from the assumptions introduced so far, but the reasoning behind this constituent structure needs to be supported by independent evidence.

- (14) $((S V)_{\varphi} (O)_{\varphi})_{\iota}$
 $[[S V]_{V \text{ expansion}} O]_{\text{core clause}}$

7.2 Prosody and focus options of post-predicate elements

The prosodic properties of the post-predicate domain offer a partial explanation of the cross-linguistic differences in focus options in Figure 1. In prosodic view, if post-predicate elements can host the nuclear stress, they can be used for (narrow/broad) focus, as in Georgian, Armenian, Caucasian Urum and probably many Nakh-Daghestanian languages; see Figure 9 and discussion about the languages in Section 2. If post-predicate elements cannot host the nuclear stress, then they cannot be narrowly focused, as in Persian, Turkish, Western Armenian. Within this group of languages, there is a further differentiation that cannot be accounted for by prosodic differences. In some languages (and at least at some level of meta-linguistic reflection), it is possible to use in broad focus certain

Stavros Skopeteas

constructions with post-predicate elements that do not bear the nuclear stress (see discussion about Tsakhur and Persian in Section 2). In Persian, this possibility appears with nuclear stress on the verb, which applies to constructions with (preverbal/postverbal) specific objects (see Modarresi 2014: 133–134 on Persian). The nuclear stress must be hosted by the specific object if it is in narrow focus and it is exactly this focus option that is banned from the post-predicate domain. This reasoning accounts for the facts from Persian, but does not offer an explanation why the same flexibility does not hold true in Turkish. The crucial issue is that there is nothing in the prosodic structure that would hinder a specific object from being postverbal under broad focus in these languages. Whether a language uses this construction (as Persian) or not (as Turkish) is an independent distinction that cannot be accounted for by prosody alone.

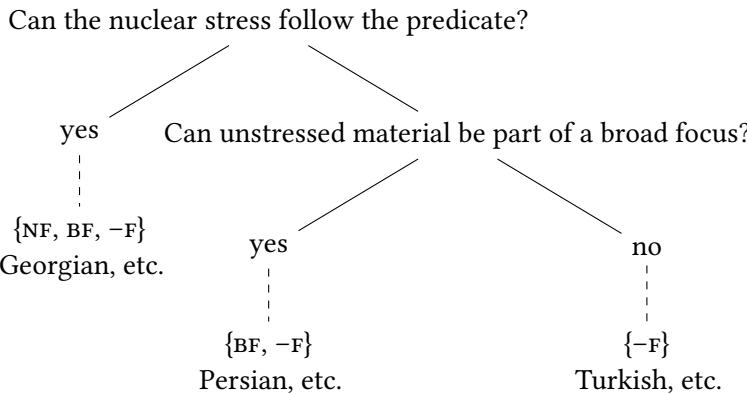


Figure 9: Focus options of post-predicate objects by prosodic properties
(NF: narrow focus; BF: broad focus, -F: out of focus)

7.3 Prosody and postverbal narrow foci

Narrow foci come with an asymmetry in phrasing, such that preverbal foci are phrased together with the predicate, while postverbal foci are separated from the predicate with a prosodic break (see Section 5). This asymmetry follows from an independent phonological property of focus in these languages, namely that the left edge of the focus domain is aligned with a prosodic boundary, separating the focus domain from the prefocal material (see Féry 2013 for a typology in these lines). There is no evidence for a difference in the interpretation of preverbal and postverbal foci in languages that allow for both options: e.g., there is no difference in the interpretation of either option in Georgian (Skopeteas & Fanselow 2010).

3 Post-predicate prosody in OV languages

An interesting question is whether the preference to align the left edge of the focus with the left edge of a prosodic constituent (which applies to all examined languages) correlates with the evolution of a preverbal focus position in these languages. If the underlying principle is to phrase the focus together with the predicate, the prediction is straightforward: languages with an immediately-preverbal focus are expected to insert a prosodic boundary at the left side of the focus (see Georgian, Eastern Armenian and Caucasian Urum in Section 5), while languages with an immediately-postverbal focus are expected to demarcate the focus by means of a prosodic boundary on its right. Languages of the latter type are less frequent, but at least Zulu – that has been the object of extensive investigation in this respect – confirms this prediction: narrow focus is right adjacent to the predicate and the focus is aligned with a boundary on its right (Cheng & Downing 2012). However, there are various counterexamples to this putative generalization: various languages of India are reported to have preverbal foci and to align the right edge of the focus with a prosodic boundary; see Bengali (Selkirk 2008), Konkani (Féry 2013: 709). This left/right asymmetry suggests a bias towards aligning the left edge of the focus with a prosodic boundary, which is not surprising: postfocal material is de-accented in most languages, which means that prosodic events following the focus are less likely to appear in general.

Abbreviations

| | | | |
|------|-----------------|------|---------------------|
| 3 | 3rd person | PASS | passive |
| ACC | accusative | PFV | perfective |
| AOR | aorist | PL | plural |
| CAUS | causative | POSS | possessor |
| DAT | dative | PROG | progressive |
| DEF | definite | PST | past |
| DEM | demonstrative | RA | <i>ra</i> (Persian) |
| ERG | ergative | REM | remote |
| EVID | evidential | S | subject |
| IO | indirect object | SG | singular |
| NMLZ | nominalizer | SM | series marker |
| NOM | nominative | | |

Stavros Skopeteas

Acknowledgements

Grateful thanks to Deniz Balıkçioğlu, Murat Baran, Hayk Hovhannisyan, Diana Kakashvili, Violeta Moisidi, Yasaman Sanei, and Saliha Seyis, who provided their intuitions and performed the illustrative sentences presented in this study. I am very grateful to the organizers Geoffrey Haig, Mohammad Rasekhmahand, Laurentia Schreiber, Nils Schiborr as well as the participants of the Workshop *Post-predicate elements across the languages of Western Asia: theoretical and empirical approaches* (September 22-23, 2022, University of Bamberg) for inspiring discussions on earlier versions of this study, as well as Hossep Dolatian and an anonymous reviewer for helpful comments.

References

- Abolhasanizadeh, Vahideh, Mahmood Bijankhan & Carlos Gussenhoven. 2012. The Persian pitch accent and its retention after the focus. *Lingua* 122(13). 1380–1394. DOI: [10.1016/j.lingua.2012.06.002](https://doi.org/10.1016/j.lingua.2012.06.002).
- Ardali, Mortaza Taheri & Yi Xu. 2012. Phonetic realization of prosodic focus in Persian. *Proceedings of Speech Prosody 2012*. 326–329. DOI: [10.21437/SpeechProsody.2012-83](https://doi.org/10.21437/SpeechProsody.2012-83).
- Boeder, Winfried. 1991. The phrasing of Old Georgian according to scribal punctuation. In *7th Conference on the Non-Slavic languages of the Soviet Union, Chicago*, 22–24.
- Boersma, Paul & David Weenink. 2023. *Praat: doing phonetics by computer*. Published: [computer program].
- Borise, Lena. 2019. *Phrasing is key: the syntax and prosody of focus in Georgian*. Harvard University. (Doctoral dissertation).
- Borise, Lena. 2021a. Focus projection need not be based on pitch accents: evidence from Georgian. *Glossa: A journal of general linguistics* 6(1). DOI: [10.16995/glossa.5733](https://doi.org/10.16995/glossa.5733).
- Borise, Lena. 2021b. Tone and intonation in languages of the Caucasus. In Maria Polinsky (ed.), *The Oxford handbook of languages of the Caucasus*, 756–782. Oxford: Oxford University Press. DOI: [10.1093/oxfordhb/9780190690694.013.31](https://doi.org/10.1093/oxfordhb/9780190690694.013.31).
- Borise, Lena & David Erschler. 2023. Flexible syntax-prosody mapping of intonational phrases in the context of varying verb height. *Phonology First View*. 1–42. DOI: [10.1017/S0952675723000015](https://doi.org/10.1017/S0952675723000015).

3 Post-predicate prosody in OV languages

- Cheng, Lisa Lai-Shen & Laura J. Downing. 2012. Against FocusP: Arguments from Zulu. In Ivona Kučerová & Ad Neeleman (eds.), *Contrasts and positions in information structure*, 247–266. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press. DOI: [10.1017/cbo9780511740084.012](https://doi.org/10.1017/cbo9780511740084.012).
- Comrie, Bernard. 1984. Some formal properties of focus in Modern Eastern Armenian. *Annual of Armenian Linguistics* 5. 1–21.
- Delforooz, Behrooz Barjasteh. 2010. *Discourse features in Balochi of Sistan: Oral narratives*. Uppsala: Uppsala Universitet.
- Dolatian, Hossep. 2020. Cyclicity and prosodic misalignment in Armenian stems. *Natural Language and Linguistic Theory* 39(3). 843–886. DOI: [10.1007/s11049-020-09487-7](https://doi.org/10.1007/s11049-020-09487-7).
- Donabedian-Demopoulos, Anaïd. 2018. Middle East and beyond - Western Armenian at the crossroads: A sociolinguistic and typological sketch. In Christiane Bulut (ed.), *Linguistic minorities in Turkey and Turkic: speaking minorities of the periphery*, 89–148. Wiesbaden: Harrasowitz.
- Dum-Tragut, Jasmine. 2009. *Armenian: Modern Eastern Armenian*. Amsterdam: Benjamins. DOI: [10.1075/loall.14.26](https://doi.org/10.1075/loall.14.26).
- Erschler, David. 2012. From preverbal focus to preverbal “left periphery”: the Ossetic clause architecture in areal and diachronic perspective. *Lingua* 122(6). 673–699. DOI: [10.1016/j.lingua.2012.01.009](https://doi.org/10.1016/j.lingua.2012.01.009).
- Féry, Caroline. 2013. Focus as prosodic alignment. *Natural Language and Linguistic Theory* 31(3). 683–734. DOI: [10.1007/s11049-013-9195-7](https://doi.org/10.1007/s11049-013-9195-7).
- Féry, Caroline. 2018. *Intonation and prosodic structure*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Forker, Diana. 2021. Information structure in languages of the Caucasus. In Maria Polinsky (ed.), *The Oxford handbook of languages of the Caucasus*, 973–1002. Oxford: Oxford University Press. DOI: [10.1093/oxfordhb/9780190690694.013.28](https://doi.org/10.1093/oxfordhb/9780190690694.013.28).
- Forker, Diana & Oleg Belyaev. 2016. Word order and focus particles in Nakh-Daghestanian languages. In M. M. Jocelyne Fernandez-Vest & Robert D. Van Valin (eds.), *Information structuring of spoken language from a cross-linguistic perspective*, 239–262. Berlin: De Gruyter Mouton. DOI: [10.1515/9783110368758-012](https://doi.org/10.1515/9783110368758-012).
- Göksel, Aslı. 1998. Linearity, focus and the postverbal position in Turkish. In Lars Johanson, Eva A. Csato & Vanessa Locke (eds.), *The Mainz meeting proceedings of the 7th International Conference on Turkish linguistics*, 85–106. Wiesbaden: Harrassowitz.

Stavros Skopeteas

- Göksel, Aslı & A. Sumru Özsoy. 2000. Is there a focus position in Turkish? In Aslı Göksel & Celia Kerslake (eds.), *Studies on Turkish and Turkic languages: Proceedings of the 9th International conference on Turkish linguistics*, 219–228. Wiesbaden: Harrassowitz.
- Gosby, Geoffrey. 2016. *Information structure in Georgian*. University of Oxford. (Doctoral dissertation).
- Güneş, Güliz. 2013. On the role of prosodic constituency in Turkish. In Umut Özge (ed.), *Proceedings of the 8th Workshop on Altaic formal linguistics*, 115–128. Cambridge: MITWPL.
- Haig, Geoffrey, Paul M. Noorlander & Nils N. Schiborr. in press. Which word order features are stable in a contact setting? Corpus-based evidence from the Western Asian transition zone. In Jeroen Darquennes, Joe Salmons & Wim Vandebussche (eds.), *Language contact: An international handbook*, vol. 2. Berlin: De Gruyter Mouton.
- Haig, Geoffrey & Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand. 2019. *Post-predicate elements in Iranian and neighbouring languages: Inheritance, contact, and information structure. Position paper, for the project on post-predicate constituents in Iranian and neighbouring languages*. (10 July, 2023).
- Hasan, Aveen Mohammed. 2012. *Kurdish intonation with reference to English*. Coleraine: University of Ulster. (Doctoral dissertation).
- Hosseini, Seyed Ayat. 2014. *The phonology and phonetics of prosodic prominence in Persian*. Tokyo: University of Tokyo. (Doctoral dissertation).
- İpek, Canan. 2011. Phonetic realization of focus with no on-focus pitch range expansion in Turkish. In *Proceedings of the 17th International Congress of phonetic sciences (ICPhS XVII)*, 140–143.
- İşsever, Selçuk. 2003. Information structure in Turkish: the word order–prosody interface. *Lingua* 113(11). 1025–1053. DOI: [10.1016/s0024-3841\(03\)00012-3](https://doi.org/10.1016/s0024-3841(03)00012-3).
- Kahnemuyipour, Arsalan. 2001. On Wh-questions in Persian. *Canadian Journal of Linguistics/Revue canadienne de linguistique* 46(1-2). 41–61. DOI: [10.1017/s000841310001793x](https://doi.org/10.1017/s000841310001793x).
- Kahnemuyipour, Arsalan. 2003. Syntactic categories and Persian stress. *Natural Language and Linguistic Theory* 21(2). 333–379.
- Kahnemuyipour, Arsalan & Karine Megerdoomian. 2011. Second position clitics and the vP phase: The case of the Armenian auxiliary. *Linguistic Inquiry* 42(1). 152–162. DOI: [10.1162/ling_a_00033](https://doi.org/10.1162/ling_a_00033).
- Kamali, Beste. 2011. *Topics at the PF interface of Turkish*. Cambridge, MA: Harvard University. (Doctoral dissertation).

3 Post-predicate prosody in OV languages

- Karimi, Simin. 2003. On object positions, specificity, and scrambling in Persian. In Simin Karimi (ed.), *Word order and scrambling*, 91–124. Malden: Blackwell. DOI: [10.1002/9780470758403.ch5](https://doi.org/10.1002/9780470758403.ch5).
- Kilicaslan, Yilmaz. 2004. Syntax of information structure in Turkish. *Linguistics* 42(4). 717–765. DOI: [10.1515/ling.2004.024](https://doi.org/10.1515/ling.2004.024).
- Komen, Erwin R. 2013. *Finding focus: A study of the historical development of focus in English*. Utrecht: LOT.
- Kural, Murat. 1992. Properties of scrambling in Turkish. Manuscript, UCLA.
- Lacroix, René. 2019. Laz. In Geoffrey Haig & Geoffrey Khan (eds.), *The languages and linguistics of Western Asia: An areal perspective*, 830–860. Berlin: De Gruyter Mouton. DOI: [10.1515/9783110421682-021](https://doi.org/10.1515/9783110421682-021).
- Ladd, D. Robert. 1986. Intonational phrasing: the case for recursive prosodic structure. *Phonology Yearbook* 3. 311–340.
- Ladd, D. Robert. 1988. Declination ‘reset’ and the hierarchical organization of utterances. *Journal of the Acoustical Society of America* 84(2). 530–544.
- Mahjani, Behzad. 2003. *An instrumental study of prosodic features and intonation in Modern Farsi (Persian)*. Edinburgh: University of Edinburgh. (MA thesis).
- Majidi, Setareh & Mohammad Dabir Moghaddam. 2012. Information structure in Persian: A comparison of systemic functional grammar and role and reference grammar. *Theory and Practice in Language Studies* 2(4). 856–863. DOI: [10.4304/tpls.2.4.856-863](https://doi.org/10.4304/tpls.2.4.856-863).
- Marr, Nikolaj. 1904. *Fisiolog*. Saint Petersburg: Imperial University of Saint Petersburg.
- Modarresi, Fereshteh. 2014. *Bare nouns in Persian: interpretation, grammar, and prosody*. Ottawa: University of Ottawa. (Doctoral dissertation). DOI: [10.20381/ruor-3768](https://doi.org/10.20381/ruor-3768).
- Özge, Umut & Cem Bozsahin. 2010. Intonation in the grammar of Turkish. *Lingua* 120. 132–175.
- Pierrehumbert, Janet B. 1980. *The phonology and phonetics of English intonation*. New York: Garland Press. (Doctoral dissertation).
- Rahmani, Hamed, Toni Rietveld & Carlos Gussenhoven. 2018. Post-focal and factive deaccentuation in Persian. *Glossa: A journal of general linguistics* 3(1). DOI: [10.5334/gjgl.328](https://doi.org/10.5334/gjgl.328).
- Roberts, John R. 2009. *A study of Persian discourse structure*. Uppsala: Upsala Universitet.
- Sadat-Tehrani, Nima. 2007. *The intonational grammar of Persian*. Winnipeg: University of Manitoba. (Doctoral dissertation).

Stavros Skopeteas

- Sadat-Tehrani, Nima. 2009. The alignment of L+H* pitch accents in Persian intonation. *Journal of the International Phonetic Association* 39(2). 205–230. DOI: [10.1017/s0025100309003892](https://doi.org/10.1017/s0025100309003892).
- Sadat-Tehrani, Nima. 2017. Intonation of Persian declaratives: read vs. spontaneous speech. *Questions and Answers in Linguistics* 4(1). 21–43. DOI: [10.1515/qal-2017-0002](https://doi.org/10.1515/qal-2017-0002).
- Samvelian, Pollet, Pegah Faghiri & Victoria Khurshudyan. 2023. On the persistence of SVO: the case of Modern Eastern Armenian. *Linguistics* 61(3). 459–497. DOI: [10.1515/ling-2021-0013](https://doi.org/10.1515/ling-2021-0013).
- Schröter, Stefanie. 2017. *Information structure in Caucasian Urum: An empirical investigation of the interaction of focus and topic with word order*. Bielefeld: Bielefeld University. (Doctoral dissertation).
- Selkirk, Elisabeth. 2008. Bengali intonation revisited: An optimality theoretic analysis in which FOCUS stress prominence drives FOCUS phrasing. In Chungmin Lee, Matthew Gordon & Daniel Büring (eds.), *Topic and focus*, 215–244. Dordrecht: Springer. DOI: [10.1007/978-1-4020-4796-1_12](https://doi.org/10.1007/978-1-4020-4796-1_12).
- Selkirk, Elisabeth. 2011. The syntax-phonology interface. In John Goldsmith, Jason Riggle & Alan C. L. Yu (eds.), *The handbook of phonological theory, second edition*, 435–484. Malden, MA: Wiley. DOI: [10.1002/9781444343069.ch14](https://doi.org/10.1002/9781444343069.ch14).
- Skopeteas, Stavros. 2016. The Caucasian Urums and the Urum language. In Süer Eker & Ülkü Çelik Şavk (eds.), *Endangered turkic languages IIb: case studies, no pages*. Ankara/Astana: Uluslararası Türk Akademisi.
- Skopeteas, Stavros & Gisbert Fanselow. 2010. Focus in Georgian and the expression of contrast. *Lingua* 120(6). 1370–1391. DOI: [10.1016/j.lingua.2008.10.012](https://doi.org/10.1016/j.lingua.2008.10.012).
- Skopeteas, Stavros & Caroline Féry. 2010. Focus and intonation in Georgian: constituent structure and prosodic realization. Bielefeld University and University of Frankfurt.
- Skopeteas, Stavros, Caroline Féry & Rusudan Asatiani. 2009. Word order and intonation in Georgian. *Lingua* 119(1). 102–127. DOI: [10.1016/j.lingua.2008.09.001](https://doi.org/10.1016/j.lingua.2008.09.001).
- Skopeteas, Stavros, Caroline Féry & Rusudan Asatiani. 2018. Prosodic separation of postverbal material in Georgian. In Evangelia Adamou, Katharina Haude & Martine Vanhove (eds.), *Information structure in lesser-described languages: Studies in prosody and syntax*, 17–50. Benjamins. DOI: [10.1075/slcs.199.02sko](https://doi.org/10.1075/slcs.199.02sko).
- Stilo, Donald. 2015. An introduction to the Atlas of the Araxes-Iran linguistic area. In Bernard Comrie & Lucía Golluscio (eds.), *Language contact and documentation/contact lingüístico y documentación*, 343–356. Berlin: De Gruyter Mouton.

3 Post-predicate prosody in OV languages

- Stilo, Donald. 2018. Preverbal and postverbal peripheral arguments in the Araxes-Iran linguistic area. Paper presented at the *Conference Anatolia-Caucasus-Iran: Ethnic and Linguistic Contacts* 10-12 May 2018. Yerevan University, Yerevan, Armenia.
- Stokhof, Martin & Michiel van Lambalgen. 2011. Abstractions and idealisations: the construction of modern linguistics. *Theoretical Linguistics* 37(1-2). 1–26. DOI: [10.1515/thli.2011.001](https://doi.org/10.1515/thli.2011.001).
- Taylan, Eser Erguvanlı. 1984. *The function of word order in Turkish grammar*. Berkeley: University of California Press.
- Testelets, Yakov G. 1999. Porjadok slov [Word order]. In Aleksandr E. Kibrik (ed.), *Elementy caxurskogo jazyka v tipologičeskem osveščenii* [Elements of Tsakhur in typological perspective], 293–313. Moscow: Nasledie.
- Toparlak, Tabita. 2019. *Etudes phonétiques en arménien*. Paris: Université Sorbonne Nouvelle, Paris 3. (MA thesis).
- Vicenik, Chad & Sun-Ah Jun. 2014. An autosegmental-metrical analysis of Georgian intonation. In Sun-Ah Jun (ed.), *Prosodic typology II*, 154–186. Oxford: Oxford University. DOI: [10.1093/acprof:oso/9780199567300.003.0006](https://doi.org/10.1093/acprof:oso/9780199567300.003.0006).

Chapter 4

Balochi: a cross-dialect investigation of post-verbal elements

Maryam Nourzaei^a & Geoffrey Haig^b

^aUppsala University ^bUniversity of Bamberg

This chapter investigates word order in three Balochi varieties: Coastal Balochi (Coastal), Koroshi Balochi (Koroshi) and Turkmenistan Balochi (Turkmen). Although all three are closely related, they are areally widely dispersed, making Balochi an interesting test case for investigating the effects of areality on closely related varieties. All three varieties are predominantly OV. However, pronominal direct objects show a stronger tendency to post-verbal placement, especially in Coastal, echoing similar findings for other Iranian languages of the region. All three varieties exhibit predominantly post-verbal goals (VG), with the highest values found in Koroshi, confirming the expected correlation between higher frequency of VG and geographic proximity to the southwestern Mesopotamian region of the Western Asian Transition Zone.

1 Introduction: Language background and data sources

Balochi is a northwestern Iranian language, which belong to the Indo-Iranian branch of Indo-European. Syntactically, Balochi is OV, but shows mixed adpositional typology (see Section 3.2) as well as dialectally differentiated alignment systems (see below). Word order in the NP is generally head-final: adjectives precede nouns, and take an attributive linker *-ēn/ē*. Possessors also precede the possessed, and the possessor takes a so-called genitive case, though this may vary in the westernmost dialects; see Section 3 for details.

Balochi provides an excellent window on the interplay of areal and genetic influence in shaping word order. The unity of ‘Balochi’ as the descendants of a historically reconstructable sub-group of Iranian is justified in Korn (2005: 21),

Maryam Nourzaei & Geoffrey Haig

and there is no doubt that the three doculects under consideration here can be assigned to Balochi. Today, however, due to successive population movements, varieties of Balochi are spoken across a vast area, including Southeastern and Southwestern Iran, Southwestern Pakistan, and also in Afghanistan, India, Africa, Turkmenistan, Oman and the UAE. Almost all Balochi speakers are multilingual, with contact languages belonging to four different language families, and different genera within them: Indo-European (Iranian, Indo-Aryan and Slavic), Dravidian, Turkic and Semitic. Disentangling what is inherited Proto-Balochi from the multiple contact effects is methodologically challenging, for syntax just as it is for phonology and morphology. We address the implications of our study for broader questions of Iranian diachronic syntax in Section 5.

Research on Balochi recognizes three main dialects: southern, eastern and western Balochi. Each of these dialects demonstrates its own sub-divisions (see [Jahani & Korn 2009](#): 636–637). In addition, a group of dialects to the southwest is distinguished, collectively referred to as Koroshi. The total number of Balochi speakers is uncertain, though, [Jahani \(2013\)](#) reports an estimate of at least 10 million speakers. For the comparisons undertaken in this chapter, we have selected data from three geographically dispersed locations, each of which lie within some larger dialect region of Balochi. We refer to the data from these locations as doculects (the variety documented in a specific data sets), rather than dialects, because we cannot assume that each doculect is necessarily representative of its larger dialect region. The three doculects are labelled Turkmen (Turkmenistan Balochi), Coastal Balochi (Coastal Balochi), and Koroshi (Koroshi Balochi) respectively. The data for Coastal Balochi come from two villages, Korsar and Sedighzahi, Dashtiyari, Iran. For Koroshi, data comes from Deh Piyaleh, Shiraz, and Marvdasht, Iran, while for Turkmen the data come from the Mari region, Turkmenistan. The location of the three doculects, and the main dialect divisions of Balochi, are provided in Fig. 1.

Turkmen belongs to the larger Western Balochi dialect group, Coastal Balochi dialect belongs to the Southern dialect group, and Koroshi is part of Koroshi, but would probably also be considered part of Southern Balochi in a broad dialect division (see also [Nourzaei et al. 2015](#): 22).

As noted above, it is important to note that our doculects are not necessarily representative for the entire dialect group to which they belong, and in fact our results suggest that there is considerable internal variation (at least on the word order parameters that we have investigated) within the larger dialect groups that have traditionally been recognized. For each doculect, a WOVA data set was compiled as the basis for quantitative comparison. Text types are traditional narrative texts for Coastal Balochi and Koroshi, while the texts for Turkmen include traditional narratives, a procedural text, and a life story; see [Nourzaei \(2021a,b\)](#)

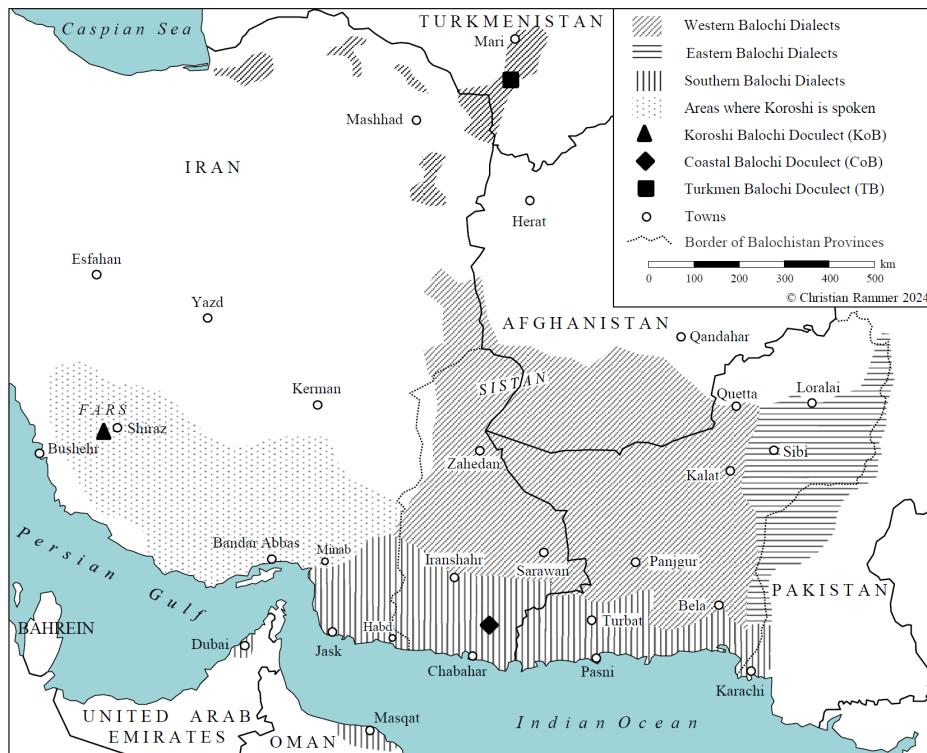
4 *Balochi: a cross-dialect investigation of post-verbal elements*

Figure 1: Location of the main Balochi dialects and docilects analysed

and Haig (2022a) for details and access to the data. In citing examples we follow the original transcriptions for Coastal Balochi and Koroshi but adapt the original transcriptions of Turkmen to bring it closer to the other two.

The docilects vary according to their alignment systems: Turkmen and Koroshi display the same alignment system in both past and present domain, while Coastal Balochi demonstrates ergative only for 3rd person in transitive clauses based on past-tense verb forms. Koroshi, due to reduction of its morphological case system, uses more person clitics than in Turkmen and Coastal Balochi to index verb arguments. The most recent studies on Coastal Balochi are Nourzaei (2017, *in press*) and Korn & Nourzaei (2019). Earlier works on Koroshi include a grammatical sketch in Persian (Emādi 2005), Nourzaei et al. (2015), Nourzaei (2017, *in press*). It is assumed that speakers of Koroshi originally migrated from Balochistan to the Southwest of Iran. The most significant study on Turkmen dialect is Axenov (2006). Turkmen Baloch is the result of migration from either Iran or Afghanistan and north-eastern parts of Iran. For the history of the Baloch

Maryam Nourzaei & Geoffrey Haig

migration to Turkmenistan, see [Axenov \(2000: 71\)](#), among others. In addition to the quantitative analysis based on the WOWA data sets, we also draw on additional published corpora and analysis ([Barjasteh Delforooz 2010](#), [Nourzaei et al. 2015](#), [Nourzaei 2017, in press](#), [Axenov 2006](#)).

This chapter is organized as follows. Section 2 summarizes previous literature, while Section 3 provides a sketch of some relevant aspects of Balochi grammar, including NP-internal word order. In Section 4, we present the core of the quantitative analysis, based on the major clausal constituent types recognized in the WOWA framework, while Section 5 discusses the implications of the Balochi findings from a comparative (West) Iranian perspective.

2 Previous studies on word order in Balochi

With regard to clause-level constituents, empirical comparative research only commenced quite recently, in particular [Jahani \(2018\)](#) and [Korn \(2022\)](#). [Jahani \(2018\)](#) covers four dialects, viz., Koroshi, Sistani, Turkmen and Southern Balochi (Iran and Pakistan), and considers four argument types: goals, recipients, addressees, and final states of change-of-state predicates. She notes that across all varieties, goals of motion tend to be postverbal, while with regard to the other roles, there are differences: While Koroshi generally has all four argument types post-verbally, Sistani and Turkmenistan Balochi has goals, recipients, and addressees, but not final-states in post-verbal position. For Southern Balochi, also [Jahani \(2018\)](#) includes a more detailed study of spoken versus written genres, observing a very significant tendency towards strict pre-verbal placement of all argument types in written Southern Balochi, while spoken Southern Balochi places 90% of goals after the verb.¹ The differences between oral and written language are very much in line with the observations for Persian, where colloquial spoken Persian has a high frequency of post-verbal goals (around 80%, see [Rasekh-Mahand et al. 2024 \[Chapter 7, this volume\]](#)), while the frequency is much lower for formal written Persian. These pioneering observations suggest that the overall situation in Balochi shows some similarities with the situation that has been identified for languages further to the west (e.g. Kurdish, [Haig 2022c](#)), in particular the special status of goals (see [Haig et al. 2024 \[Chapter 1, this volume\]](#) for summary), but there are also significant differences. We turn to explanations in Section 5 below.

¹The data from [Jahani \(2018\)](#) are taken from the slides [from that presentation](#). For Southern Balochi, the data for recipients on the overview slide do not match the findings reported from the oral vs. written case study, so we make no claim regarding recipients in Southern Balochi.

4 *Balochi: a cross-dialect investigation of post-verbal elements*

Korn (2022: 114) draws on data from Afro-Baloch varieties, taken from Nourzaei and Korn's unpublished Afro-Baloch data. Specifically, the data come from three locations: Shirgowaz (close to Bahukalat), Konark and Karewan. As such, they are only indirectly comparable to our Coastal Balochi dialect, although both Korn's data and our own Coastal Balochi dialect can be included under the broad umbrella term of Southern Balochi. Korn's data confirm the strong tendency to place goals post-verbally, though she suggests that goals of caused motion are overall less likely to be post-verbal, a finding which is confirmed in our own Coastal Balochi data in Section 4 below. Korn suggests that many of the caused goals in her data are human, making them overall more similar to recipients (Korn 2022: 104). Recipients are commonly post-verbal, especially when the recipient or benefactive is “mentioned for the first time” (Korn 2022: 105), but pre-verbal position is also well-attested, so that no clear conclusion can be reached with regard to a canonical or unmarked position; rather, the interaction of various factors such as animacy, verb semantics, overall presence of co-arguments, and information structure co-determine the placement. For addressees, only few overt examples were present in the data, but all occur pre-verbally (Korn 2022: 107). This finding confirms Jahani's (2018) observation that addressees are overall more likely to be preverbal than either goals or recipients. Again, this confirms observations from other languages in WATZ, according to which addressees are less likely to be post-verbal than recipients or goals (see Haig et al. 2024 [Chapter 1, Section 4, this volume]).

Korn also investigates direct objects, noting that post-verbal placement “is surprisingly frequent” (Korn 2022: 113), though no figures are provided; we return to this below. Korn also discusses the possible impact of flagging, and animacy, noting a tendency for [+human] arguments to be pre-verbal. She concludes with a suggestion for the pathway towards “generalization of the post-verbal position” in Balochi (Korn 2022: 118), according to which non-human goals would have been the first kinds of constituent in this position, extending then to include metaphorical uses of direction (purpose) and then other kinds of adverbial, while a second line of extension would proceed via [+human] goals to recipients and beneficiaries. Ultimately, an extension to direct objects is considered as a final possibility. Korn (2022) also discusses the impact of flagging, verb serialization, and interactions with subordination. In sum, Jahani (2018) and Korn (2022) provide a very informative overview of the relevant characteristics of Balochi, which already identifies some of the areas of cross-dialect variation. The present study builds on these observations but extends the the range of argument types considered, and is based on more accessible data.

Maryam Nourzaei & Geoffrey Haig

3 Basic features of Balochi: Morphosyntax and NP-internal word order

3.1 Alignment, person marking, and nominal inflection

Among the three doculects considered here, only Coastal Balochi displays stem-sensitive ergativity, i.e. verbal forms with the present stem pattern accusatively (A in direct case and agreeing with the verb, P in oblique or object case) while verbal forms with the past stem pattern ergatively (P in direct case and agreeing with the verb (only for third person), A in oblique case) (see for details Nourzaei 2017). Both Koroshi and Turkmen Balochi exhibit only accusative alignment.

Doculects differ regarding the usage of person-marking clitics. Both Coastal Balochi and Turkmen only use the person marking clitics for the 3rd person, while Koroshi uses the person-marking clitics for all persons. The existence of person-marking clitics in Balochi has a strong correlation with the case system. In varieties such as Coastal Balochi and Turkmen (see above) which have a rich morphological case system, they are less commonly used, while in varieties such as Koroshi and Sarawani (see Baranzehi 2003: 86), which display a reduced case system, they are more common.

Balochi has a morphological case system containing at least a direct case, an oblique case, and a genitive case, which is the system found in Koroshi. In Sistani, Afghan and Turkmen Balochi, a locative case has developed from the genitive (cf. Buddruss 1988: 48, Axenov 2006: 80–82, Korn 2008, and the data in Barjasteh Delforooz 2010). In Coastal Balochi, it is sporadically attested as well, typically with human names (Nourzaei 2017: 61, Korn & Nourzaei 2019). In addition, another form appears in Sistani Balochi that is derived from the oblique case and is only used to mark direct objects, whence its name, “object case” (cf. Korn 2008: 61–63, Nourzaei 2017: 62). In Coastal Balochi and Koroshi doculects, object case is only available for pronouns (cf. Nourzaei 2017: 44).

With respect to plural marking, Koroshi differs from other varieties in that it has an innovated plural marker *-obār* in all cases (direct, genitive and oblique, Nourzaei et al. 2015: 29) while in Coastal Balochi and Sistani, the marker *-ān* does not mark the plural on nouns in the direct case, which are thus not directly marked for number. Instead, plural number can be indicated by plural agreement markers on the verb. Nouns in the oblique case, on the other hand, show a number opposition. No variety of Balochi has retained grammatical gender.

4 *Balochi: a cross-dialect investigation of post-verbal elements*

3.2 NP-internal word order

3.2.1 Adjective and noun

The most common pattern regarding adjective-noun ordering across the dialects is that adjectives precede nouns, and that attributive adjectives take a suffix *-ēn/ē* (adjective attribute suffix, ATTR).

- (1) a. Coastal Balochi (Nourzaei 2021a, C, 1171)
zar'd-ē *nege'na*
 yellow-ATTR stone
 'the yellow stone'
- b. Turkmen Balochi (Haig 2022a, A, 0049)
žwān-ēn *zāg=ē*
 good-ATTR son=INDV
 'a good son'
- c. Koroshi Balochi (Nourzaei et al. 2015:42)
bōr-ēn *pašm-ā*
 beige-ATTR wool-OBL
 'the beige wool'

However, Koroshi exhibits borrowed ezafe constructions (N-ADJ order) from Persian shown in (2).

- (2) a. Koroshi Balochi (Nourzaei 2021b, A, 0006)
ādam=e *xūb=ī*
 person=EZ good=INDV
 'a good person'
- b. Koroshi Balochi (UP)
jāhel=e *nūrānī=ye*
 boy=EZ handsome=INDV
 'a handsome boy'

3.2.2 Possessor and noun

Across the dialects, possessors normally precede the possessed noun (POSS-N order), and the possessor takes a so-called genitive case (for details regarding different forms of genitive case see Nourzaei 2017, Nourzaei et al. 2015, Korn & Nourzaei 2019).

Maryam Nourzaei & Geoffrey Haig

- (3) a. Coastal Balochi (Nourzaei 2021a, A, 0315)
sī'morg-e *dap-ā*
 fabulous.bird-GEN mouth-OBL
 'into the fabulous bird's mouth'
- b. Turkmen Balochi (Haig 2022a, A, 0083)
xānbādorr-ī *jenēn-ā*
 Khanbadur-GEN wife-OBL
 'the wife of Khanbadur'
- c. Koroshi Balochi (Nourzaei 2021b A, 0007)
śāh-ay *awal-īn* *bač*
 king-GEN first-ATTR son
 'the king's first son'

In Koroshi, possessors may follow nouns (N-POSS) in a kind of ezafe construction, most likely borrowed from Persian. However, most examples in Nourzaei et al. (2015) suggest wholesale borrowing of phrases from Persian, as in (4). The actual productivity of N-ez POSS constructions in Koroshi thus remains to be established.

- (4) Koroshi Balochi (Nourzaei et al. 2015:212)
ya *banne=ye* *xodā=ī*
 one servant=EZ god=INDV
 'a fellow (lit. a servant) of God'

The ordering of pronominal possessors may differ from nominal possessors. In Coastal **Balochi Balochi**, pronominal possessors generally follow the possessed:

- (5) a. Coastal Balochi (Nourzaei 2021a, B, 505)
gohār-ā *otīg-a*
 sister-OBL REFL-OBL
 'your sister'
- b. Coastal Balochi (UP)
māt *manīg*
 mother mine
 'my mother'

3.2.3 Demonstrative and noun

Across all dialects, demonstratives precede nouns, with some marginal exceptions which are ignored here (Korn & Nourzaei 2019).

4 *Balochi: a cross-dialect investigation of post-verbal elements*

- (6) a. Coastal Balochi (Nourzaei 2021a, B, 0711)

ē pet
PROX father
'this father'

- b. Turkmen Balochi (Haig 2022a, A, 0030)

ē bādešā
PROX king
'this king'

- c. Koroshi Balochi (Nourzaei 2021b, B, 0570)

ē jo'glā
PROX boy.OBL
'this boy'

3.2.4 Numeral and noun

Plural marking retains to a large extent the archaic pattern, also found in Kurdish, whereby only nouns in oblique cases are overtly plural marked with a suffix, but plural **subjects** nouns are not overtly marked. All dialects share the commonality of ordering the numerals before head nouns.

3.2.5 Adpositions

The dialects have **both** prepositions, postpositions, and circumpositions. Postpositions are generally relational nouns in the oblique case, with the NP complement in the genitive case. Similar to nouns in the oblique case, the adpositions can also be used alone as adverbs. Prepositions usually trigger the oblique case of the noun. Note that there is a tendency for losing the oblique case after prepositions in Koroshi. The respective frequencies of prepositional and postpositional use shows interesting cross-dialectal variation, which we sum up in Table 1 below. In general, Koroshi has the strongest tendency to use prepositions (see for more details Nourzaei et al. 2015: 43–46). Examples of prepositions and postpositions follow:

- (7) a. Coastal Balochi (Nourzaei 2021a, B, 0678)

čāt-e tōkā
well-GEN inside
'inside the well'

Maryam Nourzaei & Geoffrey Haig

- b. Turkmen Balochi (Haig 2022a, D, 0576)

ges-ay tā

house-GEN inside

‘inside the house’

- c. Koroshi Balochi (Nourzaei et al. 2015:36)

dawr=e ī mēdag-ā

around=EZ PROX encampment-OBL

‘around this encampment’

- d. Koroshi Balochi (Nourzaei 2021b, B, 0553)

čāh-ay tōxā por=e šamšīr=o nayza a=kan-t

well-GEN in full=EZ sword=and spear VCL=do.PRS -3SG

‘She fills the well with swords and spears.’

In contrast to Koroshi, Coastal Balochi and Turkmen possess circumpositions:

- (8) Turkmen Balochi (Axenov 2006:150, glosses follow the source)

bi diga gis-ē tā

to other house-IND inside

‘to another house’

For our quantitative analysis of adpositions in actual usage, based on the WOVA data, we will consider the respective frequencies of prepositional and postpositional flagging, across those functions that we would generally expect to favour adpositional over other types of flagging (e.g. case marking, or lack of any overt flagging).² Table 1 shows the respective frequencies of postpositional and prepositional flagging across the three dialects for NPs in these functions.

Table 1 suggests a two-way split across Balochi, between the predominantly prepositional Koroshi and Turkmen on the one hand, versus predominantly postpositional Coastal Balochi on the other. The high frequency of postpositional flagging in Coastal Balochi is intriguing. At this point we have no convincing explanation. It may be a retention of earlier Balochi structures, which has been lost in other varieties through greater contact with other west Iranian languages,

²The procedure was as follows: Taking the three Balochi WOVA data sets, we selected the total number of tokens in the following functions: ABL(ative); ADDR(essee); BEN(efactive); COM(itative); GOAL; GOAL-C(ausped); INSTR(umental); LOC(ative); REC(ipient); REC-BEN. We then extracted those that were flagged with preposition or pre-nominal relational nouns (lumped together as “prepositional”), and those that were flagged with postpositions, or post-nominal relational nouns (lumped together as “postpositional”). Together this yielded 343 tokens.

4 *Balochi: a cross-dialect investigation of post-verbal elements*

Table 1: Frequency of prepositional and postpositional flagging in Balochi

| Adpos. Type: | Coastal | | Koroshi | | Turkmen | | Totals |
|----------------|---------|----|---------|----|---------|----|--------|
| | N | % | N | % | N | % | |
| Postpositional | 83 | 86 | 2 | 2 | 12 | 10 | 97 |
| Prepositional | 13 | 14 | 129 | 98 | 104 | 90 | 246 |
| Totals | 96 | | 131 | | 116 | | 343 |

notably Persian. It may be connected to multilingualism with Urdu and other postpositional Indo-Aryan languages spoken in the region, but this is speculative. Interestingly, in our data Turkmen is dominant prepositional, although we might have expected higher rates of postpositions due to contact with Turkic. It is possible that Turkic has had less influence because the migrations of Turkmen speakers to Turkmenistan was relatively recent, and they retain contact with Sistani Balochi speakers in Iran. This would be in line with the findings of Haig et al. (forthc.), according to which adpositional type is a relatively conservative word order parameter that only shifts under intense and long contact.

3.3 Auxiliary and main verb, complement clause and matrix clause

TAM categories are expressed by the presence or absence of verbal prefixes (Jahani & Korn 2009, Axenov 2006, Nourzaei et al. 2015 among others). The perfect system uses the participle followed by the inflected copula, which cliticizes to the verb, while the progressive (e.g., Koroshi and Coastal Balochi) is built from infinitive plus clitic copula. Historically, then, we can assume at least some examples of V-Aux order, which have since univerbated through cliticization of the original auxiliary. In contemporary Balochi, however, prosodically independent (non-clitic) auxiliary verbs are infrequent, so establishing a regular order of auxiliary and verb is not straightforward. Examples with cliticized auxiliaries are the following:

- (9) a. Turkmen Balochi (Haig 2022a, D, 0548)
- ammā pa wat-ī māl-ān yakk yakk=ī nām*
1PL for REFL-GEN animal-PL one one=INDV name
ešt=at-an
put.PST=COP.PST-1PL
'We had given names to everyone of our sheep.'

Maryam Nourzaei & Geoffrey Haig

- b. Koroshi Balochi (Nourzaei 2021b, A, 0296)
hasan kačal faġat nay-āk-ag=en
 Hasan bald only NEG-come.PST-PP=COP.3SG
 'Only Hasan the Bald has not come along.'

The Sistani variety of Western Balochi has an auxiliary verb *dāšten* 'have', a recent borrowed element from Persian, to build progressive construction in past and present domain (see for details Nourzaei 2024). As in Persian, this auxiliary precedes the main verb as in (10):

- (10) a. Sistani Balochi (Nourzaei 2024)
dār-īn wān-īn sāket be
 have.PRS-1SG read.PRS-1SG quiet IMP.become.PRS.2SG
 'Be quiet, I am studying!'
 b. Sistani Balochi (Nourzaei 2024)
dāšt-on šot-on ke čākar āt
 have.PST-1SG go.PST-1SG CLM Chakar come.PST.3SG
 'I was going when Chakar came.'

The subordinator *ke* may introduce various kinds of subordinate clause, i.e. relative, complement and adverbial, as well as quoted speech. Across the dialects, the complement clauses normally follow the main clause and are either linked to it by asyndetic subordination (juxtaposition) without any overt marker of subordination other than rising intonation, or with an overt complementizer. A number of compound conjunctions, composed of nouns or other elements plus *ke*, such as *mawġēi ke/waġteke* 'when', and *be šartī ke* 'on the condition that' are also used. Additional subordinating conjunctions include *tā/ta* 'until, so that' and *aga/aya* 'if'. In all dialects subordination closely follows the basic pattern of Persian and copies its compound conjunctions (see also Jahani & Korn 2009:678). Examples of complement clauses with verbs of speech and perception, with and without complementizers follow:

- (11) a. Coastal Balochi (Nourzaei 2021a, C, 1061)
pet-ā go ke man-ī čo nī 'mā 'ta-rā 'sīr
 father-OBL say.PST CLM 1SG-GEN child now 1SG 2SG-OBJ wedding
da'y-ā
 give.PRS-1SG
 'The father said /that/, "My son, now I will marry you off.'

4 *Balochi: a cross-dialect investigation of post-verbal elements*

b. Turkmen Balochi (Axenov 2006)

ges-ay wāond gušt-i ke mnī pess eškārī=e
 house-GEN owner say.PST=PC.3SG CLM 1SG.GEN father hunter=INDV
at-i
 COP.PST-3SG

‘The owner of the house said that my father was a hunter.’

c. Koroshi Balochi (Nourzaei et al. 2015:143)

a=genn-an bale aždahā=am pīk-ay
 VCL=see.PRS-3PL yes dragon=ADD twist.PST.PP-COP.PRS.3SG
dawr=e šāh-ay janek-ay garden-ā
 around=EZ king-GEN daughter-GEN neck-OBL

‘They see [that] indeed the dragon was wrapped around the neck of the king’s daughter.’

4 Order of clause-level constituents: A quantitative analysis

In this section we present the results of the quantitative analysis, drawing on the set of constituent types defined in the WOWA framework; not all categories are considered, as some have too few tokens for meaningful quantitative analysis.

4.1 Direct object and verb

Across the dialects, nominal direct objects are overwhelmingly in the preverbal position. (>90% OV in all three WOWA Balochi doculects). This confirms previous research on Balochi (Jahani & Korn 2009, and Korn 2022), and also reflects the overall tendency for Iranian languages in WOWA to be consistently OV in discourse, with the exception of Kumzari (see Haig 2022b, Haig et al. forth., Ch. 1, this volume). Our analysis does, however, identify some cross-dialectal differences. Table 2 provides the figures for direct objects, distinguishing between pronominal direct objects (12a) and nominal direct objects (12b). WH-words, clitic pronouns, and adverbials in object function have been excluded from the pronoun category, but we include reflexives. In Table 2, and in the following Tables, N refers to the absolute number of tokens included in each category, “Po” refers to the number of those tokens that were post-verbal, and “%” provides the percentage of post-verbal tokens in each category.

The absolute number of pronominal objects in the data is quite low, particularly in Koroshi, and those that are present are overwhelmingly human (82%, 142

Maryam Nourzaei & Geoffrey Haig

Table 2: Frequencies of post-verbal direct objects, nominal vs. pronominal

| | Coastal | | | Koroshi | | | Turkmen | | | Totals |
|------------|---------|----|------|---------|----|-----|---------|----|-----|--------|
| | N | Po | % | N | Po | % | N | Po | % | |
| Nominal | 339 | 23 | 6.8 | 182 | 4 | 2.2 | 193 | 3 | 1.6 | 714 |
| Pronominal | 98 | 27 | 27.6 | 20 | 0 | 0 | 55 | 2 | 3.6 | 173 |
| Totals | 437 | | | 202 | | | 248 | | | 887 |

out of 173); we turn to the interplay of humanness and pronominality in Table 5 below. Examples of pronominal and nominal direct objects respectively are the following:

- (12) a. Turkmen Balochi (Haig 2022a, A, 0032)
annūn b-raw-an ke šmā-rā ges=a da-īn
 now SBJV-go.PRS-1PL CLM 2SG-OBJ house=VCL give.PRS-1SG
 ‘Now let us go, I will marry you off.’
- b. Koroshi Balochi (Nourzaei 2021b, A, 0022)
man 'wad=om as'p-ok-ā 'gott a=kan-ān
 1SG REFL=PC.1SG horse-DEF-OBL raise VCL=do.PRS-1SG
 ‘I myself will raise the horse.’

With regard to nominal objects, the three dialects exhibit <10% levels of post-verbal placement. However, in Coastal Balochi, rates of post-verbal nominal objects are more than double the other two dialects. A pair-wise Fisher’s Exact Test indicates that the difference between Coastal Balochi and the other two reach significance ($p < 0.05$). For pronominal objects, the differences are much more pronounced, and again it is Coastal Balochi that diverges from the other two.

Korn (2022: 112) had already noted that postverbal direct objects “are surprisingly frequent” in the geographically close variety of Southern Balochi that she investigates. Our data suggest that the spoken varieties of Southern Balochi, such as our “Coastal Balochi Balochi,” may indeed differ from other varieties of Balochi, in particular with regard to pronominal objects. Other research (Stilo 2018, Haig et al. forthc.) has suggested that pronominal objects are the most mobile, in the sense that they are more likely to shift across the predicate from the canonical object position, and our findings provide further support for this assumption.

4 *Balochi: a cross-dialect investigation of post-verbal elements*

As Korn (2022: 113) notes, post-posing direct objects is probably related to information structure, but the exact nature of the triggering factors is “not always obvious.” The WOWA data base does provide a rough classification of direct objects into definite and indefinite, which we have analysed in Table 3.

Table 3: Frequencies of post-verbal nominal direct objects, definite vs. indefinite

| | Coastal | | | Koroshi | | | Turkmen | | | Totals |
|------------|---------|----|---|---------|----|---|---------|----|---|--------|
| | N | Po | % | N | Po | % | N | Po | % | |
| Definite | 110 | 9 | 8 | 126 | 3 | 2 | 89 | 2 | 2 | 325 |
| Indefinite | 229 | 14 | 6 | 56 | 1 | 2 | 104 | 1 | 1 | 389 |
| Totals | 339 | | | 182 | | | 193 | | | 714 |

Based on the admittedly blunt instrument of the definiteness classification in WOWA, the distinction between definite and indefinite does not contribute much to the explanation. Either the absolute figures are too low (Koroshi and Turkmen), or do not reach significance (Coastal Balochi).

A second factor that is often claimed to be relevant in placement of direct objects is weight. The WOWA data set distinguishes four levels of syntactic weight, based on orthographic words excluding clitics and adpositions: 1, 2, 3, and >3.³ An example of a heavy direct object (three words) is 13, a light direct object is (12b) above.

- (13) Coastal Balochi (Nourzaei 2021a, A, 0028)
 'mā ō'tī 'mačč-e 'hōš de'gar-ā
 1SG REFL.GEN date_palm-GEN cluster other-OBL
 'na-dāt-ag=ā
 NEG-give.PST-PP=COP.PRS.3PL
 'I didn't give my date palm clusters to anyone.'

The figures comparing postverbal placement of the lightest (1 word) with the heaviest (>2 words) nominal direct objects are shown in Table 4 (all dialects combined).

Table 4 echoes findings from the WOWA spoken language corpora, which suggest that weight is not a significant factor in triggering object postposing

³An additional measure of weight (number of characters) is also available, but was not applied here; see Haig et al. 2024 [Chapter 1, this volume]

Maryam Nourzaei & Geoffrey Haig

Table 4: Frequencies of post-verbal nominal direct objects, light vs. heavy

| | All dialects | | |
|------------------|--------------|----|-----|
| | N | Po | % |
| Light (1 word) | 329 | 16 | 4.9 |
| Heavy (>2 words) | 86 | 0 | 0 |
| Totals | 415 | | |

(see Haig et al. 2024 [Chapter 1, this volume]). In fact, the opposite tendency is suggested by our data.

Turning now to the factor of animacy, here reduced to human versus non-human, there is an interaction between humanness, pronominality, and post-verbal placement. Table 5 provides the relevant figures:

Table 5: Post-verbal direct objects (all doculects), according to humanness and pronominality

| | +Hum | | | -Hum | | | Totals |
|------------|------|----|-----|------|----|-----|--------|
| | N | Po | %Po | N | Po | %Po | |
| Nominal | 171 | 10 | 5.8 | 543 | 20 | 3.7 | 714 |
| Pronominal | 142 | 27 | 19 | 31 | 2 | 6.5 | 173 |
| Totals | 313 | | | 574 | | | 887 |

First, these figures suggest that there is a strong correlation between humanness and pronominality: more than 80% of all pronominal objects are human (142 out of 173). Thus non-human pronominal objects are a rarity in Balochi, confirming a cross-linguistic tendency to avoid non-human object pronouns in discourse (Haig et al. 2022). Second, pronominality generally increases the likelihood of post-verbal placement, irrespective of humanness. Third, humanness alone is only marginally relevant: a human, nominal direct object is not significantly more likely to be postverbal than a non-human, nominal object. The difference between human and non-human only becomes relevant when the direct object is pronominal.

Closer inspection of the data reveal that the general tendency to avoid non-human object pronouns is most pronounced in Coastal Balochi, where almost 90% of object pronouns are human. Furthermore, in Coastal Balochi the tendency to place these [+human] object pronouns after the verb reaches around

4 *Balochi: a cross-dialect investigation of post-verbal elements*

30%, and it is the Coastal Balochi data which actually account for most of the effects shown in Table 5. In fact, Coastal Balochi exhibits a nascent tendency towards the system found in Kumzari (Haig 2022b, based on Anonby 2015), where the majority of pronominal objects are post-verbal, and nominal objects are still predominantly pre-verbal.

In sum, we have seen that all doculects exhibit dominant OV order, but closer inspection reveals a difference between Coastal Balochi and the other two: although all three dialects are dominant OV overall, Coastal Balochi shows a significantly higher number of postverbal objects than the other two, with the strongest effect found for human pronominal objects. This finding is difficult to reconcile with our earlier observation that Coastal Balochi is more postpositional than either of the other doculects (Section 3). If it is more strictly postpositional, we might have expected it to be more rigidly OV, but this is not the case. We see no obvious explanation for the relatively high degree of object mobility in Coastal Balochi. But we have seen elsewhere that dominant use of postpositions does not necessarily entail strict OV; both Georgian and Armenian are postpositional, yet object positioning is actually more flexible than it is for the mostly prepositional Iranian languages (Hodgson et al. 2024 [Chapter 13, this volume]). Conversely, strict OV does not necessarily entail postpositions; witness many of the Iranian languages closer to the Mesopotamian core of WOWA, which are strictly OV but dominant prepositional, or the varieties of Neo-Aramaic which have shifted to OV, but remain prepositional (see Noorlander 2024 [Chapter 15, this volume]). While we have no explanation for the divergent characteristics of Coastal Balochi, they further underscore the potential disconnect between adpositional order and verb/object ordering in discourse.

Our data further suggest that weight is not a significant factor in predicting post-verbal placement of objects. We have identified the difference between nominal and pronominal form as relevant, though only in conjunction with humanness. Basically, we find that neither humanness, nor pronominal form alone predicts post-verbal placement. However, with pronouns, a strong interaction with humanness becomes apparent; this tendency is strongest for Coastal Balochi, but we can only speculate on the reasons for this at present.

4.1.1 **Copula complements**

A similar picture emerges here as with direct objects: all dialects overwhelmingly prefer preverbal placement, as in the following examples:

Maryam Nourzaei & Geoffrey Haig

- (14) a. Coastal Balochi (Nourzaei 2021a, A, 0299)

te'yōk-ā bī
alone-OBL COP.PST.3SG
'he was alone.'

- b. Turkmen Balochi (Haig 2022a, A, 0154)

xānbādorr=o man=on
Khanbadur=FOC 1SG=COP.PRS.1SG
'I am Khanbadur.'

- c. Koroshi Balochi (Nourzaei 2021b, A, 0006)

ē 'šāh 'jan=e da'w-om=ī 'xeylī ā'dam=e 'xūb=ī
PROX king wife=EZ two-ORD=PC.3SG very person=EZ good=INDV
'na-bod-ag=en
NEG-become.PST-PP=COP.PRS.3SG

'This king's second wife was not a very good person.'

The relevant figures are provided in Table 6.

Table 6: Frequencies of post-verbal copula complements

| | Coastal | | | Koroshi | | | Turkmen | | | Totals | | |
|--------------------|---------|----|-----|---------|----|---|---------|----|---|--------|--|--|
| | N | Po | % | N | Po | % | N | Po | % | | | |
| Copula complements | 310 | 13 | 4.2 | 53 | 0 | 0 | 66 | 2 | 3 | 429 | | |

Examples of a postverbal copula from Coastal Balochi and Turkmen are the following:

- (15) Coastal Balochi (Nourzaei 2021a, C, 0997)

ke ā-ī 'nām=a rahīm'baxš
CLM DIST-GEN name=COP.PST.3SG Rahimbakhsh
'who is called Rahimbakhsh'

- (16) Turkmen Balochi (Haig 2022a, A, 0022)

man=om ast-om pādešā=īē
1SG=ADD exist.PRS-1SG king=INDV
'I am a king.'

These findings confirm a broader tendency observable across the entire WOWA data base, namely that in dominant OV languages, the position of copula

4 *Balochi: a cross-dialect investigation of post-verbal elements*

complements is generally conservative in the sense that they are even less prone to post-posing than direct objects are. In our sample, we find near-categorical pre-verbal placement of copula complements.

4.2 Verb and goal

Korn (2022) and Jahani (2018) suggest that among endpoint constituents, goals of verbs of movement (e.g., ‘go’, ‘come’) and goals of verbs of caused motion (e.g., ‘put’, ‘throw’, ‘bring’) have the highest rates of post-predicate position among all argument types, and across all data. Our data confirm this result. Examples of goals and goals of caused motion are the following:

- (17) a. Goal

Coastal Balochi (Nourzaei 2021a, A, 0043)

‘*šo mē’tag-ā*

go.PST.3SG home-OBL

‘He went home.’

- b. Goal

Koroshi Balochi (Nourzaei 2021b, A, 0047)

‘*ma’rō ’raft-ay lō’g-ā*

today go.PST-2SG home-OBL

‘Today (when) you go home.’

- c. Goal

Turkmen Balochi (Haig 2022a, A, 0160)

‘*šot be yak jā=e*

go.PST.3SG to one place=INDV

‘He went to a certain place.’

- d. Caused Goal

Coastal Balochi (Nourzaei 2021a, A, 0066)

‘*jat=e ’zahm=e ’dast=e*

beat.PST=PC.3SG sword=INDV hand=PC.3SG

‘He struck the sword at its hand.’

- e. Caused Goal

Koroshi Balochi (Nourzaei 2021b, B, 0510)

‘*ma-ba’r-ā bod-a ma-prē’n-ā*

IPFV-take.PRS.BACKG.3SG become.PST-PP IPFV-throw.PRS.BACKG.3SG

‘*bod-a mā dar’yā-hā*

become.PST-PP into sea-OBL

‘She used to take it [and] throw it into the sea.’

Maryam Nourzaei & Geoffrey Haig

f. Caused Goal

Turkmen Balochi (Haig 2022a, D, 0609)

mn-ā jat be degār-ā

1SG-OBL beat.PST.3SG on ground-OBL

‘(The donkey) threw me onto the ground.’

However, the dialects in our sample differ in the degree to which goals are postposed. Table 7 compares nominal goals and caused-motion goals, excluding adverbs:

Table 7: Frequencies of post-verbal nominal goals

| | Coastal | | | Koroshi | | | Turkmen | | | Totals |
|-------------|---------|----|------|---------|----|------|---------|----|------|--------|
| | N | Po | % | N | Po | % | N | Po | % | |
| Goal | 85 | 60 | 70.6 | 68 | 63 | 92.6 | 23 | 8 | 34.8 | 176 |
| Caused Goal | 21 | 6 | 28.6 | 17 | 13 | 76.5 | 13 | 7 | 53.8 | 51 |
| Totals | 106 | | | 85 | | | 36 | | | 227 |

For Koroshi, the results are typical for an Iranian language close to the Mesopotamian core of the Western Asian Transition Zone, and also for colloquial spoken Persian (Haig et al. 2024 [Chapter 1, this volume]): more than 80% of all goals are post-verbal. For the other two dialects, the results are somewhat puzzling. For Turkmen, significantly lower rates of postverbal goals can plausibly be related to effects of Central Asian varieties of Turkic, in line with the predictions of Haig et al. (forthc.) and Haig et al. 2024 [Chapter 1, this volume], which suggest that the placement of Goals is highly sensitive to language contact. However, the absolute number of goals in the Turkmen data set is quite low, so this is a provisional conclusion. For Coastal Balochi, the most puzzling aspect is the overall low levels of postverbal caused goals, an observation that echoes Korn’s (2022) finding for another Southern Balochi variety. For most data sets in the WOWA sample, the difference between caused and simple goals is not significant, and the two roles can be unified for most analyses. But for Coastal Balochi, the difference is striking; we have no explanation for this; it definitely merits further investigation (verb-specific effects, for example).

4.3 Recipients and addressees

A number of previous studies have shown that goals, recipients, and addressees do not necessarily pattern alike in the OV languages of Western Asia (Haig et

4 *Balochi: a cross-dialect investigation of post-verbal elements*

al. 2024 [Chapter 1, this volume], Korn 2022, Stilo 2018). Particularly addressees may exhibit quite different word order properties, even between closely related varieties (Jahani 2018 for Balochi, Haig 2022c for Kurdish). Small corpora of naturalistic spoken language are problematic for testing word order of addressees and recipients, because relevant tokens are not particularly frequent, and often pronominal. In varieties with clitic pronouns, the position of the pronoun is determined by language-specific clitic-placement principles, which may be quite distinct from the principles governing word order of prosodically independent constituents. Our findings here are correspondingly tentative. Examples of recipients and **addresses** are provided below, while Table 8 gives the frequencies per doculect.

(18) a. Recipient

Coastal Balochi (Nourzaei 2021a, A, 0 527)
k-ā'r-ā de'-yā 'pet-a
 K.IPFV-bring.PRS-3PL give.PRS-3PL father-OBL
 'They bring [and] give [them] to [their] father.'

b. Addressee

Coastal Balochi (Nourzaei 2021a, A, 0023)
o's-ī čo'k-ān
 say.PRS-3SG child-OBL.PL
 'He says to [his] children.'

c. Recipient

Koroshi Balochi (Nourzaei 2021b, B, 580)
pu'l-ā a='dā āle'm-ok-ā
 money-OBL VCL=give.PRS.3SG wise_man-DEF-OBL
 'She gives the money to the doctor (lit. wise man).'

d. Addressee

Koroshi Balochi (Nourzaei 2021b, A, 0320)
'ya 'rō 'sāh ba dūmād-o'bār=ay a='s-īt
 one day king to son_in_law-PL=PC.3SG VCL=say.PRS-3SG
 'One day, the king says to his sons-in-law.'

The findings do not entirely match those of Jahani (2018) and Korn (2022: 109), who suggest regular pre-verbal addressees in 'Southern Balochi', to which our Coastal Balochi would belong. The findings for Coastal Balochi are also puzzling in view of a general tendency noted in Haig et al. 2024 [Chapter 1], this volume, according to which addressees are generally less likely to be post-verbal, which

Maryam Nourzaei & Geoffrey Haig

Table 8: Frequencies of post-verbal nominal addressees and recipients (includes recipient/benefactives)

| | Coastal | | | Koroshi | | | Turkmen | | | Totals |
|------------|---------|----|----|---------|----|----|---------|----|----|--------|
| | N | Po | % | N | Po | % | N | Po | % | |
| Addressees | 40 | 16 | 40 | 12 | 4 | 33 | 5 | 0 | 0 | 57 |
| Recipients | 19 | 4 | 20 | 3 | 2 | 66 | 5 | 1 | 20 | 27 |
| Totals | 59 | | | 15 | | | 10 | | | 84 |

would align with the findings of [Jahani \(2018\)](#) and [Korn \(2022\)](#). However, in our Coastal Balochi sample, this is not the case; we have no explanation for this mismatch; this requires further research.

Turning to pronominal addressees and recipients, Table 9 provides the relevant figures.

Table 9: Frequencies of post-verbal pronominal addressees and recipients (includes recipient/benefactives)

| | Coastal | | | Koroshi | | | Turkmen | | | Totals |
|------------|---------|----|----|---------|----|----|---------|----|----|--------|
| | N | Po | % | N | Po | % | N | Po | % | |
| Addressees | 13 | 2 | 15 | 8 | 1 | 1 | 6 | 0 | 0 | 27 |
| Recipients | 40 | 9 | 25 | 15 | 8 | 50 | 6 | 2 | 33 | 48 |
| Totals | 43 | | | 23 | | | 12 | | | 75 |

With pronominal arguments, the expected trend for higher frequency of post-posed recipients is confirmed in all doculects. Examples of nominal addressees are provided in (19a-19c) and a pronominal example is shown in (19d).

- (19) a. Coastal Balochi ([Nourzaei 2021a](#), B, 0504)
'nī lōtā-'ēn-ī brā't-ā
 now call-CAUS.PRS-3SG brother-OBL.PL
 'Then he called the brothers.'
- b. Coastal Balochi ([Nourzaei 2021a](#), A, 0188)
'nī ja'nek-ā go's-ī 'to 'dar ā
 now girl-OBL say.PRS-3SG 2SG PREV SBJV.come.PRS.2SG
 'Then he [the boy in the well] said to the girl, "You get out."

4 *Balochi: a cross-dialect investigation of post-verbal elements*

- c. Koroshi Balochi (Nourzaei 2021b, A, 0320)
'ya 'rō 'sāh ba dūmād-o'bār=ay a= 's-īt
 one day king to son_in_law-PL=PC.3SG VCL=say.PRS-3SG
 'One day, the king says to his sons-in-law.'
- d. Turkmen Balochi (Haig 2022a, D, 0540)
mīlī pess pamman sendbad-ī nakl-ā kort
 1SG.GEN father for.1SG Sinbad-GEN story-OBL do.PST.3SG
 'My father told me the story of Sinbad.'

In summary, the findings for addressees and recipients largely confirm a trend observed across other Iranian languages of the region, according to which recipients are generally more likely to be post-verbal than addressees. However, in Coastal Balochi for nominal arguments (Table 8) only, the trend is reversed. We currently lack an explanation for this, which definitely requires more research.

4.4 Complements of ‘become’, Place, Source, Instrument, Benefactive, Comitative

The absolute numbers of tokens for the remaining roles are quite low in several doculects, so quantitative analysis is not always meaningful. We have combined the results in an overview Table 10. Due to low absolute figures, we include all possible POS types, including pronouns, adverbs etc. Figure 2 provides an overview visualization of all roles considered.

Table 10: Other roles: frequencies of post-verbal placement

| | Coastal | | | Koroshi | | | Turkmen | | | Totals |
|-----------------|---------|----|------|---------|----|------|---------|----|-----|--------|
| | N | Po | % | N | Po | % | N | Po | % | |
| ‘become’-compl. | 14 | 1 | 7 | 12 | 4 | 33 | 10 | 0 | 0 | 36 |
| Place | 61 | 12 | 19.7 | 21 | 7 | 33.3 | 25 | 0 | 0 | 107 |
| Source | 12 | 1 | 8.3 | 7 | 3 | 43.9 | 21 | 2 | 9.5 | 40 |
| Instrument | 18 | 5 | 28 | 5 | 0 | 0 | 12 | 1 | 8 | 35 |
| Comitative | 18 | 3 | 17 | 13 | 4 | 30 | 18 | 2 | 11 | 49 |
| Benefactive | 13 | 2 | 15 | 12 | 1 | 8 | 2 | 0 | 0 | 27 |

With regard to complements of change-of-state verbs ('become'), Coastal Balochi and Turkmen are overwhelmingly pre-verbal, while Koroshi shows around one third post-verbal placement. This would be expected given that

Maryam Nourzaei & Geoffrey Haig

the attested Iranian languages which have dominant post-verbal ‘become’-complements are all from the southwestern Mesopotamian periphery of WATZ (Haig et al. 2022, Haig et al. 2024 [Chapter 1 this volume]). An example of post-verbal ‘become’-complement from Koroshi is provided in (20).

- (20) Koroshi Balochi (Nourzaei 2021b, A, 0491)
ba ha'm=ī kasa-ō-'ēn ga'hār=eš a='b-ant
 to EMPH=PROX small-DIM-ATTR sister=PC.3PL VCL=become.PRS-3PL
ka'nīz=o naw'kar
 maidservant=and male_servant
 ‘[You know, these six sons-in-law and their wives came and] became
 servants to this their youngest sister.’

Turning to local roles source and place, it has been suggested that oblique arguments generally tend to prefer post-predicate position (Jing et al. 2021, based predominantly on written-language corpora). Above we have seen that this certainly applies to goals, but the data for source and place provide only weak support for assuming a general tendency applying to all obliques. Nevertheless, it is noteworthy that the other obliques in Table 10 do show notably higher rates of post-verbal placement than direct objects. Examples for place and source are the following:

- (21) a. Coastal Balochi (Nourzaei 2021a, A, 0327)
ha'm=ē 'gōšt pa'dā kašt=ī da'p-ā 'če
 EMPH=PROX meat again pull.PST.3SG=PC.3SG mouth-OBL from
 ‘It took out this meat from its mouth again.’
- b. Coastal Balochi (Nourzaei 2021a, A, 0063)
'hangā 'nešt ha'm=ē 'mačč-e 'čērā
 still sit.PST.3SG EMPH=PROX date_palm-GEN under
 ‘Still he [the boy] was sitting under this date-palm.’
- c. Koroshi Balochi (Nourzaei 2021b, A, 0217)
'kār a=kan-ān 'mā 'ī bā'g-ā
 work VCL=do.PRS-1SG in PROX garden-OBL
 ‘I will work in this garden.’
- d. Koroshi Balochi (Nourzaei 2021b, B, 0612)
ba mad'rasā=om ġada'gan=eš kod-a
 to school.OBL=ADD forbidden=PC.3PL do.PST-PP
 ‘At school they have actually forbidden your coming.’

4 Balochi: a cross-dialect investigation of post-verbal elements

The data for instruments, comitatives, and benefactives are quite thin, but suggest a tendency for all three roles to be predominantly pre-verbal. This is particularly noteworthy for benefactives, which are >80% preverbal in all doculects. Benefactives are sometimes included under the umbrella term of ‘target’ (Asadpour 2022a,b, Korn 2022) together with goals, but the Balochi data suggest that benefactives are far less likely to be postverbal than goals, and in fact no more likely to be postverbal than sources and locations. However, it should be noted that the majority of benefactives (about 90%) in our data are pronominal, so the bias towards preverbal position may be linked to the pronominal status, but given the paucity of nominal benefactives in the data, this remains to be clarified.

5 Summary: Post-verbal constituents in Balochi

Figure 2 summarizes the quantitative data from post-verbal positioning of various non-subject constituents considered in the preceding section.

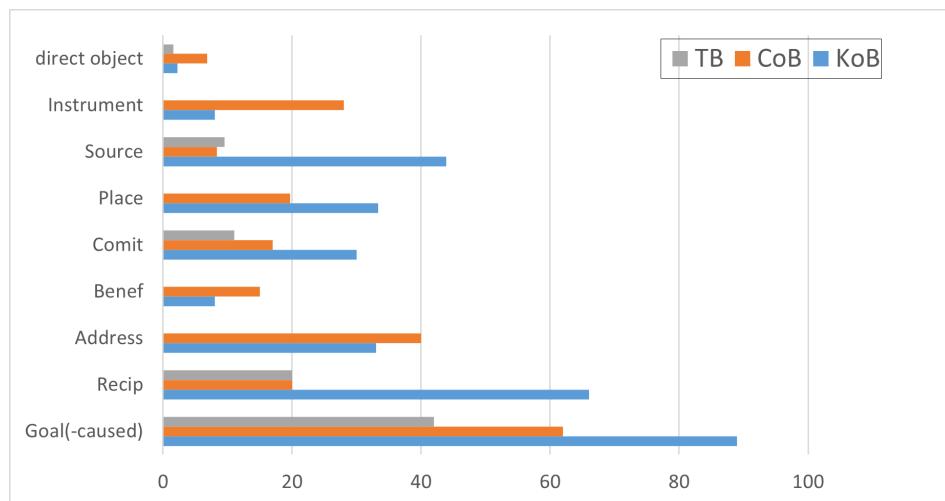


Figure 2: Frequency of post-verbal arguments in three Balochi doculects

As expected, the highest rates of post-verbal placement for all doculects are found for goals, confirming the by-now familiar finding across the entirety of WOWA. In Koroshi only we find that recipients pattern similarly to goals (>60% post-verbal), a pattern that has parallels with varieties of Kurdish (Haig 2022c). In our data, addressees do not pattern with goals in any doculect, and overall do not

Maryam Nourzaei & Geoffrey Haig

differ from other obliques, showing less than 50% post-verbal placement. With regard to direct objects, all doculects are overwhelmingly OV, with post-verbal objects accounting for less than 10% of all objects. However, Coastal Balochi shows a significantly higher number of post-verbal objects than either of the other two doculects. In our sample, weight and definiteness do not seem to be relevant in accounting for post-verbal direct objects, in any doculect. We do, however, find an effect of humanness, particularly in combination with pronominal direct objects (Table 5 above). Overall, the most likely direct objects to be postposed are human, pronominal objects, with the difference most obvious for Coastal Balochi.

6 Conclusions and implications for comparative Iranian syntax

Table 11 summarizes the overall degree of head-initial syntax (grey-shaded) in various phrase types in the three doculects, based on the discussion in Section 3.

Table 11: Head-initial syntax in three Balochi doculects

| Parameter | Koroshi | Coastal | Turkmen |
|---------------------------|-----------------------|---------|---------|
| N/Adjective | N-Adj | Adj-N | |
| N/Possessor | N-Poss | Poss-N | |
| Adp/N | Prep-N | N-Postp | Prep-N |
| Main clause/Compl. clause | Main-CompC | | |
| Aux(Modal)/Main verb | Aux (Modal)-Main verb | | |
| Complementizer/Clause | Compl-Clause | | |

Across these typological parameters, Koroshi is the most consistently head-initial variety, presumably linked to a greater degree of contact with Persian and other western Iranian languages exhibiting head-initial NPs. All doculects linearize main and complement clauses, complementizers, and auxiliaries alike, sharing these values with probably all other Iranian languages of WOVA. The most surprising aspect of Table 11 is the dominance of postpositions in Coastal Balochi, for which we have no ready explanation; this is certainly an area for future research.

Finally, we address the question of how the Balochi results speak to the overall question of how post-verbal syntax in Iranian may have emerged: What kind of historical scenario is compatible with the areal distribution that is now becoming evident? First, let us consider the Balochi data in the light of a feature that

4 *Balochi: a cross-dialect investigation of post-verbal elements*

characterizes all contemporary spoken western Iranian language in the WOVA sample, with one exception: in connected discourse, nominal goals (including caused-motion goals) are 60–100% post-verbal. The sole exception is Turkmen Balochi (Turkmen), where the figure drops to around 40%. Turkmen Balochi is thus different from its relatives in this respect, and from any of the Iranian languages spoken in Mesopotamia, where post-verbal goals are >85%. The most obvious explanation for the outlier status of Turkmenistan Balochi is its outlier geographic position, beyond the northeastern periphery of WATZ, and farthest from the Mesopotamian core that has been identified as harbouring the highest levels of post-verbal goals. We take this as tentative support for the hypothesis that the placement of goals is particularly sensitive to contact influence.

Nevertheless, 40% post-verbal goals is higher than many other OV languages in our sample (vernacular standard Turkish of Ankara, [Iefremenko 2024](#) [Chapter 2, this volume] for example), so geography cannot be the whole story. Generally, it appears that Iranian languages are just more prone to post-verbal goals than Turkic languages, and this is a matter of shared inheritance, rather than geography alone. What we might therefore assume is that the shared ancestor of all western Iranian languages had some initial baseline level of post-verbal spatial goals, which may already have exceeded 50% in some of the (unattested) languages of that period. This feature was thus present prior to the dispersion of the various branches of what is traditionally termed ‘West Iranian’ (see also [Korn 2022: 122](#)). The result would be traces of post-verbal goals (in the narrow sense) in all West Iranian languages, with actual levels dependent on their respective contact biographies over the last 2000 years. In those Iranian languages that continued to be spoken in contact with Semitic languages (in particular Aramaic) in the Mesopotamian and western Zagros regions, levels of post-verbal goals converge to the near 100% found in the Semitic contact languages. Where Semitic influence is lacking, and contact with other OV languages (e.g. Indo-Aryan) was present, levels would have dropped, as in Balochi of Turkmenistan, or at least not risen further. Alternatively, the unrelated OV contact languages might converge to Iranian in this respect, as is the case for Qashqai Turkic, which exhibits 70% post-verbal nominal goals ([Schreiber 2021](#)), a figure close to its Iranian neighbours. The actual outcome would thus depend on the local patterns of multilingualism and power relations among the speech communities, but a broad geographical tendency is nonetheless discernible.

This is essentially a refinement of the account outlined in [Haig \(2015\)](#), who noted that the wide distribution of post-verbal ‘Goals’ (see below on terminology) across the Iranian languages of western Asia is suggestive of “an old trait of West Iranian that was inherited by the daughter languages,” rather than independent

Maryam Nourzaei & Geoffrey Haig

parallel development (Haig 2015: 421). Post-verbal goals are attested in the Old Iranian period, as in the following Old Persian examples, cited from Haig (2015: 421); see also Jahani (2018) for further examples:

- (22) a. Old Persian (DB V, 9–10, Kent 1953: 133)
pasāva Gaubaruva hadā kārā ašiyava ūvjam
 then Gobryas with army marched to_Elam
 'Then Gobryas marched to Elam with an army.'
- b. Old Persian (DB V, 21, Kent 1953: 133)
pasāva hadā kārā ašiyavam abiy sakām
 then with army went.1SG to Scythia
 'Then I went with an army to Scythia.'

However, the formulation in Haig (2015) was still framed in terms of an assumed macro-role sense of 'Goal', which included addressees, and recipients, among other things. More recent research (Haig et al. 2024 [Chapter 1, this volume]), including this chapter, demonstrates that this approach is not tenable. Instead, a finer-grained approach is required that consistently distinguishes goal in the narrower sense of motion and caused motion from other roles. As shown above in Figure 2, outside of spatial goals, no other role surpasses 50% rates of post-verbal placement in Balochi, with the exception of recipient, and that only in Koroshi, and this finding is replicated for several other Iranian languages.

Our revised suggestion would be that in proto-West Iranian, post-verbal goals (in the narrow sense) were already a frequent option (perhaps majority), while postponing other arguments was possible, but determined by pragmatic and semantic principles, with no clear role-driven preferences; the multi-variate analysis of spoken Persian in Rasekh-Mahand et al. 2024 [Chapter 7, this volume], demonstrates such a system empirically. In some Iranian languages, most notably Kurdish of the Mesopotamian region, post-verbal placement spread from goals to other argument types, ultimately encompassing a bundle of semantically-related roles. The initial focus on these languages led to the (misleading) assumption of a macro-role ('Goal' in Haig & Thiele 2014 and Haig 2015; 'Target' in Asadpour 2022b and Jügel 2022; see Haig et al. 2024 [Chapter 1, this volume], for discussion. The role-specific analysis adhered to here suggests an areally-mediated shift in the frequency of post-verbal goals in Balochi (lowest in Turkmen), and in the range of arguments that behave similarly to goals (the Koroshi clustering of recipient and goal).

The developments just sketched are speculative to the extent that they reconstruct possible diachronic developments, based on synchronic feature distribu-

4 *Balochi: a cross-dialect investigation of post-verbal elements*

tions. The little historical data that is available is unfortunately difficult to interpret. There is a general problem with projecting from written texts to spoken language; an investigation of contemporary formal written Persian, for example, would fail to register the fact that spoken contemporary Persian has a fairly stable rate of around 80% post-verbal goals (Haig et al. 2024 [Chapter 1, this volume]). Early Classical Persian texts (11–13 centuries AD) have virtually no trace of post-verbal goals (Chapter 8, this volume), but we doubt that these figures reflect the spoken language of the time, given the comparative evidence from other Iranian languages. Similarly, Jahani (2018) compares oral and written Southern Balochi, noting that in written Balochi, goals are never post-posed, while in spoken Southern Balochi the relevant figure is 90%. These differences raise a methodological problem with regard to reconstructing the history of post-verbal syntax; differences between yesterday's written and today's spoken language may just reflect differences between written and spoken registers that have always existed, rather than being evidence of any change across time.

This chapter provides a tentative cross-dialect survey of word order in Balochi, based on three dialects representing geographically dispersed varieties, with differing contact profiles. The picture that emerges confirms some of the previous observations in Jahani (2018) and Korn (2022), but extends the purview of these studies. We investigated a larger number of roles, and considered additional factors such as weight and humanness. On the other hand, the pan-dialectal approach means that we are unable to zoom in on finer semantic, pragmatic, or stylistic factors, such as the effects of individual verb classes, register, or information structure that figure in Korn (2022). Generally, our findings confirm the overall prediction that both overall frequencies of post-verbal goals, and the number (and nature) of other role types that are prone to post-verbal placement, decrease with increasing distance from the Mesopotamian core of WATZ. We have also identified Coastal Balochi as exhibiting a significantly higher frequency of postpositions in discourse, and interestingly, a higher number of post-verbal direct objects, with a strong interaction with pronominal form and humanness. These findings raise interesting questions regarding the possible role of contact with Indo-Aryan languages in the region, which have yet to be explored.

Maryam Nourzaei & Geoffrey Haig

Abbreviations

| | | | |
|---------|--------------------------------------|---------|-----------------------------------|
| ADD | additive particle | NEG | negation |
| ATTR | attributive | PRS | present |
| BACKG | backgrounding | OBJ | object case |
| CL | classifier | OBL | oblique case |
| Coastal | Coastal Balochi | PC | person-marking enclitic |
| | doculect | | |
| DEF | definite | PL | plural |
| DIM | diminutive | PP | past participle |
| DIST | distal | PROH | prohibitive prefix |
| EMPH | emphasis | PROX | proximal |
| EZ | ezafe particle | PST | past stem |
| GEN | genitive | REFL | reflexive pronoun |
| IMP | imperative | SBJV | subjunctive |
| IND | indefinite | Turkmen | Turkmenistan |
| INDV | individuation clitic | | Balochi doculect |
| INF | infinitive | UP | Unpublished text |
| IPFV | imperfective | VCL | verbal clitic |
| K.IPFV | <i>k</i> -variant of imperfective | WATZ | Western Asian Transition Zone. |
| Koroshi | Koroshi Balochi | | |
| | doculect | | |

References

- Anonby, Christina van der Wal. 2015. *A grammar of Kumzari: A mixed Person-Arabian language of Oman*. Leiden: Leiden University. (Doctoral dissertation).
- Asadpour, Hiwa. 2022a. *Typologizing word order variation in northwestern Iran*. Frankfurt am Main: Goethe-Universität. (Doctoral dissertation).
- Asadpour, Hiwa. 2022b. Word order in Mukri Kurdish - The case of incorporated targets. In Hiwa Asadpour & Thomas Jügel (eds.), *Word order variation: Semitic, Turkic and Indo-European languages in contact*, 63–87. Berlin: De Gruyter Mouton.
- Axenov, Serge. 2000. Balochi orthography in Turkmenistan. In Carina Jahani (ed.), *Language in society – Eight sociolinguistic essays on Balochi* (Studia Iranica Upsaliensia 3), 71–78. Uppsala: Acta Universitatis Upsaliensis.

4 *Balochi: a cross-dialect investigation of post-verbal elements*

- Axenov, Serge. 2006. *The Balochi language of Turkmenistan: A corpus-based grammatical description (StudiaIranica Upsaliensia, 10)*. Uppsala: Acta Universitatis Upsaliensis.
- Baranzehi, Adam Nader. 2003. The Sarawani dialect of Balochi and Persian influence on it. In Carina Jahani & Agnes Korn (eds.), *The Baloch and their neighbours: Ethnic and linguistic contact in Balochistan in historical and modern times*, 75–111. Wiesbaden: Reichert.
- Barjasteh Delforooz, Behrooz. 2010. *Discourse features in Balochi of Sistan (oral narratives)*. Uppsala: Uppsala Universitet. <http://uu.divaportal.org/smash/record.jsf?pid=diva2:345413>.
- Buddruss, Georg. 1988. *Aus dem Leben eines jungen Balutschen, von ihm selbst erzählt*. Stuttgart: Steiner.
- Emādi, Nezam. 2005. *Guyeš-e Korowš (The vernacular of the Korosh)*. Shiraz: Entešārāt-e Širāz Āvand Andišeh.
- Haig, Geoffrey. 2015. Verb-goal (VG) word order in Kurdish and Neo-Aramaic: Typological and areal considerations. In Geoffrey Khan & Lidia Napiorkowska (eds.), *Neo-Aramaic and its linguistic context*, 407–425. Piscataway, NJ: Gorgias Press.
- Haig, Geoffrey. 2022a. Balochi (Turkmenistan). In Geoffrey Haig, Donald Stilo, Nils N. Schiborr & Mahîr Dogan (eds.), *WOWA – Word Order in Western Asia: A spoken-language-based corpus for investigating areal effects in word order variation*. Bamberg: University of Bamberg. multicast.aspra.uni-bamberg.de/resources/wowa/.
- Haig, Geoffrey. 2022b. Kumzari (Musandam). In Geoffrey Haig, Donald Stilo, Nils N. Schiborr & Mahîr Dogan (eds.), *WOWA – Word Order in Western Asia: A spoken-language-based corpus for investigating areal effects in word order variation*. Bamberg: University of Bamberg. multicast.aspra.uni-bamberg.de/resources/wowa/.
- Haig, Geoffrey. 2022c. Kurdish (Northern, Muş). In Geoffrey Haig, Donald Stilo, Nils N. Schiborr & Mahîr Dogan (eds.), *WOWA – Word Order in Western Asia: A spoken-language-based corpus for investigating areal effects in word order variation*. Bamberg: University of Bamberg. multicast.aspra.uni-bamberg.de/resources/wowa/.
- Haig, Geoffrey, Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand, Donald Stilo, Laurentia Schreiber & Nils N. Schiborr. 2024. Post-predicate elements in the Western Asian Transition Zone: Data, theory, and methods. In Geoffrey Haig, Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand, Donald Stilo, Laurentia Schreiber & Nils N. Schiborr (eds.), *Post-predicate elements in the Western Asian Transition Zone: A corpus-based approach to areal typology*, 1–49. Berlin: Language Science Press.

Maryam Nourzaei & Geoffrey Haig

- Haig, Geoffrey, Donald Stilo, Mahîr C. Doğan & Nils N. Schiborr. 2022. *WOWA – Word Order in Western Asia: A spoken-language-based corpus for investigating areal effects in word order variation*. Bamberg. multicast.aspra.uni-bamberg.de/resources/wowa/.
- Haig, Geoffrey & Hannah Thiele. 2014. Post-predicate Goals in Northern Kurdish and neighbouring a pilot study in quantitative areal linguistics languages. Paper presented at the *Second International Conference on Variation and Change in Kurdish*. Mardin Artuklu University, Turkey. 8-9 October 2014.
- Hodgson, Katherine, Victoria Khurshudyan & Pollet Samvelian. 2024. Post-predicate arguments in Modern Eastern Armenian. In Geoffrey Haig, Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand, Donald Stilo, Laurentia Schreiber & Nils N. Schiborr (eds.), *Post-predicate elements in the Western Asian Transition Zone: A corpus-based approach to areal typology*, 353–385. Berlin: Language Science Press.
- Iefremenko, Kateryna. 2024. Word order in the speech of Kurmanji-Turkish bilinguals. In Geoffrey Haig, Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand, Donald Stilo, Laurentia Schreiber & Nils N. Schiborr (eds.), *Post-predicate elements in the Western Asian Transition Zone: A corpus-based approach to areal typology*, 51–80. Berlin: Language Science Press.
- Jahani, Carina. 2013. The Balochi language and languages in Iranian Balochistan. *Journal of the Middle East and Africa* 4(2). 153–167.
- Jahani, Carina. 2018. Post-verbal arguments in Balochi. Paper presented at the *International Conference on Anatolia-Caucasus-Iran: Ethnic and linguistic contacts (ACIC)*, Yerevan University, 10–12 May.
- Jahani, Carina & Agnes Korn. 2009. Balochi. In Gernot Windfuhr (ed.), *The Iranian languages*, 634–692. London & New York: Routledge.
- Jing, Yingqi, Paul Widmer & Balthasar Bickel. 2021. Word order variation is partially constrained by syntactic complexity. *Cognitive Science* 45(11). 1–25.
- Jügel, Thomas. 2022. Word order variation in Middle Iranic: Persian, Parthian, Bactrian, and Sogdian. In Hiwa Asadpour & Thomas Jügel (eds.), *Word order variation: Semitic, Turkic and Indo-European languages in contact*, 39–62. Berlin: De Gruyter Mouton. DOI: [10.1515/9783110790368-003](https://doi.org/10.1515/9783110790368-003).
- Kent, Roland. 1953. *Old Persian*. 2nd revised edition. New Haven, CT: American Oriental Society.
- Korn, Agnes. 2005. *Towards a historical grammar of Balochi*. Wiesbaden: Reichert.
- Korn, Agnes. 2008. A new locative case in Turkmenistan Balochi. *Iran and the Caucasus* 12(1). 83–99.
- Korn, Agnes. 2022. Targets and other post-verbal arguments in Southern Balochi: A multidimensional cline. In Hiwa Asadpour & Thomas Jügel (eds.), *Word or-*

4 *Balochi: a cross-dialect investigation of post-verbal elements*

- der variation – Semitic, Turkic and Indo-European languages in contact, 89–128. Berlin: De Gruyter Mouton. DOI: [10.1515/9783110790368-005](https://doi.org/10.1515/9783110790368-005).
- Korn, Agnes & Maryam Nourzaei. 2019. Notes on the speech of the Afro-Baloch of the southern coast of Iran. *Journal of the Royal Asiatic Society* 29. 623–657.
- Noorlander, Paul M. 2024. Neo-Aramaic in Iran and northeastern Iraq. In Geoffrey Haig, Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand, Donald Stilo, Laurentia Schreiber & Nils N. Schiborr (eds.), *Post-predicate elements in the Western Asian Transition Zone: A corpus-based approach to areal typology*, 405–441. Berlin: Language Science Press.
- Nourzaei, Maryam. 2017. *Participant reference in three Balochi dialects: Male and female narrations of folktales and biographical tales*. Uppsala: Acta Universitatis Upsaliensis.
- Nourzaei, Maryam. 2021a. Balochi (Coastal). In Geoffrey Haig, Donald Stilo, Nils N. Schiborr & Mahir Dogan (eds.), *WOWA – Word Order in Western Asia: A spoken-language-based corpus for investigating areal effects in word order variation*. Bamberg: University of Bamberg. multicast.aspra.uni-bamberg.de/resources/wowa/.
- Nourzaei, Maryam. 2021b. Balochi (Koroshi). In Geoffrey Haig, Donald Stilo, Nils N. Schiborr & Mahir Dogan (eds.), *WOWA – Word Order in Western Asia: A spoken-language-based corpus for investigating areal effects in word order variation*. Bamberg: University of Bamberg. multicast.aspra.uni-bamberg.de/resources/wowa/.
- Nourzaei, Maryam. 2024. Progressive constructions in different Balochi dialects from a diachronic and an areal linguistic point of view. *Journal of the Bulletin of the School of Oriental and African Studies*. 1–26. DOI: [10.1017/S0041977X24000144](https://doi.org/10.1017/S0041977X24000144).
- Nourzaei, Maryam. in press. *Documenting orality: Collecting folk narratives in Iran*. Uppsala: Acta Universitatis Upsaliensis.
- Nourzaei, Maryam, Carina Jahani, Erik Anonby & Abbas Ali Ahangar. 2015. *Koroshi: A corpus-based grammatical description*. Uppsala: Acta Universitatis Upsaliensis.
- Rasekh-Mahand, Mohammad, Elham Izadi, Mehdi Parizadeh, Geoffrey Haig & Nils N. Schiborr. 2024. Post-predicate elements in modern colloquial Persian: A multifactorial analysis. In Geoffrey Haig, Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand, Donald Stilo, Laurentia Schreiber & Nils N. Schiborr (eds.), *Post-predicate elements in the Western Asian Transition Zone: A corpus-based approach to areal typology*, 183–216. Berlin: Language Science Press.

Maryam Nourzaei & Geoffrey Haig

- Schreiber, Laurentia. 2021. Oghuz (Qashqai). In Geoffrey Haig, Donald Stilo, Nils N. Schiborr & Mahír Dogan (eds.), *WOWA – Word Order in Western Asia: A spoken-language-based corpus for investigating areal effects in word order variation*. Bamberg: University of Bamberg. multicast.aspra.uni-bamberg.de/resources/wowa/.
- Stilo, Donald. 2018. Preverbal and postverbal peripheral arguments in the Araxes-Iran linguistic area. Paper presented at the *Conference Anatolia-Caucasus-Iran: Ethnic and Linguistic Contacts* 10-12 May 2018. Yerevan University, Yerevan, Armenia.

Chapter 5

Notes on word order in Bashkardi

Agnes Korn^a

^aCNRS – UMR 8041 Centre de recherche sur le Monde iranien [CeRMI]

This contribution discusses some features of word order in Bashkardi, a group of varieties of the Iranian branch of Indo-European spoken inland of the Strait of Hormuz in Southern Iran. The data are from recordings made by Ilya Gershevitch in 1956, when Persian influence was less strong than today. The findings include an average of 30% non-subject elements being in postverbal position. Goals of motion and of caused-motion show a strong preference for this position, except for Goals of ‘put’-expressions, which are close to the overall average. More than 20% of nominal direct objects are postverbal, while pronouns are very rare in this position.

1 Introduction

1.1 Affiliation and location

For the purposes of this contribution, the term “Bashkardi” (ISO 639-3: bsg) refers to the varieties spoken inland of the Strait of Hormuz in Southern Iran in a region called Bašākerd (see the [map in Figure 1](#)).¹ By its being situated far away from the core of the Western Asian Transition Zone (see [Haig et al. 2024](#) [Chapter 1, this volume]), Bashkardi offers a convenient point of comparison with Iranian languages within that zone.

Bashkardi has been said to belong to the South-Western sub-branch of Iranian (e.g. [Skjærvø 1989a](#): 846). However, the differences among the Bashkardi varieties – particularly between North (NBsh.) and South Bashkardi (SBsh.) – and the features they share with Balochi (which is classified as North-Western Iranian) suggest that “Bashkardi” could be the result of a linguistic area where Iranian

¹See [Korn \(2017: 79–80\)](#) for more details.

Agnes Korn

varieties of different genetic affiliations have converged and developed shared features (cf. Korn 2021b: 302f.). In this sense, “Bashkardi” is a collective term “merely on the basis of territorial coverage” (Voskanian & Boyajian-Sureniants 2007: 122).

1.2 Data and previous works

The data for this article are from recordings made by Ilya Gershevitch during his visit to Iran in 1956. He did not publish any text, but did use his data for his articles on historical linguistics.² The data he cites there are summarised in Skjærvø (1989a,b).

Two of the texts (G and H in what follows) are published in Korn (2021b,a), and the corpus used for the present study is available at Korn & Gershevitch (2023a,b).

Elements of Bashkardi grammar are summarised in Korn (2017), description of the nominal system with historical interpretation, and a brief sketch of North Bashkardi grammar is presented in Korn (2021b).

Some data are available from varieties spoken in the region today: Seddiqi Nejad (2010), describing the South Bashkardi of Dahwast; Barbera (2024b,a) on the South Bashkardi of Garu; Barbera (2005, 2020) on the variety of the town of Minab; and Pelevin (2010) on the speech of Bandar-Abbas. A comparison with Gershevitch’s recordings shows that the morphosyntax of Bashkardi has since become much more similar to that of Persian (see Korn 2017: 93–95), which highlights the importance of the data of 1956.

1.3 Some elements of Bashkardi grammar

For the discussion to follow, some grammatical features need to be kept in mind (see also Section 2.4.2). In Bashkardi as defined in Sections 1.1–2, there is no case distinction. The only elements which are (historically) case-marked are the pronominal clitics (enclitic pronouns, PC). They are used for the possessor and the indirect object as well as for the direct object in the present domain (i.e. in clauses whose verb form is based on the present stem), and for the transitive subject in the past domain (clauses with verb forms based on the past stem; this includes the perfect forms). In the latter domain, verbal agreement (if any) is with the direct object, and in some cases with the indirect object (recipient).

In both domains, nominal and pronominal indirect objects (see Section 2.4.3) and definite direct objects (see Section 2.4.2) can take a directional preposition

²See Gershevitch (1959) for an account of his journey, Korn (2015) for a description of Gershevitch’s materials and Korn (2017: 81, 2021b: 301–302) for work on the data.

5 Notes on word order in Bashkardi

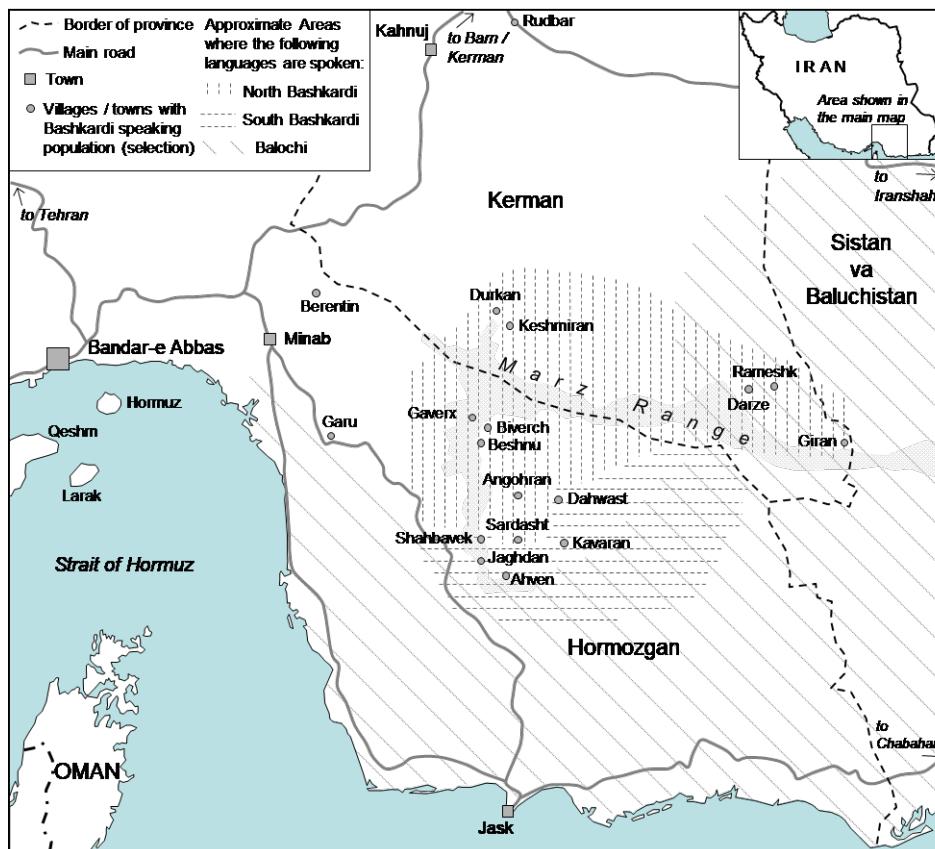


Figure 1: Location of Bashkardi varieties with locations mentioned in Gershevitch's materials

('to'), but are mostly unmarked, i.e. all elements marking syntactic relations mentioned in Section 2.1 are employed only sporadically.

Bashkardi is a heavily pro-drop language, which reduces potential examples of pronominal arguments as well as of other arguments that speakers can retrieve from the context.

In addition to the pronominal clitics, Bashkardi shows a number of other items which are consistently realized as enclitic to the preceding word, viz. the directional clitic (Section 2.1.3), the marker of specificity (Section 2.1.2), the possessor clitic (Section 2.1.1), the forms of the copula, the subordinator *ke* (see Section 2.3) and the coordinating connective *o* 'and'.³

²*ke* and *o* are noted as independent words and without '=' in the examples below; the same applies to the forms of the copula unless they are part of a verb form.

Agnes Korn

There are important differences between North and South Bashkardi (cf. Section 1.1), which include the use of TAM markers as well as the forms of the pronominal clitics and the verbal endings. Furthermore, there is a certain amount of variation also within each dialect group, and among speakers individually.

2 Word order profile⁴

2.1 Noun phrases and adpositional phrases

Bashkardi noun phrases and adpositional phrases are head-initial (right-branching) as they are in Persian, but there are also left-branching patterns (which is the dominant pattern in Balochi). Demonstratives and numerals precede the noun.

2.1.1 Adjectives and possessors⁵

In general, adjectives and possessors follow the head noun and are linked to it by means of a clitic called “ezâfe” (=i and variants, EZ), which is also used for arguments of complex predicates (see Section 2.2).

Examples for the general pattern of an adjective being linked to its head noun by the ezâfe include (4) and (13a); an example without ezâfe is (11).

Some adjectives are preposed, cf. *ajab* in (1) and *heil=o* in (3a) and (3b) – surely copied from Persian, where *ajab* and *xeili* are preposed as well.

- (1) North Bashkardi (I:59)

ajab nöuk ei mō hast=ī
amazing grandson to I exists=PC.3SG
'What an amazing grandson I have!'

The general pattern of a **possessor** being linked to the possessum by ezâfe is shown in *mahala=i* PN ‘X’s place’ in (16d) and *čürak-e šēr* in (14). No ezâfe is required when the possessum is a body part, or when a pronoun of the 1st or 2nd person (4, 8b) or the reflexive pronoun is the possessor, although the ezâfe may be used here as well (13a, 17b).

There is also a (rare) head-final pattern (looking like a Balochi noun phrase), with or without the possessor clitic (=ī, poss), (2).

⁴All examples in what follows are from Korn & Gershevitch (2023a,b), specifying North / South Bashkardi as well as the text and sentence number in <https://multicast.aspra.uni-bamberg.de/resources/wowa/#corpora>. Further examples can be found in the works mentioned in Section 1.2.

⁵See Korn (2017: 88–92).

5 Notes on word order in Bashkardi

- (2) North Bashkardi (H:88, 103, 118, 134)

tūlag-a=ī *sīr=ā*
 jackal-PL=POSS wedding=DIR
 '[I will go] to the jackals' wedding.'

Pronominal clitics are frequently used for the possessor (6a, 7b, 10c, 19).

They are also used for the possessor in the *mihi est* construction (the Bashkardi pattern expressing 'have', see Section 2.4.4), also in addition to a noun phrase (10d) or prepositional phrase (1) expressing the possessor. In most cases, 'exists' occupies the clause-final position (3a, 10b, 12a), but it can also be fronted (3b, 10b).

- (3) South Bashkardi (C:31f.)

- a. [Kadxodā:] *heil=o* *būv=et* *heš*
 many=SPC date_palm=PC.2SG exists
 'Do you have many palm trees? –
- b. *heš=om* *haštād ben* *bū*
 exists=PC.1SG eighty trunk⁶ date_palm
 I have eighty palm trees.'

2.1.2 Demonstratives and numerals⁷

Demonstratives precede the head noun without any linker. This is quite frequent, so that demonstratives approach the functions of a definite article (4, 5, 6a, 10c, 10d, 11, 14, 19).

There also is a (rare) suffix *-ak* that seems to express definiteness (4).

- (4) North Bashkardi (H:18)

tūla=i *xwara=ī* *hamī måst-ak-ūn* *mon a-xwar-ed*
 jackal=EZ voracious=SPC DEM1 yoghurt-DEF-PL⁸ I IPFV-eat.PRS-3SG
 'A voracious jackal keeps eating this yoghurt of mine.'

Numerals are followed by the head noun without (16b) or with an intervening numeral classifier (*ben* in (3b), *tå* in (10d)). In addition to the numeral 'one' (10d), singularity may be expressed by the specificity clitic (SPC, etymologically 'one')⁹

⁶*ben* can quite well be considered a numeral classifier here; 'trunk' is meant to render the literal meaning.

⁷See Korn (2017: 84–85).

⁸Certain liquids, dairy products etc. are treated as plural in Bashkardi.

⁹This term follows HEINE, see Korn (2017: 85).

Agnes Korn

=*ī*, =*ē*, SBsh. also =*ō*, which is placed at the end of the NP (4). When introducing a new entity, the NP frequently shows both (9, 10a, 10b, 14) so that ‘one’ is “circumposed”; (5) even shows two instances of the specificity marker.

- (5) North Bashkardi (K:83)

yak=ē *gozer=ē* *hast=e* *hamē mahal*
 one=SPC important=SPC existsCOP.3SG¹⁰ DEM1 place
 ‘There is an important man in this place.’

2.1.3 Adpositions¹¹

Syntactic relations can optionally be clarified by **prepositions**, some of which are clearly borrowed from Persian (*barā* *i* ‘for’ in (16c), *yēr=e* ‘except for’ in (17b), perhaps also *bā* ‘with’ in (11, 13a, 19)). Note the (sporadic) marking of objects with prepositions (see also Section 1.3).

For more precise meanings, nouns may be used as prepositions (relational nouns), e.g. *sar* ‘head; on, above’ or *dah* ‘entrance’ in (16e). Prepositions may also be combined with each other (6b) or with a relational noun.

- (6) South Bashkardi (E:10f.)

a. *ī* *dā=yom* *kāšt=om* *kūš*
 DEM1 hand=PC.1SG¹² draw.PST=PC.1SG knife
 ‘[With] this (= the other) my hand I drew the knife.’

b. *zat=om* *be-rū der=e*
 hit.PST=PC.1SG to-on heart=PC.3SG
 I struck [it] into his [the leopard’s] heart.’

As for **postposed elements**, the (rare) directional clitic¹³ =*ā* / =*a* is appended to the noun, or to the NP (note its position following the pronominal clitic in (7b)). It may occur in combination with a preposition (16e).

¹⁰Cf. the parallel constructions with COP.PST in (10a, 10b, 10d). For copula forms added to a finite verb in Balochi, see Korn & Nourzaei (2019: 651–652).

¹¹See Korn (2017: 86–87).

¹²*y* is the hiatus-bridging element attaching the pronominal clitic =*om*.

¹³This clitic should be distinguished from the “directional clitic” that attaches to verb forms in Gorani and Kurdish, see Chapters 1 and 9 (this volume).

Note also the possessive clitic mentioned in Section 2.11.

2.2 Verbal expressions

Auxiliaries are rare in Bashkardi; TAM categories are expressed by the presence or absence of verbal prefixes, as seen throughout the examples above and below. The perfect system uses the perfect participle followed by the inflected copula, as does the progressive, which is built from the past stem or infinitive.¹⁵

The uninflected element *bååt* ‘it is necessary’ (certainly copied from Persian *bāyad*, but not a transparent verb form in Bashkardi) is occasionally found; it is placed towards the beginning of the clause; the main verb is in the subjunctive (8b).

- (8) North Bashkardi (J:46f)

 - a. *ei eståd=ī go gorg ke*
to master=PC.3SG say.PST wolf SUB
‘To the blacksmith said the wolf:
 - b. *to bååt-ē gap=e pošbår mo be-zan-ī*
you.SG it_is_necessary-2SG talk=EZ support I MOD-hit.PRS-2SG
“You have to speak up for me, (...).”

Complex predicates are frequent, e.g. *på b-* ‘get up’ (7a) and *seråk da-* ‘show’ (7b). The nominal part can take an argument constructed like a possessor (8b), (9), so that it is positioned within the complex predicate.

There is a continuum of combinations of a transitive verb with an indefinite (or generic) direct object to conventionalised complex predicates, which can be

¹⁴ *dehngōn* (cf. Persian *dehqān*, *dehgān*) shows an unetymological *-n-* throughout this text.

¹⁵See Korn (2022a) and Korn & Suleymanov (2017) for the functions of the prefixes, the progressive and the verbal system in general.

Agnes Korn

analysed as single predicative items. For instance, *šekāyat kan-* in (13b) could be analysed as a complex predicate ‘to complain’ or as ‘lodge a complaint’, thus *šekāyat* a direct object. (8b) could show *gap-e pošbår mo* ‘my defense (talk of my support)’ as direct object of *zan-*; alternatively, *pošbår mo* ‘my support’ could be the direct object of the complex predicate *gap zan-* (‘talk-hit’ is used for ‘speak’ also in Balochi, vs. Persian *harf zan-*); or one could consider *gap-e pošbår zan-* as a complex predicate ‘speak up’, in which case *mo* would be the beneficiary.

There is thus a certain amount of subjectivity in the interpretation, which potentially affects the statistics of several categories.

- (9) South Bashkardi (A:41)

hålå to yeu gap=o serák=i yamah adeh-Ø
 now you.SG one talk=SPC showing=EZ we¹⁶ give.PRS¹⁷-IMP.2SG
 ‘Now show us some talk [from the tape recorder]!’

There are also **directional preverbs** such as *or-* in (16e).

In the case of **clause-initial verbs**, it is often unclear whether we are looking at an element postposed to the verb, or at an instance of fronting of the verb. The latter may occur at the beginning of a tale, introducing the tale’s characters (10a, 10b)¹⁸ or at the beginning of a new episode, but also in pragmatic contexts that still need to be established (potential examples include (6b); see also the *mihi est* pattern in Section 2.1.1).

- (10) South Bashkardi (K:1-5)

a. *hast=a ya måldår=ē*
 exists=cop.PST.3SG one rich_man=SPC
 (someone in the background:) Hm. ‘There was a rich man.

b. *ya måldår=ē hast=a hast=ar=ī ya*
 one rich_man=SPC exists=COP.PST.3SG exists=COP.PST.3SG=PC.3SG one
sålål
 shepherd
 There was a rich man, [and] he had a shepherd.

¹⁶As in Persian, the non-verbal element of a complex predicate can take an argument, which is attached by the ezāfe.

¹⁷The PRS stem of ‘give’ is *adeh-* in Gershevitch’s SBsh. data; prefixing the imperfective *a-* yields *ādeh-* (Skjærvø 1989a: 848).

¹⁸See Korn (2020) for features of folk tales in Bashkardi.

5 Notes on word order in Bashkardi

- c. *ī säläl=ī fakīr a*
 this shepherd=PC.3SG poor COP.PST.3SG
 This shepherd of his was poor.
- d. *ī fakīr do tå čuk=ī hast=ī=a*
 DEM1 poor_man two piece child=PC.3SG exists=PC.3SG=COP.PST.3SG
o ya zā
 and one woman
 This poor man had two children, and one wife.'

2.3 Complex sentences

The **subordinator** *ke* introduces any kind of subordinate clause – i.e. relative (11), complement (13a), adverbial – as well as quoted speech (8a). The subordinate generally follows the matrix clause. Owing to its clitic nature (see Section 1.3), *ke* is attached to the first stressed element or to the first multi-word constituent if the subordinate precedes the matrix clause, as in (12a), where it even interrupts the noun phrase ‘as many guns’.

- (11) North Bashkardi (F:24)
hamå best-ōn sorx ke bå åteš sorx en
 DEM2 pebble-PL red SUB with fire red COP.3PL
 ‘those red-hot pebbles, which are red-hot from the fire’

- (12) South Bashkardi (E:33f.)
- a. *har-kader ke tofak=an hat*
 any-extent SUB gun=PC.1PL COP.PST.3SG
 ‘Insofar as we had guns (any amount of guns that we had),
 - b. *doulat=ī a dā-y a-bert-om*
 State=PC.3SG from hand-HI IPFV-carry.PST-1PL
 the State kept taking [them] from our hand.’

- (13) South Bashkardi (D:13f.)
- a. *hål a-xåh-om ke ra-m bå žamiat=e xailī=e*
 now IPFV-want.PRS-1PL SUB go.PRS-1PL with population=EZ very=EZ
xo
 REFL
 ‘Now we want (that) we go with a large group of our [people]

Agnes Korn

- b. *dar bandir-abbås šekåyat=ī kan-om*
 in PN complaint=SPC do.PRS-1PL
 [and] lodge a complaint in Bandar Abbas.'

When *ke* is combined with a nominal (e.g. '[the] time SUB' = 'when'), this **neo-conjunction** (borrowed or calqued on Persian models) is accentuated and introduces the subordinate clause. However, this is rare in the data.

Indeed, **chains of main clauses** are often preferred to overt marking of subordination, as is demonstrated by (10) and (16). These passages also show that Tail-Head-Linkage is frequent. Repeated material often appears in a different word order, e.g. with old information placed in front of the verb (10b, 10c, 16b).

2.4 Word order in main clauses

2.4.1 Generalities

Like other Ir. languages, Bashkardi main clauses with NPs as constituents are for their majority SOV. However, other word orders are not rare, and this in spite of the absence of marking of noun phrases (see Section 1.3). In the data used for this project, Bashkardi shows 30% of non-subject elements in postverbal position. This count includes nouns and pronouns (following the WOWA project's concept, pronominal clitics are not taken into account in the discussion and percentages to follow), with or without adpositional elements, but excludes clauses (e.g. complement clauses, which could likewise be considered as direct objects).

Information structure seems to play an important role for word order, and the status of an element as new or old information may override the SOV pattern and also the preferences of the placement of a particular element mentioned below (see also Sections 2.2 and 2.3).

Many of the phenomena discussed below are also found in other Iranian languages, but references are limited to other chapters in this volume.¹⁹

2.4.2 Direct objects

Overall, 21% of all direct objects are in postverbal position (Table 1). Compared to other Iranian languages in the WOWA sample (cf. Haig et al. 2024 [Chapter 1, this volume]), Bashkardi has the highest frequency of nominal postverbal direct objects.

¹⁹Percentages in the text to follow are rounded, and refer to North and South Bashkardi taken together.

5 Notes on word order in Bashkardi

Table 1: Position of direct objects (n / %)

| | Preverbal | Postverbal | All positions |
|--------------------|-----------|------------|---------------|
| Nominal | 198 (77%) | 58 (23%) | 256 (100%) |
| Pronominal | 30 (94%) | 2 (6%) | 32 (100%) |
| All direct objects | 228 (79%) | 60 (21%) | 288 (100%) |

Nominal direct objects (see also Section 2.2) are predominantly preverbal (4, 7b, 9, 16b, 16e). However, postverbal direct objects such as in (6a) and (14) make up 23%, which is **an important percentage**, even if significantly less than the overall average of 30% mentioned for postverbal non-subject elements in Section 2.4.1.

- (14) North Bashkardi (K:46)

hamē čürak=e šēr zar=ī ya gart=ī
DEM1 kid=EZ lion hit.PST=PC.3SG one roar=SPC
'The lion kid gave a roar.'

Pronouns as direct objects only occur under specific pragmatical conditions, since being expressed by a pronoun would imply that the referents are known, in which situation pro-drop applies (see Section 1.3); this is the case for the knife in (6b), the guns in (12b), the goat kid in (15a) and the talk in (17c). When they do occur, they are nearly always in preverbal position, and indefinite pronouns always so (15a, 17a).

- (15) North Bashkardi (G:29)

- har-čī mon a-g-om: ma-koš-∅,
any-thing I IPFV-say.PRS-1SG PROH-kill.PRS-IMP.2SG
'However much I say: "Don't kill [it] (the goat kid)!";'
- å a-koš-i=e
DEM2 IPFV-kill.PRS-3SG=PC.3SG
he will kill it.'

2.4.3 Targets

Targets, a cover-term for elements indicating the end point of an action or event (see Table 2 and Korn 2022b: 90), occur postverbally in more than 50% of all instances, which is significantly more than the 30% found across all non-subject

Agnes Korn

elements. Pronouns are rarely used in these functions; they do not share the postverbal tendency.²⁰

Table 2: Postverbalness of Targets²¹

| | total n | of which postverbal | of which postverbal | pronouns/ |
|---|---------|---------------------|---------------------|-----------|
| Goals of motion | 102 | 74 (73%) | 2 1 | (50%) |
| Goals of caused motion proper | 25 | 18 (72%) | 3 0 | (0%) |
| ‘put’-expressions | 22 | 8 (36%) | 1 0 | (0%) |
| Recipients | 35 | 21 (60%) | 16 5 | (31%) |
| Beneficiaries and rec-ben ²² | 16 | 6 (38%) | 9 1 | (11%) |
| Addressees | 7 | 2 (29%) | 2 0 | (0%) |
| Final states | 39 | 6 (15%) | 1 0 | (0%) |
| Sum | 246 | 135 (55%) | 34 7 | (21%) |

As for all languages discussed in this volume (cf. Haig et al. 2024 [Chapter 1, this volume]), **Goals of verbs of motion** show the highest postverbal percentage. Preverbal instances are often part of a Tail-Head-Linkage chain (see Section 2.3), as in (16b).

(16) South Bashkardi (A:2–8)

- a. *sabāh a-rra-īn gaverx*
morning IPFV-go.PRS-1SG PN
'In the morning I go to Gaverx.'
- b. *gaverx a-rra-īn čūr xom būr a-kan-īn*
PN IPFV-go.PRS-1SG four date load IPFV-do.PRS-1SG
I go to Gaverx (When I have arrived in Gaverx...), I load four [loads of] dates.

²⁰The non-pronominal instances include nouns and adverbial expressions (e.g. ‘here, to this place’), which are common for Targets.

²¹The n here refers to the total number of the category, e.g.: there are 102 goals of motion in the data, of which 74 (73%) are postverbal; 2 of the 102 instances are pronouns, of which one is postverbal.

²²‘rec-ben’ is a category for items where it is difficult to decide whether they are recipients or beneficiaries.

5 Notes on word order in Bashkardi

- c. *a-p-īn* *ba mahala barā_i amīrī*
 IPFV-come.PRS-1SG to home for PN
 I come [and bring them] home for Amiri.
- d. *az_bād_e a-rra-īn* *mahale=i ahmad=i madī*
 after_that IPFV-go.PRS-1SG home=EZ PN=EZ PN
 Then I go the house of Ahmad Mahdi.
- e. *ahmad=i mādī or-gir-īn* *a-p-īn* *dah gare=a*
 PN=EZ PN up-take.PRS-1SG IPFV-go.PRS-1SG into PN=DIR
 I take Ahmad Mahdi [and] I come to Gaverx.²³,

Targets of expressions meaning ‘put’ (18) pattern like the overall average. They thus differ from **Goals of caused motion** such as ‘bring’, ‘send’, which pattern like Goals of motion (17c).

(17) South Bashkardi (A:47f.)

- a. *to heč a-n-k-en*
 you.SG nothing IPFV-NEG-do.PRS-2SG
 ‘You don’t do anything
- b. *yeir=e gap-an=e yamah a-čīn-e*
 besides talk-PL=EZ we IPFV-collect.PRS-2SG
 but collect our talk,
- c. *o or-gir-e o a-rr-e a-bar-e ba*
 and up-take.PRS-2SG and IPFV-go.PRS-2SG IPFV-carry.PRS-2SG to
tehrūn
 PN
 take [it] and go [and] bring [it] to Tehran.’

(18) North Bashkardi (F:32)

- å wurā dega a-hr-end=eh*
 DEM there again IPFV-put.PRS-3PL=PC.3SG
 ‘Then they put it (the bread) there (aside).’

Recipients are somewhat Goal-like in terms of placement, while **Beneficiaries** pattern like Goals of ‘put’.

Addressees are rare, as they are usually retrievable from the context (see Section 1.3). Where they are expressed (8a), they pattern like the overall average.

²³It is not clear whether *gare-a* refers to Gaverx or to another place.

Agnes Korn

A postverbal example of postverbal **final state** ('turns into a stone / is turned into a stone') is 'snakes' in (19), which is even marked by a preposition, recalling a similar pattern in Kurdish (see Haig 2022). However, this position is rare in the data.

- (19) North Bashkardi (K:129)

hamå mål=ī kolliya büd-e *vå* *mår*
 DEM2 cattle=PC.3SG entirely become.PST-PRF with snake
 '... [and] that cattle of his had all become snakes.'

2.4.4 Other obliques

Non-subject elements other than direct objects and Targets occur mostly preverbally, but all categories do show postverbal instances (Table 3).

Table 3: Postverbalness of other obliques²¹

| | total n | of which postverbal | of which postverbal | | pronouns/ |
|------------------------------|---------|---------------------|---------------------|---|-----------|
| Instrument and Comitative | 12 | 8 (67%) | 2 | 2 | (100%) |
| Location | 16 | 6 (38%) | — | | |
| Predicative location | 13 | 2 (20%) | — | | |
| Predicative | 50 | 5 (10%) | 7 | 0 | (0%) |
| Possessum | 47 | 6 (13%) | 5 | 0 | (0%) |
| Ablative, Cause and Stimulus | 32 | 3 (9%) | 2 | 0 | (0%) |
| Time | 62 | 3 (5%) | — | | |
| other | 49 | 12 (24%) | 2 | 0 | (0%) |
| Sum | 281 | 45 (16%) | 18 | 2 | (11%) |

Instrumentals and comitative expressions are predominantly found following the verb (6a), while the preverbal position also occurs (13a).

Locational expressions are found both preceding (13b) and following the verb (5). Even more strongly preverbal are predicative expressions of location ('X is in the house / on the table') and other predicatives ('X is green / Y is my uncle').

The same applies to ablative-like expressions (12b).

5 Notes on word order in Bashkardi

Patterning similarly are possessed items, which in the WOWA project refers to the X in the *mihi est* pattern ‘to me is/exists X = I have X’ (see Section 2.1.1).²⁴

Temporal adverbials are found in clause-initial position in the vast majority of cases (9, 7a, 13a, 16a, 16d); their placement thus is not so much a question of pre- vs. postverbal.

3 Areal features

As mentioned in Section 2.4.1, Bashkardi shares the basic SOV order and other features with other Iranian languages. Its basically head-initial structure of nominal and adpositional phrases is shared with Persian, which obviously has influenced all other languages spoken in the country (and beyond). In other respects, however, Bashkardi is closer to Balochi, by which it is geographically surrounded (and with which it must surely have been in contact for centuries), for instance in the preservation of (some type) of (post-)ergativity. Bashkardi differs from both Persian and Balochi (but somewhat agrees with late Middle Persian) in the absence of marking of arguments, since the prepositions and postposed elements mentioned in Section 2.1 are used only sporadically to mark the direct or indirect object or the goal of movement.

Some of the features just mentioned are discussed in Korn (2022a), which also suggests the possibility that only (some of) North Bashkardi is of the Persian sub-branch (South West Iranian) to which Bashkardi has been held to belong, while (some of) South Bashkardi could be a Balochi dialect historically (see Section 1.1). In this case, both head-final and head-initial noun phrase structures could be inherited in Bashkardi, contributing to the variation found in the data.

Seeing that word order is rather free in many Iranian languages (including colloquial Persian, but excluding more strictly verb-final standard Persian), I assume the same freedom for their Middle Iranian predecessors. I also think that a tendency towards the postverbal position of Goals of verbs of movement (and maybe some other types of Targets) could be inherited from Middle Iranian.²⁵

There is a rather far-reaching agreement of Bashkardi word order with the South Balochi data investigated in Korn (2022b), while there are also some points of difference. A systematic comparison of the two languages will be the topic of a separate article, which will also discuss the influence of weight, flagging, etc. to the placement of non-subject elements.

²⁴The possessor in the *mihi est* construction could alternatively be interpreted as recipient or beneficiary, which would affect the statistics.

²⁵Cf. Korn (2022b: 122), and see Jügel (2022) for a study of word order in Middle Iranian. See also Nourzaei & Haig 2024 [Chapter 4, Section 6, this volume] for discussion.

Agnes Korn

Abbreviations²⁶

| | | | |
|-------|--|-------|--------------------------------------|
| COP | copula | NP | noun phrase |
| DEF | marker of definiteness (see 2.1.2) | PC | pronominal clitic (see 1.3) |
| DEM | demonstrative pronoun (1: proximal, 2: distal) | PL | plural |
| DIR | directional clitic (see 2.1.3) | PN | name |
| EZ | ezâfe (see 2.1.1) | POSS | possessor clitic (see 2.1.1) |
| HI | hiatus-bridging consonant | PROH | prohibitive prefix |
| IMP | imperative | PRS | present stem |
| IPFV | imperfective prefix | PST | past stem |
| IRR | irrealis prefix (for subjunctive and imperative) | REFL | reflexive pronoun |
| n | number of instances | SBsh. | South Bashkardi |
| NBsh. | North Bashkardi | SG | singular |
| NEG | negation | SPC | marker of specificity (see 2.1.2) |
| | | SUB | subordinator (see 2.3) |
| | | TAM | tense-aspect-mood |

Acknowledgements

I am grateful to Gerardo Barbera, Thomas Jügel and Geoffrey Haig for very useful comments. All percentages mentioned below were kindly calculated by Christian Rammer, who also made the map.

References

- Barbera, Gerardo. 2005. *Lingua e cultura a Minab (Iran sud-orientale). Profilo grammaticale, testi e vocabolario*. Naples: Università degli Studi di Napoli “L’Orientale.” (Doctoral dissertation).
- Barbera, Gerardo. 2020. A Minâbi text and grammatical sketch. In Mauro Maggi & Mohsen Ashtiany (eds.), *A turquoise coronet: Studies in Persian language and literature in honour of Paola Orsatti*, 1–13. Wiesbaden: Reichert.
- Barbera, Gerardo. 2024a. *A fool’s story in a South Bashkardi sub-dialect text (for a festschrift)*.

²⁶See note 5 for the citation of examples.

5 Notes on word order in Bashkardi

- Barbera, Gerardo. 2024b. The cannibal sister: Linguistic annotation of a South Bashkardi folktale. *Folia Orientalia* 60. 145–187. DOI: [10.24425/for.2023.148422](https://doi.org/10.24425/for.2023.148422).
- Gershevitch, Ilya. 1959. Travels in Bashkardia. *Journal of the Central Asian Society* 46. 213–225. DOI: [10.1080/03068375908731669](https://doi.org/10.1080/03068375908731669).
- Haig, Geoffrey. 2022. Post-predicate constituents in Kurdish. In Yaron Matras, Geoffrey Haig & Ergin Öpentin (eds.), *Structural and typological variation in the dialects of Kurdish*, 335–377. Cham: Springer International Publishing. DOI: [10.1007/978-3-030-78837-7_8](https://doi.org/10.1007/978-3-030-78837-7_8).
- Haig, Geoffrey, Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand, Donald Stilo, Laurentia Schreiber & Nils N. Schiborr. 2024. Post-predicate elements in the Western Asian Transition Zone: Data, theory, and methods. In Geoffrey Haig, Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand, Donald Stilo, Laurentia Schreiber & Nils N. Schiborr (eds.), *Post-predicate elements in the Western Asian Transition Zone: A corpus-based approach to areal typology*, 1–49. Berlin: Language Science Press.
- Jügel, Thomas. 2022. Word order variation in Middle Iranic: Persian, Parthian, Bactrian, and Sogdian. In Hiwa Asadpour & Thomas Jügel (eds.), *Word order variation: Semitic, Turkic and Indo-European languages in contact*, 39–62. Berlin: De Gruyter Mouton. DOI: [10.1515/9783110790368-003](https://doi.org/10.1515/9783110790368-003).
- Korn, Agnes. 2015. Voices from far away: Bashkardi material at the Ancient India and Iran Trust. *INDIRAN: Newsletter of the Ancient India and Iran Trust* 10. 4–5. <https://indiairantrust.files.wordpress.com/2015/07/indiran10forwebsite.pdf>.
- Korn, Agnes. 2017. Notes on the nominal system of Bashkardi. *Transactions of the Philological Society* 115. 79–97. DOI: [10.1111/1467-968X.12087](https://doi.org/10.1111/1467-968X.12087).
- Korn, Agnes. 2020. Once upon a time: Telling a story in Bashkardi. *INDIRAN: Newsletter of the Ancient India and Iran Trust* 14. 8–9. <https://www.indiran.org/wp-content/uploads/2020/11/INDIRAN-14-web-version.pdf>.
- Korn, Agnes. 2021a. A Bashkardi version of the Chain Tale ATU 2034: The Jackal Retrieves His Tail / Цепочная сказка ATU 2034: Версия башкарди «шакал вновь обретает свой хвост» 2021/1. *Rodnoj jazyk / Родной язык* 1. 368–383. DOI: [10.37892/2313-5816-2021-1-368-383](https://doi.org/10.37892/2313-5816-2021-1-368-383).
- Korn, Agnes. 2021b. Greeting a guest in Bashkardi. *Journal of Turkish Studies / Türkük Bilgisi Araştırmaları* I (Special edition). Marcel Erdal Armağan / Marcel Erdal's Festschrift, 301–323.
- Korn, Agnes. 2022a. Areal features in the languages of South Iran: Focus on Balochi and Baskhardi. Paper presented at the Iranian Languages and Linguistics Lecture Series, Toronto. <https://halshs.archives-ouvertes.fr/halshs-03622909>.

Agnes Korn

- Korn, Agnes. 2022b. Targets and other post-verbal arguments in Southern Balochi: A multidimensional cline. In Hiwa Asadpour & Thomas Jügel (eds.), *Word order variation – Semitic, Turkic and Indo-European languages in contact*, 89–128. Berlin: De Gruyter Mouton. DOI: [10.1515/9783110790368-005](https://doi.org/10.1515/9783110790368-005).
- Korn, Agnes & Ilya Gershevitch. 2023a. Bashkardi (Northern): Recordings by Ilya Gershevitch (1914–2001), transcription and analysis by Agnes Korn. In Geoffrey Haig, Donald Stilo, Mahîr C. Doğan & Nils N. Schiborr (eds.), *WOWA – Word Order in Western Asia: A spoken-language-based corpus for investigating areal effects in word order variation*, Updated 10 July 2024. Bamberg: University of Bamberg. multicast.aspra.uni-bamberg.de/resources/wowa/.
- Korn, Agnes & Ilya Gershevitch. 2023b. Bashkardi (Southern): Recordings by Ilya Gershevitch (1914–2001), transcription and analysis by Agnes Korn. In Geoffrey Haig, Donald Stilo, Mahîr C. Doğan & Nils N. Schiborr (eds.), *WOWA – Word Order in Western Asia: A spoken-language-based corpus for investigating areal effects in word order variation*, Updated 10 July 2024. Bamberg: University of Bamberg. multicast.aspra.uni-bamberg.de/resources/wowa/.
- Korn, Agnes & Maryam Nourzaei. 2019. Notes on the speech of the Afro-Baloch of the southern coast of Iran. *Journal of the Royal Asiatic Society* 29. 623–657.
- Korn, Agnes & Murad Suleymanov. 2017. Contact-induced progressives in Iranian languages: A typological comparison of Caucasian Tat and Bashkardi. In Timur Maisak et al. (eds.), *Historical linguistics of the caucasus, apr 2017, paris, france*, 98–102. Historical Linguistics of the Caucasus: Book of abstracts. Paris: Daghestanian Scientific Centre of the Russian Academy of Sciences, Institute for language, literature & art. <https://hal.archives-ouvertes.fr/hal-01516383>.
- Nourzaei, Maryam & Geoffrey Haig. 2024. Balochi: A cross-dialect investigation of post-verbal elements. In Geoffrey Haig, Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand, Donald Stilo, Laurentia Schreiber & Nils N. Schiborr (eds.), *Post-predicate elements in the Western Asian Transition Zone: A corpus-based approach to areal typology*, 111–143. Berlin: Language Science Press.
- Pelevin, Mikhail. 2010. Materials on the Bandari dialect. *Iran and the Caucasus* 14. 57–78. DOI: [10.1163/157338410X12743419189388](https://doi.org/10.1163/157338410X12743419189388).
- Seddiqi Nejad, Bakhtiar. 2010. *Bar-resī-ye tousīfī-ye sāxt-vāže-ye gūyeš-e bašākardī: A descriptive study of Bashakardi dialect morphology*. Zahedan: University of Sīstān-va Balūčestān 1389 h.š. (MA thesis).
- Skjærvø, Prods O. 1989a. Baškardi. In *Encyclopædia Iranica*, vol. III, 846–850. London.
- Skjærvø, Prods O. 1989b. Languages of Southeast Iran: Lārestānī, Kumzārī, Baškardī. In Rüdiger Schmitt (ed.), *Compendium linguarum iranicarum*, 363–369. Wiesbaden: Reichert.

5 *Notes on word order in Bashkardi*

Voskanian, Vardan & Vahe Boyajian-Sureniants. 2007. Lexical gleanings from Bašākard. *Iran and the Caucasus* 11. 121–125. DOI: [10.1163/157338407X224950](https://doi.org/10.1163/157338407X224950).

Chapter 6

Kholosi

Maryam Nourzaei^a

^aUppsala University

This chapter studies the word order configuration of Kholosi, an Indo-Aryan outlier spoken in the Southwest of Iran. Kholosi shows considerable influence of Persian and other western Iranian languages, including phonology and morphology, but also in syntax: It exhibits regular OV, but predominantly post-posed goals in a manner that matches that of the neighbouring Iranian languages. Kholosi appears to have converged more closely with Iranian than other Indo-Aryan outliers in Iran have (e.g. Jadgali). The Kholosi case illustrates how languages that have shifted comparatively recently into the Western Asian Transition Zone can adapt their syntax to match the profile of neighbouring languages.

1 Introduction

Although Kholosi is spoken in Iran, it belongs to the Indo-Aryan branch of Indo-European, and is thus separated from the core location of its closest relatives by hundreds of kilometres. This chapter provides the first available analysis of word order in Kholosi, and explores the respective roles of inheritance and contact in shaping its syntax. Kholosi is predominantly verb final, but exhibits mixed adpositional typology, with age-graded variability: younger speakers mix Iranian prepositions and Indo-Aryan postpositions, while the older speakers' produce only postpositions. Unlike its Indo-Aryan relatives (Dahl & Stronski 2016), most of which exhibit some form of split ergativity, Kholosi shows accusative alignment throughout, possibly through the influence of Persian and other contact languages lacking ergativity. The data for the present study are extracted from two tales which are available in the WOWA corpus (see full details in Nourzaei 2022a), and were supplemented by texts from my on-going analysis.

Maryam Nourzaei

Kholosi is spoken mainly in two villages, Kholos and Gotav, in Hormozgan province, Iran (see Figure 1). Additional small speech communities are found in other regions such as Bastak, Jenah, Bandar Abbas, Bandar Lenge and Bandar Khamir. In addition, Kholosi is also spoken by Kholosi people living outside of Iran for example in Bahrein, Doha, Dubai, and Abu Dhabi. The total population of the Kholosi speakers is uncertain. However, based on recent field studies by myself, the number of speakers is estimated as at least 2,300.



Figure 1: Location of Kholosi Speakers (from Nourzaei 2023)

There is another Indo-Aryan language spoken in Iran, Jadgali, located mainly in Chabahar, Dashtiyari, and Polan regions in Sistan and Balochistan province (Barjasteh Delforoz 2008). The distance between the Kholosi community to the Jadgali communities is more than 600 km. The Kholosi and Jadgali speakers have not traditionally had any contact and only became acquainted with each other recently (see Nourzaei 2023). The location of the Jadgali speech communities is indicated in Figure 2.

The question of how the Kholosi reached their current location, and what their historical connection to the Jadgali speech community may have been, remains

controversial. There are four different accounts regarding their origin: (a) they directly moved to their present homeland from India (see Anonby & Hassan 2016); (b) they moved here via Dashtiyari in Balochistan; (c) they migrated to their present homeland from Sindh during the Safavid dynasty; or (d) they migrated from the Makoran coast as a separate group, distinct from the Jagdal.



Figure 2: Location of Kholosi and Jagdali speakers (taken from Nourzaei 2023)

The area where Kholosi is spoken is linguistically highly diverse, and Kholosi speakers are multilingual. Contact languages include two different language families: Indo-European (Iranian) and Semitic. Kholosi speakers in Iran are in direct contact with Bastaki, Larestāni (both West Iranian) as local vernaculars, and Persian as the official language of Iran via TV, Radio, and education, and Arabic as a liturgical language via the Koran and Islamic literature. Likewise, Kholosi speakers outside of Iran are in contact with Arabic as an official language (see also Anonby & Hassan 2016: 2). In addition, Kholosi would have been in contact with other languages during the migration of the Kholosi speakers to their current location, but the identity of these languages has not been established with any certainty.

Kholosi is used as the first language in the Kholosi community. Parents speak Kholosi with their children to a large extent. In Gotav village, however, there is a tendency for the Kholosi residents to use Bastaki among themselves and with their children. In Kholos, many parents speak with their children in Persian to prepare them for school. Outside these two villages, e.g., Buchir, it is

Maryam Nourzaei

observed that Kholosi speakers have lost their language and have switched to Bastaki/Lārestāni (known as Achomi, Khodemuni), which are the vernacular languages in these regions. In Kholosi families with an exogamic marriage pattern, the Kholosi parents do not use Kholosi as their first language. Instead, the common language between parents and children at home is Bastaki, Lārestāni, or even Persian. Among Kholosi speakers living abroad, a tendency to use Arabic at home is reported. Note that some of the Kholosi speakers switched to Arabic.

Kholosi is not a written language, nor does it have an established writing system. Instead, speakers use standard Persian when texting each other via cell phone or writing letters. There are also no TV or radio programmes in Kholosi. The language of teaching is Persian; however, if the teacher is a Kholosi speaker, Kholosi can be used in the classroom. For religious instruction, Arabic and Persian are used. In the past, Kholosi served as a language of religious instruction in Islamic schools; however today, only Persian is used. Their priests (Mullah) use Persian for their sermons after Friday and Ids (festival) prayers.

1.1 Previous studies

Kholosi is an under-documented language (see Nourzaei 2022a). The first paper (a questionnaire-based investigation) on Kholosi was published by Anonby & Hassan (2016), which confirmed that Kholosi is an Indo-Aryan language. In addition, Anonby et al. (2018) published a short paper in Encyclopædia Iranica. The first Kholosi text to be transcribed, glossed and translated into English in FLEX has been published by myself, and includes a sociolinguistic study of Kholosi Nourzaei (2023). I have also written a grammar sketch (Nourzaei in press[a]), and an outline of the Kholosi nominal and pronominal system is under review. Arora & Etebari (2021), Nourzaei (in press[b]) published online a list of Kholosi lexical items, based on English words presented to one speaker via the medium of Persian translation and through an online messenger service. The present study is the first contribution to the word order in Kholosi, with special focus on post-predicate elements.

1.2 Data and methodology

The background analysis for this paper is based on the ongoing documentation described above, while the quantitative data stems from two tales entitled “Untidy fox,” recorded from a 32-year-old female speaker from Kholos in 2020, and “Prophet Musa,” recorded from a male speaker from Kholos in 2017 and available in the WOWA database (Nourzaei 2022b). I have also included data from

a growing corpus of Kholosi narrative speech including folktales, biographical tales, and procedural texts spoken by one male and two female Kholosi speakers from Kholos and Gotav. The speakers have different social backgrounds and are between 32 and 82 years of age. All speakers are fluent in Persian and vernacular languages such as Bastaki and Lārestāni, and can read Arabic very well. One of the female speakers is an Arabic teacher at an Islamic school in Kholos, and the male speakers is fluent in Arabic. The texts were recorded in WAV and MP3 format. They were then imported into ELAN software,¹ transcribed phonemically, and double-checked by the linguistic consultants. After that, a morpheme-by-morpheme glossing was carried out using FLEX software.² Finally, a free clause-by-clause translation of the texts was produced.³

1.3 Word order in Indo-Aryan

Like the Iranian languages, the Indo-Aryan languages show an OV order in the clause. Noun phrases across all of IA are left-branching (Modifier + N) *Masica* (1991: 370). Examples from Sindhi, one of Kholosi's presumably closest Indo-Aryan relatives, illustrate this feature: *vada vātō* 'big mouth'; *sāfu dile* 'pure heart'; *čau darō* 'four doors' and *ghara jō dhaṇī* 'house-of the master' (i.e. the master of the house) *Trumpp* (1872: 88, 119). *Masica* (1991: 218) states that across Indo-Aryan, primarily nouns, pronouns, adjectives, and in some languages, also certain numerals and adverbs may inflect for gender, number, case, and definiteness. While case is found in all IA languages, gender is not universal, and a grammatical marker for definiteness characterizes only certain languages. Case, number and gender are noted for Sindhi *Trumpp* (1872: 119, 131), but reliable information on definiteness is not available. *Masica* (1991: 373) mentions that for all VP arguments e.g., the direct and indirect objects, goals and source of Motion, all occur to the left of the main verb stem (except in aberrant Kashmiri). The following examples from Gujarati and Sinhalese demonstrate preverbal goal and direct object in turn, glosses added.

- (1) Gujarati (*Masica* 1991: 352)

māre/mane gher javu che
1SG.OBL home to go to be.3SG
'I have to go home.'

¹<https://tla.mpi.nl/tools/tla-tools/elan/>

²<http://fieldwork.sil.org/>

³Both the texts and sound files can be found online, see *Nourzaei* (2022b).

Maryam Nourzaei

- (2) Sinhalese (Masica 1991: 333)

mama baṭ kan-avā
1SG rice eat.PRS-1SG
'I eat rice.'

We are unaware of any corpus-based investigation of post-posed elements in Indo-Aryan that might assist in reconstructing the ancestor word order of Kholosi. Preliminary consideration of available material, such as Liljegren (2016) on Palula (Indo-Aryan, Dardic) indicate a dominant head-final VP, and in the experimental investigation of Hindi word order by Patil et al. (2008), only verb-final variants are considered. In the absence of evidence to the contrary, I will therefore assume that the Indo-Aryan relatives of Kholosi are consistently verb-final, from which we can provisionally infer that the ancestor language of Kholosi was likewise verb-final.

2 Some elements of Kholosi grammar

2.1 Alignment

Some basics are needed as background information for the discussion which follows. Kholosi exhibits accusative alignment with all verbal categories, as in Persian. The subject is canonically in the nominative case and the object in the oblique case. The verb agrees with the subject both in number and person. Note that in the past domain, transitive and intransitive verbs have different sets of endings, which presumably reflects an earlier ergative alignment in Kholosi. The following examples present accusative alignment for transitive and intransitive verbs in the present (3-4) and past (5-6) domains.

- (3) Kholosi (Nourzaei 2022b, B, 0234)

sandūg=e čūb-ī deres ker-aw
box=INDV wood-ADJV complete do.PRS-3SG
'He makes a wooden box.'

- (4) Kholosi (Nourzaei 2022b, B, 0160)

yak hāro=e denyā t=ej-aw
one boy=INDV world to=come.PRS-3SG
'A boy will be born (lit. comes to the world).'

- (5) Kholosi (Nourzaei 2022b, A, 0019)
hoko roz robā šamšer=es pale pord-ū
 one day fox sword=PC.3SG prev search.PST-3SG
 'One day, the fox, the fox searched for his sword.'
- (6) Kholosi (Nourzaei 2022b, A, 0005)
robā nōk-ō dar he sere mā vad-ō t^ho
 fox.M small-M in prox house in big-M become.PST.3SG
 'The small fox grew up in this house.'

2.2 Morphological case system

Kholosi shows three morphological cases: Direct (unmarked), oblique *=ke*, and genitive *=jō/jī* cases.⁴ The genitive case is partially replaced with Iranic Ezafe construction (see for more details Nourzaei forthcoming, and under review). Kholosi has Differential Object Marking, though the exact nature of the triggering factors has not yet been established. Indefinite and inanimate objects such as 'wooden box' in (3) are unmarked for case, while other objects can be marked with *=ke*, as in (25).

2.3 Person marking clitics

Similar to Iranic spoken in this region e.g., Koroshi, Kholosi has a full set of person-marking clitics, which have different functions, e.g., possession, direct and indirect object markings. The person-marking clitics in Kholosi are presented in Table 1. The person-marking clitics attach to various hosts: nouns, *kolāh=ās* 'his hat,' adverbs, *roz=e baad=os* 'its next day,' postposition, *ag=es* 'to him,' relational nouns, *ak=es* 'his front,' verbs, *'čai=ves* 'says to him'. Note, some of these forms are copied from Iranic, such as 2nd person *=ū* and 3rd person *=es/eš*.

2.4 Morphological gender marker

In other respects, Kholosi differs from Iranic. This includes a grammatical gender distinction in some verb endings - in particular the 1st, 2nd and 3rd persons singular - numbers, and adjectives (preferably Indo-Aryan), comparative suffix *-r*,

⁴It is currently unclear whether these 'case markers' should be considered to be some form of particle (i.e. postpositions), or phrasal affix, or clitic. They are provisionally treated here as clitics.

Maryam Nourzaei

Table 1: Person-marking clitics in Kholosi

| | | |
|-----|-----|------------------|
| sg. | 1st | =oe/=e/oy/=i/yae |
| | 2nd | =o/u/av/ao/ |
| | 3rd | =as/yas/os/es/es |
| pl. | 1st | =om=am=mam/em |
| | 2nd | =om=am |
| | 3rd | =an/on/en |

imperfective suffix *-d*, and genitive suffix *j*, which distinguish masculine and feminine gender. Masculine adjectives are marked with (*o/o*) and feminine adjectives with (*i*). In (7), *-o* on the adjective *gahr* ‘red’ agrees with the river Nile, which is masculine. Gender agreement can be within the NP, as in (8), or between subject and predicate, as in (7); the details remain to be elucidated.

- (7) Kholosi (Nourzaei 2022b, B, 0542)

rud=e nil gahr-o t^h=u
 river=EZ Nile.M red-M become.PST=COP.PRS.3SG
 ‘The river Nile turned red.’

Similarly, in (8), *-i* on the adjective *kalt* ‘big’ agrees with ‘dragon’, which is feminine.

- (8) Kholosi (UP)

aždehā=ye kalt-i
 dragon.F=EZ big-F
 ‘a big dragon’

Gender is also marked directly on some nouns, with phonologically comparable suffixes to those outlined above: *nono* ‘grandfather’ and *noni* ‘grandmother’; *cörkō* ‘boy’ and *cörkī* ‘girl’; *harrō* ‘boy’ and *herrī* ‘girl’.

3 Word order in the NP and the clause

3.1 Adjective/noun

In the noun phrase, Kholosi has adopted Persian syntactic features. For example, some adjectives may follow the noun and be linked to via the ‘ezafe,’ as in (9) or without it, as in (10).

- (9) Kholosi (Nourzaei 2022b, A, 0044)

moškel=e vad-o
problem=EZ big-M
'a big problem'

- (10) Kholosi (Nourzaei 2022b, A, 0005)

rōbā nōk-ō
fox small-M
'the small fox'

3.2 Possessor/possessed

Kholosi also follows the general Persian pattern in that the possessed precedes possessor, either with an intervening 'ezafe' (EZ), as in (11), or without, as in (12). Note the use of the genitive marker on the possessor in (12).

- (11) Kholosi (UP)

laškar=e ferawn
army=EZ pharaoh
'Pharaoh's army'

- (12) Kholosi (Nourzaei 2022b, A, 0148)

māv rūbāh kočūlū=jo
mother fox small=GEN.M
'mother of small fox'

However, the data demonstrate some variation, and the possessor can also precede the possessed, as (13), which also illustrates the expected Indo-Aryan genitive marking of the possessor.

- (13) Kholosi (Nourzaei 2022b, B, 0266)

hazrat mūsā=jī dodā
prophet Musa=GEN.F sister
'the sister of the prophet Musa'

Possession and similar relations have also been attested with juxtaposition, as *māre šahr* 'people of the city' which have no marking of possession in (14).

- (14) Kholosi (Nourzaei 2022b, B, 0549)

tamām=e sāher-ēn=ke māre šahr da?vat dī-yaw
all=EZ magician-PL=OBL people city invite give.PRS-3SG
'He invites all the magicians [and] people of the city.'

Maryam Nourzaei

3.3 Demonstrative/noun

Demonstrative pronouns precede the head nouns without any linker.

- (15) a. Kholosi (Nourzaei 2022b, A, 0005)

he sere

PROX house

‘this house’

- b. Kholosi (UP)

ho motor

DIST car

‘that car’

3.4 Numeral/noun

In Kholosi, numerals precede head nouns. The head nouns show number and gender agreement with only Indo-Aryan numerals, as in the following examples.

- (16) a. Kholosi (Nourzaei 2022b, B, 0160)

hēk-ō hār-ō

one-M boy-M

‘a boy’

- b. Kholosi

bahr-ā hēr-ā

two-M boy-M.PL

‘two boys’

- (17) a. Kholosi (UP)

hīk-ī čōrk-ī

one-F girl-F

‘a girl’

- b. Kholosi (UP)

bahr-ī čōrk-ī-ū

two-F girl-F-PL

‘two girls’

3.5 Adpositions

Kholosi has a mixed typology with respect to adpositions, with prepositions, postpositions, and combinations of the two. The most widely attested prepositions are obvious borrowings from Iranic, while postpositions are Indo-Aryan.

(18) shows a combination of **Iranic** preposition and an Indo-Aryan postposition and (19) just Indo-Aryan postposition.

- (18) Kholosi (Nourzaei 2022b, A, 0032)

az mān=ās tāv soāl ka-i
from mother=PC.3SG from question do.PST-3SG
'he asked of his mother'

- (19) Kholosi (Nourzaei 2022b, A, 0034)

mov=ās gen=ās mā pēr-i
mother=PC.3SG room=PC.3SG in look.PST-3SG
'His mother looked inside his room.'

There is a tendency to use the Iranic preposition *dāxel* as a postposition in Kholosi, with the same meaning, as in (20)

- (20) Kholosi (UP)

ham=e atte dāxel māyexamīr kar-e
EMPH=PROX dough inside yeast do.PRS-2SG
'You add yeast to (lit. in) this dough.'

3.6 Auxiliary/main verb

Independent auxiliaries expressing tense, aspect, mood, or voice, are not attested in the present data; TAM categories are expressed by suffixes on the verb. There are no TAM prefixes that would parallel the widely-attested aspectual and modal prefixes of the Iranic system (Persian *mi-* and *be-*, for example). However, modal verbs such as 'want' precede the main verbs, as in Iranic (32), and this could well be considered a result of contact influence, in line with the claim that clause (or predicate) combining is a favoured domain for contact influence (Haig 2001).

3.7 Complement clause/matrix verb

The subordinators *jō* and *ke* 'that' introduce various subordinate clauses, including relative, complement and adverbial - as well as quoted speech. The particle *ke* is an Iranic borrowing. Similarly, to Persian, the complement clause follows the matrix verb in Kholosi, and complementizers generally occur in the initial position within the complement clause. In these respects, Kholosi entirely matches Persian and other West Iranian languages.

Maryam Nourzaei

- (21) Kholosi (Nourzaei 2022b, B, 0457)
 $\check{c}i\text{-}ya \quad jō \quad hat=\bar{i} \quad mā lat=e$
 say.PRS-3SG CMP hand=PC.1SG in stick=COP.PRS.3SG
 'He says, "There is a stick in my hand"'
- (22) Kholosi (Nourzaei 2022b, B, 0247)
 $pesa\text{-}vān \quad jō \quad bale yak sandūg=e \quad hat$
 see.PST-3PL CMP yes one box=INDV COP.PRS.3SG
 'They saw that, yes, there is a box [on the water].'

3.8 Light verb complements

Kholosi follows Iranic e.g., Persian, pattern with the light verb complements of certain types of complex predicates preceding the light verb. The attested light verbs are 'become,' 'come,' 'do,' and 'give' as in examples (23) and (24).

- (23) Kholosi (Nourzaei 2022b, A, 0166)
 $ferawn \quad pejal \quad tāv \quad bīdār \quad t^{hī}\text{-}yaw$
 pharaoh sleep from awake become.PRS-3SG
 'The Pharaoh gets up (lit. wakes up from sleep).'

4 VP constituents in the Kholosi WOWA data

In this section we exemplify the main combinations of non-subject constituents and verb, based on the quantitative analysis of the WOWA Kholosi data set (Nourzaei 2022b). An overview of the findings is presented in Table 2 below. Kholosi makes extensive use of pro-drop in different syntactic functions, so pronominal arguments are infrequent in the data. In line with general practice in the WOWA framework (see Haig et al. 2024 [Chapter 1, this volume]), we will not consider the position of subjects.

4.1 Direct objects

In Kholosi, generally nominal direct objects occur in pre-verbal position, as in following example. They may be separated from the verb by other constituents, as in (24), but are only very rarely post-posed after the verb.

- (24) Kholosi (Nourzaei 2022b, A, 0139)

šamšīr=os o=te āvīzān ker-a-va
 sword=PC.3SG there=to hang do.PRS-3SG-SBJV
 'He should hang his sword in the other direction.'

In the Kholosi data used for this project, only 2% of all direct objects are in postverbal position, which makes it even lower than obtained for most Iranian languages, which range between 3–10%. This may be a reflex of the Indo-Aryan origins, but the differences are certainly not great.

Free pronouns as direct objects are rare in Kholosi (14 examples), of which all are pre-verbal, as in (25). Direct objects (and other objects) may also be expressed through a clitic pronoun on the verb, which then follows the verb, but as it is part of the same phonological word as the verb, these are not counted as 'post-verbal' in line with standard practice for WOWA. An example of a clitic object is provided in (26).

- (25) Kholosi (UP)

meskīn=e golī p^hepī=yāe mo=ke vad-o ka-ī
 poor=EZ goli aunt=PC.1SG 1SG=OBL big-M do.PST-3SG
 'My poor aunt, Goli, raised me.'

- (26) Kholosi (Nourzaei 2022b, B, 305)

ferawn konjān-do=sū čembī dīv=es-ī-ya
 pharaoh want.PST-IPFV=COP.PST.3SG kiss give.PRS=PC.3SG-3SG-SBJV
 'Like this pharaoh was about to kiss him.'

4.2 Copula complements

Copulas are generally clitics which cliticize to the copular complement, and are thus generally clause-final, as in (27–28). This is in line with a near-universal structure for copular constructions across the Western Asian Transition Zone, though with exceptions at the western periphery (see Haig & Khan 2019, Haig et al. 2024 [Chapter 1, this volume], Mohammadirad 2024 [Chapter 9, this volume]).

- (27) Kholosi (UP)

pon=āe=jī mīrī=ya
 father=PC.1SG=GEN wife=COP.PRS.3SG
 'She is my father's wife.'

Maryam Nourzaei

- (28) Kholosi (UP)

čekada zařfā=e čang-ī=ū
very much woman=INDV kind-F=COP.PST.3SG
'She was a very kind woman.'

Note that in the present data, one example of a postposed complement of copular verb is attested (29):

- (29) Kholosi (Nourzaei 2022b, B, 0230)

hat jīnd-o
COP.PRS.3SG alive-M
'He is alive.'

4.3 Goal/verb

In Kholosi the largest number of post-verbal elements are goals of caused motion, such as 'throw' 'put', and 'hit' (see Table 2) as in the following examples:

- (30) Kholosi (Nourzaei 2022b, B, 0193)

hazrat=e mūsā=ī māv petr=es=ke lār-aw tanūr mā
prophet=EZ musa=GEN mother boy=PC.3SG=OBL throw.PRS-3SG tanur in
'The Prophet Musa's mother throws her son into the Tanur.'

- (31) Kholosi (UP)

kolan lī-yāv=es fer mā
you_know put.PRS-1PL=PC.3SG oven in
'You know, we put it into the oven.'

Similarly, goals of simple motion verbs such as 'go,' 'come,' 'fall,' are often post-verbal (see Table 2).

- (32) Kholosi (Nourzaei 2022b, A, 0024)

ho konjān-do=sū ven-a-va rafik-en=des akaya
DIST want.PST-IPFV=COP.PST.3SG go.PRS-3SG-SBJV friend-PL=PC.3SG front
'He wanted to go to his friends.'

- (33) Kholosi (Nourzaei 2022b, B, 0366)

eč-aw yek jā=e
come.PRS-3SG one place=INDV
'He comes to a certain place.'

4.4 Recipient/verb

Similarly to goals, the majority of recipients also follows the verb, as in (34–35).

- (34) Kholosi (Nourzaei 2022b, B, 0394)
thio ponj-ās dī-aw payambar mūsā=ke
 daughter REFL.GEN=PC.3SG give.PRS-3SG prophet Musa=OBL
 'He gives his daughter to the prophet Musa.'
- (35) Kholosi (Nourzaei 2022b, B, 0205)
xebar dī-yen hazrat=e mūsā-ī māo=ke
 news do.PRS-3PL prophet=EZ Musa=GEN mother=OBL
 'They informed the Prophet Musa's mother.'

4.5 Addressee/verb

Nominal addressees in Kholosi precede the verb as in (36), but addressees expressed by a person marking clitic attach directly to the verb as in (37), or attach to a postposition as in (38).

- (36) Kholosi (UP)
am=te xodā=ke ča-yen
 this=at God=OBL say.PRS-3PL
 'At this point they said to God...'
- (37) Kholosi (Nourzaei 2022b, B, 0520)
payāmbar hazrat=e mūsā xayle kām-hā vet-ī=yās
 prophet prophet=EZ Musa very thing-PL say.PST-3SG=PC.3SG
 'The Prophet Musa said to him a lot of things.'
- (38) Kholosi (Nourzaei 2022b, B, 0172)
tā yek nafar manī=os čī-yaw ag=es
 till one person meaning=PC.3SG say.PRS-3SG to=PC.3SG
 'Till a person says its meaning to him.'

4.6 Complements of 'become'

In Kholosi complements of 'become' are preverbal, as in the following examples.

Maryam Nourzaei

4.7 Place constituents and place constituents of a copular verb

Locative constituents of a copular verb i.e., ('X is in the garden) (41) precede the predicate.

- (41) Kholosi (daily conversation)
Hasan dar sere mā=e
 hasan in home in=COP.PRS.3SG
 'Hasan is at home.'

4.8 Other obliques

Most other obliques such as instruments, ablatives, comitatives, and beneficiaries appear before the verb; see the figures for ‘other’ in Table 2 below. The following examples demonstrate various other semantic relations.

- (42) Kholosi (Nourzaei 2022b, A, 0003)
hok-ō xānavāda hīnkī sānda zendegī kar-d=ayaū
one-M family each other life do.PRS-IPFV=COP.PRS.3PL
'A family used to live with together.'

- (43) Kholosi (Nourzaei 2022b, A, 0065)
xers bā šamšīr=os be havā=te be zarba
bear with sword=PC.3SG with air=at with beat
čīn-d=ū
beat.PRS-IPFV=COP.PST.3SG
'The bear was striking with his sword into the air'

- (44) Kholosi (Nourzaei 2022b, B, 0162)
yak mangāl=e az ǵawm=e banī esrāīl tāv boland t^ho
one fire=INDV from tribe=EZ sons_of Israel from upright become.PST.3SG
'A fire rose from the people of Israel.'

5 Summary

So far, I have discussed various word order parameters, and the post-verbal placement of different constituents related to the verb. This historically head-final language shows some shifts towards head-initial syntax, leading to some degree of inconsistency in head-directionality (see Dryer 1992). We also note the occasional use of mixed head-final and head-initial constructions involving borrowed prepositions combined with inherited post-positions, see (18). The head-initial configurations which have been illustrated in this chapter are as follows.

| Head | Complement |
|----------------|-------------------|
| Noun | Adjective |
| Possessed | Possessor |
| Matrix clause | Complement clause |
| Complementizer | Complement clause |
| Verb | Goal |
| Verb | Recipient |

Within the VP, most kinds of verbal arguments remain consistently pre-verbal (90% or more), with the sole exception of goals and recipients. Table 2 shows the relevant figures for the most important roles, as identified in the WOVA framework (see Haig et al. 2024 [Chapter 1, this volume]). Note that ‘Goals’ subsumes both goals of verbs of motion and of caused motion (both of which are predominantly post-verbal in Kholosi).

Compared to its Indo-Aryan relative Jadgali, Kholosi exhibits greater influence of Iranic. Kholosi has adopted some features of Persian noun phrases, for example post-posed adjectives, and some prepositions, while Jadgali retains the Indo-Aryan structures. Jadgali also retains its split ergative alignment, while Kholosi shares the same alignment (accusative) with Persian, and makes more extensive use of *person-* marking clitics. Overall, it seems that Kholosi has undergone a greater degree of syntactic convergence with Iranian languages. Kholosi nevertheless maintains grammatical features that distinguish it from (neighbouring) Iranic. These include a grammatical gender distinction on some numerals, verb endings, and adjectives (if the host item is Indo-Aryan), and also postpositions, which are a prominent feature of Indo-Aryan languages. Note that its morphological gender system is not strong as such (see Nourzaei under review). Unlike Iranian languages, Kholosi lacks any prefixal TAM elements.

At the level of the clause, Kholosi has adapted to the profile of the Iranian languages of Western Asia: Modal verbs precede main verbs, subordinate clauses follow matrix clauses, and complementizers occur clause-initially. One of the most salient features of these languages is the combination of near-categorical

Maryam Nourzaei

Table 2: Percentages of post-predicate placement of different constituents in Kholosi

| Kholosi | Total number of tokens | preverbal | postverbal | % postverbal |
|-------------------------------|------------------------|------------|------------|--------------|
| Ablative | 22 | 22 | 0 | 0% |
| Addressee | 14 | 13 | 1 | 7% |
| Become | 14 | 13 | 1 | 7% |
| Comitative | 13 | 13 | 0 | 0% |
| Copular expression | 41 | 39 | 2 | 5% |
| Direct object | 67 | 65 | 2 | 3% |
| Definite direct object | 88 | 86 | 2 | 2% |
| Goal | 56 | 21 | 35 | 62% |
| Static location | 43 | 42 | 1 | 2% |
| Other | 128 | 126 | 2 | 2% |
| Possessed | 12 | 12 | 0 | 0% |
| Recipient | 8 | 2 | 6 | 75% |
| Totals | 506 | 454 | 52 | |

OV with a high frequency of **post-verbal** goals. Kholosi likewise exhibits this combination (>90% OV, and >60% VG, cf. Table 2). Note, however, that rates of post-verbal goals do not reach the levels found further westward in the Iranian languages of Mesopotamia. But Kholosi does share with several Iranian languages the spread of post-verbal placement to include recipients, entirely in line with the sequence predicted in Haig et al. (2024 [Chapter 1, this volume]). Other types of constituents (such as locatives, copula complements, adverbs, addressees) show significantly lower rates of **postverbal** position.

Although Kholosi retains abundant evidence of its Indo-Aryan origins in the lexicon and in morphology, it exhibits syntactic convergence with areally contiguous languages, which has rendered it significantly different from its Indo-Aryan relatives located outside the Western Asian Transition Zone. The Kholosi case thus has considerable implications for assessing the role of contact versus inheritance in predicting word order.

Abbreviations

| | | | |
|------|----------------------|----------|--------------------------------|
| CMP | complementizer | PC | person-marking |
| COP | copula | enclitic | |
| DIST | distal | PL | plural |
| EMPH | emphasis | PREV | preverb |
| EZ | ezafe particle | PROX | proximal deixis |
| F | feminine | PRS | present |
| GEN | genitive | PST | past stem |
| IA | Indo-Aryan | REFL | reflexive pronoun |
| IPFV | imperfective | SBJV | subjunctive |
| IMP | imperative | UP | Unpublished text |
| INDV | individuation clitic | WATZ | Western Asian Transition Zone. |
| M | masculine | | |
| NEG | negation | WOWA | Word Order in Western Asia |
| OBL | oblique case | | |

Acknowledgements

I would like to thank my *Kholosi* speakers in particular Hawa Sabui, Mosaeeb, Said and Yusef Sabui for double checking the data, two reviewers for comments on earlier versions, and Geoffrey Haig for discussion and feedback throughout. The responsibility for all remaining errors is of course my own.

References

- Anonby, Erik & Mohebbi Bahmani Hassan. 2016. Shipwrecked and landlocked: *Kholosi*, an Indo-Aryan language in South-West Iran. *Studia Iranica* 43. 1–23.
- Arora, Aryaman & Ahmed Etebari. 2021. *Kholosi dictionary*.
- Barjasteh Delforooz, Behrooz. 2008. A sociolinguistic survey among the Jagal of Iranian Balochistan. In Carina Jahani, Agnes Korn & Paul Titus (eds.), *The Baloch and others: Linguistic, historical and socio-political perspectives on pluralsim in Balochistan*, 23–43. Wiesbaden: Reichert.
- Dahl, Eystein & Krzysztof Stronski. 2016. Ergativity in Indo-Aryan and beyond. In Eystein Dahl & Krzysztof Stronski (eds.), *Indo-aryan ergativity in typological and diachronic perspective*, 1–38. Amsterdam: Benjamins. DOI: [10.1075/tsl.112.01dah](https://doi.org/10.1075/tsl.112.01dah).
- Dryer, Matthew S. 1992. The Greenbergian word order correlations. *Language* 68. 81–138.

Maryam Nourzaei

- Haig, Geoffrey & Geoffrey Khan. 2019. Introduction. In Geoffrey Haig & Geoffrey Khan (eds.), *The languages and linguistics of Western Asia: An areal perspective*, 1–29. Berlin: De Gruyter Mouton. DOI: [10.1515/9783110421682-001](https://doi.org/10.1515/9783110421682-001).
- Haig, Geoffrey, Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand, Donald Stilo, Laurentia Schreiber & Nils N. Schiborr. 2024. Post-predicate elements in the Western Asian Transition Zone: Data, theory, and methods. In Geoffrey Haig, Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand, Donald Stilo, Laurentia Schreiber & Nils N. Schiborr (eds.), *Post-predicate elements in the Western Asian Transition Zone: A corpus-based approach to areal typology*, 1–49. Berlin: Language Science Press.
- Liljegren, Henrik. 2016. *A grammar of Palula*. Berlin: Language Science Press.
- Masica, Colin P. 1991. *The Indo-Aryan languages*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Mohammadmirad, Masoud. 2024. Zagros region: The Kurdish-Gorani continuum. In Geoffrey Haig, Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand, Donald Stilo, Laurentia Schreiber & Nils N. Schiborr (eds.), *Post-predicate elements in the Western Asian Transition Zone: A corpus-based approach to areal typology*, 231–264. Berlin: Language Science Press.
- Nourzaei, Maryam. 2022a. *Documentation of Kholosi as an endangered language*. Bamberg. <https://www.elararchive.org/dk0659/>.
- Nourzaei, Maryam. 2022b. Kholosi (Kholos). In Geoffrey Haig, Donald Stilo, Mahîr C. Doğan & Nils N. Schiborr (eds.), *WOWA – Word Order in Western Asia: A spoken-language-based corpus for investigating areal effects in word order variation*. Bamberg: University of Bamberg. multicast.aspra.uni-bamberg.de/resources/wowa/.
- Nourzaei, Maryam. 2023. On orality and the sociolinguistic situation of the Kholosi community. *Orientalia Suecana* 72. 47–68.
- Nourzaei, Maryam. in press(a). Kholosi. In Charles Häberl (ed.), *Language diversity in Iran: New texts and perspectives from non-Iranian languages*. Berlin: De Gruyter Mouton. DOI: [10.1515/9783110641578](https://doi.org/10.1515/9783110641578).
- Nourzaei, Maryam. in press(b). On nominal and pronominal morphosyntax in Kholosi. *Studia Iranica*.
- Patil, Umesh, Gerrit Kentner, Anja Gollrad, Frank Kügler, Caroline Féry & Shrawan Vasishth. 2008. Focus, word order and intonation in Hindi. *Journal of South Asian Linguistics* 1. 55–72.
- Trumpp, Ernst. 1872. *Grammar of the Sindhi language*. London: Trübner.

Chapter 7

Post-predicate elements in modern colloquial Persian: a multifactorial analysis

Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand^a, Elham Izadi^a, Mehdi Parizadeh^a, Geoffrey Haig^b & Nils Schiborr^b

^aBu-Ali Sina University, Hamadan ^bBamberg University

We investigate post-verbal elements in contemporary spoken Persian, based on the HamBam corpus (Haig & Rasekh-Mahand 2022), and compare the results with Frommer (1981). We apply two multi-variate analyses to the HamBam data (logistic regression, gradient boosting), which suggest semantic/syntactic role (e.g., goals, direct objects) is the primary predictor of post-verbal placement; other factors, such as weight, are marginal. Our findings confirm those of Frommer (1981) for the least formal spoken registers of Persian (>80% rates of post-verbal goals). However, we detect a shift in register distribution in today's spoken language compared to the late 1970s.

1 Introduction

Persian has some odd features regarding its word order typology. It has prepositions (though the object marker is an enclitic =*rā*), and post-nominal adjectives, genitives and relative clauses. These are features generally associated with the head-initial languages (Dryer 1992). Yet the verb occurs in the final position of the clause, especially in written and formal registers (Faghiri et al. 2014: 220, Haig & Rasekh-Mahand 2019, Faghiri & Samvelian 2020). In this respect, Persian word order is disharmonic (Hawkins 2008), showing a mixture of head-initial and head-final features. A second aspect of disharmonic word order is that while direct objects are fairly consistently pre-verbal (OV), certain other kinds of constituents

Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand, Elham Izadi, Mehdi Parizadeh, Geoffrey Haig & Nils Schiborr

may follow the verb. The first and systematic study of post-verbal phenomena in Persian is Frommer's (1981) dissertation. This pioneering study focused exclusively on the syntax of less formal Persian ('Informal Persian', IP), was based on a corpus graded according to levels of formality within IP, and employed statistical analyses rigorous for its time. We summarize Frommer's main findings in Section 2.

In this paper, we take another look at post-predicate phenomena in modern colloquial Persian, using data made available through the HamBam corpus (Haig & Rasekh-Mahand 2022) which contains annotated recordings of contemporary spoken Persian.¹ In order to facilitate comparison with the other data-sets from WOVA (Haig et al. 2024 [Chapter 1, Section 3, this volume]) we have selected a sub-set of texts from HamBam and created a data-base conforming with the WOVA format, online available as Izadi (2022). On the basis of this data, we are able to compare colloquial spoken Persian of today with Frommer's (1981), data compiled in the late 1970's, allowing us to address the question of whether Frommer's (1981) findings still hold after 40 years. In Section 2, a summary of Frommer's (1981) study and his findings is provided. In Sections 3 and 4, we present our findings based on data from HamBam, pursuing both a qualitative and quantitative approach, the latter testing the effects of predictor variables, including weight, role, flagging, animacy, and register. Section 5 compares our findings with Frommer's (1981), identifying a hitherto undetected shift in register differentiation in spoken Persian of the late 1970's, and today's language. Section 6 summarizes the main findings.

2 Frommer (1981)

Post-predicate elements in Persian have generally received only passing attention, particularly as they are generally considered to be a feature of informal spoken language, thus apparently lacking systematicity. However, Lazard (1957: 201–205) had already observed that in the colloquial spoken language, spatial goals were normally post-posed, but the phenomenon did not attract more systematic investigation until Frommer's (1981) dissertation. In his study, Frommer focussed entirely on post-verbal elements, conducting a systematic investigation across several registers of what he refers to as 'Informal Persian' (IP). The first subcorpora of his corpus consists of informal conversations in a home setting recorded by an in-group member (2595 clauses). The second part is spoken, but more formal, based on broadcasts from Radio *Payām* (1068 clauses). The third

¹<https://multicast.aspra.uni-bamberg.de/resources/hambam/>

7 Post-predicate elements in modern colloquial Persian

part is from the dialogue parts of two plays written by a famous Persian writer, Sādeq Čubak (1670 clauses), and the last part is a children's story *Kuti o Muti*, adapted for radio broadcasting (451 clauses). It is important to note that Frommer's (1981) research does not consider formal written Persian (e.g. academic, or conservative journalistic texts), but only different registers within **Informal Persian (IP)**, as opposed to the highly formalized written language. His guiding assumption is that while verb-finality is quite strictly maintained in formal Persian, IP differs because it frequently permits constituents to occur post-verbally. The aim of Frommer's (1981) work is thus to elucidate the nature and function of the post-verbal elements in IP (Frommer 1981: 58–59).

Frommer (1981) noted that among the post-predicate elements, the Goals of verbs of motion and caused motion were among the most frequently post-posed elements. Frommer used the term 'destination', which includes physical places, pro-forms (*jā* 'place'; *injā* 'here'; *unjā* 'there'; *kojā* 'where'), and abstract, or what he calls quasi-destinations (e.g. *raft xarid* 'went shopping'). This usage is close enough to the WOVA term 'Goal', which we will adopt here throughout. The following examples illustrate goals, with the assumed canonical pre-predicate placement in (1) contrasting with the post-predicate placement in (2) (post-predicate elements are in bold through the paper):

- (1) Colloquial New Persian (constructed)
- | | | |
|------------------|-------------------|-----------------|
| <i>mi-xā-d</i> | <i>be madrese</i> | <i>be-r-e</i> |
| IND-want.PRS-3SG | to school | SBJV-go.PRS-3SG |
- 'He wants to go to school.'
- (2) Colloquial New Persian (constructed)
- | | | |
|------------------|-----------------|--------------------------|
| <i>mi-xā-d</i> | <i>be-r-e</i> | <i>be madrese</i> |
| IND-want.PRS-3SG | SBJV-go.PRS-3SG | to school |
- 'He wants to go to school.'

Turning to Frommer's (1981) actual data, Table 1, adapted from Frommer (1981: 127), shows overall rates of clauses with post-predicate elements (V-X), and the respective proportions of Goals and non-Goals among the post-predicate elements. We have merged the data from the two play scripts because they do not differ significantly from each other.

As the table shows, post-predicate elements (V-X) are overall more frequent in spoken form compared to written, with finer distinctions obtaining within the two written and two spoken sources. An important difference is that while the majority of post-predicate elements in written form are Goals, in spoken genres,

Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand, Elham Izadi, Mehdi Parizadeh, Geoffrey Haig & Nils Schiborr

Table 1: Overall frequency of post-predicate elements and non-destination elements [Frommer 1981: 127]

| Genre | Clause | V-Goal | | V-non-Goal | | V-X | |
|--------------------------------|--------|--------|-----|------------|------|-----|------|
| | | N | % | N | % | N | % |
| Casual spoken | 2595 | 168 | 6.5 | 262 | 10.1 | 430 | 16.6 |
| Radio <i>Payām</i> (spoken) | 1068 | 15 | 1.4 | 123 | 11.5 | 138 | 12.9 |
| Two plays (dialogues, written) | 1670 | 78 | 4.7 | 18 | 1.1 | 96 | 5.7 |
| Children's story (written) | 451 | 14 | 3.1 | 4 | 0.9 | 18 | 4.0 |

a much wider range of post-predicate elements is attested, and Goals only make up less than half (Frommer 1981: 128). Thus, a major distinction between the two spoken and the written registers is that the former tolerates a much wider range of post-predicate elements.

While Table 1 indicates the number of clauses with post-predicate elements, Table 2 indicates the percentage of Goals which are post-predicate in the different registers:

Table 2: Overall frequency of post-predicate goals (Frommer 1981: 131)

| Genre | Total Goals | V-Goals | Percentage |
|--------------------------------|-------------|---------|------------|
| Casual spoken | 203 | 168 | 82.8% |
| Radio <i>Payām</i> (spoken) | 38 | 15 | 39.5% |
| Two plays (dialogues, written) | 149 | 78 | 52.3% |
| Children's story (written) | 26 | 14 | 53.8% |

The score for spoken casual data is very high compared with other three forms, so it is undeniably the case that casual speech favours higher rates of post-verbal goals (Frommer 1981: 131). However, even among the other three registers, around 50% of all goals are post-verbal, indicating that the phenomenon of post-verbal goals cannot be explained solely through reference to sloppy speech in informal conversational registers. Rather, it must be considered a genuine feature of vernacular Persian, evident even in (less formal) written language. Frommer also identifies a relationship between word order and flagging: Goals in post-predicate position are more likely to lack the normal prepositional flagging: “prepositionless destinations are more post-posable” (Frommer 1981: 132). He explains that since prepositionless goals are associated with casual style, and

7 Post-predicate elements in modern colloquial Persian

VX goals are too, these two casual features are linked together making the post-predicate goals more prepositionless (Frommer 1981: 183).

The predicates occurring with post-predicate goals reveal a sensitivity to individual lexical verbs. Post-predicate goals occur mainly with two motion verbs, *raftan*, 'to go' and *āmadan*, 'to come' and two caused-motion verbs, *gozāštan*, 'to put' and *bordan*, 'to carry'. Table 3 shows the frequency:

Table 3: Overall frequency of post-predicate goals with specific predicates (Frommer 1981: 133)

| Predicate | Total goals | goal-V | V-goal | Percent of V-goal |
|--------------------------|-------------|--------|--------|-------------------|
| <i>raftan</i> (to go) | 93 | 12 | 81 | 87.1% |
| <i>āmadan</i> (to come) | 35 | 3 | 32 | 91.4% |
| <i>gozāštan</i> (to put) | 17 | 0 | 17 | 100% |
| <i>bordan</i> (to carry) | 6 | 2 | 8 | 75% |

The tokens for other predicates in Frommer's (1981) data are too few to infer plausible conclusions. But for the verbs in Table 3, the tokens are sufficient to illustrate the strength of the post-predicate tendency, which is close to categorical. Frommer (1981: 172) summarizes his findings for the casual genre in the form of the following hierarchy for post-possibility:

- (3) The hierarchy of post-possibility (Frommer 1981: 172):

Goal (without preposition) > Goal (with preposition) > PP (non-Goal, including IO) > DO (with *rā*) and ADV (without preposition) > SU > DO (without *rā*)

Table 4 shows the frequencies of post-predicate arguments in the casual spoken register in Frommer's data, which underly the Hierarchy of post-possibility.

Frommer (1981: 135) also analyzed the effects of information structure on post-posing. He distinguished between focus (the constituent that conveys new information or asks for information as a wh-element and normally is the intonation center of the clause) and non-focused, old, background information as two main parts of information structure of the clause. He analyzed only the casual spoken data for this feature. Table 5 shows the statistics of non-focused post-predicate elements.

As the table shows, post-predicate constituents are generally non-focused (given) information - but this does not hold for goals. Thus, while post-predicate

Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand, Elham Izadi, Mehdi Parizadeh, Geoffrey Haig & Nils Schiborr

Table 4: Post-predicate elements hierarchy (Frommer 1981: 172, casual spoken genre only)

| Constituent type | Total | VX | % VX |
|-------------------------------------|-------|-----|-------|
| Goals with prepositions | 134 | 117 | 87.3% |
| Goals without prepositions | 69 | 51 | 73.9% |
| Prepositional arguments (not goals) | 526 | 95 | 18.1% |
| Objects with <i>rā</i> | 224 | 21 | 9.4% |
| Adverbs without prepositions | 1270 | 96 | 7.6% |
| Subjects | 1083 | 52 | 4.8% |
| Objects without <i>rā</i> | 422 | 6 | 1.4% |
| Total | 3728 | 438 | 12% |

Table 5: The frequency of non-focused elements in post-predicate position (Frommer 1981: 137)

| Constituent type | % non-focused |
|-------------------------------------|---------------|
| Goals without prepositions | 8.5% |
| Goals with prepositions | 15.7% |
| Prepositional arguments (not goals) | 77% |
| Objects with <i>rā</i> | 83.3% |
| Adverbs without prepositions | 89% |
| Subjects | 90.4% |
| Objects without <i>rā</i> | 100% |

position strongly disfavors new information, for goals, this constraint is neutralized, with the vast majority of post-predicate goals being in focus. It can be provisionally concluded that focus versus non-focus is not relevant for the placement of goals, though it is clearly relevant for other constituents. Frommer (1981) explored the effect of other factors, e.g., clause type, (main or subordinate), verb type (simple or complex) and heaviness, but he found no significant effects, at least in spoken language genres.

Frommer (1981: 179–181) summarizes his main findings as follows:

- (a) Post-predicate placement is markedly prevalent in informal spoken Persian and less frequent in formal written Persian.

7 Post-predicate elements in modern colloquial Persian

- (b) Goals are the most frequent elements in post-predicate position, and more than 80 percent of them are post-posed in casual speech.
- (c) Goals are mainly new information in post-predicate position, contrary to other post-posed elements.
- (d) Grammatical weight has no significant effect in this post-posing elements.

Following Haiman (1980: 532), Frommer (1981: 182) postulates that putting goals in post-predicate position is related to iconicity of sequence, asserting that order of elements in language mirrors order of appearance in experience. Hence, goals are the endpoint of a motion and appearing in final position reflects their nature (see also Haig 2022, for related claims). Finally, Frommer (1981: 183) asks if post-predicate phenomenon represents an ongoing change: Is Persian fully grammaticalizing this position? Could it be a sign of changing from SOV to SVO? Or is the VX variability a stable situation? As Frommer (1981) recognized, his data could not resolve these questions, but forty years later we are in a better position to address them.

3 Post-predicate elements in the HamBam corpus

The data of this section come from the HamBam corpus (Haig & Rasekh-Mahand 2022), a collection of annotated recordings of contemporary spoken Persian. All figures cited here stem from a data set extracted from HamBam, and analysed in the WOVA framework (Izadi 2022). The texts gathered in this corpus are predominantly monological in nature, and represent colloquial, unscripted spoken Persian. They have been broadly categorized into informal (recordings made in private homes, between kin and friends, concerned with oral history and various anecdotes), and more formal speech (e.g. radio interviews and podcasts), designed for public broadcasting. This broad two-way distinction does not readily map onto Frommer's (1981) four-way distinction; we discuss the issue of register in Section 5. The speakers are of both genders, various ages, different educational levels and occupations. Table 6 shows the total number of analyzed tokens and the rate of post-predicate elements.

It is important to note that in keeping with the WOVA data-base structure (see Haig et al. 2024 [Chapter 1, Section 3, this volume]), we have only considered non-subject constituents, hence the number of non-classified tokens is high, since there are many sentences which contain just a subject (see below for a discussion on subjects' status). In addition, in some clauses more than one token is analyzed.

Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand, Elham Izadi, Mehdi Parizadeh, Geoffrey Haig & Nils Schiborr

Table 6: Frequency of post-predicate elements in HamBam corpus (figures based on [Izadi 2022](#))

| | | |
|---|------|-------|
| Total number of clause units identified | 3220 | 100% |
| Number of analyzed tokens | 1625 | 50.5% |
| Number of clauses lacking a classifiable token | 1595 | 49.5% |
| Rate of post-predicate elements (all roles) among analyzed tokens | 413 | 25.4% |

This means that ‘number of tokens’ means the number of analyzed constituents, and should not be confused with number of clauses (which is the unit used in several other studies). As Table 6 shows, one out of four tokens analyzed occurred after the verb.

WOWA employs a finer-grained, and slightly different classification of constituent types than that used in [Frommer \(1981\)](#), and for the comparison we adapt the WOWA system. Table 7 shows the overall frequency of post-predicate elements by role, including nominal and pronominal tokens.

Table 7: Post-predicate elements of different roles based on HamBam corpus

| Constituent type | Total | VX | % VX |
|---------------------------|-------|-----|-------|
| Caused goal | 60 | 55 | 91.7% |
| Goal | 206 | 167 | 81.1% |
| Direct object (DEF+INDEF) | 437 | 18 | 4.1% |
| Locative | 146 | 29 | 19.9% |
| Ablative (source) | 50 | 5 | 10% |
| Other (non-classifiable) | 315 | 98 | 31.1% |
| Comitative | 46 | 12 | 26.1% |
| Instrument | 28 | 4 | 14.3% |
| ‘become’ complement | 24 | 6 | 25% |
| Addressee | 69 | 8 | 11.6% |
| Benefactive | 11 | 3 | 27.3% |
| Recipient+benefactive | 13 | 2 | 15.4% |
| Copula complement | 205 | 5 | 2.4% |
| Stimulus | 4 | 1 | 25% |
| Recipient | 11 | 0 | 0% |

In the following sections, we first discuss non-direct objects in Section 3.1, di-

7 Post-predicate elements in modern colloquial Persian

rect objects in Section 3.2, and briefly touch on subjects in Section 3.3. For some of the roles in Table 7, the number of tokens or the number of post-predicate tokens is too small to gain a reliable conclusion, so they are not considered further here.

3.1 Non-direct objects

3.1.1 Goals and caused Goals

It is clear from Table 7 that goals of verbs of caused motion and motion behave fundamentally differently from all other roles. The frequency of post-predicate Goals in our data (collapsing caused-motion and simple goals) is around 83%, which is more than three times higher than any other single role, ignoring the ‘unclassified’ category for a moment. This confirms the special role of Goals already identified for Persian by Frommer (1981), and since confirmed in other studies on post-predicate elements in Iranian and neighboring languages (Haig et al. 2024 [Chapter 1, this volume], Jahani 2018, Stilo 2018, Korn 2022).

Furthermore, the figure of around 80% matches the figure for post-predicate Goals in Frommer’s (1981) casual spoken data, provided in Table 4 above. It is also replicated in another corpus of spontaneous spoken Persian, (Haig 2017). This suggests that the approximately 80% level for post-predicate Goals is a fairly stable linguistic variable for spoken Persian, which has not varied significantly over the last 40 years; we turn to this in Section 5 below; in the meantime, we provide illustrative examples of simple and caused Goals from our data.

Goals are the arguments of motion verbs (e.g., *go, come*) and caused goals are the arguments of caused motion verbs (e.g., *put, bring, send, carry*). The data in Table 7 suggest that Goals of caused motion are more likely to be post-predicate than simple motion Goals, but a Fisher Exact test yields a p-value of 0.0504, which is only borderline significant. Examples (4) and (5) are sentences with caused motion verbs and post-predicate goals (the post-predicate elements are in bold throughout the paper), while (6-7) illustrate the much rarer pattern with pre-verbal Goals:

- (4) Colloquial New Persian (Izadi 2022: J, 1226)
- | | | | | |
|------------|---------------|---------------|--------------|------------|
| <i>rad</i> | <i>kard-e</i> | <i>bud-am</i> | <i>tuy=e</i> | <i>čub</i> |
| send | do.PST-PTCPL | be.PST-1SG | in=EZ | wood |
- ‘I had stuck it into wood.’

Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand, Elham Izadi, Mehdi Parizadeh, Geoffrey Haig & Nils Schiborr

- (5) Colloquial New Persian (Izadi 2022: J, 1299)
in rā be-gozār ruy=e sar=at
 this RA IMP-put.2SG on=EZ head=2SG
 ‘Put this on your head.’
- (6) Colloquial New Persian (Izadi 2022: J, 1288)
tuy=aš āb rixt-e bud-im
 inside=3SG water pour-PTCPL be.PST-1PL
 ‘We poured water into it.’
- (7) Colloquial New Persian (Izadi 2022: F, 0836)
in pāy=aš rā kuče bo-gzār-ad
 this foot=3SG RA alley SBJV-put.PRS-3SG
 ‘(If) he puts his foot in the alley (i.e. If he goes out.)’

Frommer (1981: 132) suggests verb-specific effects here: *rixtan* ‘to pour’ behaves differently, for example compared with *gozāštan* ‘to put’, where for the former the goals are not post-posed, but for the latter, all of the goals appear in post-verbal position. Table 8 shows the most frequent verbs of caused motion in our corpus. The goals of *āvordan* ‘bring’ categorically appear after the verb and for two other frequent verbs, just one token appears pre-verbally.

Table 8: Overall frequency of post-predicate caused goals with specific predicates

| Caused motion predicate | Total | VX | Percent of total VX |
|---------------------------|-------|----|---------------------|
| <i>āvordan</i> (to bring) | 11 | 11 | 100% |
| <i>gozāštan</i> (to put) | 12 | 11 | 92% |
| <i>bordan</i> (to carry) | 11 | 10 | 91% |

Examples (8-11) illustrate Goals of simple motion, the first two post-verbal and the second two examples pre-verbal:

- (8) Colloquial New Persian (Izadi 2022: C, 0256)
raft-am doktor
 go.PST-1SG doctor
 ‘I went to (the) doctor’

7 Post-predicate elements in modern colloquial Persian

- (9) Colloquial New Persian (Izadi 2022: P, 1849)
parid-and ruy=e miz
 jump.PST-3PL over=EZ table
 'They jumped onto the table.'
- (10) Colloquial New Persian (Izadi 2022: C, 0237)
doktor raft-am
 doctor go.PST-1SG
 'I went to (the) doctor.'
- (11) Colloquial New Persian (Izadi 2022: ZB, 3016)
tu harf-hā=yaš, sohbat-hā=yaš be injā resid
 in speech-PL=3SG talk-PL=3SG to this reach.PST.3SG
 'In his speech, his talk reached to this point.'

The overall frequency of post-verbal Goals is closely matched by the frequencies of post-verbal Goals associated with the two most frequent motion verbs; see Table 9.

Table 9: Overall frequency of post-predicate goals with specific predicates

| Motion Predicate | Total | VX | Percent of total VX |
|-------------------------|-------|----|---------------------|
| <i>raftan</i> (to go) | 84 | 69 | 82% |
| <i>āmadan</i> (to come) | 32 | 26 | 81% |

We conclude that in spoken contemporary Persian, for goals of motion and caused motion verbs the default position is post-verbal.

3.1.2 Local roles, excluding Goals: Locative and Source

Apart from Goals, some other roles referring to location such as Locatives and Source, are also relatively frequently postposed. About 20% of Locatives appear in post-predicate position, illustrated in (12) and (13), while Source is much less frequently postposed (about 10%), see (14)

- (12) Colloquial New Persian (Izadi 2022: W, 2447)
tavaqqof dāšt-e ast tu Andimeshk
 stop have.PST-PTCPL be.PRS.3SG in Andimeshk
 'He stopped in Andimeshk.'

Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand, Elham Izadi, Mehdi Parizadeh, Geoffrey Haig & Nils Schiborr

- (13) Colloquial New Persian (Izadi 2022: W, 2487)
 $\text{šahid } \text{šod } \text{tu } \text{jebhe}$
 martyr become.PST.3SG in war
 'He died as a martyr in war.'
- (14) Colloquial New Persian (Izadi 2022: Q, 1912)
 $dast=aš \text{ } rā \text{ } greft \text{ } az \text{ } man$
 hand=3SG RA take.PST.3SG from me
 'He took his hand from me.'

3.1.3 Non-local obliques: Instrument, comitative, stimulus

Among the general obliques, Comitatives are more frequent than Instrument and Stimulus roles in post-predicate position. Out of 46 tokens of Comitatives (15, 16 and 17), 12 tokens (26%) are post-posed, while for Instruments (18) it is four out of 28, and Stimulus (19) two post-posed tokens. The following examples illustrate these roles.

- (15) Colloquial New Persian (Izadi 2022: N, 1694)
 $ke \text{ } yeki \text{ } be-š-im \text{ } bā \text{ } ham-digar$
 that united SBJV-become.PRS-1PL with each-other
 'That we become united with each other.'
- (16) Colloquial New Persian (Izadi 2022: N, 1699)
 $bāz \text{ } zendegi \text{ } mi-kon-am \text{ } bā=hāšun$
 again life IND-do.PRS-1SG with=3PL
 'I live with them again.'
- (17) Colloquial New Persian (Izadi 2022: P, 1803)
 $hatta \text{ } bā \text{ } doxtar-hā \text{ } rābet=aš \text{ } xeyli \text{ } jāleb \text{ } bud$
 even with girl-PL relation=3SG very good be.PST.3SG
 'Even his relationship with the girls was good.'
- (18) Colloquial New Persian (Izadi 2022: K, 1365)
 $ba'd \text{ } ešāre \text{ } kard \text{ } bā \text{ } dast$
 then refer do.PST.3SG with hand
 'Then he indicated with his hand.'
- (19) Colloquial New Persian (Izadi 2022: P, 1819)
 $hasudi \text{ } na-kon-and \text{ } be \text{ } ham-digar$
 envy NEG-do.PRS-3PL to each-other
 'They are not jealous of each other.'

7 *Post-predicate elements in modern colloquial Persian*

3.1.4 Other roles

This group consists of tokens which are not classifiable in other groups. Mostly they are adverbs of time and manner, or various unclassified constituent types. Overall, preverbal position is preferred for this heterogenous group, but post-verbal position is also possible (20).

- (20) Colloquial New Persian (Izadi 2022: P, 0005)
xābid-am tā sā'at=e do
 sleep.PST-1SG till hour=EZ two
 'I slept till 2 o'clock.'
- (21) Colloquial New Persian (Izadi 2022: P, 1813)
hatta vasat=e kelas har nim saat jāy=aš rā avaz
 Even middle=EZ class every half hour place=3SG RA change
mi-kard
 IND-do.PST.3SG
 'Even in class, he changed his seat every half hour.'
- (22) Colloquial New Persian (Izadi 2022: O, 1763)
guš-hā=yaš bā māsk kār mi-kard
 ear-PL=3SG with mask work IND-do.PST.3SG
 'His ears worked (despite being) with the mask.'

3.1.5 Addressees

Addresses of speech verbs appear mostly in pre-predicate position (23), with around 11% post verbal (24):

- (23) Colloquial New Persian (Izadi 2022: O, 1747)
ba'd be āqāh=e goft-am
 then to man=DEF tell.PST-1SG
 'Then I said to the man.'
- (24) Colloquial New Persian (Izadi 2022: F, 0630)
vali na-gu be rezā
 but NEG-tell.2SG to Reza
 'But, don't tell Reza.'

Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand, Elham Izadi, Mehdi Parizadeh, Geoffrey Haig & Nils Schiborr

3.1.6 Become-complements

Complements of *become* have been identified as candidates for post-verbal position in Iranian languages (see [Korn 2022](#) for a discussion). Our data contain 24 tokens, six of which (25%) occur post-verbally (25), while the majority is pre-verbal (26):

- (25) Colloquial New Persian ([Izadi 2022: ZC, 3104](#))
dah ruz šod *davāz dah ruz*
 ten day become.PST.3SG twelve day
 '(The promised) ten days become twelve days.'
- (26) Colloquial New Persian ([Izadi 2022: T, 2227](#))
xalāban šod
 pilot become.PST.3SG
 'He became a pilot.'

3.1.7 Benefactive

Both Recipients and Benefactives have been claimed to pattern similarly to Goals in some languages ([Haig et al. 2024](#) [Chapter 1, this volume]). In our data, all Recipients are preverbal, and the majority of Benefactives likewise, though the absolute number of tokens is low (we include under 'Benefactives' tokens that are ambiguous between a Recipient and Benefactive reading, coded as "rec-ben" in WOVA). Of the 24 tokens of Benefactives, five were postverbal (27).

- (27) Colloquial New Persian ([Izadi 2022: M, 1537](#))
in yek pitzā āvar-d *barāy-e mādar-e man*
 This one pizza bring-PST.3SG for-EZ mother-EZ I
 'He brought a pizza for my mother.'

3.1.8 Summary: Non-direct objects

With regard to the non-direct objects position in our data, the first and expected observation is that Goals and Goals of caused motion verbs are distinct from all other roles, and appear in post-predicate position near categorically. However, it is also important to note that the second most likely post-posed argument after Goals are actually locations (around 20%). This suggests a general principle of constituents indicating spatial location (either static (loc) or dynamic (goals) are

7 Post-predicate elements in modern colloquial Persian

more likely to be post-predicate than any others. It may also be linked to the feature of +/- humanness; this possibility is explored in Section 4 below. These findings question the validity of lumping Addressees and Recipients with Goals into a meta-role ‘Target’ (Asadpour 2022). The Persian data suggest that Addressees are actually less likely to be post-predicate than, for example, locations, while Recipients are categorically pre-verbal. Thus spoken Persian provides little support for the assumption of a meta-role that would encompass Goals, Recipients, and Addressees. Rather, they reinforce the special status of goals, in opposition to all other constituent types.

3.2 Direct objects

The first point about post-predicate direct objects is that they are overall very infrequent. As Table 10 shows only 18 tokens (about 4%) of direct objects of different kinds appear post-verbally, demonstrating that spoken Persian is fairly consistently OV. The frequency of different kinds of direct objects is provided in Table 10, further distinguishing animacy, definiteness, and noun vs. pronoun.

Table 10: Post-predicate Direct Objects on HamBam corpus

| Direct objects | Total | VX | Percent |
|----------------------|-------|----|---------|
| Nominal, all | 372 | 17 | 4.6% |
| Nominal, human | 63 | 5 | 7.9% |
| Nominal, animate | 5 | 0 | 0% |
| Nominal, inanimate | 285 | 11 | 3.9% |
| Nominal, indefinite | 204 | 7 | 3.4% |
| Nominal, definite | 168 | 10 | 6% |
| Pronominal (1,2,3,4) | 44 | 1 | 2.3% |
| DO with RA | 240 | 12 | 5% |
| DO without RA | 197 | 6 | 3% |

Although the absolute number of direct objects in post-predicate position is low, the findings suggest that most of the post-predicated direct objects are human, and definite ones appear more freely in post-verbal position compared to indefinite ones. When pronominal, they appear rarely in post-predicate position, and direct objects with *=rā* move more freely to post-verbal position compared to those without *=rā*. The following are examples of direct objects in post-predicate position:

Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand, Elham Izadi, Mehdi Parizadeh, Geoffrey Haig & Nils Schiborr

- (28) Colloquial New Persian (Izadi 2022: F, 0797)
in ke māšin zad Mehrdad rā
 this that car hit.PST.3SG mehrdad RA
 'When the car hit Mehrdad.'
- (29) Colloquial New Persian (Izadi 2022: Q, 1919)
faqat did-am yek daste mu
 Just see.PST-1SG one bunch hair
 'I just saw a bunch of hair.'
- (30) Colloquial New Persian (Izadi 2022: ZB, 3034)
tu=ye sohbat-hā=yāš bargāšt az=am porsid esm-ā rā
 in=EZ talk-PL=3SG return.PST.3SG from=1SG ask.PST.3SG name-PL RA
 'During his talk, he asked the names from me.'
- (31) Colloquial New Persian (Izadi 2022: ZA, 2939)
va motasefāne jav gereft man rā
 and unfortunately excitement take.PST.3SG I RA
 'And, unfortunately I was excited.'

3.3 Subjects

Up to now we have analyzed non-subject roles (see Table 6), because these are coded in the WOVA data set (Izadi 2022). In order to consider subjects, we turned to the full HamBam corpus. We extracted 843 tokens of nominal and pronominal subjects, from which 27 were post-posed (3%). Some examples of post-predicate subjects are as follows:

- (32) Colloquial New Persian (Izadi 2022: F, 0657)
bord=eš āqā=he
 take.PST=3SG man=DEF
 'The man took it,'
- (33) Colloquial New Persian (Izadi 2022: F, 0754)
hiči um-ad doktor=e
 anyway come.PRS-3SG doctor=DEF
 'Anyway, the doctor came.'

The post-predicate subjects were all definite, and can reasonably be classified as afterthoughts: the speaker has already established the reference, which is thus

7 Post-predicate elements in modern colloquial Persian

presumably active in the listener’s mind, and the afterthought simply re-confirms the given status of the referent. Post-posing of subjects is therefore overall very seldom in our data (see Skopeteas 2024 [Chapter 3, this volume], on the information status and prosody of post-verbal elements in Persian).

4 A multivariate analysis of post-verbal syntax in contemporary Persian

Having introduced and illustrated individual factors identified in Frommer (1981) and the more recent data from WOVA/HamBam (Izadi 2022; Haig & Rasekh-Mahand 2022), in this section we apply two different methodologies that control for the interactions of individual factors in order to assess their respective impact in driving post-verbal placement in spoken Persian. For these purposes, we analyse the full data set in Izadi (2022); Frommer’s (1981) actual corpus data are unfortunately not available.

For the first analysis (Section 4.1), we run a series generalized logistic regression models; in a second step (Section 4.2), we implement methods from the machine learning toolbox, namely a gradient boosting machine (GBM, Friedman 2001) and, for the purposes of illustration, a classification tree. In both approaches, the response variable is positioning (*pre-verbal* vs. *post-verbal*).

4.1 Logistic regression analysis

We run four generalized logistic regression models predicting post-verbal placement, one for each of the following roles or groupings of roles:

- (i) direct objects,
- (ii) goals,
- (iii) locations and sources, and
- (iv) various other obliques (incl. addressees, recipients, beneficiaries, and instrumentals).

The preceding sections have already confirmed that role is the primary factor in determining post-verbal placement, but also that the relationship differs substantially between roles. It is for this reason that we deem running separate logistic regression models for each role (or role combination) prudent, as doing so enables us to identify any pertinent associations within individual roles more clearly.

Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand, Elham Izadi, Mehdi Parizadeh, Geoffrey Haig & Nils Schiborr

The following five predictors are implemented for each role: register (*public* vs. *private*), form (*nominal* vs. *pronominal*), the presence of flagging (*none* vs. case marking for objects and prepositions for other roles), humanness (*non-human* vs. *human*), and phrase weight (measured in characters, roughly equivalent to phonological weight; for details on quantifying weight in the WOVA data, see Haig et al. 2024 [Chapter 1, Section 4, this volume]).

In the model summaries in Tables 11-14, the values of e^β (the log odds) for each of the predictors assess of how much each of the predictors in the model affect the likelihood of the response variable yielding one or the other outcome. Log odds above 1 indicate higher odds of a post-verbal outcome, while values below 1 do the same for pre-verbal outcomes, both under conditions that all other predictors are held at their respective reference levels (i.e. the ones in italics above, and a theoretical value of 0 for phrase weight).² For instance, in Table 11, which summarizes the model outcomes for direct objects, the log odds for the presence of flagging (i.e. case-marking) are $e^\beta = 2.52$, meaning a case-marked direct object has 2.52 times higher odds of being post-verbal compared to a direct object without case-marking, relative to the base odds of a post-verbal outcome overall (which can be found in the row labelled “intercept”, here $e^\beta = 0.05$). However, the model deems this prediction to likely be a matter of chance with a probability of $p = 0.098$, and it should therefore not be taken as evidence for a causal correlation. For the purposes of this analysis, we set the threshold for significance at $p < 0.05$.

Table 11 show the model results for direct objects, Table 12 for goals, Table 13 for locations and sources, and Table 14 for other obliques. With the exception of register for locations/sources ($e^\beta = 8.12$ times higher odds of post-verbal positioning for private register, with $p < 0.05$) and flagging for other obliques ($e^\beta = 0.02$ times lower odds for PPs, with $p < 0.01$), none of the predictors in any of the four models pass the threshold for statistical significance. As such, what little variation in positioning there is for direct objects and goals cannot be adequately explained by register, humanness, form, the presence of flagging, or phrase weight.

4.1.1 Discussion

These results largely confirm observations of the preceding sections, but reveal additional subtleties. For two of the roles tested here, direct objects and goals, position relative to the verb is essentially predictable from the nature of the role

²Note that these values are on a logarithmic scale, i.e. log odds from 1 to 0 for negative outcomes map onto log odds from 1 to infinity for positive outcomes.

7 *Post-predicate elements in modern colloquial Persian*

Table 11: Logistic regression model for direct objects

| model coefficients | | e^β | β | SE | z-val. | p-val. |
|---------------------------|---------------|-----------|---------|-------|---------------------------|---------|
| (intercept) | | 0.05 | -3.06 | 0.88 | -3.49 | < 0.001 |
| register | = private | 1.00 | 0.00 | 0.66 | 0.01 | 0.996 |
| form | = pronominal | 0.16 | -1.83 | 1.15 | -1.60 | 0.110 |
| flagging | = case-marked | 2.52 | 0.92 | 0.56 | 1.65 | 0.098 |
| humanness | = human | 1.56 | 0.45 | 0.70 | 0.64 | 0.521 |
| weight | per character | 0.94 | -0.06 | 0.06 | -1.13 | 0.259 |
| <hr/> | | | | | | |
| deviance residuals | | | | | | |
| | min. | lower | median | upper | | max. |
| | -0.49 | -0.33 | -0.25 | -0.21 | | 2.87 |
| <hr/> | | | | | | |
| model evaluation | | | | | | |
| observations | 434 | | | | (17 post-verbal) | |
| null deviance | 143.48 | | | | on 433 degrees of freedom | |
| resid. deviance | 137.77 | | | | on 428 degrees of freedom | |

itself. Factors such as phrase weight, whose importance has been stressed repeatedly in the literature on word order variation, appear to have no consistent effect on position relative to the verb for these two roles in our spoken New Persian data. Furthermore, there is no effect of public versus private registers of spoken language.

For other roles, we find slight effects of flagging, such that absence of a preposition favours post-verbal placement for other obliques, in partial confirmation of one of Frommer's (1981) observations mentioned in Section 2. However, somewhat surprisingly, this effect is absent with non-goal spatial relations (locations and sources). With locations and sources, we find an effect of register (private register favours post-verbal placement). The effects of flagging, and register, have been noted in the literature, but this is the first time that we are able to disentangle the role-specific effects.

One way of looking at our results is to consider the syntax of spoken Persian as defined in terms of two opposing role-specific rules (direct objects are pre-verbal, goals are post-verbal), with other roles being pulled in opposing directions, subject to a range of distinct contextual and register-related factors which are only partially captured in the current model.

Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand, Elham Izadi, Mehdi Parizadeh, Geoffrey Haig & Nils Schiborr

Table 12: Logistic regression model for Goals

| model coefficients | | e^β | β | SE | z-val. | p-val. |
|---------------------------|---------------|-----------|---------|------|---------------------------|--------|
| (intercept) | | 7.78 | 2.05 | 0.64 | 3.21 | < 0.01 |
| register | = private | 0.84 | -0.170 | 0.59 | -0.29 | 0.772 |
| form | = pronominal | 0.42 | -0.87 | 0.92 | -0.95 | 0.342 |
| flagging | = preposition | 0.63 | -0.47 | 0.36 | -1.31 | 0.192 |
| humanness | = human | 0.66 | -0.42 | 0.80 | -0.52 | 0.601 |
| weight | per character | 1.00 | 0.00 | 0.04 | 0.01 | 0.992 |
| deviance residuals | | | | | | |
| min. | lower | | median | | upper | max. |
| -2.09 | 0.53 | | 0.53 | | 0.66 | 1.13 |
| model evaluation | | | | | | |
| observations | | 266 | | | (222 post-verbal) | |
| null deviance | | 238.62 | | | on 265 degrees of freedom | |
| resid. deviance | | 233.10 | | | on 260 degrees of freedom | |

4.2 Gradient boosting models

While in the previous section we have examined each role independently for its association between positioning and various factors, in this section we answer the more general question of which factors most strongly influence post-verbal placement overall, when all the factors identified here are included in the model. To do this we utilize an iterative classification algorithm, specifically a gradient boosting machine (GBM, Friedman 2001) – a cousin of the random forest algorithm that tends to yield comparatively better results for small and skewed data sets – and, for the purposes of illustration, a single classification tree.

There are a few differences in how we arrange the predictors for these analyses compared to the regression models in the previous section. First, there is no need to maintain separate models for each of the roles, as the model will automatically select role as a classifying factor in whatever it deems most appropriate, alongside the other factors of register, form, humanness, the presence of flagging, and phrase weight. Second, since there are an unequal number of data points for each role, we calculate case weights for each role to prevent more common roles from dominating the model results. In effect this means that data points for the less common roles (goals, locations/sources, and other obliques) are given proportionally greater weight compared to the most common role (direct objects).³

³For example, since there are 434 data points for direct objects but only 266 for goals, each goal

7 Post-predicate elements in modern colloquial Persian

Table 13: Logistic regression model for locations and sources

| model coefficients | | e^β | β | SE | z-val. | p-val. |
|---------------------------|---------------|-----------|---------|-------|---------------------------|--------|
| (intercept) | | 0.033 | -3.42 | 1.11 | -3.07 | < 0.01 |
| register | = private | 8.12 | 2.09 | 1.05 | 1.99 | < 0.05 |
| form | = pronominal | 1.56 | 0.44 | 1.03 | 0.43 | 0.665 |
| flagging | = preposition | 1.06 | 0.06 | 0.43 | 0.13 | 0.897 |
| humanness | = human | 1.31 | 0.27 | 0.89 | 0.30 | 0.764 |
| weight | per character | 0.98 | -0.02 | 0.04 | -0.47 | 0.640 |
| deviance residuals | | | | | | |
| | min. | lower | median | upper | | max. |
| | -0.93 | -0.66 | -0.64 | -0.24 | | 2.37 |
| model evaluation | | | | | | |
| observations | 196 | | | | (34 post-verbal) | |
| null deviance | 180.85 | | | | on 195 degrees of freedom | |
| resid. deviance | 172.77 | | | | on 190 degrees of freedom | |

The respective case weights for each role are listed in Table 15 further below. Third, we refactor our measure of phrase weight from a scalar variable into a categorical one with four levels (< 5 characters, 6–8 characters, 9–12 characters, and ≥ 13 characters long) in order to simplify interpretation of model results.⁴

Figure 1 shows a binary classification tree,⁵ a visual representation of the output of a recursive partitioning algorithm. Starting from the top, each ‘node’ in the tree produces a ‘split’ in the data along the values of a predictor. Which values of which predictor are selected by the algorithm at which split in the tree is determined by how cleanly they divide the data (i.e. by reducing the rate of misclassification). For instance, the first split is between roles, differentiating

is treated as if it were $434 / 266 = 1.63$ data points instead.

⁴In a gradient boosting model, the estimation of the relative influence of the predictors in the model is based on how many major splits it produces over the many thousand iterations of tree-building; as a consequence, there is an inherent bias for predictors with many levels compared to, for instance, binary predictors, as the latter can only ever be selected once for a split in each iteration of the tree. Even with this change, since the other predictors in the model are all binary, we still need to account for a bias towards overvaluing phrase weight when assessing the results.

⁵Hyperparameters for the classification tree: maximum tree depth = 6; learning rate = 0.001; minimum number of observations in nodes = 10; cross-validation folds = 10. See Table 13 for the case weights applied to different roles.

Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand, Elham Izadi, Mehdi Parizadeh, Geoffrey Haig & Nils Schiborr

Table 14: Generalized linear regression model for other obliques

| model coefficients | | e^β | β | SE | z-val. | p-val. |
|---------------------------|---------------|-----------|---------|-------|---------------------------|--------|
| (intercept) | | 1.53 | 0.43 | 1.74 | 0.24 | 0.807 |
| register | = private | 4.08 | 1.41 | 1.10 | 1.28 | 0.199 |
| form | = pronominal | 0.38 | -0.98 | 0.86 | -1.14 | 0.256 |
| flagging | = preposition | 0.02 | -3.73 | 1.22 | -3.04 | < 0.01 |
| humanness | = human | 1.19 | 0.18 | 0.91 | 0.19 | 0.848 |
| weight | per character | 1.01 | 0.01 | 0.06 | 0.25 | 0.806 |
| <hr/> | | | | | | |
| deviance residuals | | | | | | |
| min. | lower | | median | upper | | max. |
| -2.13 | -0.38 | | -0.37 | -0.19 | | 2.52 |
| <hr/> | | | | | | |
| model evaluation | | | | | | |
| observations | 131 | | | | (17 post-verbal) | |
| null deviance | 101.12 | | | | on 130 degrees of freedom | |
| resid. deviance | 70.69 | | | | on 125 degrees of freedom | |

goals (which are overall 83% post-verbal) from all other roles (direct objects, locations/sources). Thus the observation from other WOWA data sets of Iranian languages (e.g. [Nourzaei & Haig 2024](#) [Chapter 4, Balochi, this volume]), that spatial goals are indeed a special case that need to be distinguished from all other roles, is confirmed in our analysis. The left branch then splits again along roles, and so on. Overall, we can identify three groups of leaf nodes: The two leftmost nodes are almost exclusively pre-verbal, containing, respectively, all direct objects, and locations/sources and other obliques in public speech. The two leaf nodes in the center contain data points that are around 20% post-verbal; they include locations/sources and other obliques in private speech that are either flagged with a preposition, or not flagged but non-human. Those that meet the latter set of criteria but are human instead are conversely 80% post-verbal; however, there are only 10 such cases in the corpus. The rightmost leaf node, as already noted above, contains all goals and is 83% post-verbal. It is important to note that while single tree models are nicely illustrative and (largely) intuitive to interpret, their predictions are not robust. Small changes to the data or the hyperparameters of the model can effect substantial differences in the structure of the resulting tree.

These shortcomings are addressed by so-called ensemble models. Unlike classification tree algorithms, gradient boosting machines (and other methods) do not fit a single tree to the data once but rather perform a self-improving fitting

7 Post-predicate elements in modern colloquial Persian

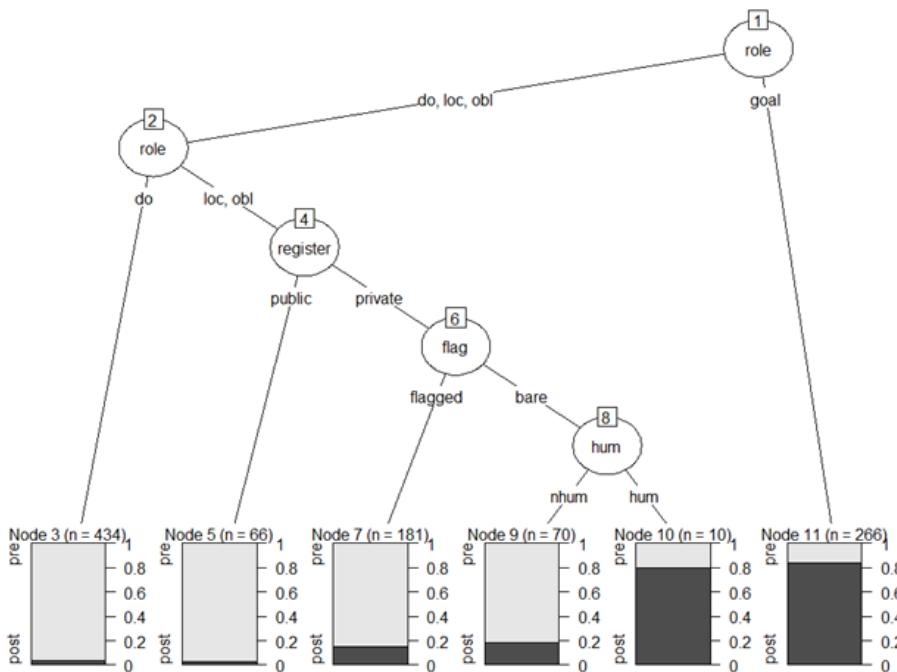


Figure 1: Binary classification tree.

process that learns as it goes, usually over thousands of iterations of trees. This greatly improves accuracy and allows each predictor to appear in a variety of contexts, thereby more thoroughly unraveling the often highly complex effects of the predictors on the response (Strobl et al. 2009: 336). The downside is that this makes the model results more difficult to interpret in their entirety, as there is no single ‘final’ tree generated by the model.

That said, there are nevertheless many ways of summarizing their output that offer critical insight into the relationships between the model parameters. One such way is by looking at the relative importance of each predictor, which is determined by how often a particular predictor was selected for a ‘split’ across the many thousand iterations of trees generated by the model. The results of this analysis can be found in Figure 2, which provides an answer to the question of the relative importance of different factors in determining whether a constituent is placed pre- or post-verbally. Unsurprisingly, the semantic role of the constituent is given predominant importance, a consequence of the practically diametrically opposed profiles of goals (chiefly post-verbal) and all other roles (largely pre-

Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand, Elham Izadi, Mehdi Parizadeh, Geoffrey Haig & Nils Schiborr

verbal, albeit to different degrees). Likewise unsurprising is the relative lack of importance of the other predictors in the model, a reflection of the results of the regression models in the previous section. In the grand scheme of things, the effect of register for placement of locations/sources that we had noted in the previous section fails to materialize as particularly influential, and the association of flagging for other oblique roles is only marginally more so. How much of the importance of phrase weight is due to biases in the structure of the predictors (see footnote above) is difficult to say, but given the lack of any sort of association in the regression models, it is unlikely to play much of a role.

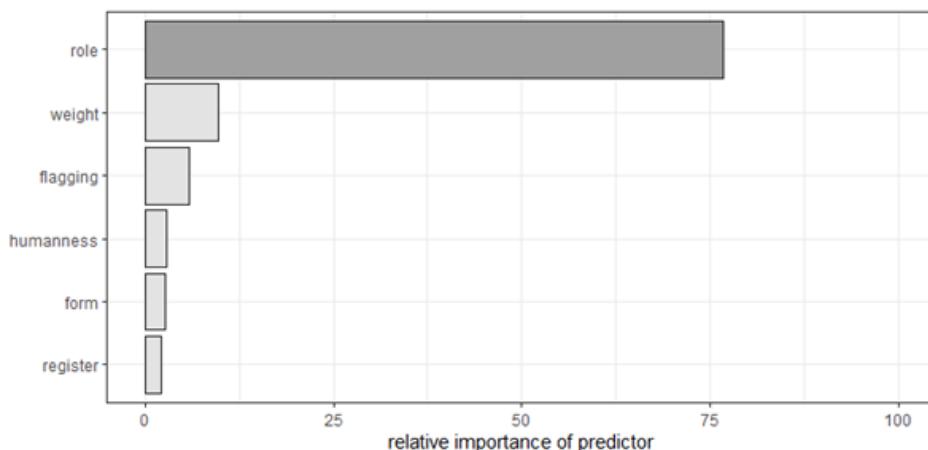


Figure 2: Relative importance of the predictors in the gradient boosting model.

In sum, both models unsurprisingly confirm the overwhelming impact of role as the single most important predictive factor. Specifically, in contemporary spoken Persian, noun phrases bearing the semantic role of goals of motion or caused motion are placed post-verbally with a very high probability, regardless of other factors. The other factors examined here play only a marginal role, with next most important predictor in this model being weight. The remaining predictors including humanness, form, and register turn out to have little impact overall, or their influence on word order are at best confined to specific contexts.

7 *Post-predicate elements in modern colloquial Persian*

Table 15: Parameters for the gradient boosting model

| | | |
|--|-----------|--|
| response | position | (pre-verbal, post-verbal) |
| predictors | role | (direct object, goal, location/sources, other oblique) |
| | register | (public, private) |
| | form | (nominal, pronominal) |
| | flagging | (none, flagged) |
| | humanness | (non-human, human) |
| | weight | (≤ 5, 6–8, 9–12, ≥ 13 characters) |
| error distribution function | | Bernoulli (for binary response variables) |
| observations | | 1027 (290 post-verbal) |
| model hyperparameters | | |
| number of trees | 10000 | |
| learning rate | 0.001 | |
| interaction depth | 7 | |
| min. obs. in nodes | 25 | |
| cross-validation folds | 10 | |
| case weights (balancing out differences in the number of observations across roles) | | |
| direct objects | × 1.00 | (434 obs.) |
| goals | × 1.63 | (266 obs.) |
| locations/sources | × 2.21 | (196 obs.) |
| other obliques | × 3.31 | (131 obs.) |

5 Comparing Frommer (1981) and the HamBam data: The role of register

Having presented Frommer’s (1981) data and our data from the HamBam corpus (Haig & Rasekh-Mahand 2022), we now undertake a more detailed comparison between the two, and address the question of register differentiation. First of all, we need to specify the nature of the register levels in the two data sets, and address the issue of comparability. As noted above in Section 2, Frommer’s (1981) data includes a mix of spoken and written corpora, and differing grades of formality within each. For Frommer’s (1981) spoken data, two levels of formality were included: casual conversational data in a domestic setting, and spoken language from the radio broadcasts of Radio Payām. We refer to these two registers as ‘private’ and ‘public’ respectively. The radio broadcasts included a mix of music, news “read in formal Persian”, pre-recorded commercials, but also spontaneous “banter between co-hosts, and often live telephone conversations between the hosts and the listeners” (Frommer 1981: 74). Frommer included only those sec-

Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand, Elham Izadi, Mehdi Parizadeh, Geoffrey Haig & Nils Schiborr

tions of the recordings which he considered “to be the most relaxed and spontaneous, and bore the phonological and morphological hallmarks of colloquial style”. The main difference between private and public spoken registers, as defined here, is that the former is exclusively between familiar persons in a private setting, while the latter involves a mix of familiar and unfamiliar interlocutors, produced with the knowledge that the language is publicly broadcast. Both, however, involve spoken, and largely spontaneous language.

We apply a similar distinction between private and public to the HamBam corpus. Recordings are characterized as ‘private’ when they stem from interactions in private settings, between familiar interlocutors (kin or close friends). Recordings characterized as ‘public’ are from publicly available sources such as radio and podcasts, often involving more academic and abstract subject matter, while still remaining quite spontaneous. Unfortunately, the amount of ‘public’ register in HamBam texts is not very high, so this aspect of the comparison is tentative. Table 16 provides an overview of the HamBam data that feed into the comparison.

Table 16: Frequency of post-predicate elements in private and public genres of HamBam corpus

| | total | public | % Po | private | % Po |
|---|-------|--------|-------|---------|-------|
| Total tokens | 3219 | 574 | 17.8% | 2645 | 82.2% |
| Number of analyzed tokens | 1624 | 273 | 16.8% | 1351 | 83.2% |
| Number of non-classified tokens | 1595 | 301 | 18.9% | 1294 | 81.1% |
| Rate of post-predicate elements (all roles) | 413 | 51 | 18.7% | 362 | 26.8% |

Note that the basic unit used for quantitative analysis in Frommer (1981) was the clause, whereas in HamBam, the basic unit is a referential, non-subject constituent. This makes a global comparisons of rates of postverbality difficult: Frommer calculates the proportion of clauses containing any post-verbal material among the totality of clauses in the corpus; our measure would be the proportion of all relevant constituents in the corpus that occur post-verbally. In fact, our metric is likely to make the overall value higher than Frommer’s (1981) (because we do not count, for example, clauses lacking a relevant non-subject constituent).

A role-specific comparison is more reliable, at least for those roles which are defined in a comparable way in both studies. Table 17 summarizes the findings for direct objects and goals, in both corpora, distinguishing the two spoken registers public vs. private.⁶ Post-verbal frequencies are grey-shaded.

⁶Data sources in Frommer (1981): Direct objects all: p.143, Table 11; with and without =rā: p. 143,

7 *Post-predicate elements in modern colloquial Persian*

Table 17: Comparing post-verbal frequencies for selected roles across two genres and two time periods

| | Frommer (1981) | | | | HamBam (2022) | | | |
|-------------------------------|----------------|------|---------|------|---------------|------|---------|------|
| | public | | private | | public | | private | |
| | N | %Po | N | %Po | N | %Po | N | %Po |
| Direct objects (all) | 337 | 0.9 | 646 | 4.2 | 80 | 3.8 | 356 | 4.9 |
| Direct objects (+ <i>rā</i>) | 178 | 1.1 | 224 | 9.4 | 47 | 4 | 193 | 5.1 |
| Direct objects (bare) | 159 | 0.6 | 422 | 1.4 | 33 | 3 | 163 | 2.5 |
| Goals (all) | 38 | 39.5 | 203 | 82.8 | 27 | 85 | 239 | 83 |
| Goals (PP) | 24 | 16.7 | 51 | 73.9 | 9 | 88.9 | 94 | 78.7 |
| Goals (bare) | 14 | 78.6 | 134 | 87.3 | 18 | 83.3 | 143 | 86.7 |
| Other PP (not goals) | 622 | 13 | 519 | 17.9 | 98 | 14.3 | 369 | 20 |

Considering first the private register, it is evident that little has changed between the late 1970's and 2020's: The frequency of post-predicate elements in the selected roles has remained more or less the same. There is nevertheless one important difference between the late 1970's and the 2020's: In Frommer's (1981) data, private and public spoken language differ, for all categories, and in the same direction (frequencies of postverbal placement increase between public and private), most notably for goals. In the recent HamBam data, on the other hand, the differences between public and private are negligible, and even go in the unexpected direction for some roles (for example in public speech, goals are overall slightly more frequently postposed than in private speech). In other words, in today's Persian there is almost no difference between private and public speech regarding the analyzed parameters. Figure 3 visualizes the difference between the two time periods with regard to register.

One way of interpreting these findings is in terms of 'levelling up' over the last 40 years. Apparently, 40 years ago the speech of the private domain was significantly different from the public domain with regard to post-verbal syntax. But today, the difference has largely disappeared, and public speech is now essentially identical to that of the old private domain. While levelling up is generally discussed in the context of dialects (regional variants, or variation based

Table 12; Goals (all): p. 130–131, Table 5; other PP (not Goals): p.160, Table 21. For "other PP (not goals)" in HamBam we included all tokens flagged with <prep> in Izadi (2022), excluding goals and direct objects. This may not be fully identical with Frommer's (1981) category of other PP's, so at this point, the comparison between the two data sets should be treated with caution.

Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand, Elham Izadi, Mehdi Parizadeh, Geoffrey Haig & Nils Schiborr

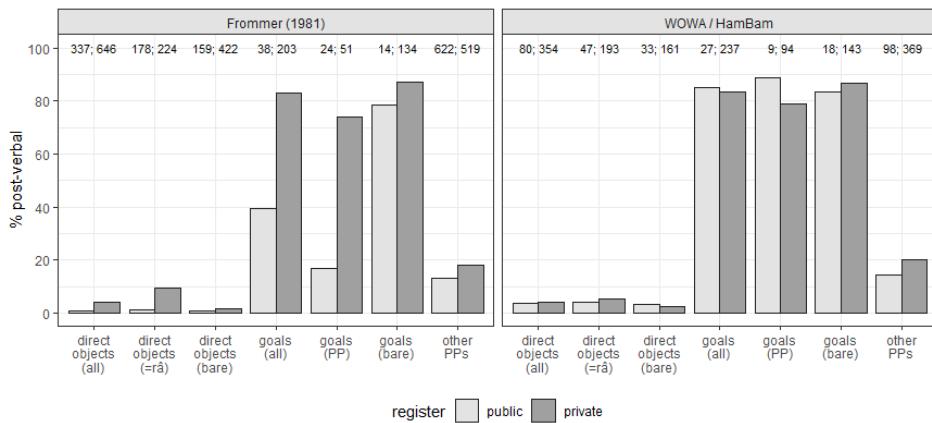


Figure 3: Register differences per role in spoken Persian 1981 and the 2020's respectively

on socio-economic status, Dillard (1972: 200), Trudgill (1986: 98–99), the relevant concept here would be ‘levelling up across registers’, where ‘register’ refers to “conventionalized and recurrent” intra-speaker variation in the way speakers adapt their utterances according to the context, and in particular on the perceived degree of formality (Pescuma et al. 2023: 2). With respect to Persian, our data suggest that at the time of Frommer’s (1981) research in the late 1970’s, speakers of Persian adapted their speech along the parameter of post-verbal placement of goals, distinguishing between public and private domains. In the 2020’s, however, it appears that the norms that were previously operative for the private domain have since spread to encompass spoken language in the public domain, i.e. that speakers no longer feel the necessity to adapt their speech in this regard (though other features of speech, such as lexical choice, phonology etc. continue to demarcate public and private speech situations).

These findings, though still tentative, open up a range of novel perspectives for understanding the dynamics of language change, particularly syntactic change. Thus while our data suggest that over the last 40 years, nothing has changed in the extreme values defined by the least formal register, by investigating different registers we are able to demonstrate that the distribution of this speech variant across different contexts has changed, namely in the form of levelling from below. This aligns with Labov’s (2001: 437) observations that change in features below the level of consciousness (which we believe holds for the syntactic phenomena under investigation here) initially “develop in spontaneous speech at the most informal level.”

7 Post-predicate elements in modern colloquial Persian

Returning to the question at the outset of this section then, we can tentatively conclude that private, informal speech has not changed noticeably in the last 40 years. For this register, our findings confirm Frommer's (1981) findings, suggesting a rather stable linguistic variable. Where we have identified a difference is that 40 years ago, there existed a more formal kind of 'public' spoken language, distinguished from private speech by lower levels of post-verbal goals. In our more recent data, this register appears to have merged with that of private speech.

6 Summary

Building on the pioneering work of Frommer (1981), this chapter is the most comprehensive and accountable analysis of post-predicate elements in spoken Persian currently available. We base our findings on a purpose-built and fully-accessible digital corpus of spoken colloquial Persian, the Hamedan-Bamberg Corpus of Contemporary Spoken Persian (HamBam, Haig & Rasekh-Mahand 2022), which we have adapted to the WOWA coding conventions (Izadi 2022). While the corpus size is modest in comparison to the written language corpora that underpin most contemporary corpus-based research on Persian (Faghiri et al. 2018, Faghiri & Samvelian 2020, among others), our data identify systematic differences between spoken and written Persian syntax; we conclude that generalizations regarding Persian syntax *per se* need to be tested for both modes of language production.

In the context of the present volume, we note that spoken Persian exhibits traits that are shared with the spoken Iranian languages of Western Asia (e.g. Balochi, see Nourzaei & Haig 2024 [Chapter 4, this volume]; Gorani and Kurdish, see Mohammadirad 2024 [Chapter 9, this volume]), most notably the strong tendency to place goals post-verbally. In this sense, the spoken Persian investigated here is more typical for Western Iranian languages than the standard written variety of Persian, which is quite strictly verb-final (for early classical Persian, see Parizadeh & Rasekh-Mahand 2024 [Chapter 8, this volume]). We also consider whether spoken Persian has undergone any changes over the last 40–50 years, through a comparison of our findings with those of Frommer (1981). As mentioned, there are certain difficulties with comparing the metrics used in both studies; furthermore, Frommer's (1981) original data are not available to us for verification. But for those measures which can be reliably compared, we find no difference in frequencies of post-verbal goals or direct objects, in the least formal sections of the samples at least, which leads us to conclude that the >80% levels of

Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand, Elham Izadi, Mehdi Parizadeh, Geoffrey Haig & Nils Schiborr

post-verbal goals is a fairly stable variable in spoken Persian (it is also the value identified in another corpus of spoken Persian, [Adibifar 2019](#)). We do, however, find a difference in the way that post-verbal placement of goals is mediated according to register. In the older sample, the public register exhibits lower levels of post-verbal goals than the private register. This finding is consistent with the general consensus that standard written Persian, the pole of maximal formality, is a verb-final language, i.e. with negligible rates of post-verbal elements. From this perspective, the more formal registers of spoken Persian would be expected to be nearer to the extreme level of formality found in formal written Persian, in keeping with [Frommer's \(1981\)](#) conclusion regarding formality effects on word order. In our contemporary spoken data, however, we found no significant effects of register. This suggests that today's spoken language has extended what was the informal, private register, to more public settings. We assume, however, that the written language remains overwhelmingly verb final, though we have not investigated this systematically here. Spoken language may thus be prone to relatively rapid '[change](#)', but it is not the structures themselves that change; rather, it is the social indexing attached to the already available structures.

In Section 4 we conducted two different kinds of multi-variate analysis on the HamBam data in order to provide a statistically more rigorous answer to the question of what drives post-verbal placement in spoken Persian. The results confirm the effect of role, most specifically goals versus the rest, which swamps most other factors. The logistic regression model identified effects of register and flagging, but only for specific roles; in the boosted decision trees, these effects turn out as marginal. Thus overall we find little evidence for a consistent effect of weight, humanness, or form. However, we note that our analysis is relatively coarse-grained, and a more detailed examination of individual contexts may well uncover additional predictors that were missed in our model.

7 *Post-predicate elements in modern colloquial Persian***Abbreviations**

| | | | |
|-------|------------------------|-------|-----------------------------------|
| COP | copula | PTCPL | participle |
| DEF | definite | RA | object-marking clitic = <i>rā</i> |
| DEIC | deictic | REL | relative |
| DEM | demonstrative | SBJV | subjunctive |
| DRCT | directional | SG | singular |
| EXIST | existential | V | verb |
| EZ | ezafe | Loc | locative |
| FUT | future | Abl | ablative |
| IND | indicative | Ben | beneficiary |
| n | total number of tokens | Addr | Addressee |
| NEG | negator | Instr | Instrumental |
| PL | plural | WOWA | = Haig et al. (2022) |
| Po | post-posed | 1 | first person |
| PP | prepositional phrase | 2 | second person |
| PRS | present | 3 | third person |
| PST | past | | |

References

- Adibifar, Shirin. 2019. Multi-CAST Persian translated texts. In Geoffrey Haig & Stefan Schnell (eds.), *Multi-CAST: Multilingual corpus of annotated spoken texts*. Bamberg: Bamberg University Press. multicast.aspra.uni-bamberg.de/ (10 July, 2023).
- Asadpour, Hiwa. 2022. Word order in Mukri Kurdish - The case of incorporated targets. In Hiwa Asadpour & Thomas Jügel (eds.), *Word order variation: Semitic, Turkic and Indo-European languages in contact*, 63–87. Berlin: De Gruyter Mouton.
- Dillard, J. L. 1972. *Black English: its history and usage in United States*. New York: Random House.
- Dryer, Matthew S. 1992. The Greenbergian word order correlations. *Language* 68. 81–138.
- Faghiri, Pegah & Pollet Samvelian. 2020. Word order preferences and the effect of phrasal length in SOV languages: Evidence from sentence production in Persian. *Glossa: A journal of general linguistics* 5(1). DOI: [10.5334/GJGL.1078](https://doi.org/10.5334/GJGL.1078).

Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand, Elham Izadi, Mehdi Parizadeh, Geoffrey Haig & Nils Schiborr

- Faghiri, Pegah, Pollet Samvelian & Barbara Hemforth. 2014. Accessibility and word order: The case of ditransitive constructions in Persian. *Proceedings of the 21st International Conference on Head-Driven Phrase Structure Grammar*. 217–237. DOI: [10.21248/hpsg.2014.12](https://doi.org/10.21248/hpsg.2014.12).
- Faghiri, Pegah, Pollet Samvelian & Barbara Hemforth. 2018. Is there a canonical order in Persian ditransitive constructions? Corpus based and experimental studies. In Agnes Korn & Andrej Malchukov (eds.), *Ditransitive constructions in a cross-linguistic perspective*, 165–185. Wiesbaden: Reichert.
- Friedman, Jerome H. 2001. Greedy function approximation: A gradient boosting machine. *Annals of Statistics* 29(5). 1189–1232. DOI: [10.1214/aos/1013203451](https://doi.org/10.1214/aos/1013203451).
- Frommer, Paul. 1981. *Post-verbal phenomena in colloquial Persian syntax*. Los Angeles: University of Southern California. (Doctoral dissertation).
- Haig, Geoffrey. 2017. *Post-predicate arguments in Iranian languages. Keynote lecture, seventh international conference on Iranian languages (ICIL7), Lomonosov Moscow State University, 28-30th August 2017*.
- Haig, Geoffrey. 2022. Post-predicate constituents in Kurdish. In Yaron Matras, Geoffrey Haig & Ergin Öpengin (eds.), *Structural and typological variation in the dialects of Kurdish*, 335–377. Cham: Springer International Publishing. DOI: [10.1007/978-3-030-78837-7_8](https://doi.org/10.1007/978-3-030-78837-7_8).
- Haig, Geoffrey & Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand. 2019. *Post-predicate elements in Iranian and neighbouring languages: Inheritance, contact, and information structure. Position paper, for the project on post-predicate constituents in Iranian and neighbouring languages*. (10 July, 2023).
- Haig, Geoffrey & Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand. 2022. *HamBam: The Hamedan-Bamberg corpus of contemporary spoken Persian*. multicast.aspra.uni-bamberg.de/resources/hambam/ (10 July, 2023).
- Haig, Geoffrey, Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand, Donald Stilo, Laurentia Schreiber & Nils N. Schiborr. 2024. Post-predicate elements in the Western Asian Transition Zone: Data, theory, and methods. In Geoffrey Haig, Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand, Donald Stilo, Laurentia Schreiber & Nils N. Schiborr (eds.), *Post-predicate elements in the Western Asian Transition Zone: A corpus-based approach to areal typology*, 1–49. Berlin: Language Science Press.
- Haig, Geoffrey, Donald Stilo, Mahir C. Doğan & Nils N. Schiborr. 2022. *WOWA – Word Order in Western Asia: A spoken-language-based corpus for investigating areal effects in word order variation*. Bamberg. multicast.aspra.uni-bamberg.de/resources/wowa/.
- Haiman, John. 1980. The iconicity of grammar: Isomorphism and motivation. *Language* 56(3). 515–540. DOI: [10.2307/414448](https://doi.org/10.2307/414448).

7 *Post-predicate elements in modern colloquial Persian*

- Hawkins, John A. 2008. An asymmetry between VO and OV languages: The ordering of obliques. In Greville Corbett & Michael Noonan (eds.), *Case and grammatical relations: Studies in honor of Bernard Comrie*, 167–190. Amsterdam: Benjamins. DOI: doi.org/10.1075/tsl.81.08ana.
- Izadi, Elham. 2022. Persian (New). In Geoffrey Haig, Donald Stilo, Nils N. Schiborr & Mahîr Dogan (eds.), *WOWA – Word Order in Western Asia: A spoken-language-based corpus for investigating areal effects in word order variation*. Bamberg: University of Bamberg. multicast.aspra.uni-bamberg.de/resources/wowa/.
- Jahani, Carina. 2018. Post-verbal arguments in Balochi. Paper presented at the *International Conference on Anatolia-Caucasus-Iran: Ethnic and linguistic contacts (ACIC)*, Yerevan University, 10–12 May.
- Korn, Agnes. 2022. Targets and other post-verbal arguments in Southern Balochi: A multidimensional cline. In Hiwa Asadpour & Thomas Jügel (eds.), *Word order variation – Semitic, Turkic and Indo-European languages in contact*, 89–128. Berlin: De Gruyter Mouton. DOI: [10.1515/9783110790368-005](https://doi.org/10.1515/9783110790368-005).
- Labov, William. 2001. *Principles of linguistic change, vol. 2: Social factors*. Malden, MA: Blackwell Publishers.
- Lazard, Gilbert. 1957. *Grammaire du Persan contemporain*. Paris: Klincksieck.
- Mohammadirad, Masoud. 2024. Zagros region: The Kurdish-Gorani continuum. In Geoffrey Haig, Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand, Donald Stilo, Laurentia Schreiber & Nils N. Schiborr (eds.), *Post-predicate elements in the Western Asian Transition Zone: A corpus-based approach to areal typology*, 231–264. Berlin: Language Science Press.
- Nourzaei, Maryam & Geoffrey Haig. 2024. Balochi: A cross-dialect investigation of post-verbal elements. In Geoffrey Haig, Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand, Donald Stilo, Laurentia Schreiber & Nils N. Schiborr (eds.), *Post-predicate elements in the Western Asian Transition Zone: A corpus-based approach to areal typology*, 111–143. Berlin: Language Science Press.
- Parizadeh, Mehdi & Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand. 2024. Post-predicate elements in Early New Persian (10-13th Century CE). In Geoffrey Haig, Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand, Donald Stilo, Laurentia Schreiber & Nils N. Schiborr (eds.), *Post-predicate elements in the Western Asian Transition Zone: A corpus-based approach to areal typology*, 217–229. Berlin: Language Science Press.
- Pescuma, Valentina N., Dina Serova, Julia Lukassek, Antje Sauermann, Roland Schäfer, Aria Adli, Felix Bildhauer, Markus Egg, Kristina Hülk, Aine Ito, Stefanie Jannedy, Valia Kordon, Milena Kuehnast, Silvia Kutscher, Robert Lange, Nico Lehmann, Mingya Liu, Beate Lütke, Katja Maquate, Christine Mooshamer, Vahid Mortezapour, Stefan Müller, Muriel Norde, Elizabeth Pankratz, An-

Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand, Elham Izadi, Mehdi Parizadeh, Geoffrey Haig & Nils Schiborr

- gela G. Patarroyo, Ana-M. Pleșca, Camilo R. Ronderos, Stephanie Rotter, Uli Sauerland, Gohar Schnelle, Britta Schulte, Gediminas Schüppenhauer, Bianka M. Sell, Stephanie Solt, Megumi Terada, Dimitra Tsipou, Elisabeth Verhoeven, Melanie Weirich, Heike Wiese, Kathy Zaruba, Lars E. Zeige, Anke Lüdeling & Pia Knoeferle. 2023. Situating language register across the ages, languages, modalities, and cultural aspects: Evidence from complementary methods. *Frontiers in Psychology* 13. 964658. DOI: [10.3389/fpsyg.2022.964658](https://doi.org/10.3389/fpsyg.2022.964658).
- Skopeteas, Stavros. 2024. Post-predicate prosody in OV languages. In Geoffrey Haig, Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand, Donald Stilo, Laurentia Schreiber & Nils N. Schiborr (eds.), *Post-predicate elements in the Western Asian Transition Zone: A corpus-based approach to areal typology*, 81–110. Berlin: Language Science Press.
- Stilo, Donald. 2018. Preverbal and postverbal peripheral arguments in the Araxes-Iran linguistic area. Paper presented at the *Conference Anatolia-Caucasus-Iran: Ethnic and Linguistic Contacts* 10-12 May 2018. Yerevan University, Yerevan, Armenia.
- Strobl, Carolin, James Malley & Gerhard Tutz. 2009. An introduction to recursive partitioning: Rationale, application, and characteristics of classification and regression trees, bagging, and random forests. *Psychological Methods* 14(4). 323–348. DOI: [10.1037/a0016973](https://doi.org/10.1037/a0016973).
- Trudgill, Peter. 1986. *Dialects in contact*. Oxford: Blackwell.

Chapter 8

Post-predicate elements in Early New Persian (10–13th Century CE)

Mehdi Parizadeh^a & Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand^a

^aBu-Ali Sina University, Hamedan

In this chapter, we investigate post-predicate elements in written Early New Persian texts from four different sources, covering the 10th to 13th centuries. The analysis shows that post-predicate elements are overall far less frequent than in contemporary spoken Persian corpora, and that the effect of semantic role is negligible. In the written texts investigated here, post-verbal elements do not form a semantically homogenous group, and goals are not more prone to postposing than other roles. However, we do find an overall effect of weight, with heavier constituents more likely to be postposed, as well as an effect of register.

1 Introduction

The history of Persian language is normally divided into three main eras: Old Persian (OP) (6th to 4th century B.C.E), Middle Persian (MP) (3rd to 7th century C.E.), and New Persian (NP) (8th to present time). The New Persian era is subdivided differently by different scholars (see [Paul 2019: 572–576](#)), but normally the first four centuries are referred to as Early New Persian, which has some peculiar morpho-syntactic features. [Paul \(2019: 576\)](#) gives the following subdivisions: Early New Persian (8th -12th centuries), Standard New Persian (13th -19th centuries) and Modern (High New) Persian (19th century-present). In this study, we analyze the post-predicate elements from a selection of texts written in Early New Persian. Since [there is not](#) authentic written materials from the first two centuries, our corpus covers materials from 10th to 13th centuries. Post-predicate elements are reportedly frequent in contemporary spoken Persian ([Frommer 1981](#),

Mehdi Parizadeh & Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand

Rasekh-Mahand et al. 2024 [Chapter 7, this volume]). Lazard (1963) is among the first studies which dealt with constituent order in ENP. This study focuses on written materials from the first records of New Persian, in search of similarities and differences between them. A further important source for ENP are Early Judaeo-Persian texts, written mainly from the 10–12 centuries CE. The Early Judaeo-Persian corpus contains autographs of private letters that represent an authentic colloquial style that are hardly found in ENP literary texts, their analysis could broaden our understanding of word order in ENP (Paul 2013), but lie beyond the scope of the current study. Persian boasts a rich legacy of written texts, affording scholars the opportunity to scrutinize the attributes of this language over the course of centuries. Although various aspects of the language have been examined from a historical standpoint, no prior research has addressed the post-predicate phenomena. By shedding light on word order in Early New Persian, this study brings a much-needed historical perspective into the discussion and a point of departure for quantitative studies on historical Persian (and Iranian) syntax. It also contrasts with the majority of studies in this volume, which focus on spoken language

2 The corpus

Four books from the Early New Persian were selected: *Tārikh Tabari* (10th cent.), *Qābusnameh* (11th cent.), *Tazkerat al-Olyā* (12th cent.) and *Fihe mā Fih* (13th cent.). Regarding the sampling methodology, approximately 2000 words (five pages) were selected from each book and included in the sample. It is noteworthy that all the selected pages were the first pages of their respective books, with the exception of *Tārikh Tabari* (10th cent.) which was limited to pages 414–419. These samples yielded in total 2228 tokens of non-subject constituents for the analysis. Further details about these texts are briefly introduced in the subsequent sections.

Tārikh Tabari (10th cent.) is written by Mohammad Ibn Jarir al-Tabari, who was a Persian historian and Islamic scholar from Tabarestan, north of Iran. This book is one of the most reliable and famous references for understanding the history of religions and prophets in Iran. The book begins with the creation time and recounts stories of the prophets and kings until the time of the prophet of Islam. In the first part, it narrates the history before Islam, and in the second part the history after Islam. This book is among the oldest texts available from Early New Persian. From the 11th century, we have used *Qābusnameh*, written by Onsor al-Ma’ali KeyKavus Ibn Iskandar-e Ziyāri, the ruler of parts of Tabarestan, north of Iran. It is arranged in 44 chapters besides an introduction. It is dedicated

8 Post-predicate elements in Early New Persian (10–13th Century CE)

to his son, Gilānshāh. In this book, he gives advice to his son as a guidance for his governance. He discusses issues such as military practices and social customs.

Tazkerat al-Oliyā (12th cent.) is a hagiographic collection of ninety-six Sufi stories by the Persian poet and mystic, Farīd al-Dīn Attār. Attār’s only surviving prose work has 72 chapters, beginning with the life of the Sixth Shi’ā Imam, and ending with the Sufi Martyr, Mansur Hallāj. The lives of the Sufis in this book are set in a more or less uniform format. Each biography starts with a set of embellished phrases, rhyming with one another and mentioning the subject’s name, and alluding to his or her attributes before expounding on them through stories about their lives, and then by quotations from their sayings. We have excluded these sections from our analysis.

Fihe Mā Fih (13th cent.) is in prose and written by Molānā Jalāl al-Dīn Mohammad Balkhi (Rumi). Its subject is mystical criticism and interpretations and it includes the notes that Rumi spoke in his meetings during 30 years, and were written by his students. The text is simple and it contains mystical, religious and moral matters.

Table 1 shows the general information and the overall frequency of post-predicate non-subject elements in these selected texts. (TT stands for *Tārikh Tabari* (10th cent.), QA stands for *Qābusnāmeh* (11th cent.), TO stands for *Tazkerat al-Oliyā* (12th cent.), FF stands for *Fihe Mā Fih* (13th cent.).

Table 1: Overview of the Early New Persian text corpus

| | TT (10 C.) | QA (11 C.) | TO (12 C.) | FF (13 C.) |
|---------------------------------|------------|------------|------------|------------|
| Sample length (words) | 2945 | 2322 | 2447 | 2015 |
| Total number of tokens | 694 | 521 | 541 | 505 |
| Number of non-classified tokens | 166 | 81 | 109 | 100 |
| % post-pred tokens | 0% | 9.7% | 4.4% | 3.7% |

3 Post-predicate elements in different roles

The analysis reveals that the rate of post-predicate elements in a written corpus derived from Early New Persian exhibits certain peculiarities in comparison to the spoken-language corpora in WOWA. The primary observation is that the overall frequency of post-predicate elements is markedly low. The range of post-verbal elements varies between zero in *Tārikh Tabari* to approximately 10 percent

Mehdi Parizadeh & Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand

in *Qābusnāmeh*, while *Tazkerat al-Oliyā* and *Fihe Mā Fih* have an average of approximately 4 percent. Out of the total of 1819 tokens analyzed, only 89 were found to be in post-predicate position, which amounts to an average of 4.8 percent.

The second point to be noted is that the occurrence of post-predicate elements in written discourse is significantly influenced by the register, the content of the text, and the personal style of the writer. For instance, in *Tārikh Tabari* (10th century), which is a historical account of important events and figures, the writer has adopted a highly formal writing style, and consequently, no elements in post-predicate position are found. Conversely, in *Qābusnāmeh* (11th century), which is a father's advice to his son, the writer employs a more informal style due to the subject matter, and as a result, the text displays the highest frequency of post-posed elements. Thus, the variation in the frequency of post-predicate elements may be attributed to the register, as demonstrated by Frommer (1981) for different varieties of spoken and written informal Persian (Rasekh-Mahand et al. 2024 [Chapter 7, this volume]). The number of analyzed tokens and frequency of post-predicate elements for the whole corpus is presented in Table 2:

Table 2: Frequency of post-predicate elements in Early New Persian

| | | |
|---|------|-------|
| Total length | 2261 | 100% |
| Number of analyzed tokens | 1807 | 79.9% |
| Number of non-classified tokens | 454 | 20.1% |
| Rate of post-predicate elements (all roles) | 77 | 4.3% |

The non-classified tokens are mainly those which do not have a verb and could not be analyzed. According to the Table 2, the overall frequency of post-posed elements in Early New Persian is determined to be about 4.8%. As no comparable study on written texts in Persian is available, a comparison with such texts could not be made. However, when compared with other studies on Persian post-predicate elements, the rate is found to be significantly lower than those observed in spoken New Persian (Frommer 1981, Rasekh-Mahand et al. 2024 [Chapter 7, this volume]). Frommer (1981) reports 16.6% and 12.6% of post-predicate elements for informal and formal spoken Persian, respectively. Rasekh-Mahand et al. (2024 [Chapter 2, this volume]) report 18.7% for public register and 26.8% for private register. Contemporary research on word order in formal written Persian does not actually consider post-predicate elements, focusing solely on the ordering of elements (e.g. direct and indirect objects) before the verb (Faghiri et al. 2014,

8 Post-predicate elements in Early New Persian (10–13th Century CE)

(Faghiri & Samvelian 2020). Thus, the general observation is that post-predicate phenomena are less frequent in writing.

In the remaining part of this section, we examine the different roles and frequency of elements in post-predicate position, and provide examples from various roles. It is worth noting that most of the roles contain a limited number of tokens, and post-verbal placement is characterized by exceptionally low frequencies. In Early New Persian, the benefactive role exhibits the highest proportion of post-predicate elements, with 10 out of 57 occurrences appearing in post-predicate position. The following are some examples:

(1) Benefactive:

Early New Persian (Parizadeh 2022: C, 259)

tazkere-i sāxt-am olīyā rā

biography-INDEF build.PST-1SG clergies RA

‘I created a biography for the clergies.’

In example (1), the benefactive is marked with *rā*. According to Rasekh-Mahand & Parizadeh (2024), it is not uncommon for the benefactive role to be marked by *rā* in addition to other roles in Early New Persian texts. Out of the ten tokens of benefactives in post-predicate position, four are marked by *rā*.

Tokens categorized as ‘Other’ represent the most frequent type of role found in post-predicate position, with a total of 50 out of 508 occurrences. The following examples demonstrate their appearance in post-verbal position:

(2) Other:

Early New Persian (Parizadeh 2022: D, 221)

va vey rā vasiyat na-kard-i be tafsīl

and 3SG RA will NEG-do.PST-2SG to details

‘And you did not bequeath him in detail.’

(3) Other:

Early New Persian (Parizadeh 2022: B, 436)

darviš-i miy-ām-ad pāy berahne

poor-INDEF IND-come.PST-3SG feet bare

‘A poor man was coming on foot.’

(4) Other:

Early New Persian (Parizadeh 2022: C, 52)

yek ketāb-e digar mi-bāyest jodāgāne

one book-EZ other IND-must.3SG separately

‘There must be another book separately.’

Mehdi Parizadeh & Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand

Out of the 57 tokens classified as ablatives, only three appear in post-verbal position. Similarly, among the 42 tokens of stimulus, only two tokens are found in post-verbal position. Only one token from 28 as instrument has appeared in post-predicate position:

(5) Ablative:

Early New Persian (Parizadeh 2022: B, 346)

valikan qaraz dar ruze mehr-i ast az xodāvand-e molk
but aim in fasting love-INDF be.PRS.3SG from God-EZ world
bar molk-e xiš
to world-EZ self

‘The purpose of fasting is the love that God has for his created world.’

(6) Stimulus:

Early New Persian (Parizadeh 2022: C, 3)

va jamā?ati az dust-ān rā raqbatī tamām mi-did-am be
and people from friends-PL RA interested much IND-see.PST-1SG to
soxan-e in qom
word-EZ this group

‘And I saw some friends were very interested in the words of this group.’

(7) Stimulus:

Early New Persian (Parizadeh 2022: C, 4)

va ma-rā niz meyl-i azim bud be motāle?e-ye ahvāl va
and 1SG-RA too desire-INDF great be.PST.3SG to study-EZ vita and
soxan-e išān
utterance-EZ 3PL

‘I was very interested in studying their lives and sayings.’

(8) Instrument:

Early New Persian (Parizadeh 2022: D, 110)

ke mi-bin-am be češm-e sar
that IND-see.PRS-1SG with eye-EZ head
‘That I see through the eyes in my head.’

The number of locatives in out corpus is 93, from which 2 tokens appear post-verbally:

8 Post-predicate elements in Early New Persian (10–13th Century CE)

(9) Locative:

Early New Persian (Parizadeh 2022: D, 324)

surat-hā-ye xub namāy-ad dar šekam-e ān surat-hā-ye bad
form-PL-EZ good show.PRS-3SG in abdomen-EZ that form-PL-EZ bad
'He shows good forms inside bad forms.'

(10) Locative:

Early New Persian (Parizadeh 2022: C, 297)

ke in če dard bud-e ast dar jān-hā-ye išān
that this what pain be.PS T-PTCP is in heart-PL-EZ their
'That which was a pain in their hearts.'

In all other Iranian languages examined in the WOWA data set, the highest rate of post-verbal elements is associated with goals of motion and caused motion verbs. However, in Early New Persian texts, only one instance out of 59 was discovered in post-verbal position, and there is no indication of a tendency toward goal-last placement as observed in other languages.

(11) Goal:

Early New Persian (Parizadeh 2022: B, 223)

va hame-ye peyqāmbar-ān rā be rāstgui dān-ad az ādam
and all-EZ prophet-PL ra to truthfulness know.PRS-3SG from Adam
tā peyqāmbar-e mā Mohammad
till prophet-EZ 1PL mohammad
'And he considers all the prophets from Adam to our Prophet Mohammad
to be truthful.'

Out of the 67 tokens of complements of 'become', only one is found in post-predicate position. Complements of copular verbs typically precede the verb, but among the 304 instances, three have been observed in post-verbal position.

(12) Complements of 'become':

Early New Persian (Parizadeh 2022: B, 69)

yā be tarkib az do bov-ad čon jesm
or in combination from two become.PRS-3SG like body
'And in combination it becomes one from two things like body.'

Mehdi Parizadeh & Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand

- (13) Copula complements:

Early New Persian (Parizadeh 2022: B, 2)

ke hiččiz ni-st az budani va nābudani
so nothing NEG-be.PRS.3SG from being and non-being
'There is nothing either being or non-being.'

- (14) Copula complements:

Early New Persian (Parizadeh 2022: B, 15)

va mesāl-e šenāxtan čon manquš ast va šenāsande čon naqāš
and example-EZ recognition like paint is and recognizer like painter
'And the example of recognition to recognizer is like paint to painter.'

In Early New Persian, direct objects typically appear before the verb. In our dataset, only four tokens out of 464 were observed in post-verbal position:

- (15) Direct object:

Early New Persian (Parizadeh 2022: C, 115)

tā be-dān-i fazl-e išān va eflās-e xod
until SBJ-know.PRS-2SG privilege-EZ 3PL and misery-EZ self
'So that you understand their privilege and your own misery.'

Thus far, we have examined the placement of various constituents in relation to the verb in Early New Persian. In terms of preverbal arguments, benefactives and other roles exhibit a relatively high frequency in post-predicate position, accounting for 60 out of 77 post-verbal tokens. On the other hand, some roles such as addressee, comitative, recipient, and possessive are not attested in post-predicate position. Other roles, comprising only 16 tokens, are rarely observed in post-predicate position. Table 3 shows the total number of clauses in relation to post and preverbal positions for each verb argument.

Figure 1 illustrates the proportions of post-predicate placement for different constituents in Early New Persian.

Table 4 presents the frequency of post-predicate elements in each century, with the exception of *Tārikh Tabari* (10th century), which did not contain any post-predicate elements and is therefore not included in this table.

The table reveals that the majority of post-predicate elements occur in *Qābus-nāmeh* (11th century), which is known for its informal register in comparison to other texts.

8 *Post-predicate elements in Early New Persian (10–13th Century CE)*

Table 3: Early New Persian

| | Total number of clauses | preverbal | postverbal | preverbal | postverbal |
|--------------------------|----------------------------|-----------|------------|-----------|------------|
| Benefactive | 57 | 47 | 10 | 82.5% | 17.5% |
| Other | 508 | 458 | 50 | 91.2% | 9.8% |
| Ablative | 57 | 54 | 3 | 94.7% | 5.3% |
| Stimulus | 42 | 40 | 2 | 95.2% | 4.8% |
| Instrumental | 28 | 27 | 1 | 96.4% | 3.6% |
| Locative | 93 | 91 | 2 | 97.9% | 2.1% |
| Goal | 59 | 58 | 1 | 98.3% | 1.7% |
| Become complement | 67 | 66 | 1 | 98.5% | 1.5% |
| Copular complement | 304 | 301 | 3 | 99% | 1% |
| Direct object | 464 | 460 | 4 | 99.2% | 0.8% |
| Addressee | 46 | 46 | 0 | 100% | 0% |
| Comitative | 17 | 17 | 0 | 100% | 0% |
| Goal (caused motion) | 14 | 14 | 0 | 100% | 0% |
| Recipient | 18 | 18 | 0 | 100% | 0% |
| Recipient + Benefactive | 16 | 16 | 0 | 100% | 0% |
| Possessive | 17 | 17 | 0 | 100% | 0% |
| Total | 1807 | 1730 | 77 | 95.7% | 4.3% |

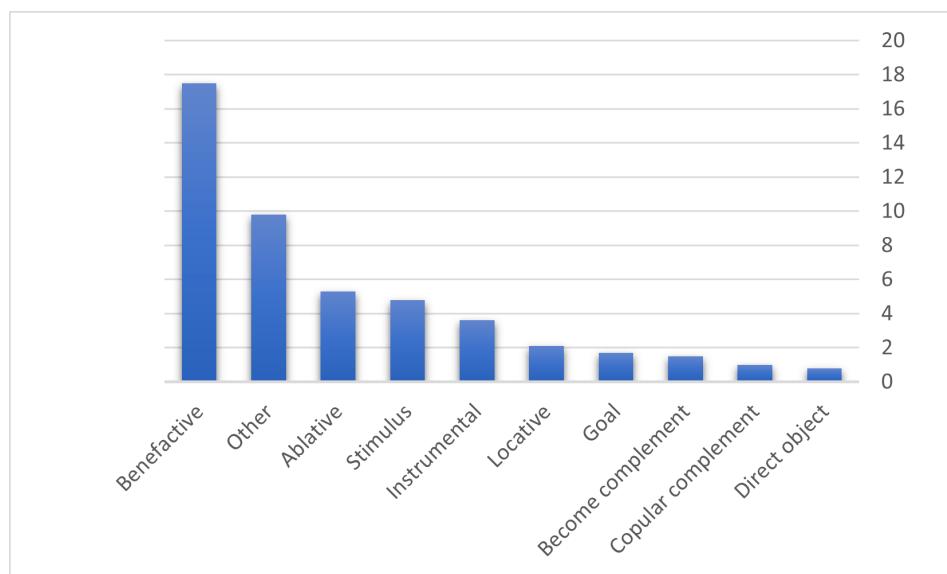


Figure 1: Post-predicate placement of different constituents in Early New Persian

Mehdi Parizadeh & Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand

Table 4: Post-predicate elements in three centuries

| | benefactive | other | ablative | stimulus | instrument | Locative | goal | become complements | copula complements | direct object | Total |
|----------------|-------------|-------|----------|----------|------------|----------|------|--------------------|--------------------|---------------|-------|
| QA. 11th cent. | 5 | 31 | 2 | 0 | 1 | 1 | 1 | 3 | 0 | 45 | |
| TO. 12th cent. | 4 | 10 | 1 | 2 | 0 | 1 | 0 | 0 | 1 | 19 | |
| FF. 13th cent. | 1 | 9 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 0 | 3 | 13 | |

4 Heaviness

The impact of heaviness or weight on word order has been extensively discussed in the field of linguistics, with scholars such as Behaghel (1909), Quirk et al. (1972), Hawkins (1995), Wasow (1997), and Arnold et al. (2000) among others exploring this phenomenon. Some argue that in VO languages, short constituents tend to precede heavy ones (Wasow 1997, Stallings et al. 1998, Hawkins 1990, 1995), while others maintain that the reverse order holds (Yamashita & Chang 2001). Several studies have examined the effect of weight on word order in Persian (e.g., Rasekh-Mahand et al. 2016, Faghiri & Samvelian 2014, 2020, Faghiri et al. 2014, 2018), providing various analyses and occasionally conflicting results (for a detailed review, see Rasekh-Mahand et al. 2024 [Chapter 7, this volume]). We investigated the impact of weight on post-predicate placement in our dataset, adopting the basic classification of constituent weight applied in WOWA, which recognizes four classes: w1, consisting of one phonological word; w2, consisting of two phonological words; w3, consisting of three phonological words; and w4, consisting of four or more words. Table 5 demonstrates that as the weight of the token increases, the likelihood of appearing in post-predicate position also increases.

Table 5: Weight analysis in Early New Persian

| Weight | W1 | W2 | W3 | W>=4 |
|----------------|------|------|-----|------|
| Post-predicate | 27 | 28 | 13 | 9 |
| Total | 1100 | 471 | 143 | 93 |
| Percent | 2.5% | 5.9% | 9% | 9.7% |

The transition between groups w1 and w2, as well as between w2 and w4, exhibits a noticeable jump in post-predicate placement probability, as illustrated in Figure 2. While the difference between groups w3 and w4 is not as substantial, it is still discernible.

8 Post-predicate elements in Early New Persian (10–13th Century CE)

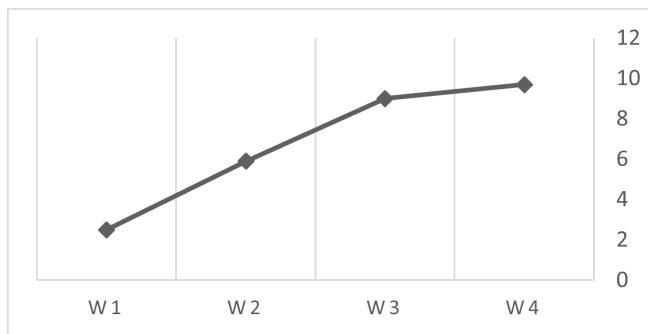


Figure 2: Weight effects on post-predicate elements in Early New Persian

Our findings indicate that weight is a factor for predicting post-predicate placement in written Early New Persian. This is consistent with much of the corpus-based literature (Hawkins 1995, Stallings et al. 1998, Arnold et al. 2000), and is particularly intriguing in the context of this volume, where weight has not yielded consistent or significant results in some of the other languages studied (see Rasekh-Mahand et al. 2024 [Chapter 7, this volume]). The most plausible explanation for this discrepancy is the fact that the Early New Persian corpus is the only written corpus included in the WOWA collection; see Schnell & Schiborr (2022) for empirical evidence for the differences between spoken and written corpora in this respect). However, it may also be connected to the content of the texts; this remains to be investigated.

5 Summary

In this chapter, we examined post-predicate elements in written Early New Persian texts. Our analysis revealed that there are relatively few post-predicate elements in these texts compared to related spoken materials, with an average of 4.3%. However, the post-predicate elements that do occur exhibit significant syntactic and semantic diversity, encompassing a range of distinct functions. The most common roles are benefactives and other items that are not easily classified using the WOWA tagging set (coded as ‘other’). Notably, the ‘goals last’ effect commonly observed in spoken-language corpora studied in this volume is not present in written Early New Persian. Nevertheless, our findings suggest that weight does play a role in post-verbal phenomena in these written texts, with longer constituents being more likely to appear in post-predicate position.

Mehdi Parizadeh & Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand

The general paucity of post-verbal elements when compared to contemporary spoken Persian (Rasekh-Mahand et al. 2024 [Chapter 7, this volume]), could be ascribed to at least three different causes: a difference in medium (spoken versus written), a difference in chronological stage of the language, or a difference in register, or some combination thereof. For obvious reasons, we have no reliable record of the spoken language in the ENP stage, so it is impossible to say whether our written texts faithfully reflect the language as it was spoken at the time. However, we do have both spoken and written texts for contemporary Persian, and initial findings suggest that there is a considerable difference between them with regard to post-verbal elements. Overall, it can be noted that less formal registers favour greater frequency of post-verbal elements, and spoken language is overall much more likely to exhibit high frequencies of post-verbal elements (Rasekh-Mahand et al. 2024 [Chapter 7, this volume]). Our data also exhibit a slight effect of register (the least formal text has the highest overall rate of post-verbal elements), so we are inclined to consider the register and medium effects as persistent characteristics of the Persian culture of literacy over the last 1000 years. In other words, we assume that the spoken language of the ENP period was probably significantly different with respect to post-verbal elements, though the magnitude of the difference is impossible to estimate. We therefore urge caution in interpreting our results as baselines for ‘the’ Persian language; rather we assume that our results reflect quite specific characteristics of written language, which do not necessarily faithfully reflect the spoken language of the period.

8 Post-predicate elements in Early New Persian (10–13th Century CE)

Abbreviations

| | | | |
|-------|------------------------|-------|--------------------------------------|
| COP | copula | PTCPL | participle |
| DEF | definite | RA | object-marking clitic = <i>rā</i> |
| DEIC | deictic | REL | relative |
| DEM | demonstrative | SBJV | subjunctive |
| DRCT | directional | SG | singular |
| EXIST | existential | V | verb |
| EZ | ezafe | Loc | locative |
| FUT | future | Abl | ablative |
| IND | indicative | Ben | beneficiary |
| n | total number of tokens | Addr | Addressee |
| NEG | negator | Instr | Instrumental |
| PL | plural | WOWA | = Haig et al. (2022) |
| Po | post-posed | 1 | first person |
| PP | prepositional phrase | 2 | second person |
| PRS | present | 3 | third person |
| PST | past | | |

References

- Arnold, Jennifer E., Anthony Losongco, Thomas Wasow & Ryan Ginstrom. 2000. Heaviness vs. newness: The effects of structural complexity and discourse status on constituent ordering. *Language* 76(1). 28–55. DOI: [10.1353/lan.2000.0045](https://doi.org/10.1353/lan.2000.0045).
- Behaghel, Otto. 1909. Beziehungen zwischen Umfang und Reihenfolge von Satzgliedern. *Indogermanische Forschungen* 25. 110–142.
- Faghiri, Pegah & Pollet Samvelian. 2014. Constituent ordering in Persian and the weight factor. In Christopher Piñón (ed.), *Empirical issues in syntax and semantics* (Empirical Issues in Syntax and Semantics 10), 215–232. Paris: CNRS.
- Faghiri, Pegah & Pollet Samvelian. 2020. Word order preferences and the effect of phrasal length in SOV languages: Evidence from sentence production in Persian. *Glossa: A journal of general linguistics* 5(1). DOI: [10.5334/GJGL.1078](https://doi.org/10.5334/GJGL.1078).
- Faghiri, Pegah, Pollet Samvelian & Barbara Hemforth. 2014. Accessibility and word order: The case of ditransitive constructions in Persian. *Proceedings of the 21st International Conference on Head-Driven Phrase Structure Grammar*. 217–237. DOI: [10.21248/hpsg.2014.12](https://doi.org/10.21248/hpsg.2014.12).

Mehdi Parizadeh & Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand

- Faghiri, Pegah, Pollet Samvelian & Barbara Hemforth. 2018. Is there a canonical order in Persian ditransitive constructions? Corpus based and experimental studies. In Agnes Korn & Andrej Malchukov (eds.), *Ditransitive constructions in a cross-linguistic perspective*, 165–185. Wiesbaden: Reichert.
- Frommer, Paul. 1981. *Post-verbal phenomena in colloquial Persian syntax*. Los Angeles: University of Southern California. (Doctoral dissertation).
- Haig, Geoffrey, Donald Stilo, Mahîr C. Doğan & Nils N. Schiborr. 2022. *WOWA – Word Order in Western Asia: A spoken-language-based corpus for investigating areal effects in word order variation*. Bamberg. multicast.aspra.uni-bamberg.de/resources/wowa/.
- Hawkins, John A. 1990. A parsing theory of word order universals. *Linguistic Inquiry* 21(2). 223–261.
- Hawkins, John A. 1995. *A performance theory of order and constituency*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press. DOI: [10.1017/cbo9780511554285](https://doi.org/10.1017/cbo9780511554285).
- Lazard, Gilbert. 1963. *La langue des plus anciens monuments de la prose Persane*. Paris: Klincksieck.
- Parizadeh, Mehdi. 2022. Persian (Early new). In Geoffrey Haig, Donald Stilo, Mahîr C. Doğan & Nils N. Schiborr (eds.), *WOWA – Word Order in Western Asia: A spoken-language-based corpus for investigating areal effects in word order variation*. Bamberg: University of Bamberg. multicast.aspra.uni-bamberg.de/resources/wowa/.
- Paul, Ludwig. 2013. *A grammar of early Judaeo-Persian*. Wiesbaden: Reichert.
- Paul, Ludwig. 2019. Persian. In Geoffrey Haig & Geoffrey Khan (eds.), *The languages and linguistics of Western Asia: An areal perspective*, 569–624. Berlin: De Gruyter Mouton.
- Quirk, Randolph, Sidney Greenbaum, Geoffrey Leech & Jan Svartvik. 1972. *A grammar of contemporary English*. London: Longman.
- Rasekh-Mahand, Mohammad, Mojtaba Alizadeh-Sahraie & Raheleh Izadifar. 2016. A corpus-based analysis of relative clause extraposition in Persian. *Amperand* 3. 21–31. DOI: [10.1016/j.amper.2016.02.001](https://doi.org/10.1016/j.amper.2016.02.001).
- Rasekh-Mahand, Mohammad, Elham Izadi, Mehdi Parizadeh, Geoffrey Haig & Nils N. Schiborr. 2024. Post-predicate elements in modern colloquial Persian: A multifactorial analysis. In Geoffrey Haig, Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand, Donald Stilo, Laurentia Schreiber & Nils N. Schiborr (eds.), *Post-predicate elements in the Western Asian Transition Zone: A corpus-based approach to areal typology*, 183–216. Berlin: Language Science Press.
- Rasekh-Mahand, Mohammad & Mehdi Parizadeh. 2024. Different functions of ‘rā’ in New Persian; A semantic map analysis. *Journal of Historical Linguistics* 14(1). 31–57. DOI: [10.1075/jhl.21056.ras](https://doi.org/10.1075/jhl.21056.ras).

8 Post-predicate elements in Early New Persian (10–13th Century CE)

- Schnell, Stefan & Nils N. Schiborr. 2022. Crosslinguistic corpus studies in linguistic typology. *Annual Review of Linguistics* 8(1). 171–191. DOI: [10.1146/annurev-linguistics-031120-104629](https://doi.org/10.1146/annurev-linguistics-031120-104629).
- Stallings, Lynne M., Maryellen C. MacDonald & Padraig G. O’Seaghda. 1998. Phrasal ordering constraints in sentence production: Phrase length and verb disposition in heavy-NP shift. *Journal of Memory and Language* 39(3). 392–417. DOI: [10.1006/jmla.1998.2586](https://doi.org/10.1006/jmla.1998.2586).
- Wasow, Thomas. 1997. Remarks on grammatical weight. *Language Variation and Change* 9(1). 81–105. DOI: [10.1017/S0954394500001800](https://doi.org/10.1017/S0954394500001800).
- Yamashita, Hiroko & Franklin Chang. 2001. "Long before short" preference in the production of a head-final language. *Cognition* 81(2). B45–B55. DOI: [10.1016/S0010-0277\(01\)00121-4](https://doi.org/10.1016/S0010-0277(01)00121-4).

Chapter 9

Zagros region: The Kurdish-Gorani continuum

Masoud Mohammadirad^a

^aUniversity of Cambridge

This chapter investigates the word order configuration of three Kurdish dialects confined within the Zagros mountains of western Iran: Gorani Gawraju; Central Kurdish Sanandaj; Southern Kurdish Bijar. These dialects share the commonality of having OV and Verb-Goal in their constituent ordering. However, the Gorani epicentre is characterised by extending post-predicate placement to Addressees, light-verb complements, and Locational complements in copular clauses. It will be argued that Central Kurdish dialects with post-predicate tendency for the above-mentioned constituents reflect a Gorani substrate.

1 Introduction

This chapter investigates the word order profiles of three Kurdish varieties spoken in the mountainous Zagros regions of Western Iran. The term Kurdish here refers both to the varieties that are “linguistically” considered Kurdish, i.e. Central Kurdish, Southern Kurdish, and Northern Kurdish and to the closely related but genetically more divergent languages Gorani and Zazaki that are considered Kurdish in the broader ethnic and socio-cultural sense of the term. The Kurdish languages belong to the North-western branch of Iranian languages, along with Taleshi, Tati, Mazandarani, Balochi and others.

The Kurdish varieties investigated in this study include the following: Gorani Gawraju, Central Kurdish of Sanandaj region, and Southern Kurdish Bijar. These dialects are representative of Kurdish languages in Western Iran—and at least in the case of the Central Kurdish dialect spoken around Sanandaj – previous scholarship has identified a greater degree of influence from Gorani than in other

Masoud Mohammadirad

varieties of Kurdish (see below). This chapter focuses on word order and considers the possible effects of Gorani on this domain of syntax. To better assess the extent of Gorani influence, we will also consider three additional varieties as control languages: Hawrami Takht, a representative of a more conservative variety of Gorani, and two varieties of Central Kurdish, Mukri and Bingird, as representatives of Kurdish varieties outside immediate Gorani influence. Figure (1) illustrates the localities in which these dialects are spoken.

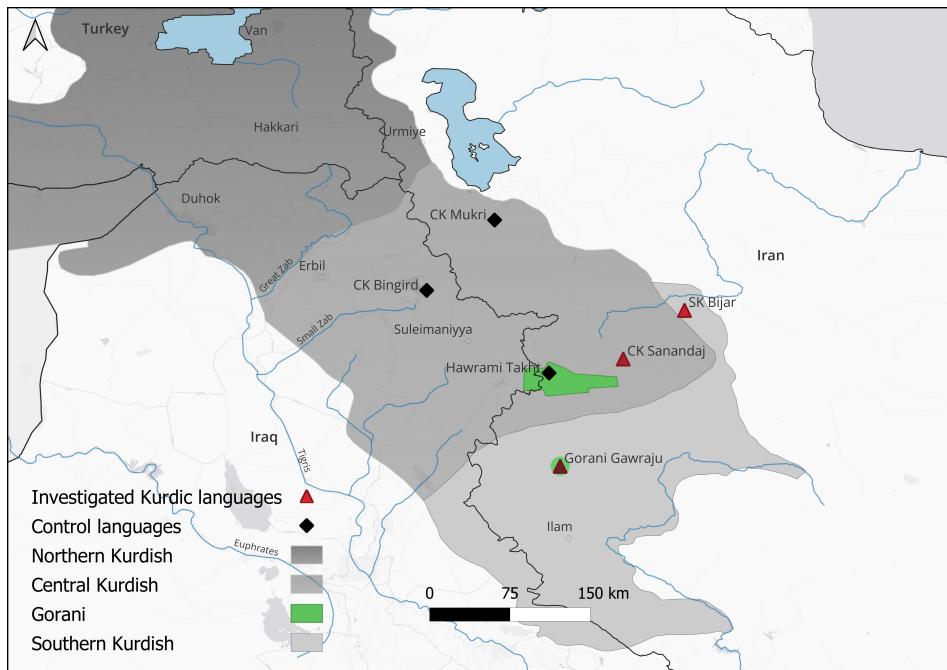


Figure 1: Investigated Kurdic dialects and control languages

The investigated dialects are situated at the intersection of Southern Kurdish and Central Kurdish-speaking areas. This intersection zone was once the Gorani heartland, which has since contracted to the mountainous Hawraman region and a few pockets across the region. There are accounts of language shift from Gorani to Kurdish in the Sanandaj region (see §4). This motivates studying the doculects in this region to see what the effects of such an assumed shift are on the word order profile of individual Central Kurdish dialects and whether it has any bearing on the classification of Central Kurdish dialects. There are now studies tackling this second aspect: *Mohammadirad (in press)* is a study of the organisation of inflectional paradigm in the periphery of the verb within Central Kurdish dialects. The author shows that the Southern Central Kurdish dialects adopt the

9 *Zagros region: The Kurdish-Gorani continuum*

Gorani pattern of (bound) argument ordering in the verbal periphery, whereas the Northern Central Kurdish dialects opt for the opposing ordering. [Mohammadirad \(2024\)](#) is a case study of the Gorani substrate features in the Central Kurdish dialect of the Sanandaj area across the whole grammar. The choice of the three doculects for this study is also motivated by the fact that Kurdic vernaculars in this region have remained unstudied with respect to their word order properties (see §2).

The Gorani substrate hypothesis will be explored further in §4. It will be seen that the Gorani substrate can explain some of the differences in word order configuration in this region, which has contributed to a north/south continuum in Central Kurdish word order. The northern half concerns the Mukri and Erbil dialects (to which Southern Kurdish Bijar matches in word order). In contrast, the southern half is relevant for the Gorani zone of influence and contains the Central Kurdish Sanandaj (and possibly neighbouring Southern Kurdish varieties). Nonetheless, it should be noted that the number of data points, i.e., doculects, for this study is low, leading to the tentative nature of conclusions.

The Kurdish dialect of Bijar, also labelled Garrousi, lies at the northernmost edge of the Southern Kurdish speech zone. It is adjacent to Central Kurdish Mukri dialects to the northwest, Sanandaj-type Central Kurdish dialects to the southwest, and Azeri Turkish dialects to the east. Earlier works on the Southern Kurdish dialect of Bijar include small grammatical notes in [De Morgan \(1904\)](#) and [Fattah \(2000\)](#), and a vocabulary list in [Querry \(1896\)](#). It is assumed that the Southern Kurdish Bijar is the result of migration from around Ilam, situated further to the south in Zagros mountains ([Fattah 2000: 18](#)).

Gawraju is a small village in the north of Kermanshah, western Iran, since destroyed due to a dam building in the region. Its Gorani dialect has been described in [Mahmoudveysi et al. \(2012\)](#), and especially in [Bailey \(2018\)](#). The dialect is at the periphery of Gorani dialects and has been Kurdicised to a great degree; for instance, nominal case and gender marking are lost in Gorani Gawraju, contrary to the more conservative Gorani dialects.

The Kurdish dialect of the Sanandaj area is one of the southernmost dialects of Central Kurdish. The dialect is generally referred to as Ardalani when referring to the vernacular of Sanandaj itself and Laylakhi when referring to the vernaculars to the east of the Sanandaj region. Earlier work on Central Kurdish Sanandaj is restricted to [De Morgan's \(1904\)](#) grammatical notes. More recently, the dialect has been described in more detail within the language contact setting in Sanandaj ([Khan & Mohammadirad 2023](#)).

The data for all three dialects are from unscripted spoken narratives that were collected by the author (in the case of Kurdish Sanandaj and Kurdish Bijar) or

Masoud Mohammadirad

imported from existing studies in the case of Gorani of Gawraju. The recordings were transcribed, translated, and analysed using the WOWA framework (Haig et al. 2024 [Chapter 1, this volume]); see Table 1 for an overview of sources and corpus size.

Table 1: Datasets from the WOWA corpus discussed in this chapter

| Doculect | Speakers | Total tokens | Analysed tokens | Source |
|-------------|----------|--------------|-----------------|---|
| CK Sanandaj | 8 | 1199 | 1180 | Mohammadirad 2022b |
| SK Bjiar | 3 | 1187 | 1150 | Mohammadirad 2022c |
| G Gawraju | 3 | 1325 | 1015 | Mohammadirad 2022a based on Mahmoudveysi et al. 2012; Bailey 2018 |

The chapter pursues two main objectives: (i) an overview of post-predicate syntax in a sample of three doculects from the Zagros region. (ii) arguing for a Gorani substrate as an explanation for some of the differences found in this region, which has contributed to a north/south continuum in Central Kurdish word order. Applying a gradient corpus-based approach, this paper showcases the effect of language shift through Gorani substrate in contributing to the formation of a north/south continuum in Central Kurdish in the word order profile of the Central Kurdish dialects. More precisely, I suggest that the shift from Gorani to Kurdish and/or high bilingualism in Gorani in the Sanandaj region has led the Central Kurdish dialect of Sanandaj to be strikingly different in some of the post-predicate syntax from the Central Kurdish dialects in the North, e.g. Mukri. It should be noted, though, that the status of Gorani Gawraju is hard to reconcile with point (ii). As will be seen in §4, it has been Kurdicised to a large degree and cannot be regarded as an assumed original state of a Gorani dialect once spoken in the region.

This chapter is structured as follows. §2 gives an overview of the literature on post-predicate arguments across Kurdish. §3 classifies major word order parameters across the three investigated Kurdisch dialects. §4 outlines areal issues in the configuration of certain word order profiles. §5 is the conclusion.

2 Previous scholarship on post-predicate arguments in Kurdish

Haig (2015) is the first study on the ordering of ‘Goals’ across Kurdish dialects in the context of contact with the north-eastern branch of Neo-Aramaic dialects, commonly called NENA. ‘Goal’ in Haig’s earlier (2015) terminology was a cover term encompassing human and non-human goal arguments of verbs of movement; recipients of verbs of transfer, and addressees of verbs of speech, that is, constituents which share ‘endpoint semantics’.¹ Haig concludes that all Kurdish varieties share the commonality of post-predicate realisation of goals of verbs of movement and recipients of the verb ‘give’, a head-initial trait which may be linked to an earlier imprint of Aramaic on Kurdish languages in their formative stages.

The main distinction between Kurdish dialects, according to Haig, is in finer-grained differences regarding the placement of addressees (See also Haig 2017) and beneficiaries. Haig makes the important observation that post-predicate goals are more prevalent across Kurdish dialects where there is a greater intensity of NENA speaking communities.² Thus, within Northern Kurdish, the dialects to the south-east of Anatolia/northern Iraq, which have been in close contact with vernaculars of NENA for centuries, show more post-predicate realisation than Zazaki and other Kurdish varieties in Central Anatolia, which show contact influence from Turkish and Armenian, and have the basic pattern of pre-predicate positioning for addresses of verbs of speech. More recent research on larger samples from Kurdish and neighbouring languages has confirmed the preferred post-verbal placement of goals of verbs of motion and recipients, but some of the details regarding other roles have been revised in the light of additional data, see Haig (2022), Haig et al. (2024 [Chapter 1, this volume]), and §3 below.

A relevant publication is Asadpour’s (2022a) dissertation on word order variation within Kurdish languages in north-western Iran in contact with non-Iranian languages Neo-Aramaic, and Turkic. Asadpour (2022b) is another work on word order variation in Kurdish. His paper focuses on ‘incorporated targets’ in the Mukri variety of Central Kurdish. By incorporated targets, the author means Goal-like arguments which appear between the constituting elements of a complex predicate, namely the non-verbal element and the light verb, for example,

¹In more recent work, the inclusive use of the term ‘goal’ has been abandoned, and ‘goal’ is reserved exclusively for endpoints of movement (see Haig et al. 2024 [Chapter 1, this volume]).

²This is now statistically demonstrated in a recent study (Haig et al. *in press*): The Northern Kurdish dialect spoken in Ankara shows less tendency for post-predicative realisation of Goals than Kurdish varieties in the immediate contact zone with NENA dialects.

Masoud Mohammadirad

min '1SG' in *wiłām=ī min=ī dā-w=a* [answer=EZ 1SG=3SG give.PST-PTCP=PERF] 'He gave an answer to me'. The author concludes that the variant ordering of incorporated targets in Mukri is accounted for by factors such as animacy and length, which favour the preverbal position.

In short, previous scholarship has mainly taken a broader perspective on the effects of language contact on the word order profile of Kurdish. Central Kurdish dialects, in general, and especially the Gorani zone of influence corresponding to the south of Central Kurdish speech zone, have remained understudied with regard to their word order properties. Given this background, this chapter attempts to provide a more focused case study of language contact and word order within Kurdish, in particular, the southeasterly periphery.

3 Word order parameters

Barring a few features, e.g., OV order, the word order parameters across the investigated dialects are predominantly head-initial.

3.1 Adjective/noun

In the investigated dialects, attribution in the noun phrase is formed by placing the adjective following the head noun through a sort of head-marking formative called *ezafe*, which has different forms depending on the status of the head noun being indefinite (1.a-1.b)³, or definite (1.c)⁴

- (1) a. Gorani Gawraju (Mohammadirad 2022a: E, 0770)
 $\check{z}an=e \quad \check{jwān-ēk}$
 woman=EZ young-INDF
 'a young woman'
- b. Southern Kurdish Bijar (Mohammadirad 2022c: B, 0166)
 $sag=e \quad sīya=y \quad zila-(a)ka-y$
 dog=EZ black=EZ big-SPEC-INDF
 'a big black dog'

³Alternatively, the adjective can be linked to the head noun through juxtaposition, e.g., Southern Kurdish Bijar *usāswār xās-ē* 'a good horse-riding master' (Mohammadirad 2022c: D, 0285)

⁴The *ezafe* particle *=a*, generally dubbed "compound *ezafe*", is a feature of all Central Kurdish, Southern Kurdish, and Gorani dialects but absent in the majority of Northern Kurdish dialects (cf. MacKenzie 1962: 83)

9 Zagros region: The Kurdish-Gorani continuum

- c. Central Kurdish Sanandaj (Mohammadirad 2022b: A, 0065)
kanišk=a gawra-(a)ka
 girl=EZ old-DEF
 'the older girl'

While the default pattern remains head-initial in adjective-noun constructions, these dialects show minor traces of head-final syntax in a few closely-knit compound NPs. Here, the ezafe linker appears on the adjective and has the form of *=a* similar to (1c):

- (2) Gorani Gawraju, Central Kurdish Sanandaj, and Southern Kurdish Bijar
juwān=a žin
 beautiful=EZ woman
 'beautiful woman'

3.2 Possessor/possessed

In the investigated dialects, the structure of possessive constructions is possessed first, possessor second. The unmarked pattern for linking the possessor to the possessed noun is through simple juxtaposition in Gorani Gawraju and Central Kurdish Sanandaj, but via ezafe linker in Southern Kurdish Bijar:

- (3) a. Gorani Gawraju (Mohammadirad 2022a: A, 0175)
dim piši-aka
 tail cat-DEF
 'the tail of the cat'
- b. Central Kurdish Sanandaj (Mohammadirad 2022b: G, 0714)
kanišk pāwšā
 daughter king
 'the king's daughter'
- c. Southern Kurdish Bijar (Mohammadirad 2022c: D, 0318)
zārū=ē pādišā=y maymün-ān
 child=EZ king=EZ monkey-PL
 'the child of the king of monkeys'

3.3 Demonstrative/noun

In all the three dialects, the demonstrative attributives are discontinuous: they consist of the demonstrative attributes, sensitive to distance distinction, to the

Masoud Mohammadirad

left of the head noun, and the invariable deictic form *=a* which attaches to the rightmost boundary of the NP, see Table 2 for Gorani forms. Thus, the order of demonstrative plus the head noun cannot be readily classified as fitting into either head-initial or head-final syntax.

Table 2: Demonstrative attributes in Gorani Gawraju (Bailey 2018: 169, simplified)

| | Proximal | Distal |
|-------|-------------------------|-------------------------|
| SG/PL | <i>ī</i> <i>a</i> | <i>ā</i> <i>a</i> |

- (4) a. Gorani Gawraju (Mohammadirad 2022a: B, 0334)
ī *bizin=a*
DEM.PROX goat=DEIC
‘this goat’
- b. Gorani Gawraju (Bailey 2018: 170)
ā *kār-ān=a*
DEM.DIST task-PL=DEIC
‘those tasks’

3.4 Numeral/noun

The investigated dialects share the commonality of ordering the numerals before head nouns. Morphologically, the head noun does not show number agreement with numerals above ‘one’. Examples:

- (5) a. Gorani Gawraju (Mohammadirad 2022a: B, 0237)
dü *wačka*
two offspring
‘two offsprings’
- b. Central Kurdish Sanandaj (Mohammadirad 2022b: A, 0001)
sē *kuř*
three son
‘three sons’
- c. Southern Kurdish Bijar (Mohammadirad 2022c: H, 1148)
haš *kīsa*
eight sack
‘eight sacks’

9 Zagros region: The Kurdish-Gorani continuum

Taken together, in the investigated Kurdish languages, the structure of NP is DEM NUM N ADJ, e.g. Central Kurdish Sanandaj. *aw sē kanišk zarīf=a* [DEM.DIST three girl beautiful=DEIC] ‘those three beautiful girls’.

3.5 Adpositions

A common feature of most Kurdish varieties is that they feature mixed adpositional typology. This is a reflection of their geographical distribution between OV languages, e.g. Armenian, Turkic, Caucasian, and VO languages, e.g. Arabic, Aramaic (cf. Stilo 2009: 6-7). The Kurdish dialects investigated here are no exception, though the levels of postpositionality differ significantly in these doculects (see §3.20). Thus, prepositions, postpositions, and circumpositions occur in these dialects. It is thus not straightforward to categorize these dialects easily into head-initial vs. head-final types (though see §3.20).

- (6) a. Central Kurdish Sanandaj (Mohammadirad 2022b: B, 0261)
bo šār
 to town
 ‘to the town’
- b. Central Kurdish Sanandaj (Mohammadirad 2022b: A, 0010)
la kēf *ṛaš=ā*
 in mountain black=POST
 ‘at the black mountain’
- c. Central Kurdish Sanandaj (Mohammadirad 2022b: K, 1160)
das a-nē-t=a *žin-ak(a)=aw*
 hand IND-put.PRS-3SG=DRCT woman-DEF=POST
 ‘She nudged the woman.’

3.6 Auxiliary/main verb

Given the breadth of the subject, this section only deals with auxiliary verbs in progressive constructions,⁵ which precede the main verb, in contrast to the tendency in OV languages (Dryer 1992: 100).

- (7) a. Central Kurdish Sanandaj (Mohammadirad 2022b: D, 0449)
xarik=a *jift* *a-kā*
 AUX=COP.3SG plough IND-do.PRS.3SG
 ‘He is ploughing.’

⁵The more archaic auxiliaries, such as various forms of the verb ‘to be’, are now univerbated with the lexical verb, and cannot be readily analysed as head-final auxiliaries.

Masoud Mohammadirad

- b. Gorani Gawraju (Mahmoudveysi et al. 2012: 43)

tū hē=t kār ma-kar-ī
2SG PTCL=2SG work IND-do.PRS-2SG
'You are working.'

3.7 Complement clause/matrix verb

The complement clause follows the matrix verb in the investigated dialects. The complementation strategy is generally asyndetic without any connective particles.

- (8) a. Southern Kurdish Bijar (Mohammadirad 2022c: F, 0848)

na-zānist ča kirdī=ya
NEG-know.PST.3SG what do.PST.PTCP.3SG=PERF

'He didn't know what he had done.'

- b. Central Kurdish Sanandaj (Mohammadirad 2022b: D, 0444)

wā a-zān-ē a=y-xwā
DEIC IND-know.PRS-3SG IND=3SG-eat.PRS.3SG

'He thought it (the wolf) would eat him.'

- c. Gorani Gawraju (Mohammadirad 2022a: C, 0396)

ma-wīn-ē hüč nīya b-war-ē
IND-see.PRS-3SG nothing NEG.COP.3SG SBJV-eat.PRS-3SG

'He sees that there is absolutely nothing he may eat.'

3.8 Position of complementizer within the complement clause

As remarked, complement clauses are not usually introduced by complementizers. However, the corpus data shows that young, educated speakers tend to use the complementizer *ki*, *ka* in the initial position of some complement clauses. Kurdish varieties thus pattern with VO languages in this regard, as do all other Western Asian varieties of Iranian.

- (9) a. Southern Kurdish Bijar (Mohammadirad 2022c: H, 1062)

zānist ki bār-a=y sangīn=a
know.PST.3SG COMP load-DEF=3SG heavy=COP.3SG

'He (the man) knew that its (the donkey's) load was heavy.'

9 Zagros region: The Kurdish-Gorani continuum

- b. Central Kurdish Sanandaj (Mohammadirad 2022b: B, 0278)

na=y-hēšt ka hamro-akān bi-diz-ē
NEG=3SG-let.PST COMP pear-DEF.PL SBJV-steal.PRS-3S

‘He didn’t let him steal the pears.’

- c. Gorani Gawraju (Bailey 2018: 424)

ni-m-wāz-ē ka bi-zān-ē
NEG-IND-want.PRS-3SG COMP SBJV-know.PRS-3SG

‘He doesn’t want to know ...’

3.9 Nominal direct object/verb

Kurdish languages are generally claimed to have basic OV word order (see Mc-Carus 2009: 613 and Öpengin 2016: 51 for Central Kurdish; Fattah 2000: 672 for Southern Kurdish; Mahmoudveysi & Bailey 2013: 72 for Gorani Zarda). Table 3 summarizes the OV ratio for each dialect.

Table 3: Frequencies of post-verbal (Po) nominal direct objects

| | G Gawraju | | | CK Sanandaj | | | SK Bijar | | |
|---------------|-----------|------|----|-------------|------|----|----------|------|----|
| | <i>n</i> | n Po | Po | <i>n</i> | n Po | Po | <i>n</i> | n Po | Po |
| Direct object | 285 | 13 | 5% | 316 | 3 | 1% | 298 | 7 | 2% |

It can be seen that Kurdish varieties are predominantly OV, in line with the claims made in the literature. Nonetheless, it is noteworthy that Gorani Gawraju allows nominal direct objects to be placed after the verb at a relatively higher rate than Central Kurdish and Southern Kurdish. This might be a reflection of earlier contact between Gorani vernaculars and Semitic languages, such as Arabic and Aramaic. Note, however, that the absolute numbers of postverbal objects in Gorani Gawraju are very small (13). One might even consider a contact effect from Persian here. Post-verbal direct objects in Gorani are overwhelmingly definite (11 out of a total of 13 post-verbal objects) and could be reconciled with some notion of afterthought.). In addition, they are usually arguments of the verb ‘lift, grasp’, which is then followed by the directional particle.⁶

- (10) a. Gorani Gawraju (Mohammadirad 2022a: D, 0677)

ānī ma-nam=ya qulang
3SG IND-lift.PRS.3SG=DRCT pickaxe

‘He (Farhad) grasps (lit. lift) the pickaxe.’

Masoud Mohammadirad

- b. Gorani Gawraju ([Mohammadirad 2022a](#): D, 0685)
tamāšā=m xās na-kard-ē fask-akān
 looking=1SG well NEG-do.PST-PTCP picture-DEF.PL
 'I have not looked very well at the pictures.'
- c. Gorani Gawraju ([Mohammadirad 2022a](#): D, 0566)
ma-wīn-ē ī dawrīš-a
 IND-see.PRS-3SG DEM.PROX dervish-DEIC **woman-DEF=POST**
 'She sees this dervish.'

The role of definiteness in licensing post-verbal objects in otherwise OV languages has been noted in several contributions to this volume; for instance, in Persian, see [Rasekh-Mahand et al. \(2024\)](#) and [Parizadeh & Rasekh-Mahand \(2024\)](#) [Chapters 7 and 8, this volume]. Given the overall low frequency of post-verbal objects, it is hard to make a generalization about the effect of humanness vs. non-humanness in the VO configuration.

3.10 Pronominal direct object/verb

Similarly, OV is the preferred order for free pronoun direct objects; see examples in (11a-11b). Note that the number of tokens does not exceed 10 in each dataset, which precludes a premature conclusion on the word order configuration of free pronouns. The main reason for the low frequency of free pronouns as direct objects seems to be that a direct object is often indexed by a bound pronoun in these languages, which is in complementary distribution with free pronouns.

- (11) a. Gorani Gawraju ([Mohammadirad 2022a](#): E, 0920)
tu min-it kušt
 2SG 1SG=2SG kill.PST
 'You killed me.'
- b. Southern Kurdish Bijar ([Mohammadirad 2022c](#): D, 0457)

⁶Likewise, a special VO syntax is associated with the verb *rāhištin* 'to lift' in Kurmanji dialects. However, the issue seems to be more complicated in Gorani. In the closely related Hawrami varieties, the verb *namāy* 'to lift' is intransitive, but its non-subject argument always appears post-verbally. Assuming that the directional particle in (10a) flags a direct object, then this could be linked to an Aramaic influence, as noted by Don Stilo (p.c). In [Khan \(2009\)](#), it is mentioned that a minor strategy for marking direct objects is to use an allative strategy. However, unlike Gorani, the direct object precedes the verb. This could mean that the allative strategy for direct objects in Gorani and Kurdish is a secondary pattern borrowed from NENA but used for very specific/restricted contexts.

9 Zagros region: The Kurdish-Gorani continuum

wāna san-ī
 3PL buy.PRS-3SG
 'He buys them.'

3.11 Copula complements

Complements of copular verbs show a high propensity to be placed pre-verbally. They show less than 10% of post-verbal realisation across three datasets (with Gorani having the highest rate of post-predicate copula complements due to semi-poetic language in one of the tales). At any rate, copula complements align with direct objects in having predominantly pre-predicate placement, as noted for all other OV languages in the WOWA data set.

- (12) a. Central Kurdish Sanandaj (Mohammadirad 2022b: B, 0543)
fra wiryā a-w-ē
 very clever IND-be.PRS-3SG
 'She was very clever.'
- b. Gorani Gawraju (Mohammadirad 2022a: C, 0524)
ēma ṛafiq bīs-yām
 1PL friend be.PST-1PL
 'We were friends.'
- c. Southern Kurdish Bijar (Mohammadirad 2022c: D, 0278)
žin-a=y dugīyān du
 wife-DEF=3SG pregnant IND-be.PRS.3SG
 'His wife was pregnant.'

3.12 Goal/verb

Haig (2015, 2022) suggests that within Kurdish goals of verbs of movement (e.g., 'go', 'come') and goals of verbs of caused motion (e.g. 'put', 'take') have the highest propensity to occur in the post-predicate position among endpoint constituents. Table 4 exhibits the linear position of Goals and Caused goals relative to the verb.

As can be seen from Table 4, overall Goals show more than 90% post-predicate realisation. This has been claimed to reflect the convergence of these Kurdisch dialects with Semitic languages (cf. Haig et al. in press). It is notable that Goals slightly lag behind Caused goals in post-predicate realisation. Pre-verbal Goals in these varieties occur often with some notion of 'refined motion', which often

Masoud Mohammadirad

Table 4: Frequencies of post-verbal (Po) Goals in three Kurdish doculects

| | G Gawraju | | | CK Sanandaj | | | SK Bijar | | |
|----------------|-----------|-------------|-----|-------------|-------------|-----|----------|-------------|-----|
| | <i>n</i> | <i>n Po</i> | Po | <i>n</i> | <i>n Po</i> | Po | <i>n</i> | <i>n Po</i> | Po |
| Goals (simple) | 158 | 148 | 94% | 183 | 162 | 88% | 181 | 172 | 95% |
| Goals (caused) | 105 | 103 | 98% | 150 | 144 | 96% | 121 | 117 | 97% |
| All Goals | 263 | 251 | 96% | 333 | 306 | 92% | 302 | 289 | 96% |

expresses atelicity, see (13a), whereas caused goals to express more clearly an endpoint to the action of the verb, thus post-verbal, cf. (13b).

- (13) a. Southern Kurdish Bijar (Mohammadirad 2022c: H, 1128)
waraw samt=i bāzār du-ṛi-yā-n
 to direction=EZ bazaar IND-go.PST-IPFV-3PL
 'They were going in the direction of bazaar.'
- b. Southern Kurdish Bijar (Mohammadirad 2022c: D, 0476)
siqān-a nīyā war saw=aw
 bone-DEF put.PST.3SG front dog=POST
 'She put the bone in front of the dog.'

3.13 Complements of 'become'

Within the investigated Kurdish dialects, the inchoative verb 'to become' has a special syntax. It implies a change of state, e.g. 'He became a king'. The verb 'become' has an identical morphology as 'be', but unlike the latter, the complement of 'become' is usually realised post-predicatively, if it is a NP. Adjective complements of 'become', on the other hand, are generally pre-verbal. The examples in (14) illustrate the placement of nominal complements. It is notable that the nominal complement of inchoative 'become' is flagged by the preposition *ba*, cf. (14b), which can be and is often cliticised to the verb and glossed as DRCT (directional particle).

- (14) a. Gorani Gawraju (Mohammadirad 2022a: E, 0786)
ma-sūz-ē, ma-w-u xul
 IND-burn.PRS-3SG IND-be.PRS-3SG ash
 'It (the wood) has burned up (and) turned to ashes.'
- b. Central Kurdish Sanandaj (Mohammadirad 2022b: C, 0430)

9 Zagros region: The Kurdish-Gorani continuum

bū *ba šaw*
become.PST.3SG into night
'It turned night.'

Masoud Mohammadirad

- c. Southern Kurdish Bijar (Mohammadirad 2022c: B, 112)

tā dūw=a nīmarū

until become.PRS.3SG=DRCT noon

‘Until it became noon.’

The reversed ordering for adjectival complements is exhibited in (15):

- (15) a. Gorani Gawraju (Mohammadirad 2022a: B, 0220)

āwis ma-w-u bizin-aka

pregnant IND-be.PRS-3SG goat-DEF

‘The goat becomes pregnant.’

- b. Central Kurdish Sanandaj (Mohammadirad 2022b: C, 0370)

dang=ī nāzik=aw bū

voice=3SG soft=COMPL be.PST.3SG

‘His voice became soft.’

- c. Southern Kurdish Bijar (Mohammadirad 2022c: D, 405)

mas d-ū

drunk IND-be.PRS.3SG

‘She becomes drunk.’

Table 5 summarizes the linear positioning of complements of ‘become’:

Table 5: Frequencies of post-verbal (Po) complements of ‘become’ in three Kurdish doculects

| | G Gawraju | | | CK Sanandaj | | | SK Bijar | | |
|-----------------|-----------|----------|-----|-------------|----------|------|----------|----------|-----|
| | <i>n</i> | <i>n</i> | Po | <i>n</i> | <i>n</i> | Po | <i>n</i> | <i>n</i> | Po |
| N complement | 14 | 12 | 86% | 22 | 22 | 100% | 14 | 13 | 93% |
| Adj complement | 20 | 2 | 10% | 12 | 1 | 8% | 17 | 3 | 18% |
| All complements | 34 | 14 | 41% | 34 | 23 | 68% | 31 | 16 | 51% |

As can be seen in Table 5, it is clear that adjectival complements of inchoative ‘become’ show strikingly less tendency than nominal complements to be realised post-predicatively. The reason lies perhaps in the fact that the adjective is treated as the non-verbal complement of ‘become’; hence, the combination Adjective + become acts more like a complex predicate, in which the placement of adjectives is fixed preverbally. In contrast, the nominal complements are framed into a prepositional phrase and are treated like a Goal of verbs of movement.

9 Zagros region: The Kurdish-Gorani continuum

3.14 Recipient/verb

Recipients of verbs of ‘giving’ are next in line in the likelihood to appear in the post-predicate position. An important observation is that in all three varieties, nominal and/or free pronouns recipients are overwhelmingly post-predicate; see Table 6.

In the investigated dialects, pronominal recipients often occur as clitic pronouns, prosodically dependent on some other item. The dialects differ significantly in the positioning of these bound recipients; see Table 6. They also differ in the syntax of these formatives. In Southern Kurdish Bijar and Gorani Gawraju, bound recipients remain attached to their governing preposition but never occur on the verb. However, in Central Kurdish Sanandaj, bound pronouns have a special syntax of their own in the present tense such that they are realized on the constituent preceding their governing head (see [Mohammadirad 2020](#); [Öpentin & Mohammadirad 2022](#) for the grammar of bound pronouns within Kurdish).

- (16) a. Southern Kurdish Bijar ([Mohammadirad 2022c](#): A, 0069)

mirw-aga xā wa=y da=y
hen-DEF egg to=3SG give.PRS-3SG

‘The hen gives him egg.’

- b. Central Kurdish Sanandaj ([Mohammadirad 2022b](#): I, 0990)

pol=o pē a-wa-m
money=2SG to IND-give.PRS-1SG

‘I will give you money.’

The following examples illustrate the post-verbal positioning of bound recipients:

- (17) a. Gorani Gawraju ([Mohammadirad 2022a](#): B, 0233)

šīr-aka=š ma-t-ī=ya wan=šān
milk-DEF=3SG IND-give.PRS-3SG=DRCT to=3PL

‘She gives them her milk.’

- b. Central Kurdish Sanandaj ([Mohammadirad 2022b](#): B, 0323)

sē dāna hamro=y dā pē=yān
three CLF pear=3SG give.PST to=3PL

‘He gave them three pears.’

According to Table 6, bound pronouns have different word order preferences than nominals, except in Gorani Gawraju. The crucial point here is that in Gorani Gawraju, the adposition itself occurs after the verb (and therefore the non-mobile

Masoud Mohammadirad

Table 6: Frequencies of post-verbal (Po) recipients in three Kurdish dialects

| | G Gawraju | | | CK Sanandaj | | | SK Bijar | | |
|----------------------|-----------|-------------|------|-------------|-------------|------|----------|-------------|------|
| | <i>n</i> | <i>n Po</i> | Po | <i>n</i> | <i>n Po</i> | Po | <i>n</i> | <i>n Po</i> | Po |
| Non-bound recipients | 13 | 13 | 100% | 9 | 9 | 100% | 9 | 9 | 100% |
| Bound recipients | 31 | 31 | 100% | 26 | 12 | 46% | 23 | 0 | 0% |
| All recipients | 44 | 44 | 100% | 35 | 21 | 60% | 32 | 9 | 28% |

clitic with it). In contrast, in Southern Kurdish Bijar, the adposition and the non-mobile clitic appear pre-verbally. Likewise, in Central Kurdish Sanandaj, the adposition remains preverbal, at least quite frequently. The different word order preferences of nominal and bound recipients are indeed worthy of further research, especially that Hawkins's (2008) typology of 'obliques' only accounts for the word order constellation of nominal constituents.

3.15 Addressee/verb

Discussing the word order preferences of addressees across Northern Kurdish, Haig (2022) makes several important observations: (i) there is a correlation between the flagging of the addressee argument and its position relative to the verb, such that post-predicate addressees are not flagged via postpositions and or circumpositions; (ii) Addressees of verbs which have telic aspectual meanings, i.e. 'say/tell' are more expected to occur post-predicatively than addressees of a verb of speech which indicates non-telic aspectual meaning, e.g. 'speak', the reason being that the former is associated with an endpoint activity whereas the latter is not. Examples of the positionality of Addressee arguments are presented below, see Table 7 for percentages.

- (18) a. Central Kurdish Sanandaj (Mohammadirad 2022b: G, 0660)
- | | |
|--------------------------|-------------------------------|
| <i>mard wit=ī=ya</i> | <i>žin-aka=y</i> |
| PN | say.PST=3SG=DRCT wife-DEF=3SG |
| 'Mard said to his wife.' | |
- b. Gorani Gawraju (Mohammadirad 2022a: A, 0079)
- | | | |
|------------------------------------|----------------|--------------|
| <i>m-wā=ya</i> | <i>dāyka=y</i> | <i>čīman</i> |
| IND-say.PRS.3SG=DRCT | mother-EZ | PN |
| 'She says to the mother of Čiman.' | | |

9 Zagros region: The Kurdish-Gorani continuum

- c. Southern Kurdish Bijar (Mohammadirad 2022c: A, 0004)

wa pišī-ya iš-i
to cat-DEF say.PRS-3SG
'She says to the cat.'

Table 7: Frequencies of post-verbal (Po) nominal addressees of all verbs vs. nominal addressees of 'say/tell'

| | G Gawraju | | | CK Sanandaj | | | SK Bijar | | |
|--------------------------|-----------|-------------|-----|-------------|-------------|-----|----------|-------------|----|
| | <i>n</i> | <i>n Po</i> | Po | <i>n</i> | <i>n Po</i> | Po | <i>n</i> | <i>n Po</i> | Po |
| Addressees of 'say/tell' | 13 | 6 | 46% | 13 | 13 | 92% | 23 | 0 | 0% |
| Addressees (total) | 25 | 10 | 40% | 22 | 16 | 72% | 52 | 2 | 4% |

It is clear that addressees in Central Kurdish Sanandaj and Gorani Gawraju are realised far more frequently rightward after the predicate than addressees in the Southern Kurdish Bijar. Note, however, that the rate of post-verbal addressees in the latter remains near zero (only two tokens out of 52 have postverbal ordering). Thus, the preverbal position of Addressees in Southern Kurdish Bijar is independent of the type of verb; it is a structural position.

It is also notable that addressees of 'say/tell' statistically yield even more post-predicate tendency, reflecting that Addressees of 'say/tell' are more clearly associated with the notion of endpoint than verbs like 'speak' (cf. Haig 2022: 359).

As for the flagging strategy, prepositional flagging remains the primary mode of expressing Addressees across the dialects investigated here. Circumpositions rarely occur, and if they do, the pre-verbal position is the only option, in line with the tendency reported for Northern Kurdish in Haig (2022).

3.16 Place constituents

Place constituent here refers to arguments which denote 'static location' in clauses like 'He works at a factory'; see Table 8 for the rate of post-predicate place constituents.

- (19) a. Southern Kurdish Bijar (Mohammadirad 2022c: A, 0079)
- la sar ay gūl-a mālāw-in*
on top DEM.PROX pond=DEIC bathe.PRS-3PL
'They bathe at this pond.'

Masoud Mohammadirad

- b. Central Kurdish Sanandaj (Mohammadirad 2022b: A, 0012)

šaw la kēf řaš-ā na-xaf-in
night in mountain black=POST PROH-sleep.PRS-2PL
'Do not sleep the night in the black mountain!'

- c. Gorani Gawraju (Mohammadirad 2022a: B, 0352)

ča=tān waš ka(rd) a(ž) ka=y lālō
what=2PL good do.PST in house=EZ uncle
'What did you prepare in your uncle's house?'

Table 8: Frequencies of post-verbal (Po) nominal addressees of all verbs vs. nominal addressees of 'say/tell'

| | G Gawraju | | | CK Sanandaj | | | SK Bijar | | |
|-----------------|-----------|-------------|-----|-------------|-------------|-----|----------|-------------|-----|
| | <i>n</i> | <i>n Po</i> | Po | <i>n</i> | <i>n Po</i> | Po | <i>n</i> | <i>n Po</i> | Po |
| Place arguments | 60 | 25 | 42% | 115 | 20 | 17% | 65 | 10 | 15% |

Comparing the post-predicate realisation of place constituents to Goals (see 3.12) reveals that Goals differ significantly from Place constituents in post-verbal occurrence. Nevertheless, Place constituents are more post-posed than, say, direct objects, suggesting that the notion of 'location', whether endpoint or not, triggers extraposition in the Kurdish varieties of the Zagros region.

3.17 Place constituents of a copular verb

Locational copula constructions are clauses in which the place constituent is a complement of the copular verb, e.g. 'I am at home.' In Central Kurdish Sanandaj and Gorani Gawraju, the predicate is an existential copula in such constructions, which requires the place complement to appear post-verbally. This existential construction is limited to the present tense, though; in the past tense, the past base of the verb 'to be' is used as the predicate, and its complement is generally realised preverbally. Southern Kurdish Bijar, on the other hand, consistently puts the place constituent before the copula verb; see Table 9 for percentages. The high percentage of post-verbal place constituents of present copula verbs might be an indication of Aramaic influence in the core Gorani speech zone (Don Stilo, p.c.). However, it is noticeable that in NENA Sanandaj locative complements of copula verbs are by default realised pre-verbally (see Khan 2009).

- (20) a. Gorani Gawraju (Mohammadirad 2022a: G, 1306)

9 Zagros region: The Kurdish-Gorani continuum

- zangol=a ziṛa hā pišt=e kanü*
 bell=EZ swinging EXIST.3SG back=EZ flour_bin
 'The swinging bell is in the back of bin of flour.'
- b. Central Kurdish Sanandaj (Mohammadirad 2022b: K, 1071)
hā-(a) la māl-ē tārik=ā
 EXIST-3SG in house-INDF dark=POST
 '(He) is in a dark house.'
- c. Southern Kurdish Bijar (Mohammadirad 2022c: D, 0397)
kēnī la pāl daryā du
 spring in side sea IND.be.PRS.3SG
 'The spring is next to the sea.'

Table 9: Frequencies of post-verbal (Po) place arguments of present tense copula constructions in three Kurdic doculects

| | G Gawraju | | | CK Sanandaj | | | SK Bijar | | |
|-----------------|-----------|-------------|-----|-------------|-------------|------|----------|-------------|----|
| | <i>n</i> | <i>n Po</i> | Po | <i>n</i> | <i>n Po</i> | Po | <i>n</i> | <i>n Po</i> | Po |
| Place arguments | 6 | 4 | 66% | 7 | 7 | 100% | 11 | 0 | 0% |

While the number of tokens is low and no categorial conclusions can be made, it is clear that the Kurdic varieties in the Gorani zone of influence have a clear tendency for post-verbal positioning of place arguments of copular verbs. In contrast, Southern Kurdish Bijar opts for an opposing tendency, namely preverbal placement.

3.18 Light verb complements

In the Kurdic dialects investigated here, light verb complements of certain types of complex predicates appear after the light verb, e.g., Central Kurdish Sanandaj *kaft-a ṛē* [fall.PST.3SG=DRCT road] 'He set out'. In such predicates, the light verb is obligatorily followed by the directional clitic. A variety of light verbs can be used in such constructions, e.g., 'do', 'fall', 'come', 'sit', 'grab', etc. It is notable that several of these light verbs involve motion verbs, e.g. 'fall', 'come', and the complement can be considered a metaphorical goal. The light verbs used here can sometimes have an 'inceptive' sense.

- (21) a. Central Kurdish Sanandaj (Mohammadirad 2022b: D, 484)

Masoud Mohammadirad

- a-kaf-ēt=a* *xwašī=yā*
 IND-fall.PRS-3SG=DRCT happiness=POST
 'He will get rich. (lit. fall to happiness)'

b. Gorani Gawraju (Mohammadirad 2022a: A, 0061)
hānī-yaka m-ā=ya *qisa*
 spring-DEF IND-come.PRS.3SG=DRCT speech
 'The water spring starts to speak.'

c. Southern Kurdish Bijar (Mohammadirad 2022c: E, 677)
dālik-ī *girt=ay=a* *bāwiš=aw*
 mother-3SG grab.PST.3SG=DRCT hug=POST
 'Her mother hugged her.'

In a similar manner, in the Bahdini variety of Northern Kurdish, some light verb complements occur after the light verb, followed by the directional particle. The difference is that the postverbal placement of the complement seems to be the case only with the light verb *kirin* 'do' (cf. Haig 2022: 344).

This might suggest that we are dealing with a common Kurdish syntax. However, it is notable that within Central Kurdish, the post-verbal placement of light-verb complement is fading out towards the northern dialects. The following examples show different treatment of the prepositional light verb complements in the southern dialect of Sanandaj vs., the northern dialects of Central Kurdish.

- (22) a. Central Kurdish Sanandaj
 $hāt=a$ $jiwāw$
 come.PST.3SG=DRCT answer
 'He started to speak.'

b. Central Kurdish Shaqlawa (Khan et al. 2022: 194)
 ba $jiwāb$ $hāt$
 to answer come.PST.3SG
 'He started to speak.'

(23) a. Central Kurdish Sanandaj (Mohammadirad 2022b: F, 0644)
 $kaft=a$ $zawī$
 fall.PST=DRCT ground
 '[The hat] fell on the ground.'

b. Central Kurdish Mukri (Öpengin 2016: 251)
 be $ferz-ī$ $dā$ $kewt$
 to ground-obl POST fall.PST.3SG
 '[The tree trunk] fell down on the ground'

9 Zagros region: The Kurdish-Gorani continuum

Assuming that the directional clitic in Central Kurdish Sanandaj is the reduced form of preposition *ba/ we*, then the differences between Central Kurdish Sanandaj and Northern Central Kurdish varieties boils down to pre-verbal vs. post-verbal treatment of a light-verb complement, which appears in the form of a prepositional phrase. While a full investigation of this division within Central Kurdish awaits future research, it can be seen that Central Kurdish dialects opt for the reversed linear positioning of the light-verb complement. It is interesting to note that in parallel constructions, postverbal positioning is also the case in Takht Hawrami, geographically neighbouring Central Kurdish Sanandaj.

- (24) a. Takht Hawrami (Mohammadirad In prep: HB.31)
 $\bar{a}m\bar{a}=we$ $zuw\bar{a}b$
come.PST.3SG=COMPL answer
'He started to speak.'

b. Takht Hawrami (Mohammadirad In prep: ŽM.27)
 $\bar{a}s\bar{e}=n\bar{e}=m$ $j\bar{y}a\bar{a}$
leave.PST.PTCP.PL=COP.3PL=1SG place
'I left them behind.'

The post-predicate placement of light-verb complements in Central Kurdish Sanandaj is quite unusual within the larger context of Central Kurdish. It seems reasonable to suggest that this is a further aspect of Central Kurdish Sanandaj word order, which can be related to an assumed Gorani substrate within Central Kurdish Sanandaj, as argued in [Mohammadirad \(2024\)](#).

3.19 Other obliques

In addition to the constituents mentioned in the previous sections, a variety of other oblique arguments, here collectively referred to as “other obliques”, can be realised post-predicatively. These include instruments, comitatives, beneficiaries, and sources (see Table 10 for figures). By way of example, the placement of beneficiaries is illustrated.

- (25) a. Central Kurdish Sanandaj (Mohammadirad 2022b: C, 0355)
nān \emptyset -*san-ē* *bo* *mināl-akān=ī*
 bread SBJV-buy.PRS-3SG for child-DEF.PL=3SG
 ‘That she buy bread for her children.’

b. Gorani Gawraju (Mohammadirad 2022a: D, 0592)

Masoud Mohammadirad

ī kūw=a a(řā) tu bi-tāš-ū
 DEM mountain=DEIC for 2SG SBJV-hammer.PRS-1SG
 'I may hammer this mountain for you.'

- c. Southern Kurdish Bijar (Mohammadirad 2022c: A, 0072)
- pīnačī=ya kawš arā=y dùrn-ī*
 cobbler=DEF shoes for=3SG sew.PRS-3SG
 'The cobbler sews the shoes for him.'

Table 10: Frequencies of post-verbal (Po) instruments, comitatives, sources, and beneficiaries in three Kurdish dialects

| | G Gawraju | | | CK Sanandaj | | | SK Bijar | | |
|--|-----------------|--------------------|------------------|-----------------|--------------------|------------------|-----------------|--------------------|------------------|
| | <i>n</i> | <i>n Po</i> | <i>Po</i> | <i>n</i> | <i>n Po</i> | <i>Po</i> | <i>n</i> | <i>n Po</i> | <i>Po</i> |
| | Obliques | 196 | 76 | 39% | 279 | 86 | 31% | 238 | 76 |

It can be seen from Table 10 that instruments, comitatives, sources, and beneficiaries tend less to be placed rightward to the verb than, say, recipients. The reason could be that, unlike Goals and Recipients, these oblique arguments are not directly involved with endpoint semantics, meaning that they cannot readily be interpreted as endpoint arguments in the transfer of action.

3.20 Summary of post-verbal placement of constituents

In the previous subsections, the placement of different constituents relative to the verb was investigated across three Kurdish varieties confined within Zagros mountains. It was seen that these historical OV languages exhibit remarkable drift towards head-initial syntax, contrary to the predictions of head directionality hypothesis (see Dryer 1992). The head-initial configurations are as follows:

| | |
|----------------|-------------------|
| Noun | Adjective |
| Possessed | Possessor |
| Matrix clause | Complement clause |
| Auxiliary | Main verb |
| Complementizer | Complement clause |
| Verb | Goal |
| Verb | Recipient |

Among all arguments, direct objects and copula complements (except for a subset of place constituents in copula constructions) are the most stable in their

9 Zagros region: The Kurdish-Gorani continuum

preverbal placement. Other constituents exhibit various degrees of rightward drift, as illustrated in Figure 2.⁷

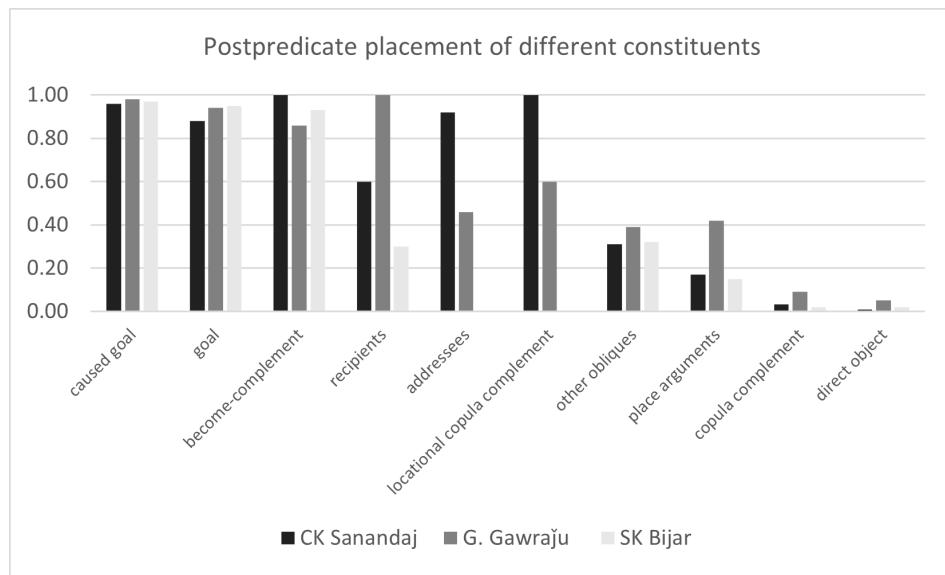


Figure 2: Post-predicate placement of different constituents across Kurdish dialects

As can be seen from Figure 2, the three dialects share the commonality of having the highest rate of post-predicate placement for caused goals and goals of verbs of movements. Similarly, they exhibit nearly the same rate of post-predicate placement for nominal complements of 'become', which could be an indication of common Kurdish syntax (see Haig 2022: 342–343 for Northern Kurdish data).⁸ Likewise, 'other obliques' exhibit the same ratio of post-predicativity across these dialects. Overall, the high rate of post-predicate obliques, both endpoint constituents and non-endpoint ones, suggests these varieties of Kurdish are candidates for Hawkins's (2008) OVX type.

It is notable that in two word order configurations, namely V-Addressees and V-locational copula arguments, Gorani Gawraju and Central Kurdish Sanandaj

⁷Note that the percentages given for Addressees are based on the placement of the nominal/non-bound form of these constituents. Relatedly, the ratios for locational copula complement only contain the position of such constituents in present tense copula constructions (see §3.17 for the explanations).

⁸Though see §3.13 for the distinction between adjectival vs. nominal complements of inchoative 'become'.

Masoud Mohammadirad

prefer post-predicate realisation, whereas Southern Kurdish Bijar opts for pre-verbal ordering. In the next section, it is seen that these opposing tendencies are motivated by the geographical distribution of Kurdish dialects.

Another parameter of interest is how post-predicate nominals are flagged. Here, we should be cautious of a hasty conclusion since in all doculects some post-predicate nominals are preceded by a directional particle on the verbs, which is reconstructible as a preposition even in the same doculect. Thus, in Table 11, nominals which are preceded by a directional particle on the verb are analysed in a different column. Combining the figures for directional particles and prepositional flagging, we obtain 46% and 57% prepositional flagging of post-predicate elements in Gorani Gawraju and Central Kurdish Sanandaj, respectively. In contrast, the proportion is only 32% for the Southern Kurdish Bijar. This suggests that the Kurdish doculects in the immediate Gorani zone of influence, i.e., Central Kurdish Sanandaj, exhibit higher rates of prepositional flagging than those further from the realm of Gorani influence. Alternatively, the difference in post-verbal flagging seems to be largely motivated by the higher number of bare NPs in Southern Kurdish-Bijar. Presumably, they result from an original *V=DRCT NP, which becomes V NP through the loss of the directional clitic on the verb. Note that pairwise testing of the differences between the three dialects using a Fisher's Exact Test shows that the differences are all significant at $p < 0.05$.

It is also conceivable to consider pre-nominal relational nouns as emerging prepositions. Combining the figures for directional particles, prepositional flagging, and pre-nominal relational nouns, yields a similar picture. We obtain 71% and 66% prepositional flagging for Central Kurdish Sanandaj and Gorani Gawraju, respectively, whereas the proportion for Southern Kurdish Bijar is 57%.

Table 11: Post predicate nominal phrases and their flagging type

| | n. | Po | prep | bare n + drct clitic on the verb | pre-nominal relational nouns ^a | bare | other (postp, case, circ) |
|-------------|-----|-----|------|--|---|------|---------------------------------|
| CK Sanandaj | 485 | 36% | 21% | | 14% | 10% | 19% |
| G Gawraju | 453 | 21% | 25% | | 20% | 21% | 13% |
| SK Bijar | 410 | 22% | 10% | | 25% | 28% | 15% |

^aThe verb may take a directional clitic when a pre-nominal relational noun flags the following noun.

Nonetheless, the overall picture suggests that not one special type of flagging

9 *Zagros region: The Kurdish-Gorani continuum*

is favoured post-predicatively. It is only in Central Kurdish Sanandaj that prepositional flagging is relatively high in the postverbal slot. This suggests that the syntax is approaching the head-initial type, with both verbs and adpositions preceding their complements.

Another parameter of interest is the overall levels of prepositionality in these Kurdish dialects, regardless of the placement of flagged nominals. The procedure for quantifying this was as follows: Taking the three Kurdish WOWA datasets, I selected the total number of tokens in the following functions: ABL(ative); ADDR(essee); BEN(efactive); COM(itative); GOAL; GOAL-C(ause); INSTR(umental); LOC(ative); REC(ipient); REC-BEN (see Ch. 4, this volume). I then extracted those that were flagged with prepositions or pre-nominal relational nouns or by a directional particle on the verb (lumped together as "prepositional") and those that were flagged with postpositions, or circumpositions (lumped together as "postpositional").

Table 12: Overall levels of prepositionality

| | n. clauses | prepositional | postpositional |
|-------------|------------|---------------|----------------|
| CK Sanandaj | 620 | 61% | 34% |
| G Gawraju | 475 | 78% | 3% |
| SK Bijar | 602 | 85% | 10% |

It can be seen from Table 12 that Gorani Gawraju and Southern Kurdish Bijar have much higher rates of prepositionality than Central Kurdish Sanandaj. Conversely, the levels of postpositionality are much higher in Central Kurdish Sanandaj compared with the other two dialects. These figures show that, barring Central Kurdish Sanandaj, mixed adpositional typology cannot be considered a feature of Southern Kurdish Bijar and especially Gorani Gawraju, at least in terms of token frequency in discourse. In other words, these two dialects have significantly approached the head-initial syntax with regard to adpositional typology. One way of interpreting these contradicting figures is to consider Persian influence in dialects with the lowest levels of postpositionality, considering that Modern Persian also lacks postpositions (except for the direct object marking *-rā*, which is irrelevant to our discussion). Persian influence seems to have been direct in the case of Southern Kurdish Bijar and probably indirect through Southern Kurdish in Gorani Gawraju. Alternatively, it may also reflect the earlier influence of Aramaic, which was previously much more widely spoken in the region.

Masoud Mohammadirad

4 Areal/contact issues

According to Figure 3, much of the post-predicate syntax is similar in the investigated dialects. Thus, each of Goals, Caused Goals, Recipients, Complements of ‘become’, “other Obliques” (instruments, sources, and comitatives), Complements of copular verbs, and Direct objects occur with more or less the same proportion in the post-predicate position. Near-categorical post-verbal placement of goals and recipients is common to all three varieties investigated here, and appears to be a feature shared by all varieties of Kurdish, Gorani and Zazaki.

The major area of differentiation is the position of Addressees, and locational complements of copula verbs. These two traits bring together Central Kurdish Sanandaj and Gorani *Gawraju* against the Southern Kurdish Bijar, which is situated further to the north. Given that much of the post-predicate syntax of these varieties is shared, the question is why Southern Kurdish Bijar prefers pre-predicate positioning of **Addressees** and locational copula complements. Some scenarios can be outlined here:

First, as discussed in the introduction, recent research on the Central Kurdish dialect of the Sanandaj region has uncovered evidence for a significant Gorani substrate, which is attributed to an earlier shift from Gorani to Kurdish, or at least a high level of Kurdish-Gorani bilingualism among Kurds (see [Mohammadirad 2024](#) for a recent discussion). Historically, the Sanandaj area used to be part of an earlier and more extensive Gorani heartland. Language shift from Gorani to Kurdish in the region is documented, for instance, in the introduction to the book ***Les dialectes d’Awroman et de Pawa***, which reports on the the linguistic situation at Sanandaj in 1900. The authors note that “learned people” in the city knew and spoke Maço (the epithet for Gorani/Hawrami/Awromānī, meaning ‘S/he says’):

À Sänä où le kurde est maintenant la langue commune hors des communautés persane, juive et syrienne, on prétendait que l’awromānī y avait été communément entendu autrefois [In Sänä (Sanandaj, Kurd. Sine), where Kurdish is now the common language outside the Persian, Jewish and Syriac communities, it was claimed that Awromānī had been commonly heard there in the past] ([Christensen & Benedictsen 1921: 5](#))⁹

Assuming the shift scenario to be true, V-Addressee and copula-location orders in Central Kurdish Sanandaj can be instances of constructional calque (or

⁹See [Khan & Mohammadirad \(2023\)](#) for a detailed account of language shift in Sanandaj. Likewise, ([Mahmoudveysi 2016: 3](#)) reports that speakers of Bēwānījī, Rijābī, and Gāhwārāī localities around Kerend (Iran), which were investigated by [Mann & Hadank \(1930\)](#) as Gorani dialects, have now shifted to vernaculars of Southern Kurdish.

9 *Zagros region: The Kurdish-Gorani continuum*

‘metatypy’ in terms of Ross 2019), meaning that the post-verbal placement of the mentioned constructions was calqued into the type of Kurdish in Sanandaj region to which Gorani speakers shifted. Additional support for a Gorani substrate in the word order domain comes from the opposing directionality of light-verb complements in Central Kurdish dialects, resulting in post-predicate linearisation of light-verb complement in Southern dialects (see §3.18). Note that in the case of Addressees and locational copula complements, Central Kurdish Sanandaj has extended post-verbal placement to a greater degree than Gorani Gawraju. The reason could perhaps lie in the fact that Gorani Gawraju probably does not faithfully represent the actual substrate variety of Gorani that must have been spoken in Sanandaj. It is geographically far from Sanandaj, quite isolated from other varieties of Gorani, and it has itself been Kurdicised to a large extent. Gorani dialects, geographically closer to Central Kurdish Sanandaj, would probably yield more interesting correlations; we consider this option below.

This brings us to the second scenario, which concerns the geographical distribution of features. If we assume that the Central Kurdish Sanandaj values on the features of V-addressee and copula-place are indeed due to a Gorani substrate, we would expect to find similar values in a conservative variety of Gorani, particularly if geographically close to Central Kurdish Sanandaj. Similarly, if Southern Kurdish Bijar is more generally representative of Kurdish spoken further from the core of the earlier Gorani speech zone, we would expect the Bijar values to be closer to Kurdish varieties spoken further to the north. In order to test these predictions, Hawrami Takht, geographically close to Central Kurdish Sanandaj, and Central Kurdish Mukri (and Central Kurdish Bingird), geographically close to Southern Kurdish Bijar, were selected as control languages (see Figure 1).

To start with the Addressees, I tested the post-predicate realisation of addressees of ‘say/tell’, including nominal addressees only, in the following varieties: Hawrami Takht (20 clauses, Mohammadirad In prep), Central Kurdish Bingird (14 clauses, MacKenzie 1962: 136–170), and Central Kurdish Mukri (12 clauses, Öpengin 2016). Figure 3 exhibits the ratio of post-predicate nominal Addressees in the sample.

The resulting data confirms our hypothesis that the postverbal realisation of nominal addressees is areally confined to the south of the Central Kurdish speech zone, where we assume a Gorani substrate. Interestingly, in the NENA dialect of Sanandaj, Addressee arguments of ‘say/tell’ are 100% post-predicate (see Noorlander 2022), suggesting further that the word order profile of Addressees is areally defined. An areally-mediated shift in addressee placement is also documented for Northern Kurdish in Haig (2022). In the northern Central Kurdish

Masoud Mohammadirad

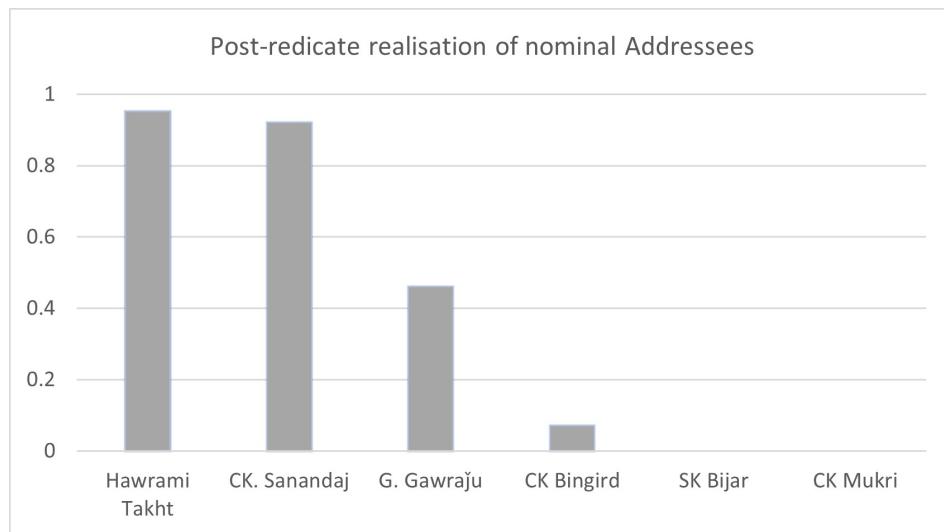


Figure 3: Post-predicate ratio of nominal addressees

dialects of Mukri and Bingird the reverse order Addressee-Verb is prevalent, tying in with the ordering in the geographically neighbouring Southern Kurdish Bijar.

It is also notable that Central Kurdish Sanandaj shows much closer correspondence with the neighbouring Hawrami Takht than with the Kurdicised Gorani Gawraju. The latter is not really a good representative of the original assumed state of, e.g. Gorani as once spoken in Sanandaj, and it is outside of the Central Kurdish region. Indeed, Central Kurdish Sanandaj better reflects the original Gorani word order than Gorani Gawraju. The real conclusion seems to be the structural proximity of Central Kurdish Sanandaj and Hawrami Takht, in line with the assumption of a Gorani substrate in Central Kurdish Sanandaj.

Relatedly, the opposing directionality in the placement of place arguments of copula constructions in Central Kurdish Sanandaj and Southern Kurdish Bijar is matched by the same tendencies in immediate neighbouring languages,¹⁰ thus in the southern Central Kurdish speech zone place arguments of copula verbs are predominantly post-predicate, whereas the reverse ordering holds in the north, see Figure 4.

An investigation of these minor word order features thus reveals commonalities between southern Central Kurdish dialects, here represented by Central

¹⁰The number of test clauses is 12 for Central Kurdish Mukri, and 10 for Hawrami Takht.

9 Zagros region: The Kurdish-Gorani continuum

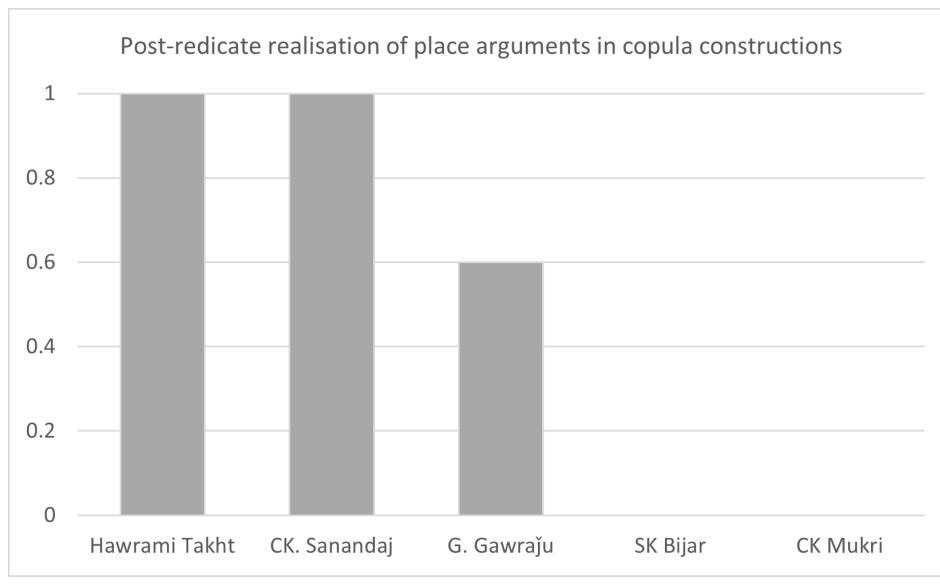


Figure 4: Post-predicate ratio of place constituents in copular constructions

Kurdish Sanandaj and Gorani (represented by Hawrami Takht). We propose that these differences can be most plausibly explained through the greater influence of Gorani in the southern part of the Central Kurdish speech zone, particularly due to Gorani speakers shifting to Kurdish. Northern Central Kurdish dialects, like Central Kurdish Mukri, in which contact with Gorani was probably not as intense as it was in the south, lack the effects documented here (see Mohammadirad 2024 for other features which highlight the impact of Gorani substrate in creating north/south division of Central Kurdish dialects). Our findings also suggest, conversely, that the remnant Gorani variety of Gawraju has diverged from a presumably more conservative state of Hawrami Takht and drawn closer to the more widespread pattern found in Kurdish.

Note that the minor word order patterns considered in this section have generally gone under the radar of the larger-scale approaches to Kurdish word order and language contact but illustrate the importance of more detailed case studies in identifying local patterns of contact.

Masoud Mohammadirad

5 Conclusion

Among Iranian languages, Kurdish varieties are the westernmost outlier at the intersection with VO languages. This has resulted in the preponderance of head-initial word order configurations in this group of varieties, as documented in Haig (2015) and subsequent literature. This study highlighted the word order profile of oblique arguments in three Kurdisch dialects, namely Central Kurdish Sanandaj, Gorani Gawraju, and Southern Kurdish Bijar. Major patterns of constituent ordering in these languages match to a large extent; for example, they all have rigid object-word order: Goals and nominal recipients are predominantly postverbal. However, these dialects exhibit microvariation concerning the positioning of **addressees** and light-verb complements, and locational copula complements. These differences were claimed to represent areal patterns and warrant a north-south distinction of Central Kurdish dialects triggered by the Gorani substrate in the southern Central Kurdish dialects. It appears that the northern Central Kurdish dialects have preserved the generally assumed Old Iranian pattern of preverbal realisation of Addressees, reinforced through contact with Azeri Turkic varieties. In contrast, the southernmost dialects have shifted to post-verbal **addressees and of place complements** in copula constructions.

9 Zagros region: The Kurdish-Gorani continuum

Abbreviations

| | | | |
|-------|----------------------|------------------|------------------|
| 1 | 1st person | M | Masculine |
| 2 | 2nd person | NUM | Numeral |
| 3 | 3rd person | N | Noun |
| ADJ | Adjective | OBL | Oblique |
| AUX | Auxiliary | PERF | Perfect |
| COMP | Complementizer | PL | Plural |
| COMPL | Compleutive | PN | Proper noun |
| COP | Copula | POST | Postposition |
| DEF | Definite | PROH | Prohibitive |
| DEIC | Deictic | PROX | Proximal |
| DEM | Demonstrative | PRS | Present |
| DIST | Distal | PST | Past |
| DRCT | Directional particle | PTCL | Particle |
| EXIST | Existential particle | PTCP | Participle |
| EZ | Ezafe | PVB | Preverb |
| F | Feminine | REFL | Reflexive |
| IND | Indicative | SBJV | Subjunctive |
| INDF | Indefinite | SG | Singular |
| INF | Infinitive | Southern Kurdish | Southern Kurdish |
| IPFV | Imperfective | SPEC | Specific |

Acknowledgements

This research makes a contribution towards (ERC, ALHOME, 101021183). Views and opinions expressed are however those of the author(s) only and do not necessarily reflect those of the European Union or the European Research Council Executive Agency. Neither the European Union nor the granting authority can be held responsible for them. I am very grateful to Geoffrey Haig and Don Stilo for their valuable comments on an earlier draft of this paper.

References

- Asadpour, Hiwa. 2022a. *Typologizing word order variation in northwestern Iran*. Frankfurt am Main: Goethe-Universität. (Doctoral dissertation).

Masoud Mohammadirad

- Asadpour, Hiwa. 2022b. Word order in Mukri Kurdish - The case of incorporated targets. In Hiwa Asadpour & Thomas Jügel (eds.), *Word order variation: Semitic, Turkic and Indo-European languages in contact*, 63–87. Berlin: De Gruyter Mouton.
- Bailey, Denise. 2018. *A grammar of Gawraju Gurani*. Georg-August-Universität Göttingen. (Doctoral dissertation).
- Christensen, Arthur & Åge Meyer Benedictsen. 1921. *Les dialectes d'Awroman et de Pawa*. French. Kobenhavn: B. Lunos.
- De Morgan, Jacques. 1904. *Mission scientifique en Perse. Études linguistiques. Dialectes Kurdes, Tome 5*. Paris: E. Leroux.
- Dryer, Matthew S. 1992. The Greenbergian word order correlations. *Language* 68. 81–138.
- Fattah, Ismail Kamandâr. 2000. *Les dialectes kurdes méridionaux: étude linguistique et dialectologique (Iranica 37)*. Leuven: Peeters.
- Haig, Geoffrey. 2015. Verb-goal (VG) word order in Kurdish and Neo-Aramaic: Typological and areal considerations. In Geoffrey Khan & Lidia Napiorkowska (eds.), *Neo-Aramaic and its linguistic context*, 407–425. Piscataway, NJ: Gorgias Press.
- Haig, Geoffrey. 2017. *Post-predicate arguments in Iranian languages. Keynote lecture, seventh international conference on Iranian languages (ICIL7), Lomonosov Moscow State University, 28-30th August 2017*.
- Haig, Geoffrey. 2022. Post-predicate constituents in Kurdish. In Yaron Matras, Geoffrey Haig & Ergin Öpengin (eds.), *Structural and typological variation in the dialects of Kurdish*, 335–377. Cham: Springer International Publishing. DOI: [10.1007/978-3-030-78837-7_8](https://doi.org/10.1007/978-3-030-78837-7_8).
- Haig, Geoffrey, Paul M. Noorlander & Nils N. Schiborr. in press. Which word order features are stable in a contact setting? Corpus-based evidence from the Western Asian transition zone. In Jeroen Darquennes, Joe Salmons & Wim Vandebussche (eds.), *Language contact: An international handbook*, vol. 2. Berlin: De Gruyter Mouton.
- Haig, Geoffrey, Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand, Donald Stilo, Laurentia Schreiber & Nils N. Schiborr. 2024. Post-predicate elements in the Western Asian Transition Zone: Data, theory, and methods. In Geoffrey Haig, Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand, Donald Stilo, Laurentia Schreiber & Nils N. Schiborr (eds.), *Post-predicate elements in the Western Asian Transition Zone: A corpus-based approach to areal typology*, 1–49. Berlin: Language Science Press.
- Hawkins, John A. 2008. An asymmetry between VO and OV languages: The ordering of obliques. In Greville Corbett & Michael Noonan (eds.), *Case and*

9 Zagros region: The Kurdish-Gorani continuum

- grammatical relations: Studies in honor of Bernard Comrie, 167–190. Amsterdam: Benjamins. DOI: doi.org/10.1075/tsl.81.08ana.
- Khan, Geoffrey. 2009. *The Jewish Neo-Aramaic dialect of Sanandaj*. Piscataway, NJ: Gorgias Press.
- Khan, Geoffrey & Masoud Mohammadirad. 2023. *Language contact in Sanandaj: A study of the impact of Iranian on Neo-Aramaic*, vol. 32. Berlin: De Gruyter Mouton. DOI: [10.1515/978311209180](https://doi.org/10.1515/978311209180).
- Khan, Geoffrey, Masoud Mohammadirad, Dorota Molin & Paul M. Noorlander. 2022. *Neo-Aramaic and Kurdish folklore from Northern Iraq*. Cambridge: Open Book Publishers. DOI: [10.11647/OBP.0307](https://doi.org/10.11647/OBP.0307).
- MacKenzie, David N. 1962. *Kurdish dialect studies Vol. II*. London/New York: Oxford University Press.
- Mahmoudveysi, Parvin. 2016. *The meter and the literary language of Gûrânî poetry*. Hamburg: Universität Hamburg. (Doctoral dissertation).
- Mahmoudveysi, Parvin & Denise Bailey. 2013. *The Gorani language of Zarda, a village of west Iran: Texts, grammar, and lexicon*. Wiesbaden: Reichert.
- Mahmoudveysi, Parvin, Denise Bailey, Ludwig Paul & Geoffrey Haig. 2012. *The Gorani language of Gawrajû, a village of West Iran: Texts, grammar, and lexicon*. Wiesbaden: Reichert.
- Mann, Oskar & Karl Hadank. 1930. *Mundarten der Gûrân, besonders das Kändülâî, Auramânî und Bâdschälânî, bearbeitet von Karl Hadank*. Berlin: Verlag der Preussischen Akademie der Wissenschaften in Kommission bei Walter De Gruyter & Co.
- McCarus, Ernest. 2009. Kurdish. In Gernot Windfuhr (ed.), *The Iranian Languages*, 587–633. London & New York: Routledge.
- Mohammadirad, Masoud. 2020. *Pronominal clitics in Western Iranian languages: Description, mapping, and typological implications*. Paris: Université Sorbonne Nouvelle Paris 3. (Doctoral dissertation). <https://tel.archives-ouvertes.fr/tel-02988008/document>.
- Mohammadirad, Masoud. 2022a. Gorani (Gawrajû). In Geoffrey Haig, Donald Stilo, Mahîr C. Doğan & Nils N. Schiborr (eds.), *WOWA — Word Order in Western Asia: A spoken-language-based corpus for investigating areal effects in word order variation*. Bamberg: Bamberg University Press. multicast.aspra.uni-bamberg.de/resources/wowa/.
- Mohammadirad, Masoud. 2022b. Kurdish (Central, Sanandaj). In Geoffrey Haig, Donald Stilo, Mahîr C. Doğan & Nils N. Schiborr (eds.), *WOWA — Word Order in Western Asia: A spoken-language-based corpus for investigating areal effects in word order variation*. Bamberg: University of Bamberg. multicast.aspra.uni-bamberg.de/resources/wowa/.

Masoud Mohammadirad

- Mohammadirad, Masoud. 2022c. Kurdish (Southern, Bijar). In Geoffrey Haig, Donald Stilo, Mahîr C. Doğan & Nils N. Schiborr (eds.), *WOWA – Word Order in Western Asia: A spoken-language-based corpus for investigating areal effects in word order variation*. Bamberg: Bamberg University Press. multicast.aspra.uni-bamberg.de/resources/wowa/.
- Mohammadirad, Masoud. 2024. Gorani substrate within Kurdish: Evidence from southern dialects of Central Kurdish. *Journal of Historical Linguistics*. DOI: [10.1075/jhl.23001.moh](https://doi.org/10.1075/jhl.23001.moh).
- Mohammadirad, Masoud. In prep. A grammar of Hewramî.
- Mohammadirad, Masoud. in press. Bound argument ordering across Central Kurdish and the Gorani substrate. In Jaffer Sheyholislami, Geoffrey Haig, Haidar Khezri, Salih Akin & Ergin Öpentin (eds.), *Oxford handbook of Kurdish linguistics*. Oxford: Oxford University Press.
- Noorlander, Paul M. 2022. NE Neo-Aramaic (Jewish Sanandaj). In Geoffrey Haig, Donald Stilo, Mahîr C. Doğan & Nils N. Schiborr (eds.), *WOWA – Word Order in Western Asia: A spoken-language-based corpus for investigating areal effects in word order variation*. Bamberg: University of Bamberg. multicast.aspra.uni-bamberg.de/resources/wowa/.
- Öpentin, Ergin. 2016. *The Mukri variety of Central Kurdish: Grammar, texts, and lexicon*. Wiesbaden: Reichert.
- Öpentin, Ergin & Masoud Mohammadirad. 2022. Pronominal clitics across Kurdish: Areal distribution, structural variation, and diachrony. In Yaron Matras, Geoffrey Haig & Ergin Öpentin (eds.), *Structural and typological variation in the dialects of Kurdish*, 181–237. Cham: Springer International Publishing. DOI: [10.1007/978-3-030-78837-7_5](https://doi.org/10.1007/978-3-030-78837-7_5). https://doi.org/10.1007/978-3-030-78837-7_5.
- Parizadeh, Mehdi & Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand. 2024. Post-predicate elements in Early New Persian (10-13th Century CE). In Geoffrey Haig, Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand, Donald Stilo, Laurentia Schreiber & Nils N. Schiborr (eds.), *Post-predicate elements in the Western Asian Transition Zone: A corpus-based approach to areal typology*, 217–229. Berlin: Language Science Press.
- Querry, Amédée. 1896. Le dialecte Guerruci. *Mémoires de la Société de Linguistique de Paris* 9. 1–23.
- Rasekh-Mahand, Mohammad, Elham Izadi, Mehdi Parizadeh, Geoffrey Haig & Nils N. Schiborr. 2024. Post-predicate elements in modern colloquial Persian: A multifactorial analysis. In Geoffrey Haig, Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand, Donald Stilo, Laurentia Schreiber & Nils N. Schiborr (eds.), *Post-predicate elements in the Western Asian Transition Zone: A corpus-based approach to areal typology*, 183–216. Berlin: Language Science Press.

9 Zagros region: The Kurdish-Gorani continuum

- Ross, Malcolm. 2019. Syntax and contact-induced language change. In Anthony P. Grant (ed.), *The Oxford handbook of language contact*, 123–154. Oxford: Oxford University Press. DOI: [10.1093/oxfordhb/9780199945092.013.5](https://doi.org/10.1093/oxfordhb/9780199945092.013.5).
- Stilo, Donald. 2009. Circumpositions as an areal response: the case study of the Iranian zone. *Turkic Languages* 13. 3–33.

Chapter 10

Post-predicate elements in Kartvelian and East Caucasian

Diana Forker^a

^aFriedrich Schiller University Jena

Kartvelian (or South Caucasian) and East Caucasian (or Nakh-Daghestanian) languages are usually described as “flexible SOV” languages which allow all logically possible word order **permutation in** main clauses. In this paper, I explore post-predicate elements in both language families and show that, in general, post-predicate elements are common in natural texts and influenced to various degrees by features such as genre/style, semantic role, information structure, heaviness and also language contact.

1 Introduction

Kartvelian (or South Caucasian) and East Caucasian (or Nakh-Daghestanian) languages are two of the three indigenous language families of the Caucasus. Kartvelian is the largest indigenous family in the Caucasus in terms of speakers, mainly due to Georgian, which is the national **languages of** the Republic of **Georgian**. East Caucasian is the largest Caucasian family in terms of numbers of languages. In both language families word order has been studied, and the general consensus is that the languages have free word order at the clausal level, with SOV being in some way classified as basic. In this paper, I want to discuss **postpredicate items** in both families based on the available literature and corpus data. I will examine a number of features that influence the availability of elements after the verb:

- morphosyntactic properties (grammatical function, word class)

Diana Forker

- pragmatic properties (heaviness, information structure)
- extralinguistic features (language contact)

I will concentrate on Georgian as representative of Kartvelian, but also include data from Laz and the other two Kartvelian languages. With respect to East Caucasian I will rely on corpus data from Sanzhi Dargwa, Chirag Dargwa, Tabasaran and Hinuq. However, the corpus data originate from different sources and have been annotated in different ways, so the results are not always directly comparable.

This paper supports the gradient approach to word order as advocated by Levshina et al. (2023).

2 Post-predicate items in Kartvelian

2.1 Word order profile of Kartvelian languages

Kartvelian languages have head-final noun phrases with e.g., demonstratives and numerals preceding the noun, but admit some exceptions. In all languages, it is possessive pronouns that are most commonly positioned after the noun.

Megrelian (or Mingrelian) and to a lesser extent also Georgian can have postnominal modifiers such as adjectives and relative clauses and partially also modifying genitives (Aronson 1991, Harris 1991, Pourtskhvanidze 2015: 169–170), though postposed adjectives and genitives in Georgian are described as archaic and following Old Georgian patterns (Testelets 1998b). In the development of Modern Georgian from Old Georgian a clear shift from head-initial to head-final order in the noun phrase has been observed (see the references in Testelets 1998b). In Laz, the tendency to postpose possessive pronouns is so strong that occasionally, possessives pronouns may even follow a postposition (Holisky 1991). In Svan, postposed modifiers, including possessive pronouns, are very rare and archaic and seem to be restricted to poetry and lyrics (Schmidt 1991: 537; Tuite 1998; see Testelets 1998b for examples).

Kartvelian languages have postpositions (with a few exceptions, for Georgian see Harris 2000). Auxiliaries follow the lexical verb, which is usually in a non-finite form, but the reverse order is not unusual (Harris 2000). The position of relative clauses depends on the formal type of relative clause. Relative clauses built with participles precede the head while those formed with a relative pronoun follow the head. Relative clauses with a gap may follow or precede the head. (Harris 2000). All Kartvelian languages have subordinating conjunctions in

10 Post-predicate elements in Kartvelian and East Caucasian

clause-initial, clause-second, or preverbal position (Boeder 2021), and Megrelian also has a clause-final subordinator (Boeder 2005: 70; Testelets 2021: 522–523). As mentioned, Kartvelian languages are usually characterized as having free word order at the clausal level, with verb final order as the unmarked pattern (Boeder 2005: 64). In the following section I will examine word order in Georgian because it is by far the most studied language among the Kartvelian languages.

2.2 Georgian: Previous studies on word order at the clausal level

After a series of elicitation tests Skopeteas (2021) comes to the conclusion that certain asymmetries between V-medial and V-final orders suggest that the basic word order is verb-final. One of his arguments is the position of prepositional complements such as comitatives and themes which are preferably placed as expected for verb-final languages (comitatives before themes) and have rigid scope in the basic order.

However, apart from a few exceptional cases, both V-O and O-V orders occur in free variation and V-O is not triggered by any special pragmatic or semantic configurations (Testelets 1998b, Asatiani & Skopeteas 2012, Skopeteas et al. 2009, Boeder 2021). All other orders are also attested in elicitation and natural texts (see, e.g. Pourtakhvanidze 2015: 161–162 for examples). With respect to frequency, based on data from the internet Skopeteas (2021) found that in a total of 925 non-idiomatic VPs 64.1% have O-V order while 35.9% gave V-O order. Other authors present different numbers. Vogt (1971) counted 50 randomly chosen pages in the influential novella, *jaq'os xiznebi* 'Jaqo's dispossessed' by Mikheil Javakhishvili, which was first published in 1924. S-O-V order is attested in 75% of the sentences; S-V-O in one sixth of them (Vogt 1971: 222). He also counted traditional folk tales (published in 1958) and got slightly different results: the subject occupies the initial position in two third of the examples; the direct object precedes or follows the verb with roughly the same frequency, which means that O-V and V-O are equally frequent. Stilo (2014: 421) counted indefinite and definite direct objects in a small corpus of colloquial (spoken) Tbilisi Georgian that consisted of 500–600 clauses. He found that 60.2% of the definite objects occurred before the verb (O-V) while 39.8% occurred after the verb (V-O). For indefinite direct objects the differences increase a bit: O-V is found in 64.9% of the clauses whereas V-O in only 35.81%. These numbers are comparable to Skopeteas counts of internet texts. In another unpublished data set of conversational informal Georgian the total number of nominal direct objects (excluding pronouns) that are V-O is 160 out of 364 (around 44%). (Stilo 2018). For definite objects, the V-O figure is 96 of

Diana Forker

206 (around 47%) and for indefinite objects V-O is found for 64 out of 158 (about 40%).

Skopeteas et al. (2009) also suggest that stylistic factors might have an effect, which is, in fact, also suggested by Vogt's data, since he found a difference between a classical written novella and folk tales that belong to traditional oral literature. Finally, Skopeteas (2021) cites a study by Apridonidze (1986) that shows that the more constituents a clause has the more likely it is that the verb does not occur in final position but that the clause contains post-predicate elements.

In sum, Georgian seems to have S-O-V as basic word order in terms of a rather formal theory of grammar and a certain degree of variation in terms of actually attested patterns in natural data. For the latter, style/genre and number of constituents in the clause play a role, but possibly also other factors such as grammatical function, definiteness, pragmatics and heaviness of constituents.

2.3 Georgian word order in a small corpus study

For this paper, I recorded nine oral texts and conducted a small corpus study. The texts have been elicited from nine speakers of Georgian by means of the Pear Story Movie (Chafe 1980).¹ The corpus contains 2,901 words, and 644 clauses, of which 556 contain a verb and at least one argument or other constituent with a relevant grammatical function for this study. The other 88 clauses have been left out because they only consist of the verb, or verb with particle or adverb outside the purview of this study.

I classified arguments and adjuncts into the following grammatical functions, based on semantics rather than formal marking:

- S: subject of monovalent verb
- A: subject of bivalent verb
- P: object of bivalent verb
- goal: spatial goal, objects such as addressee, recipient
- location: spatial location
- source: spatial origin, source
- instrument: instrument or tool of any sort

¹The film is available at <https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=bRNSTxTpG7U> and https://drive.google.com/file/d/1jF6vtUdOlBN9LFzJ_NujWfp9Ef6ObK9K/view.

10 *Post-predicate elements in Kartvelian and East Caucasian*

- beneficiary

I counted only nominal referents fulfilling these grammatical functions (including postpositional phrases) and excluded temporal adverbials and some other types of adjuncts as well as adverbs and particles. I included various types of subordinate clauses, in particular relative clauses, complement clauses and purpose clauses and also non-declarative utterances (of which there were only very few).

As a starting point, I compared my counts with Apridonidze's (1986) findings, according to which the probability of a constituent occurring after the verb increases when there are more constituents in the clause. In fact, this is not surprising, since the more constituents a clause has, the more possibilities there are to put at least one after the verb. However, my own data are not as neat as his data and also differ quantitatively. Table 1 shows my data for clauses with at least two and up to five constituents (including the verb). I counted all nominal constituents, but did not include pronouns, particles or adverbs. There is no monotonic decrease in the probability for verb-final order, but a clear tendency. Of clauses with only two constituents (e.g. a verb and S or a verb and P), around 40% have X-V order and 60% V-X order. For clauses with three constituents (e.g. verb, A and P or verb S and goal) the percentage of V-X order increases to 73%.

Table 1: Word order at the clausal level in relation to the number of constituents

| # constituents | 2 | % | 3 | % | 4 | % | 5 | % |
|----------------|-----|-------|-----|-------|----|-------|----|-------|
| X-V | 122 | 40.67 | 48 | 26.82 | 7 | 11.11 | 2 | 15.38 |
| V-X | 178 | 59.33 | 131 | 73.18 | 56 | 88.89 | 11 | 84.61 |
| total | 300 | | 179 | | 63 | | 13 | |

Table 2 summarizes first the constituent order patterns of all clauses and, second, the position of S, A and P (including relative pronouns and demonstrative pronouns). In my data, around two third of the clauses are not verb-final but contain at least one nominal or pronominal constituent after the verb. Compared to the other studies cited above this is a considerably higher amount of post-predicate items. Subjects of monovalent verbs (S) and to an even larger extent nominal subjects of bivalent verbs (A) overwhelmingly precede the verb, whereas objects of bivalent verbs (P) tend to follow the verb. These numbers are astonishing in the light of the data cited above. The only hypothesis that comes to my mind is that this might reflect a difference in written vs. spoken language

Diana Forker

(see Haig et al. 2024 [Chapter 1] and Rasekh-Mahand et al. 2024 [7, this volume], for similar findings), but Stilo's data also represent spoken language, albeit not elicited monologues.

Table 2: The position of S, A and P

| | clauses | % | S | % | A | % | P | % |
|-------|---------|-------|-----|-------|-----|-------|-----|-------|
| X-V | 186 | 33.45 | 121 | 69.12 | 93 | 93.00 | 100 | 38.76 |
| V-X | 370 | 66.55 | 54 | 30.85 | 7 | 7.00 | 158 | 61.24 |
| total | 556 | | 175 | | 100 | | 258 | |

In order to check whether the part of speech had an influence on the position of arguments and adjuncts in the surveyed functions first of all I excluded all relative pronouns from the counts. Relative pronouns in my corpus are placed before the verb, which is their normal position (Harris 2000), and the majority of relative pronouns occur in the function of S or A. In a second step, I omitted all demonstrative pronouns used in anaphoric function from the counts. There were no personal pronouns for first and second person due to the type of stimulus used for the narratives. I thus cannot make any statements on the position of those pronouns. Table 3 summarizes the counts for nominal S, A and P arguments. As a comparison with Table 2 shows, there are only small differences in the percentages. Furthermore, there are not many demonstrative pronouns in my small corpus and from Table 4 it is clear that those pronouns do not differ much in their position/function from the nouns (and the very few indefinite pronouns).

Table 3: The position of S, A and P (excluding relative pronouns and demonstrative pronouns in anaphoric function)

| | S | % | A | % | P | % |
|-------|-----|-------|----|-------|-----|-------|
| X-V | 100 | 66.23 | 66 | 91.67 | 93 | 37.96 |
| V-X | 51 | 33.77 | 6 | 8.33 | 152 | 62.04 |
| total | 151 | | 72 | | 245 | |

Goals are most commonly placed after the verb, with an overall higher frequency of post-verbal placement than any other argument type investigated here. This is a feature that my Georgian corpus shares with all other spoken-language

10 *Post-predicate elements in Kartvelian and East Caucasian*

Table 4: The position of arguments and adjunctions expressed as demonstrative pronouns

| | S | A | P | goal | location | source | instrument | beneficiary |
|-------|----|----|---|------|----------|--------|------------|-------------|
| X-V | 9 | 13 | 3 | 1 | 0 | 1 | 0 | 4 |
| V-X | 3 | 1 | 6 | 3 | 0 | 0 | 3 | 2 |
| total | 12 | 14 | 9 | 4 | 0 | 1 | 3 | 6 |

corpora in the WOWA data base (see Haig et al. 2024 [Chapter 1, this volume]). Instruments are also more frequently in post-verbal than in preverbal position. By contrast, referents expressing locations are usually found before the verb. In (1) instrument, goal and (metaphorical) location appear after the verb. For source and beneficiary, the distribution is roughly half-half and no clear tendency could be detected. The corpus also contains 38 complement clauses of which 35 are in a position after the matrix predicate.

Table 5: The position of other types of arguments and adjuncts

| | goal | % | location | % | source | % | instrument | % | beneficiary | % |
|-----|------|-------|----------|-------|--------|-------|------------|-------|-------------|-------|
| X-V | 22 | 25.88 | 52 | 61.18 | 21 | 46.67 | 18 | 35.29 | 8 | 53.33 |
| V-X | 63 | 74.12 | 33 | 38.82 | 24 | 53.33 | 33 | 64.71 | 7 | 46.67 |
| | 85 | | 85 | | 45 | | 51 | | 15 | |

Table 6: The position of other types of arguments and adjuncts (excluding relative pronouns and demonstrative pronouns in anaphoric function)

| | goal | % | location | % | source | % | instrument | % | beneficiary | % |
|-----|------|-------|----------|-------|--------|----|------------|------|-------------|-------|
| X-V | 20 | 25.00 | 44 | 57.14 | 16 | 40 | 18 | 37.5 | 4 | 44.44 |
| V-X | 60 | 75.00 | 33 | 42.86 | 24 | 60 | 30 | 62.5 | 5 | 55.56 |
| | 80 | | 77 | | 40 | | 48 | | 9 | |

Diana Forker

(1) V-INST-GOAL-LOC

Georgian (Georgian Pear Story Corpus)

mi-e-q'rdn-ob-a zurg-it k'ibe-s albat im-is
 PV-APPL-lean_on-TM-S.3SG back-INST stairs-DAT probably DEM.DIST-GEN
pikr=ši
 thought=LOC

‘(He) leans with the back to the stairs, probably in his thoughts.’

Then I looked into the position of new referents, more specifically of new human referents which are introduced into the Pear Stories one by one. Most speakers mentioned five human referents, and there was a very clear tendency to express them either as S or as P and put them in a position after the verb (Table 7). In example (2), the main protagonist of the film, a young boy, is introduced into the narrative in the function of S occurring as the last item in the clause.

(2) TIME-V-INST-S

Georgian (Georgian Pear Story Corpus)

cot'a xan=ši ga-mo-čn-d-eb-a velosip'ed-it bič'i
 a_little period=LOC PV-PV-appear-INTR-TM-S.3SG bike-INST boy

‘After a little while a boy with a bike will appear’

Then I counted the position of light versus heavy noun phrases with one, two, three, four or more words. In Table 7 relative clauses are excluded, i.e. all noun phrases that head relative clauses have been omitted from the counts and only noun phrases with demonstratives, adjectives and the like have been included. However, there are basically no differences between noun phrases that consist of one, two or three words. Only noun phrases containing four or more words show an increased tendency for a position after the verb.

Table 7: Newness (human referents) and heaviness of constituents (without relative clauses)

| | new | 4 (+) words | 3 words | 2 words | 1 word |
|-----|-----|-------------|---------|---------|--------|
| X-V | 11 | 25% | 12 | 42.86% | 30 |
| V-X | 33 | 75% | 16 | 57.14% | 26 |
| | 44 | | 28 | | 56 |
| | | | | 269 | 233 |
| | | | | | 427 |

Finally, Table 8 presents first of all the position of relative clauses and their heads. 29 out of a total of 34 nominal heads of relative clauses occur in a position after the verb. Second, I added the noun phrases with relative clauses to

10 Post-predicate elements in Kartvelian and East Caucasian

the counts in Table 7. To illustrate that with an example, we can look at (3): the NP ‘that lower part of a tree’ consists of two constituents before the head noun namely a demonstrative and a genitive, and a relative clause following it. For the manner of counting displayed in Table 8 this NP has four constituents (demonstrative, genitive, head noun and relative clause). These numbers suggest that the strongest effect on the position is the presence of a relative clause in the NP, which leads to >80% post-verbal placement - and this seems to be irrespective of how many other constituents there are in the NP. Similarly, the corpus contains 38 complement clauses of which three occur before the verb and 35 after the verb. This can be generalized: if an NP contains a clausal constituent, it is nearly categorically likely to be post-verbal. The effect of number of constituents, on the other hand, is quite small by comparison, and is only really significant for +4 constituents vs. 1 constituent.

Table 8: Position of head noun of relative clause and heaviness (including relative clauses; all semantic roles)

| | relative clause | 4(+) constituents | 3 constituents | 2 constituents | 1 constituent |
|-----|-----------------|-------------------|----------------|----------------|---------------|
| X-V | 5 14.71% | 15 37.50% | 30 45.45% | 151 54.12% | 232 54.08% |
| V-X | 29 85.29% | 25 62.50% | 36 54.55% | 128 45.88% | 197 45.92% |
| | 34 | 40 | 66 | 279 | 429 |

(3) V-GOAL-REL

Georgian (Georgian Pear Story Corpus)

ga-i-vl-ian am x-is zira-s

PV-REFL-go-S.3PL DEM.PROX tree-GEN lower_bottom-DAT

[roml=idana=c uk've zirs ar-is ča-mo-sul-i

which=ABL=ADD already down be-s3.SG PV-PV-go.PTCP-NOM

mama-k'ac-i]

father-man-NOM

‘(The boys) pass by the foot of this tree, from which already has come down the old man.’

Summarizing we can state that all kinds of arguments and adjuncts can occur after the verb, but direct objects (4), goals (1), (2) including indirect objects, and instruments (1), (2) are particularly prone to be placed after the verb, which means that the grammatical function has an impact on the position of the respective item. Furthermore, pragmatics plays a role: newly introduced (human) referents

Diana Forker

mostly follow the verb (2) (non-human referents have not been counted). Very heavy noun phrases and nouns heading a relative clause also tend to be positioned after the verb (3), but demonstrative pronouns in anaphoric function do not differ in their preferences from nominals.

(4) V-A-P

Georgian (Georgian Pear Story Corpus)

šemdeg da-i-ber₁q'-d-a am bič'-ma
afterwards PV-REFL-shake_out-IMPF-S.3SG DEM.PROX boy-ERG
šarval-i
trousers-NOM

‘Then this guy shook out his trousers.’

Due to the limits of my **corpus** further research is needed that targets also first- and second-person pronouns, examines the impact of (in)definiteness and the positional properties of subordinate clauses with non-finite verbs such as participles and masdars.

2.4 Megrelian, Svan and Laz

What concerns Megrelian and Svan, **postpredicate** elements do not seem to be rare. We find subjects, direct objects, indirect objects, obliques such as instruments and others, temporal and spatial adverbials both in nominal as well as pronominal form in all grammatical descriptions surveyed (Harris 1991, Holisky 1991, Rostovtsev-Popiel 2021, Tuite 1998, Schmidt 1991).

Laz is the least flexible Kartvelian language with respect to word order, even though the claim by Testelets (2021: 518) that Laz is relatively strict verb final with only very few constructions allowing for a restricted range of **post-predicate** elements has to be rejected. In contrast to the other three Kartvelian languages **Laz** is mainly spoken in Turkey and thus under heavy Turkish influence. Lacroix (2009: 737) makes some generalizations about post-predicate elements in Laz. They are mostly (i) known / topical, or (ii) part of an idiomatic expression, or (iii) new referents in introductory sentences, or (iv) specify a referent that has already been mentioned in the sentence. Laz has a much lower frequency of post-predicate elements when compared to Georgian. This is certainly true for the texts in Kutscher & Genç (1998) and in Stilo & Lacroix (2021). However, otherwise it seems that roughly the same range of elements are allowed as in the other Kartvelian both in elicitation and in natural texts (e.g. Kutscher & Genç 1998, Lacroix 2009): subjects, objects, obliques, adverbials (goals, locations). In

10 *Post-predicate elements in Kartvelian and East Caucasian*

the 11 Arhavi Laz texts collected by Lacroix, published in his grammar (Lacroix 2009) and coded for WOWA by Don Stilo (Stilo & Lacroix 2021), 400 items (noun phrases and adverbials) have been categorized with respect to their position: 391 occur before the verb (around 98%) and only 9 after the verb (around 2%). Items occurring after the verb serve as direct objects, addressees, locations, goals, and one is a possessed referent in a possessive construction. With these numbers Laz is among the most consistently verb-final languages in the entire WOWA data set.

As shown for Georgian and just mentioned, in introductory sentences or, more generally, in contexts in which new referents are introduced into a narration, the new referents often follow the verb. These new referents are usually either subjects or direct objects as in (5) from Svan.

- (5) Svan (Schmidt 1991: 539)
- | | | | |
|--|--------------|----------------------|--------------|
| <i>ašxwin</i> | <i>læcte</i> | <i>otzəzax</i> | <i>bepšw</i> |
| once | water.to | they.apparently.sent | child.NOM |
| 'Once (they) sent a child to the water.' | | | |

But postverbal items can be topical, too. Example (6) from Megrelian and example (7) from Laz illustrate postverbal subjects that encode established referents.

- (6) Megrelian (Rostovtsev-Popiel 2021: 557)
- | | | | |
|------------------------------------|-------------------|------------------------|-----------------|
| <i>k'in=i</i> | <i>mida-rt-es</i> | <i>o-nadir-u-ša</i> | <i>boš-ep-k</i> |
| back=EV | PV-go-3SG.PST | SUPINE-hunt-SUPINE-all | boy-PL-ERG |
| 'The boys left for hunting again.' | | | |
- (7) Laz (Holisky 1991: 469)
- | | | | | |
|------------------------------------|-----------|-------------|----------------|-----------------|
| <i>i.bgar-u</i> | <i>do</i> | <i>xolo</i> | <i>meyoč-u</i> | <i>oxorža-k</i> |
| cry-3SG | and again | curse-3SG | wife-ERG | |
| 'The wife cried and cursed again.' | | | | |

Heaviness might play a role. In (8) from Svan the first main clause contains a postverbal focal object whereas the focal object in the second main clause is in preverbal position. The postverbal object of the first clause is not even directly following the verb, but separated from it an inserted subordinate conditional clause. It is heavy, consisting of a participial relative clause and an adjective, which might be a reason for its postverbal position.

- (8) Svan (Tuite 1998: 19)

Diana Forker

eče-ži a-d-isg-x, [xoxra bepšw-ild-ær axa
 there-at VER-put-SM-PL little child-DIM-PL.NOM if
æt-[i]-dagr-i-w-x], ežær-e le-pane xoxra dir-ild-ær-s
 PV-VER-die-SM-IMP-PL 3PL-GEN PTCP-consecrate little bread-DIM-PL-DAT
i let'wra a-t'wr-e-x ečeču
 and candle.DAT VER-light-SM-PL there
 'If small children from the household have died they set there little loaves
 of bread consecrated to them, and light a candle.'

I cannot say whether grammatical functions have an impact on the likelihood or frequency of being placed after the verb. The following two examples show an inanimate goal (9) as well as an animate direct object, an animate indirect object plus animate adverbial (10).

- (9) Laz (Holisky 1991: 409)
igzal-es bee-pe diška-ša
 go-3PL child-PL firewood-all
 'The children went for firewood.'

- (10) Megrelian (Harris 1991: 374)
mapa-k kimeč tina mec'amale-s čil-o
 king-ERG gave 3SG doctor-DAT wife-ADV
 'The king gave her to the doctor as [his] wife.'

In Laz, indefinite postpredicate items are also a feature of some idiomatic expression such as 'set the table', 'make someone's wedding' and 'drink tea' (11).

- (11) Laz (Lacroix 2009: 741)
hek do-v-es didi duğuni
 there PV-make-AOR.I3P big wedding
 'There they made big weddings.'

In sum, in Kartvelian SOV is a common and possibly the basic word order, but other orders are also possible and attested in texts. There are no hard constraints concerning the grammatical function or role of postverbal arguments or adjuncts or their parts of speech. Laz differs from all other Kartvelian languages in terms of actual frequency of postpredicate items in natural texts, which is likely due to a substantial impact of Turkish. Note for example that the Laz corpus in Stilo & Lacroix (2021) exhibits less than 5% post-verbal goals (cf. the figure of 75% from spoken Georgian (Tables 5 and 6 above), and comparable figures across the WOVA sample). It is possible that the texts in the Laz corpus of Stilo & Lacroix (2021) have been edited in some manner; this remains to be clarified.

3 Post-predicate items in East Caucasian

3.1 Word order profile of East Caucasian

Noun phrases are normally head-final (Ganenkov & Maisak 2021). However, various types of modifiers (except for demonstratives) can occur after the head noun and there is some indication that in many cases the postponed modifier does not form one NP with the preceding nominal, but rather makes up its own NP, e.g. because it needs to be case marked, nominalized or bear other types of special marking (e.g. Dargwa languages, Akhvakh). Testelets (1998a: 274) characterizes postposed modifiers as focused, contrasted, or restrictive. It seems that in natural texts genitives, in particular possessive pronouns, are postposed more commonly than any other type of modifier (see examples below).

The languages have postpositions. Auxiliaries follow the lexical verbs. Major complementation strategies are non-finite verb forms (infinitive, masdar, participles, conversbs), quotative particles, which are usually placed to the right of the clause, or enclitics and zero marking. Complementizers, which are often loans, play only a marginal role. Complement clauses may precede or follow the matrix verb.

As the other two indigenous families of the Caucasus, East Caucasian languages are predominantly head-final (SOV), but allow for all logically possible orders. Thus, we find postverbal arguments and adjuncts of all kinds in the literature (Testelets 1998a, van den Berg 2005) and in natural texts they are common. Word order in subordinate clauses is more restricted. For instance, in Sanzhi Dargwa relative clauses are verb-final with very few exceptions; complement clauses and adverbial clauses show a stronger tendency for verb-final order than main clauses, but far less than relative clauses (Forker 2020). A similar distribution is found in Hinuq: relative clauses are strictly head-final whereas complement and adverbial clauses occasionally contain post-predicate elements (Forker 2013).

3.2 Post-predicate elements

Based on the literature and on counts from the Multicast corpora for Chirag Dargwa, Sanzhi Dargwa (Forker & Schiborr 2019) and Tabasaran (Bogomolova et al. 2021) a few generalizations concerning the conditions for post-predicate elements are possible. In general, they are far more frequent than in Adyghe (see Haig et al. 2024 [Chapter 1, this volume], Table 9). Grammatical functions play a role in all three languages. Chirag Dargwa and Sanzhi Dargwa have far more

Diana Forker

post-predicate subjects than any other kinds of elements whereas for Tabasaran the difference between subjects and objects is relatively small. Goals, which include addressees, are more often found in postverbal position than obliques (= indirect objects, beneficiaries, instruments, sources, etc.) and locations (Table 9). For instance, in Sanzhi 57.9% of the 57 goals in main clauses occur after the verb (33 items).

Table 9: Post-predicate elements in Chirag, Sanzhi and Tabasaran

| | Chirag Dargwa | Sanzhi Dargwa | Tabasaran |
|--|---------------|---------------|--------------|
| Texts | 11 | 8 | 5 |
| words | 5347 | 3857 | 5450 |
| main clauses | 1183 | 945 | 1210 |
| all clauses | 1377 | 1066 | 1383 |
| post-predicate elements in main clauses (nouns, pronouns, other items) | | | |
| subject | 65 (23.81%) | 62 (26.05%) | 141 (28.54%) |
| object | 31 (28.44%) | 38 (41.76%) | 77 (30.68%) |
| goal + addressee | 20 (32.79%) | 33 (57.89%) | 64 (54.7%) |
| oblique | 21 (34.42%) | 18 (35.29%) | 21 (31.34%) |
| location | 12 (26.53%) | 18 (35.29%) | 28 (45.9%) |
| total per clause (all roles) | 150 (12.68%) | 169 (17.88%) | 331 (27.36%) |

Chechen and Ingush can be added to the East Caucasian languages for which we know that postverbal items are common in natural texts. For Ingush, Nichols (2011: 678) states that in “main clauses, other than episode-initial and other all-new ones, verb-second order is most common.” According to Nichols (1994), in Chechen OVS is not uncommon in elicited sentences (see also Komen 2007: 32 for a similar assessment).

When comparing preverbal objects (OV) to postverbal objects (VO) in Chirag, Sanzhi, Tabasaran and Hinuq in main (Table 10) it turns out that almost between 30 and 40% of the objects occurs after the predicate. This is less than in Georgian (Tables 2 and 3), but still much more than in the Iranian and Turkic verb-final languages in the WOWA sample, which generally exhibit >80% OV order (see Haig et al. 2024 [Chapter 1, this volume]). This is suggestive of a distinct kind of OV for these languages (and Georgian as well). Furthermore, in Sanzhi Dargwa and Chirag Dargwa, and to a small degree also in Tabasaran, pronominal objects have a greater tendency to be placed after the verb than nominal objects; for obliques, goals and locations no such tendencies can be observed (Table 10).

10 Post-predicate elements in Kartvelian and East Caucasian

Table 10: Postverbal objects (VO) in Chirag, Sanzhi, and Tabasaran in main clauses

| Language | O (all Os) ² | VO | % | NP | VO for NPs | % | pro | VO for pro | % |
|---------------|-------------------------|----|--------|-----|------------|--------|-----|------------|--------|
| Chirag Dargwa | 109 | 31 | 28.44% | 79 | 19 | 24.05% | 20 | 9 | 45.00% |
| Sanzhi Dargwa | 91 | 38 | 41.76% | 71 | 29 | 40.85% | 13 | 9 | 69.23% |
| Tabasaran | 251 | 77 | 30.68% | 204 | 68 | 33.33% | 22 | 8 | 36.36% |

I was not able to systematically check for heaviness and the position of headed relative clauses. Instead, I will examine the literature on information structure and the placement of arguments and adjuncts in post-verbal position. Ganenkov & Maisak (2021: 129) state “The postverbal field is reserved for background information—that is, those arguments that are recoverable from the context but still mentioned for the sake of clarity.” This generalization can be made for Hinuq, Dargwa languages, Archi, Avar, Lak, Ingush and probably more East Caucasian languages (Forker & Belyaev 2016; Komen & Bugenhagen 2017, Testelets 1998a: 260–261). In particular when the verb is focused topical arguments can follow it (12).

- (12) [Then the wife of a student hears about the news.]

Lak (Khalilova 1976: 204–205)

[mu=gu]^{TOP} maħattal ġ-xunu d-ur [wa iš-ira-j]^{TOP}
DEM.PROX=ADD amazed become-PST.GER II-COP this issue-OBL-SPR
'She also got amazed because of this issue.'

Verb fronting is a typical way of marking predicate focus and leads to post-predicate elements that are either topical or can also be focal. In (13), the verb is located in the clause-initial position while the argument NPs retain their unmarked SO order.

- (13) [Husband and wife fought and a scandal happened and]

Sanzhi Dargwa (Forker 2020: 523)

[b-a^q-ib ca-b]^{FOC} sub-li xunul-li-j
N-hit.PFV-PRET COP-N husband-ERG woman-OBL-DAT
'The husband hit the wife.'

Focus, in particular wide focus and contrastive focus can also occur after the verb. In some languages it is especially common with goals, including spatial

²Note that all Os consist of lexical NPs, pronouns and other items. In the table, only lexical NPs and pronouns are listed separately.

Diana Forker

goals, addressees, recipients, etc. It is possible to have simultaneously pre- and postverbal wide focus. In (14) from Budukh, we have contrasted focal elements in clause-initial position as well as in **clause final** position.

10 Post-predicate elements in Kartvelian and East Caucasian

- (14) Budukh (Talibov 2007: 273)

[q'ažir-a]FOC *su're-rber č-aš-ar* [q:iš:laχ-ž-e]FOC, [jaz-ž-e]FOC
 winter-LOC herd-PL SUB-go-MSD qishlaq-OBL-LOC autumn-OBL-LOC
 fošχ-ar-i [daš-ž-a]FOC
 return-MSD-PRS mountain-OBL-LOC

‘In winter the herds go to the qishlaqs, in autumn they return to the mountains.’

In Hinuq, postverbal topics tend to precede postverbal foci (i.e. V-TOP-FOC) rather than the other way around (V-FOC-TOP), which is also the usual order for preverbal topics and foci and corresponds to what has been observed for many languages: known information precedes new information. However, apart from those sentences in which one of the NPs is a goal, two NPs following the verb are not frequently found.

- (15) Hinuq (Forker 2013: 759)

Ø-ežinnu uži-ž r-aš-a got [hayłoz]TOP [nasibaw žo]FOC
 1-old son-DAT v-find-INF be he.DAT predestined thing(v)
 ‘The oldest son will find the thing predestined for him.’

A special context that leads to the occurrence of post-predicate elements are floating modifiers of nouns that are separated from the head noun by other constituents. The head nouns (possibly in combination with other modifiers) are often focal and occur in preverbal position while the floating modifier is displaced postverbally. Especially common are floating genitives in the form of topical personal pronouns and demonstratives as in example (16) (see also Forker 2020: 410, 512–518, Creissels 2013, Komen & Bugenhagen 2017 for more examples). Creissels (2013) analyzes such constructions in Akhvakh. In contrast to genitives occurring in their canonical prenominal position floating genitives agree with the head noun in gender and fulfill “a possessive framing function, in the sense that the floating genitive identifies the personal sphere of its referent as the frame within which the predication expressed by the clause holds” (Creissels 2013: 333).

- (16) Icari Dargwa (Sumbatova & Mutualov 2003: 160)

č'ug q:at:a-d ha'jwan-ti d-ir-iri niš:a-la
 down canyon-NPL.INESS cattle-PL NPL-become-HAB.PST 1PL-GEN
 ‘Down in the canyon there was our cattle.’

When comparing postverbal subjects with postverbal objects it seems that the former are more influenced by information structure than the latter. Komen &

Diana Forker

Bugenhagen (2017), based on counts in a corpus of Chechen, found that one third of Chechen subjects occur after the finite verb in main clauses, and of those post-verbal subjects one third are pronominal. Postverbal subjects occur in utterances with presentational focus to introduce new referents by means of NPs, in existential clauses, to express paragraph-internal cohesion, i.e. with topical and pronominal subjects, and in reported speech constructions. This is a phenomenon also found in other East Caucasian languages as well as in Northwest Caucasian (Forker 2024 [Chapter 11, this volume]) and Kartvelian (Section 2). Intransitive thetic sentences show very clear word order preferences. Presentational sentences that introduce new referents (usually human, but sometimes also non-human, e.g. in fairy tales) frequently place the new referent in post-predicate position (17).

- (17) Ingush (Komen & Bugenhagen 2017)
Qoalagh=’a [qeachaav cwalxa cwa bearij]^{FOC}
 third=and arrived alone one horseman
 ‘A third lone rider arrived.’

Direct speech constructions where the verb of speech follows the quote often have postverbal subjects (18), and this type of construction is also common in the Northwest Caucasian language Adyghe (Haig et al. 2024 [Chapter 1, this volume]).

- (18) Chechen (Komen & Bugenhagen 2017)
“t’aaqqa ishkoliehw diesha a aatta xir du,” oolura txan
 then school.LOC learn.IMPF add easy will be say.IMPF 1PL.GEN
neenavashas
 uncle.ERG
 “Then he would learn more easily at school,” our uncle said.’

A last factor influencing the likelihood at least for postverbal objects is language contact. Table 11 summarizes counts in four different text collections in Hinuq (Forker & Belyaev 2016, Forker 2019). There is almost no difference concerning the position of the direct object between the older published texts and my own texts recorded 60 years later (17%). The pear stories collected with the same stimulus as the Georgian texts discussed in Section 2.3 have more postverbal objects (25%). The frog stories produced by speakers under 30 years living in the ethnolinguistically mixed village Monastirski and Shamkhal in the lowlands show an even larger amount of postverbal objects (43%). This can possibly be

10 *Post-predicate elements in Kartvelian and East Caucasian*

attributed to the greater influence of Russian and ongoing language shift among young speakers in the lowlands and resembles what has been said about Laz in Turkey when compared to the other Kartvelian languages in Georgia (Section 2.3).

Table 11: O-V vs. V-O in Hinuq texts (Forker & Belyaev 2016, Forker 2019)

| | old published texts | new traditional texts | pear stories | frog stories |
|--------------------|---------------------|-----------------------|--------------|-----------------------|
| # words | 1,507 | 2,503 | 1,583 | 2,033 |
| age of speakers | 14–29 | 12–62 | 13–30 | 19–29 |
| place of recording | Chechnya | Hinuq | Hinuq | Monastirski, Shamkhal |
| year | 1950 | 2006–2009 | 2006–2007 | 2013 |
| OV | 139 (82.74%) | 137 (82.53%) | 125 (74.40%) | 72 (57.14%) |
| VO | 29 (17.26%) | 29 (17.47%) | 43 (25.60%) | 54 (42.86%) |
| total | 168 | 166 | 168 | 126 |

Russian is usually assumed to have free word order, but with an underlying SVO structure (Tomlin 1986, though see the debate in THEORETICAL LINGUISTICS 48(1–2) 2022, in particular Haider & Szucsich (2022)). Corpus studies come to different results, but it seems that V-O is more frequent than O-V. For instance, Bazhukov et al. (2021) count the order of DO, IO and V for ditransitive verbs in the SynTagRus corpus and get 1420 O-V clauses vs. 4978 V-O clauses. Billings (2015) analyzed 500 clauses in the Russian National Corpus (RNC). The most numerous patterns were SVO (448) and SOV (22 clauses). However, Levshina et al. (2023: 856–857) compared 100 sentences of spoken Russia to 100 sentences of written Russian (Fiction and News) and found remarkable differences between the modalities: the conversations contained 61 examples of OV, and only 39 examples of VO, whereas both the fiction and news contained 17 examples of OV and 83 examples of VO each. Hinuq speakers are exposed to written standard Russian through the educational system, through the media, etc., but also to other forms of Russian such as oral (colloquial and standard) Russian through the media and non-standard Russian as spoken in the Caucasus. Russian impact on word order patterns in a similar vein as it is possibly found in Hinuq (SOV > SVO) has been document for Sakha (Turkic) (Grenoble et al. 2019) and Udmurt (Uralic) (Asztalos 2021).

In sum, postverbal items in East Caucasian occur relatively frequently. They fulfil various grammatical functions. In particular goals are prone to occur after the verb. There are also indications that in some languages (Sanzhi Dargwa, Chirag Dargwa, Chechen) part of speech plays a role in the sense that nominals and pronouns do not behave alike when it comes to their position with respect to the

Diana Forker

verb; see [Forker 2024](#) [Chapter 11], this volume for additional parallels. There are two constructions in which postverbal items are frequently found in many East Caucasian languages, namely thetic introductory sentences and reported speech constructions, and similar constructions have been identified in Kartvelian and Adyghe. Information structure affects word order at the clausal level, but it is not possible to identify any strict rules. This means that topical as well as focal items can appear after the verb. Furthermore, East Caucasian languages have a special construction in which modifiers split from their head and appear in a postverbal position. Finally, data for Hinuq suggest that Russian has an impact on the frequency of postpredicate items, in particular with younger speakers living in ethnically mixed places in the Dagestanian lowlands.

4 Discussion

All indigenous Caucasian language families (Kartvelian, East Caucasian, but also Northwest Caucasian) are more rigid with respect to word order in noun phrases and subordinate clauses and declarative main clauses enjoy the most flexibility.

Post-predicate items in Georgian (Kartvelian) and East Caucasian are relatively common (when compared to Northwest Caucasian) and can be triggered by

- certain constructions such as thetic utterances and general information structure
- semantic roles (e.g. in Georgian, goals and in Sanzhi Dargwa and Tabasaran **goals** and addressees show a greater preference than other semantic **roles**)
- heaviness and the presence of relative clauses in Georgian (no data for East Caucasian available)

As the data from Laz (Kartvelian) show, language contact has a strong impact on the flexibility of constituent order at the clausal level and on the presence vs. absence of postpredicate elements. Laz is the only one of the Kartvelian languages mainly spoken in Turkey and resembles Turkic with respect to word order patterns.

When comparing the three indigenous **languages** families of the Caucasus (and excluding Laz), it turns out that Northwest Caucasian languages are the least flexible languages. One is tempted to hypothesize that this is due to their head-marking profile. They have little to no case marking but richer verbal indexing than the other two families. Studies have found a robust negative correlation between rigid word order and case marking ([Sinnemäki 2014](#), [Levshina 2021](#)).

10 *Post-predicate elements in Kartvelian and East Caucasian*

This paper supports a gradient approach to word order as it has recently been advocated by Levshina et al. (2023). The label ‘flexible SOV’ for Kartvelian and East Caucasian is very coarse-grained and corpus data from different sources show a spectrum of different word order patterns and varying degrees of frequencies. Levshina et al. (2023) show that word order patterns are subject to influence by many factors, some of them competing with each other such word order flexibility is a common outcome. In their study they mention one East Caucasian language, Avar, as an “SOV flexible” languages with a higher degree of flexibility than other languages in the same study (Malayalam, Hindi, Spanish, Korean, and English.), which fits to the data from Chirag, Sanzhi and Tabasaran in this paper.

References

- Apridonidze, Šukia. 1986. *Sit’q’vatganlageba axal kartulši* [Word order in modern Georgian]. Tbilisi: Mecniereba.
- Aronson, Howard. 1991. Modern Georgian. In Alice C. Harris (ed.), *The indigenous languages of the Caucasus. vol. I: The Kartvelian languages*, 219–312. Delmar, NY: Caravan Books.
- Asatiani, Rusudan & Stavros Skopeteas. 2012. The information structure of Georgian. In Manfred Krifka & Renate Musan (eds.), *The expression of information structure*, 127–158. Berlin: De Gruyter Mouton.
- Asztalos, Erika. 2021. From head-final towards head-initial grammar: Generational and areal differences concerning word order usage and judgement among Udmurt speakers. In Diana Forker & Lenore A. Grenoble (eds.), *Language contact in the territory of the former Soviet Union*, 143–182. Amsterdam: Benjamins. DOI: [10.1075/impact.50.06asz](https://doi.org/10.1075/impact.50.06asz).
- Bazhukov, M. O., L.I. Chubarova, N.A. Slioussar & S. Yu. Toldova. 2021. The order of objects in Russian: A corpus study. *Computational Linguistics and Intellectual Technologies: Papers from the Annual International Conference “Dialogue”* 20. 68–78. DOI: [10.28995/2075-7182-2021-20-68-78](https://doi.org/10.28995/2075-7182-2021-20-68-78).
- Billings, Stephanie Kay. 2015. *A corpus-based analysis of Russian word order patterns*. Brigham Young University. (MA thesis). <https://scholarsarchive.byu.edu/etd/5624>.
- Boeder, Winfried. 2005. The South Caucasian languages. *Lingua* 115(1-2). 5–89.
- Boeder, Winfried. 2021. Modern Georgian.

Diana Forker

- Bogomolova, Natalia, Dmitry Ganenkov & Nils N. Schiborr. 2021. Multi-CAST Tabasaran. In Geoffrey Haig & Stefan Schnell (eds.), *Multi-CAST: Multilingual corpus of annotated spoken texts*. Bamberg: University of Bamberg. multicast.aspra.uni-bamberg.de/#tabasaran.
- Chafe, Wallace. 1980. *The pear stories: Cognitive, cultural, and linguistic aspects of narrative production*. Norwood, NJ: Ablex.
- Creissels, Denis. 2013. Floating genitives and possessive framing in Northern Akhvakh. In Anne Carlier & Jean-Christophe Verstraete (eds.), *The genitive*, 333–354. Amsterdam: Benjamins.
- Forker, Diana. 2013. *A grammar of Hinuq*. Berlin: De Gruyter Mouton.
- Forker, Diana. 2019. The impact of language contact on Hinuq: Phonology, morphology, syntax, and lexicon. *Language Typology and Universals* 71. 29–62.
- Forker, Diana. 2020. *A grammar of Sanzhi Dargwa*. Berlin: Language Science Press.
- Forker, Diana. 2024. Post-predicate elements in Adyghe. In Geoffrey Haig, Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand, Donald Stilo, Laurentia Schreiber & Nils N. Schiborr (eds.), *Post-predicate elements in the Western Asian Transition Zone: A corpus-based approach to areal typology*, 289–315. Berlin: Language Science Press.
- Forker, Diana & Oleg Belyaev. 2016. Word order and focus particles in Nakh-Dagestanian languages. In M. M. Jocelyne Fernandez-Vest & Robert D. Van Valin (eds.), *Information structuring of spoken language from a cross-linguistic perspective*, 239–262. Berlin: De Gruyter Mouton. DOI: [10.1515/9783110368758-012](https://doi.org/10.1515/9783110368758-012).
- Forker, Diana & Nils N. Schiborr. 2019. Multi-CAST Sanzhi Dargwa. In Geoffrey Haig & Stefan Schnell (eds.), *Multi-CAST: Multilingual corpus of annotated spoken texts*. Bamberg: University of Bamberg. multicast.aspra.uni-bamberg.de/#sanzhi.
- Ganenkov, Dmitry & Timur A. Maisak. 2021. Nakh-Dagestanian languages. In Maria Polinsky (ed.), *The Oxford handbook of languages of the Caucasus*, 86–145. Oxford: Oxford University Press. DOI: [10.1093/oxfordhb/9780190690694.013.4](https://doi.org/10.1093/oxfordhb/9780190690694.013.4).
- Grenoble, Lenore A., Jessica Kantarovich, Irena Khokhlova & Liudmila Zamorschikova. 2019. Evidence of syntactic convergence among Russian-Sakha bilinguals. *Suvremena Lingvistika* 45(7). 41–57.
- Haider, Hubert & Luka Szucsich. 2022. Slavic languages – “SVO” languages without SVO qualities? *Theoretical Linguistics* 48(1-2). 1–39. DOI: [10.1515/tl-2022-2035](https://doi.org/10.1515/tl-2022-2035).
- Haig, Geoffrey, Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand, Donald Stilo, Laurentia Schreiber & Nils N. Schiborr. 2024. Post-predicate elements in the Western Asian Transition Zone: Data, theory, and methods. In Geoffrey Haig, Mohammad Rasekh-

10 Post-predicate elements in Kartvelian and East Caucasian

- Mahand, Donald Stilo, Laurentia Schreiber & Nils N. Schiborr (eds.), *Post-predicate elements in the Western Asian Transition Zone: A corpus-based approach to areal typology*, 1–49. Berlin: Language Science Press.
- Harris, Alice C. 1991. Mingrelian. In Alice C. Harris (ed.), *The indigenous languages of the Caucasus. vol. I: The Kartvelian languages*, 314–394. Delmar, NY: Caravan Books.
- Harris, Alice C. 2000. Word order harmonies and word order change in Georgian. In Rosanna Sornicola, Erich Poppe & A. Sisha-Halevy (eds.), *Stability, variation and change of word order patterns over time*, 133–163. Amsterdam: Benjamins.
- Holisky, Dee A. 1991. Laz. In Alice C. Harris (ed.), *The indigenous languages of the caucasus. vol. I: The Kartvelian languages*, 395–472. Delmar, NY: Caravan Books.
- Khalilova, Kh. M. 1976. Lakskie teksty [Lak texts]. In A. A. Axlakov & Kh. M. Xalilov (eds.), *Satira i humor narodov Dagestana [Satire and humor of the Dagestanian people]*, 201–258. Makhachkala: Darginogoizdat.
- Komen, Erwin R. 2007. *Focus in Chechen*. Leiden University. (MA thesis).
- Komen, Erwin R. & Robert D. Bugenhagen. 2017. Post-verbal pronominal subjects in Chechen and Ingush. Paper presented at the *50th annual meeting of the societas linguistica europaea*, 10 September - 13 September, Zürich, Switzerland.
- Kutscher, Silvia & Nuran Sevim Genç. 1998. *Ardeşen narrates - Ardeşeni na isinap-inenpe. A collection of Laz spoken texts with glosses and translations into English, German, Turkish*. Munich: Lincom Europa.
- Lacroix, René. 2009. *Description du dialecte Laze d'Arhavi (Caucasique du Sud, Turquie)*. Lyon: Université Lumière Lyon 2. (Doctoral dissertation).
- Levshina, Natalia. 2021. Cross-linguistic trade-offs and causal relationships between cues to grammatical subject and object, and the problem of efficiency-related explanations. *Frontiers in Psychology* 12. 648200. DOI: [10.3389/fpsyg.2021.648200](https://doi.org/10.3389/fpsyg.2021.648200).
- Levshina, Natalia, Savithry Namboodiripad, Marc Allasonnière-Tang, Mathew Kramer, Luigi Talamo, Annemarie Verkerk, Sasha Wilmoth, Gabriela Garrido Rodriguez, Timothy Michael Gupton, Evan Kidd, Zoey Liu, Chiara Naccarato, Rachel Nordlinger, Anastasia Panova & Natalia Stoyanova. 2023. Why we need a gradient approach to word order. *Linguistics* 61(4). 825–883. DOI: [10.1515/ling-2021-0098](https://doi.org/10.1515/ling-2021-0098).
- Nichols, Johanna. 1994. Chechen. In Rieks Smeets (ed.), *The indigenous languages of the Caucasus. vol. 4: The North East Caucasian languages II*, 1–77. Delmar, NY: Caravan Books.
- Nichols, Johanna. 2011. *Ingush grammar*. Berkeley: University of California Press.

Diana Forker

- Pourtskhvanidze, Zakharia. 2015. *Fokuspartikeln und Wortstellung im Georgischen*. Wiesbaden: Reichert.
- Rasekh-Mahand, Mohammad, Elham Izadi, Mehdi Parizadeh, Geoffrey Haig & Nils N. Schiborr. 2024. Post-predicate elements in modern colloquial Persian: A multifactorial analysis. In Geoffrey Haig, Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand, Donald Stilo, Laurentia Schreiber & Nils N. Schiborr (eds.), *Post-predicate elements in the Western Asian Transition Zone: A corpus-based approach to areal typology*, 183–216. Berlin: Language Science Press.
- Rostovtsev-Popiel, Alexander. 2021. Megrelian. In Maria Polinsky (ed.), *The Oxford handbook of languages of the Caucasus*, 529–569. Oxford: Oxford University Press. DOI: [10.1093/oxfordhb/9780190690694.013.8](https://doi.org/10.1093/oxfordhb/9780190690694.013.8).
- Schmidt, Karl H. 1991. Svan. In Alice C. Harris (ed.), *The indigenous languages of the Caucasus. vol. 1: The Kartvelian languages*, 471–556. Delmar, NY: Caravan Books.
- Sinnemäki, Kaius. 2014. Complexity trade-offs: A case study. In Frederick J. Newmeyer & Laurel B. Preston (eds.), *Measuring grammatical complexity*, 179–201. Oxford: Oxford University Press. DOI: [10.1093/acprof:oso/9780199685301.003.0009](https://doi.org/10.1093/acprof:oso/9780199685301.003.0009).
- Skopeteas, Stavros. 2021. Georgian: V-final or V-medial. In Christiane Bulut, Anaïd Donabédian-Demopoulos, Geoffrey Haig, Geoffrey Khan, Pollet Samvelian, Stavros Skopeteas & Nina Sumbatova (eds.), *Glottothèque: Languages of the Anatolia-Caucasus-Iran-Mesopotamia online*. Bamberg/Cambridge/Göttingen/Moskow/Nicosia/Paris: LACIM network. <https://spw.uni-goettingen.de/projects/lacim/lnq-geo.html>.
- Skopeteas, Stavros, Caroline Féry & Rusudan Asatiani. 2009. Word order and intonation in Georgian. *Lingua* 119(1). 102–127. DOI: [10.1016/j.lingua.2008.09.001](https://doi.org/10.1016/j.lingua.2008.09.001).
- Stilo, Donald. 2014. Areal factors and postverbal patients in spoken Azerbaijani: A corpus-based study. In Nurettin Demir, Birsel Karakoç & Astrid Menz (eds.), *Turkology and linguistics. Festschrift éva ágnes Csató*, 417–430. Ankara: Hacettepe Üniversitesi.
- Stilo, Donald. 2018. Preverbal and postverbal peripheral arguments in the Araxes-Iran linguistic area. Paper presented at the *Conference Anatolia-Caucasus-Iran: Ethnic and Linguistic Contacts* 10-12 May 2018. Yerevan University, Yerevan, Armenia.
- Stilo, Donald & René Lacroix. 2021. Laz (Arhavi). In Geoffrey Haig, Donald Stilo, Mahîr C. Doğan & Nils N. Schiborr (eds.), *WOWA — Word Order in Western Asia: A spoken-language-based corpus for investigating areal effects in word order*.

10 *Post-predicate elements in Kartvelian and East Caucasian*

- der variation. Bamberg: University of Bamberg. multicast.aspra.uni-bamberg.de/resources/wowa/.
- Sumbatova, Nina R. & Rasul O. Mutalov. 2003. *A grammar of Icari Dargwa*. München: Lincom Europa.
- Talibov, Bukar B. 2007. *Buduxskij jazyk*. Moscow: Academia.
- Testelets, Yakov G. 1998a. Word order in Daghestanian languages. In Anna Siewierska (ed.), *Constituent order in the languages of Europe*, 257–280. Berlin: De Gruyter Mouton.
- Testelets, Yakov G. 1998b. Word order in Kartvelian languages. In Anna Siewierska (ed.), *Constituent order in the languages of Europe*, 235–256. Berlin: De Gruyter Mouton.
- Testelets, Yakov G. 2021. Kartvelian (South Caucasian) languages. In Maria Polinsky (ed.), *The Oxford handbook of languages of the Caucasus*, 491–528. Oxford: Oxford University Press. DOI: [10.1093/oxfordhb/9780190690694.013.5](https://doi.org/10.1093/oxfordhb/9780190690694.013.5).
- Tomlin, Russell. 1986. *Basic word order: Functional principles*. London: Croom Helm.
- Tuite, Kevin. 1998. *A short descriptive grammar of the Svan language*. Montréal: Université de Montréal. <https://archive.org/details/060-svan>.
- van den Berg, Helma. 2005. The East Caucasian language family. *Lingua* 115(1-2). 147–190.
- Vogt, Hans. 1971. *Grammaire de la Langue Géorgienne*. Oslo: Universitaetsvorlaget Oslo.

Chapter 11

Post-predicate elements in Adyghe

Diana Forker^a

^aFriedrich Schiller University Jena

In this paper, I study post-predicate elements in the Northwest Caucasian language Adyghe. In the literature, Adyghe is characterized as having SOV has basic pattern, but as being in principle a “free” word order language. There are no corpus-based studies on word order in Adyghe (or any other Northwest Caucasian language) up to now, so this study is a step towards filling this research gap.

I first examine examples of post-predicate elements in the literature on Adyghe, which confirm the expectations and exemplify various types of arguments and adjuncts as well as subordinate clauses that can appear after the verb. In a second step, I identify and count post-predicate elements in 20 Adyghe texts collected between 1969 and 2017 among the Adyghe people in the Caucasian homeland and the Turkish diaspora by various researchers. Only around 10% of the main clauses contain post-predicate elements of which the majority are pragmatic particles, but post-predicate subject, objects and adjuncts are also attested. Most post-predicate referents are topical, but focal referents can also be found. Differences in genre play a relatively big role: personal accounts contain around as twice as many instances of post-predicate elements than traditional narratives. Furthermore, the texts from Adygea show a greater frequency of post-predicate elements than those from Turkey which might be due to the influence of two typologically and genealogically different contact languages (Russian and Turkish).

1 Introduction

In this contribution I outline the main facts of word order in Adyghe and then analyze in more detail post-predicate elements. There have been no dedicated studies on word order in Adyghe (or any other Northwest Caucasian language) up to now, so this study is the first of its kind.

Diana Forker

Adyghe belongs to the Circassian branch of the Northwest Caucasian language family. The homeland of the Adyghe people is the northwestern Caucasus region (Russian Federation). Since the conquest of the Caucasus by Russia in the second half of the 19th century there are diaspora communities in Turkey, Jordan, Israel, Syria and other countries.

The main goal of my contribution is to identify first of all grammatically acceptable post-predicate elements and examine them with respect to their syntactic functions, grammatical roles and their information structural properties. My second goal is to study post-predicate elements in natural texts by comparing data from the Adyghe homeland with data from the diaspora community in Turkey. Adyghe diaspora communities in Turkey (and other places) have been relatively isolated from the original speech community for more than 150 years. The two communities are under the influence of two distinct languages of wider communication, Turkish and Russian respectively, and the data suggest that these differing contact scenarios have led to divergence.

Like all Northwest Caucasian languages, Adyghe is polysynthetic with highly complex verbal morphology. Verb forms contain pronominal prefixes indexing all syntactic arguments of the predicate, i.e. intransitive and transitive subjects, direct object, indirect object, etc. Parts of speech are not always clearly differentiated in terms of inflection. A wide range of grammatical markers for person, tense, number, modality, and negation can be added to any content word. Adyghe has ergative alignment that shows up in case marking and agreement. The suffix *-r* ('absolutive') marks intransitive subjects and direct objects. The suffix *-m* ('oblique') marks transitive subjects (agents), as well as indirect objects, certain adverbials (temporal, spatial), and adnominal possessors. Nonspecificity and indefiniteness are indicated by the omission of case suffixes. Proper nouns and first and second pronouns do not distinguish absolute and oblique. Clauses contain at least a predicate, which can be verbs, nouns, pronouns, adjectives or even postpositions. Predicates take pronominal prefixes and tense morphology. Copula clauses consist of a copula complement and the copula verb. Overt argument NPs are optional as it is expected for polysynthetic languages (Testelets & Lander 2017). This property makes the study of word order patterns at the clausal level based on natural texts somewhat difficult because arguments are recurrently only expressed through pronominal prefixes.

Major grammatical descriptions of Adyghe are Jakovlev & Ashkhamaf (1941), Rogava & Kerasheva (1966) and Arkadiev et al. (2009). Kumakhov & Vamling (2009) analyze Circassian clause structure including word order. There are no corpus-based studies on word order in Adyghe. But there is a corpus of Standard Adyghe (Arkhangelskiy et al. 2018–2023), available on the Internet (<http://adyghe.web-corpora.net/>).

This paper is mainly based on 20 Adyghe texts (6,146 words) recorded in Adygea (Caucasus) and Turkey.¹ All examples are marked by [H] for ‘homeland’ and [D] for ‘diaspora.’ Some of these texts have been published in Höhlig (1997), Paris (1974) and Feer (2019), and the texts from Paris (1974) can also be found in the online Pangloss Collection (see references). Other texts collected by Monika Höhlig in the 1990s and by Feer between 2016 and 2017 were kindly provided to me by both researchers. The texts are monologues that can be roughly divided into two types, namely (i) traditional narratives such as legends, fairy tales and anecdotes and (ii) personal accounts/autobiographies. Following Höhlig (1997) I also classified the texts according to the age of the speakers into old, middle and young generation. The texts have been chosen such as to roughly equally represent Adyghe from the homeland in contact with Russian and Adyghe from the diaspora in contact with Turkish. A further criterion was genre.

A full list with sources can be found in the appendix.

2 Word order profile of Adyghe

2.1 Word order patterns in noun phrases and other constituents

In this section and the following section, I present an overview of word order patterns in Adyghe noun phrases and clauses including a few examples with post-predicate elements. A more detailed discussion of post-predicate elements in texts will be given in Section 3.

Constituent order within the NP is mixed. Adjectives, simple cardinal numerals except for the numeral ‘one’ and resultative verbs follow the noun. The numerals are suffixed by means of a linking morpheme as in the following example (1).

- (1) noun + adjective-numeral + adjective
 Adyghe (courtesy of Y. Lander) [H]
 ha b^wež'-jə-t^w g^were
 dog yellow-LNK-two certain
 ‘two certain yellow dogs’

Demonstratives (2), non-referential modifying nouns and appositive names (3), relative clauses (4), possessors including possessive prefixes (2), (3), the cardinal numeral ‘one’ (4) and ordinal numerals precede the nominal head. Lander (2017)

¹There is no WOWA-data set for Adyghe, or any other Northwest Caucasian language to date.

Diana Forker

labels the prenominal modifiers ‘non-adjectival’ and notes that they are ungradable. Postnominal modifiers can but need not be gradable. Very commonly modifiers enter into a close connection with the modified noun and are pronounced and written together such as the noun and the adjective in the second noun phrase ‘his grandmother’ in example (2). These units are called ‘nominal complex’ in Lander (2017), who argues that they form a single word based on their morphosyntactic properties. For instance, case marking and plural marking occur only once per unit (8).

- (2) demonstrative + noun + adjective and possessive-noun-adjective, postposition

Adyghe (courtesy of M. Höhlig) [H]

[*mwe č'ele čač'ə-r*] [ja-ne-ž] djə qə-zə-kʷe-č'ə
that boy little-ABS POSS-mother-old to DIR-REL TEMP-go-INST
'when that little boy went to his grandmother ...'

- (3) possessive construction, postpositional phrase

Adyghe (Paris 1974) [D]

[[*qahraman gʷaše-m*] jə-šə-šxa-pʷe] jə-dež'-g'ə
Kahraman princess-OBL POSS-horse-eat-place POSS-to-INST
possessor possessed postposition
'to the manger of the horses of princess Kahraman'

- (4) relative clause + numeral-noun

Adyghe (Paris 1974) [D]

deč'əyəməqʷe pšəpəjə-r [...] [*xəkəgʷə-m jə-sə-xe-me*
Detcheghemeqo Pshepeye-ABS country-OBL LOC-live-PL-OBL.PL
?ape-g'ə q:-ja-va-λačʷe-w] zə-čəfə-β
finger-INST DIR-3PL.A-CAUS-see-ADV one-human.being-PST
'Detcheghemeqo Pshepeye [...] was a person whom the inhabitants (lit.
'the ones living there') of the country respected.' (lit. 'one human being
that they pointed at with their fingers')

Adyghe has exclusively postpositions, which have mostly been grammaticalized from nouns (Arkadiev & Maisak 2018). The postpositional complement is often additionally expressed via a possessive prefix (3).

In complex verb forms, auxiliaries follow the lexical verb and some have already grammaticalized into suffixes (Kimmelman 2011, Arkadiev & Maisak 2018). They mostly express aspectual meanings and epistemic modality (probability and

11 Post-predicate elements in Adyghe

necessity) and can also occur in conditional clauses. In the following example, the auxiliary verb $\chi^w\partial$ - ‘be, happen’ bears the conditional suffix *-me* and forms a complex verb together with the lexical verb $?^w\text{e}$ - ‘say, speak, tell, talk’.

- (5) Adyghe (courtesy of M. Höhlig) [H]

$g^w\text{əxel-ew} \quad j\partial-?e-r \quad q\partial-m\partial-?^w\text{a-xe} \quad \chi^w\partial-me, \quad \dots$
 intent-ADV LOC-be-ABS DIR-NEG-speak-TRM happen-COND
 ‘if (the guest) did not tell the intentions that he had ...’

2.2 Word order at the clausal level

At the level of the main clause, Adyghe is, as other Northwest languages, at the same time left-branching / verb-final, with SOV being considered as a kind of default pattern, though tolerating a fair degree of flexibility (Jakovlev & Ashkhamaf 1941, Rogava & Kerasheva 1966, Kumakhov & Vamling 2009, Lander 2014, Testelets & Lander 2017). All logically possible orders are available. As typical for SOV languages, focal items occur in the preverbal position and contrastive items are said to occur sentence-initially (Arkadiev & Lander 2021).

Jakovlev & Ashkhamaf (1941: 91) list the following patterns for transitive verbs with overt subject, direct object, and an adjunct noun expressing location (6a-6f, 6g). Verb-final order with the subject preceding the direct object (SOV) is analyzed as basic and neutral with respect to emphasis and information structure (6a). The reversal of subject and direct object (OSV) illustrated in (6b) is characterized as also possible but less used. All other patterns are called ‘inverse’ (6c-6f, 6g). They write that in verb-second patterns the final element is most highlighted and the penultimate element that immediately follows the verb is also highlighted albeit to a lesser extent.

- (6) a. Adyghe (Jakovlev & Ashkhamaf 1941: 91) [H]

basic pattern: S-O-LOC-V [SOV]
 $\check{c}'ale-me \quad ba\check{z}'e-xe-r \quad meza-m \quad \check{s}'a-\text{λεв}^w\partial-\text{вe-x}$
 boy-OBL.PL fox-PL-ABS forest-OBL LOC-see-PST-PL

- b. O-S-LOC-V [OSV]

$ba\check{z}'e-xe-r \quad \check{c}'ale-me \quad meza-m \quad \check{s}'a-\text{λεв}^w\partial-\text{вe-x}$
 fox-PL-ABS boy-OBL.PL forest-OBL LOC-see-PST-PL

- c. S-V-O-LOC [SVO]

$\check{c}'ale-me \quad \check{s}'a-\text{λεв}^w\partial-\text{вe-x} \quad ba\check{z}'e-xe-r \quad meza-m$
 boy-OBL.PL LOC-see-PST-PL fox-PL-ABS forest-OBL

Diana Forker

- d. **LOC-V-O-S** [VOS]
mezə-m *š'a-λεv^wə-be-x* *baž'e-xe-r* *č'ale-me*
 forest-OBL LOC-see-PST-PL fox-PL-ABS boy-OBL.PL
- e. **O-V-LOC-S** [OVS]
baž'e-xe-r *š'a-λεv^wə-be-x* *mezə-m* *č'ale-me*
 fox-PL-ABS LOC-see-PST-PL forest-OBL boy-OBL.PL
- f. **V-S-O-LOC** [VSO]
š'a-λεv^wə-be-x *č'ale-me* *baž'e-xe-r* *mezə-m*
 LOC-see-PST-PL boy-OBL.PL fox-PL-ABS forest-OBL
- g. **V-S-LOC-O** [VSO]
š'a-λεv^wə-be-x *č'ale-me* *mezə-m* *baž'e-xe-r*
 LOC-see-PST-PL boy-OBL.PL forest-OBL fox-PL-ABS
 'The boys saw the foxes in the forest.'

In verb-initial patterns again the final element is emphasized and the verb to a lesser degree (6f, 6g).

Kumakhov & Vamling (2009: 117) also illustrate the six available constituent order patterns for subject, direct object and verb (albeit with a pronominal subject). Kumakhov & Vamling (2009: 112) further state that constituent order varies with information structure. For example, in answers to questions that target the subject SVO is more common than SOV.

The position of the indirect object in pragmatically neutral clauses with nominal arguments is between the subject and the direct object (S-DO-IO-V) according to Kumakhov & Vamling (2009: 114–115) (12–13). In this pattern, the two arguments that bear identical case markers (*-m*) (S, IO) are separated by the direct object in the absolute case (*-r*).

- (7) Adyghe (Kumakhov & Vamling 2009: 114) [H]
S-DO-IO-V
č'ale-m *txelə-r* *pšaše-m* *r-jə-tə-β*
 boy-OBL book-ABS girl-OBL OBL-3SG.A-give-PST
 'The boy gave the book to the girl.'
- (8) Adyghe (courtesy of M. Höhlig) [H]
S-DO-IO-V
jež' ja-te=ja-ne-xe-m-jə *ə-š-xe-m-jə*
 self POSS-father=POSS-mother-PL-OBL-ADD 3SG.POSS-brother-PL-OBL-ADD
pšešežaje-r *[zə-fe-mə-je-w]* *məλk^wə z-jə-?e]* *wənaš^we*
 girl-ABS REL.IO-ben-NEG-want-ADV property REL.IO-LOC-be family

11 Post-predicate elements in Adyghe

g^were-m r-a-t₃-B
 certain-OBL OBL-3PL.A-give-PST

‘Her parents and brothers gave the girl to a certain family with property who she did not want.’

However, S-IO-DO-V is also attested (9), in particular when either the subject or the indirect object is a personal pronoun.

- (9) Adyghe (Rogava & Kerasheva 1966: 65) [H]

S-IO-DO-V
hač'e-m č'ale-m š₃-r r-j₃-t₃-B
 guest-OBL boy-OBL horse-ABS OBL-3SG.A-give-PST
 ‘The guest gave the horse to the boy.’

The addressees in (10) exemplifies another indirect object in preverbal position. Adjuncts such as instruments (11) or beneficiaries expressed by means of postpositional phrases (12) usually occur between the subject and the verb. Yet positions before the subject (11) and after the predicate are also allowed (Section 3).

- (10) Adyghe (courtesy of M. Höhlig) [H]

*š₃-m apəλə-m r-a-?w^wa-₃ mə-rə mə-rə
 horse-OBL stableman?-OBL OBL-3PL.A-speak-PST this-PRED this-PRED
 a-?w^we-re-r
 3SG.A-speak-DYN-ABS*

‘They said to the stableman: “It is like this and like that.”’

- (11) Adyghe (courtesy of M. Höhlig) [H]

*əpč'e adəye-me ?a-č'e jaťe-č'e
 earlier Adyghe-OBL.PL hand-INST clay-INST
 qə-r-a-jə-č'ə-š'tə-₃e-x
 DIR-DAT-3PL.A-smear-EL-AUX-PST-PL*
 [Now houses are built with plaster.] ‘Earlier the Adyghe people smeared (the houses) with clay with the hands.’

- (12) Adyghe (courtesy of R. Feer) [H]

*çəf-me a-paje we p-şə-₃e
 human.being-OBL.PL 3PL-for 2SG 2SG.A-do-PST*
 ‘You built it for the people.’

Diana Forker

Temporal and spatial adverbials including locations and goals frequently occur in clause-initial positions before the subject if there is any overtly expressed subject (13, 14) or otherwise directly before the verb (14, 15), but also occasionally after the verb (Section 3).

- (13) Adyghe (courtesy of M. Höhlig) [H]

TIME-LOC-S-COP-PRED

a zeman-m hakʷənhable-m č'ale-m thamate ja-ʔa-β hakʷərəne
 that time-OBL Hakunhable-OBL **aul**-OBL elder LOC-be-PST Hakuren
təβʷəž a-ʔʷe-w
 Teguz 3PL.A-speak-ADV

‘At that time in Hakunhable, the village-elder was called Hakuren Teguz.’

- (14) Adyghe (courtesy of R. Feer) [H]

TIME-S-LOC-COP-PURP[DO-V]

aj ə-pe-re mafe-xe-m χʷaž'ε-r bezerə-m
 that.OBL 3SG.POSS-earlier-ADJ day-PL-OBL hodja-ABS bazar-OBL
š'ə-ʔa-β [č'əm qə-š'efə-n-ew]
 LOC-be-PST cow DIR-buy-MOD-ADV

‘The days before, the Hodja was at the market to buy a cow.’

- (15) Adyghe (courtesy of M. Höhlig) [H]

TIME-GOAL-CV

wtoroj klass nes škʷelə-m sə-kʷa-β
 second[R] class[R] to school[R]-OBL 1SG.ABS-go-PST

‘Until the second class I went to school.’

Complement clauses are marked by a variety of strategies among which the most frequent ones are the bare verbal stem without any tense or other markers, the modal/potentialis form with or without additional case suffixes, a specialized factive form with the prefix *zere-*, case markers (adverbial case as in (4), (14), (16) and instrumental case as in (2)) and the conditional suffix in combination with the additive (17) (see Serdobolskaya 2016 for a detailed analysis). There are no complementizers. Complement clauses usually precede the matrix clause, (16), (17) but they can also follow or be embedded.

Reported speech can be marked with a quotative particle that has been grammaticalized from a non-finite form of the verb of speech *ʔʷe-* ‘say, speak, tell, talk’ (which, however, retains its person prefixes). The quotative particle follows the quote (10), (17). The clause expressing the quote follows the matrix clause with the verb of speech (10) or precedes it as in the next two examples (16, 17).

11 Post-predicate elements in Adyghe

- (16) Adyghe (Feer 2019) [H]

[*təkʷəžəqʷe qəzbeč' s-λəkʷə-n-ew*] *sə-feja-ς*,
 Tuguzhuko Kyzbech 1SG.A-see-MOD-ADV 1SG.ABS-want-PST
 [*sə-de-gʷəš əɿe-n-ew*] *sə-faj* *ə-ɿʷa-β*
 1SG.ABS-COM-talk-MOD-ADV 1SG.ABS-must 3SG.A-speak-PST
 “I would like to see Tuguzhuko Kyzbech, I want/need to speak with him,”
 he said.’

- (17) Adyghe (courtesy of R. Feer) [H]

[*a-fede ɿ'ə-ɿe-m-ja*] *s-ʂa-xe-re-p* *nəɿa*
 DAT-similar LOC-be-COND-ADD 1SG.IO-know-TRM-DYN-NEG only
ə-ɿʷa-ς *je-ɿʷe* *pʂaʂe-m*
 3SG.A-speak-PST DAT-speak girl-OBL
 ‘The girl said, “I don’t know at all if there is somebody similar.”’

Adverbial subordination is expressed through specialized and general converbs, relativization, and the additive suffix, but not by means of subordinating particles (Forker In Press). Adverbial clauses, in particular chaining clauses, precede the main clause, but a position after the main clause is also possible (Section 3).

Here is a summary of the preferred ordering patterns:

- fixed but mixed word order in NPs
- only postpositions
- auxiliaries after lexical verb
- flexible word order at clausal level with preference for verb-final patterns, in particular for SOV
- complement and adverbial clauses precede main clauses
- relative clauses precede head nouns

From this follows that Adyghe has a certain preference for head-final patterns within the clause and in clause combining.

Diana Forker

3 Examining post-predicate elements

In this section, I will explore post-predicate elements in more detail and not discuss the relative positions of pre-predicate items with respect to each other. In particular, I will explore the relative frequency of post-predicate elements in homeland Adyghe vs. diaspora Adyghe and the impact of genre/style.

3.1 Post-predicate elements in elicitation and texts

As explained in Section 2.2, Adyghe has a tendency for head-final word order at the clausal level. But at the same time the word order is described as “free” and in the published works on Adyghe one finds many examples of post-predicate elements in examples that have probably been elicited. Examples (6c-6f, 6g) show post-verbal subjects and direct objects. In sentences (18) and (19) we find post-verbal indirect objects functioning as recipients and causees respectively. In (19) also the direct object appears after the verb.

- (18) Adyghe (Paris 1974: 220) [D]
 indirect object (recipient)
 $\lambda \partial - m \quad q^w \partial \hat{z} \ r - j - e - t \partial \quad \hat{s}^w \partial z \partial - m$
 man-OBL pear DAT-3SG.A-DYN-give woman-OBL
 ‘The man gives / is giving a pear to the woman.’
- (19) Adyghe (Letuchiy 2009: 388) [H]
 indirect object (causee)
 $t - \hat{s} \partial - n \quad t - \hat{s} e - r e - p - \hat{s} \partial, \quad q e - \hat{z}^w \partial - \kappa a - ?^w \partial - b a \quad a d e \quad w e r e d$
 1PL.A-do-MOD 1PL.A-do-DYN-NEG-CS DIR-2PL.A-CAUS-say-PRT well song
 $a - \check{s}'$
 that-OBL
 ‘As for doing we will not do (anything), so he may sing a song!’ (lit. ‘You let him / you cause him to sing a song.’)

The post-verbal elements can be definite or indefinite (which for nouns correlates with case marking, i.e. the omission of the case marking indicates indefiniteness), e.g. in (6c) and (6d) postverbal direct objects bear the absolute suffix *-r* and are definite whereas in (19) the direct object is not marked for case and thus indefinite.

Not only arguments but also adjuncts can occur after the verb. In (6c) and (6e) the case-marked noun denoting a location is placed in post-verbal position. In the literature, one also finds examples of complement clauses that follow the matrix

11 Post-predicate elements in Adyghe

clause with a variety of complement-taking predicates, e.g. ‘want’, ‘need, must’, ‘fear’, or ‘know’ (20) and some examples of post-verbal adverbial clauses (21).

- (20) Adyghe (Serdobolskaya & Motlokhov 2009: 533) [H]

s-j-e-negʷəje [tʷə qe-s-hə-n-ew]
1SG.IO-DAT-DYN-suppose two DIR-1SG.IO-carry.away-MOD-ADV
'I suppose / fear that I get a two (= bad mark).'

- (21) Adyghe (Testelets 2009: 691) [H]

p̄saše-r qe-ʂə-ʂ [sə-z-de-gʷəʂ'əʐe-m]
girl-ABS DIR-cry-PST 1SG.ABS-REL.TEMP-COM-talk-OBL
'The girl cried when I talked to her (= the girl or another female person).'

In short, Adyghe allows for postverbal arguments and adjuncts with various syntactic functions and grammatical roles as well as for postverbal complement and adverbial clauses. Based on the literature we cannot say whether post-predicate elements are rather an exceptional phenomenon and if some syntactic functions or grammatical roles are more frequently found there than others because up to now no corpus studies have been carried out.

Therefore, I examined post-predicate elements in declarative main clauses of 20 texts containing a total of 6,146 words distributed over 1,154 main clauses. The texts have been glossed by the researchers who recorded them (Paris, Höhlig and Feer) and by myself. In a second step I manually annotated them for the presence or absence of post-predicate elements (see Section 3.2 below and Appendix for more information on the texts). I did not count all overt and covert arguments and all overt adjuncts and their positions with respect to the verb but only the post-predicate ones (and I am fully aware of the fact that this makes comparison with data from WOWA corpora impossible² and evaluation of frequency of post-predicate elements rather speculative).

The results of these counts are presented in Table 1. The first thing to notice is that for a language that is described as having ‘flexible word order’ in natural texts the position after the verb is not frequently occupied despite being easily filled in elicitation. In around one out of ten main clauses we find post-predicate elements of which the largest group are focus / modal particles.

The most common particle is *nah* ‘more’ (22), (29), others being *nəʂə* ‘only’ (17), *armərme* ‘otherwise, if not this’, *mewš'tew* ‘like this’ and also Russian loans such as *uže* ‘already’ and *daze* ‘even’ and the Turkish indirect evidential particle

²Furthermore, in WOWA only non-subject referential expressions are considered, rather than all kinds of post-verbal items (e.g. modal particles, clausal constituents).

Diana Forker

Table 1: Grammatical and semanto-pragmatic functions of post-predicate elements in Adyghe texts (both diaspora and homeland)

| | |
|---|------------|
| Arguments | 33 |
| Subjects (independent of transitivity and semantic role) | 20 |
| Direct objects (of transitive and ditransitive verbs) | 10 |
| Indirect objects (2 addressees and 1 beneficiary; no recipients attested) | 3 |
| Adjuncts | 46 |
| Possessors | 4 |
| Instruments | 3 |
| Temporal adverbials | 12 |
| Spatial adverbials (13 locations, 6 goals, 2 sources) | 21 |
| Manner adverbials | 5 |
| Particles | 29 |
| Clauses | 19 |
| Adverbial clauses | 16 |
| Complement clauses | 2 |
| Relative clauses | 1 |
| Total | 126 |

(*je*)*məš* and the particle *yani* ‘that is, namely’. Pragmatic particles such as the ones listed are expected to have a great deal of freedom and thus do not really support the claim that the word order of Adyghe is flexible.

- (22) Adyghe (Höhlig 1997: 218) [H]
jež' djela-ue nah
 self fool-PST more
 ‘He was a fool.’

Due to the way in which I annotated and counted the data I cannot make any statements concerning the relative frequency of certain types of postverbal arguments and adjuncts.

I will instead present the attested post-predicate elements and discuss their information-structural properties whenever possible taking into account audio recordings of some of the examples that were provided to me by Monika Höhlig.

First of all, there is one construction that regularly leads to post-predicate elements according to the literature and the examined texts, namely direct reported speech (Rogava & Kerasheva 1966: 395–402). When the matrix clause with the

11 Post-predicate elements in Adyghe

verb of speech interrupts the quote or follows it, the usual word order is reversed and the subject (17) or the addressee if there is no overt subject (23) follows the verb of speech.

- (23) Adyghe (Rogava & Kerasheva 1966: 396) [H]

səd-a aməd wə-z-veg^wəmeç'ə-re-r? *j-e-wəpçə-ə*
 what-Q Amid 2SG.PR-REL.TEMP-disturb-DYN-ABS 3SG.A-DYN-ask-PST
bzəλfəvə-m
 woman-OBL

“What is it that worries you, Amid?” (s/he) asked the woman.’

Occasionally one encounters thetic sentences in which the subject appears in clause-final position. A thetic utterance is fully focused with no topical constituent. Introductory clauses in traditionally fairy tales or narratives about well-known personalities may follow this pattern, as in the following example from a story about a famous singer and composer. The V-S pattern for introductory thetic sentences is also attested in other verb-final languages from the Caucasus such as Kartvelian and East Caucasian (Forker 2021, Forker 2024 [Chapter 10, this volume]). In example (24), the speaker makes a short break before uttering the subject encoded as personal name (and there is no falling intonation in contrast to the examples discussed below).

- (24) Adyghe (courtesy of M. Höhlig) [H]

mə č'əle žə-m de-sə-ə [weredə?wə ?aze-w]
 this aul old-OBL COM-sit-PST singer art.master-ADV
[qebar-xe-r-jə zeč'e qə-?wate-w] [txədež-xe-r-jə qə-?wate-w]
 story-PL-ABS-ADD all DIR-tell-ADV legend-PL-ABS-ADD DIR-tell-ADV
kʷaj zefes
 Kway Zefes

‘In this old village lived the master singer, story-teller and legend-teller, Kway Zefes.’

In introductory thetic sentences also other constituents besides the subject can follow the verb as the instrument in (25), which has a falling intonation towards the end of the sentence and no intonational break before the post-predicate element.

- (25) Adyghe (courtesy of M. Höhlig) [H]

neməc-xe-r jewjə ž'ambeč'əje qə-da-ha-ə *mašine-č'e*
 German[R]-PL-ABS PRT Dzhambichi DIR-LOC-enter-PST car[R]-INST
 [beginning of narrative] ‘The Germans came to Dzhambichi by car.’

Diana Forker

The next example illustrates left dislocation of the subject combined with a post-predicate presumptive pronoun. In left dislocation, a referential constituent both precedes and is dislocated from a core clause with which it is associated. Within the core clause there is an anaphoric co-referential resumptive pronoun (Westbury 2016). A typical function of left dislocation is to introduce referents that are not purely brand-new, but merely inactive. This means that the referent is assumed to be identifiable, but only minimally accessible, having been in one way or another evoked in the prior discourse or in the extra-linguistic context. This is what we find in (26): The story is about a group of boys of which one is singled out by means of the left-dislocated element given in curly brackets and then resumed through the pronoun in subject function following the verb.

- (26) Adyghe (Höhlig 1997: 234) [H]

{japλenere, z-ja-hatəq z-ja-haləw^wə
 fourth REL.IO-POSS-flat.bread REL.IO-POSS-bread
qə-z-ş^we-t-təw^wə-ye-m} *qe-k^we-ž'ə-ə a-r-ja*
 DIR-REL TEMP-MAL-1PL.A-steal-PST-OBL DIR-go-RE-PST that-ABS-ADD
 [All went back home from school. The three of us are standing there.]
 ‘The fourth one whose flat bread, whose bread we had stolen, he also
 went home.’

In the following, I use the term ‘topic’ in the sense of ‘aboutness topic’ (e.g. Krifka 2007). The topical item is identified through the utterance and then some piece of information about it is provided in the comment. Post-predicate elements that function as aboutness topics in Adyghe are not emphasized by means of intonation. The pitch accent is usually somewhere at the beginning and then towards the end of the utterance the intonation is falling and becomes flat; the voice sometimes gets lower and quieter such that in some examples the last syllable of the final post-predicate element is barely audible. For instance, in (27) the pitch accent of the second clause falls on the first verb (*šxe-n*).

- (27) Adyghe (courtesy of M. Höhlig) [H]

a-xe-r-ja a šxe-š't; šxe-n faje-ba çəfə-r
 that-PL-ABS-ADD that eat-FUT eat-MOD must-PRT human.being-ABS
 [Talking about the behavior of German and Soviet soldiers during WWII.
 The speaker is finishing her narration and after this she switches to a
 different topic.] ‘They (=Germans) as well will eat it; the human being
 must eat.’

11 Post-predicate elements in Adyghe

Topical elements often convey given information and can, e.g., be expressed by means of pronouns. In all following examples, the post-predicate elements represent given information. For those examples that have personally been provided to me by Monika Höhlig (29, 31-33) I could clarify the intonation. In all examples the post-predicate elements are deaccented by means of a falling intonation.

- (28) Adyghe (Höhlig 1997: 236) [H]

subject

tawərəχ-ew *š'ə-t-ep* *a-r*

legend-ADV LOC-stand-NEG that-ABS

[Here is what I want to tell you.] ‘It is not an (old) legend.’

- (29) Adyghe (courtesy of M. Höhlig) [H]

discourse particle + subject

ž'ə *zewže* *t-š^wek^wedə-ke-xe* *nah* *a-xe-r*

now all 1PL.IO-get.lost-PST-PL more.than that-PL-ABS

[talking about various Adyghe traditions] ‘Now we lost all those (i.e. traditions).’

- (30) Adyghe (Höhlig 1997: 219) [H]

direct object

te *q-jə-p-hə-ŋ* *a* *š'aλe-r*

from.where DIR-LOC-2SG.A-carry.away-PST that bucket-ABS

s-ʔ^w-əj *sə-k^wəwa-ŋ*

1SG.A-speak-ADD 1SG.ABS-shout-PST

“From where did you take that bucket?” I said shouting.’

- (31) Adyghe (courtesy of M. Höhlig) [H]

direct object

... neməč' ha-xe-m *a-šxə-ŋ* *t^wə-jə* ...

other dog-PL-OBL 3PL.A-eat-PST two-ADD

[Talking about the mysterious disappearance of turkeys and the fault of the dogs] ‘... the other dogs ate (our) two (turkeys) ...’

- (32) Adyghe (courtesy of M. Höhlig) [H]

possessor

jəλes t^weč'ə-re *bla-re* *ə-nəbž'ə-ŋ* *č'etəwə-m*

year twenty-COORD seven-COORD 3SG.POSS-age-PST cat-OBL

[The dogs were also afraid of it, it was a very good cat] ‘The cat was 27 years old.’

Diana Forker

- (33) Adyghe (courtesy of M. Höhlig) [H]

manner adverbial (adjunct)

woot, *nepeməč' tradicie-w* *səd* *ž'ərjə t-xe-λə-n*
 well[R] other traditions[R]-ADV what again 1PL.IO-LOC-lie-MOD
aj *fede-w*
 that.OBL be.similar-ADV

[talking about various Adyghe traditions] ‘Well, which other traditions do we have here like that?’

The postpredicate elements in examples (28-33) can hardly be said to be highlighted or emphasized, in contrast to what Jakovlev & Ashkhamaf (1941: 91) have stated about the post-predicate elements in examples (6c-6f, 6g).

However, post-predicate elements are not always topical and do not always convey given information. The postverbal adjuncts in (34) and (35) convey new information and are part of the “presentational” or “information” focus of the sentence in which they occur. Information focus expresses the most important or new information in the utterance (Krifka 2007). Because I lack recordings of (34) and (35) I cannot say anything about the intonational patterns. Yet I hypothesize that the elicited examples (6c-6f, 6g) from Jakovlev & Ashkhamaf (1941: 91) should be interpreted in a similar manner, i.e. the post-predicate elements as being part of the information focus.

- (34) Adyghe (Höhlig 1997: 255) [D]

spatial adverbial (goal)

qe-ze-kʷe-ž'ə-m, *se sə-q-jə-č'ə-β* *mutfaqə-m*
 DIR-REL TEMP-go-RE-OBL 1SG 1SG.ABS-DIR-LOC-go.out-PST kitchen[T]-OBL
 [In the evening my husband came home.] ‘When he came I went out to the kitchen.’

- (35) Adyghe (Höhlig 1997: 274) [D]

temporal and spatial adverbials (time span and location)

adəya bze te-gʷəš'a? *zepət wəne-m-jə*
 Adyghe language 1PL.A-speak all.time house-OBL-ADD
kʷež'e-m-jə
 village[T]-OBL-ADD

[talking about language knowledge and language use] ‘We always speak Adyghe at home and in the village.’

Adverbial clauses seem to be more variable concerning their position than complement clauses (or relative clauses) whereby we can notice that post-

11 Post-predicate elements in Adyghe

predicate adverbial clauses repeatedly express cause (36) or purpose (14). For purpose clauses we can assume an explanation based on iconicity. The purpose of an action resembles a spatial goal and thus the linear order of the clauses reflects the temporal or spatial order of the events. Causal or concessive adverbial clauses refer to situations that do not necessarily occur prior to the situation expressed in the main clause but rather provide the reason or cause for it (36) or signal contrast or concession in relation to it (37). In both examples (36) and (37) the adverbial clauses constitute separate intonational units, i.e. there is a short break between the preceding main clauses and the sentence-final adverbial clauses.

- (36) Adyghe (courtesy of M. Höhlig) [H]

adverbial clause expressing a cause or reason

abzexa bze-č'e t-jə-wənabʷe parjə gʷəš'əɿa-re-p
Abdzakh language-INST 1PL-POSS-family nobody talk-DYN-NEG

[č'əmgʷe-me t-a-xe-s-šə]

Temirgoi-OBL.PL 1PL.ABS-3PL.IO-LOC-sit-CVB

‘In our family nobody speaks Abdzakh because we live among the Temirgoi.’

- (37) Adyghe (courtesy of M. Höhlig) [H]

concessive conditional clause

xeť s'əš' qə-tje-wa-ve-m-jə jə-pče ɻʷə-jə-xə-š't.

who part DIR-LOC-beat-PST-COND-ADD POSS-door LOC-3SG.A-open-FUT

[wəč'akʷe qə-ɻʷə-ha-ve-m-jə a-š' fed]

killer DIR-speak-lat-PST-COND-ADD that-OBL similar

‘[You know the Adyghe traditions], whoever might knock, you will open your door, even if it were a killer.’

By contrast, in chaining constructions that also represent adverbial subordination the dependent clauses do not follow the main clause because the chained clauses do not or only to a limited extent convey temporal reference but their temporal interpretation depends on the inflected predicate of the main clause. The temporal order of events in chaining constructions is therefore iconically reflected in the order of the chained clauses and the main clause (Forker In press).

The sentence in (38) illustrates a complement clause that follows the matrix clause. This order is not particularly common in the surveyed texts which contain only two instances (Table 3). As said above, I did not count all complement clauses in my data in order to assess the frequency of preposed vs. postposed ones and compare them with adverbial clauses. However, the paper by Serdobolskaya (2016) about complement clauses in Adyghe contains many examples of

Diana Forker

sentence-final complements which at least shows that in elicitation they are easily available (and probably triggered by Russian word order patterns).

- (38) Adyghe (Höhlig 1997: 251) [H]
 complement clause
s-še-re-p [qə-ze-re-s-ʔʷete-r]
 1SG.A-know-DYN-NEG DIR-REL.IO-MNR-1SG.A-tell-ABS
 'I do not know how I should tell it.'

3.2 Summary of the quantitative analysis

Table 2 gives a summary of the texts ordered by place of recording. The texts from Adygea (Northern Caucasus, homeland [H]) are almost double in terms of number of words and clauses but also with respect to the number of post-predicate elements per clause when compared with the texts from Turkey (diaspora [D]). The texts from Turkey have been recorded between 1969 and 1990 and are thus older than the texts from Adygea, which have been recorded between 1990 and 2017. All texts represent three different Adyghe dialects, namely Shapsug (3 texts), Abzakh (15 texts) and Temirgoy (2 texts). The texts can be divided into two categories, namely into (A) traditional folklore narratives and folkloristic anecdotes and (B) personal, autobiographical narrations. The two genres also exhibit differences in style. In traditional narratives a formal style prevails (e.g. fewer loan words, long and structurally complicated sentences) whereas in personal accounts an informal style is found (e.g. many Russian loan words, shorter and structurally simpler sentences). Detailed information about the sources of the texts, the time and the place of the recording can be found in the Appendix.

Table 2: Comparing post-predicate elements in texts from Adygea and from Turkey

| | Adygea | Turkey | Total |
|--------------------------------------|--------|--------|--------|
| # texts | 11 | 9 | 20 |
| # words | 4,083 | 2,063 | 6,146 |
| # main clauses | 770 | 384 | 1,154 |
| # post-predicate elements | 100 | 26 | 126 |
| % post-predicate elements per clause | 12.99% | 6.77% | 10.91% |

If we compare the two genres — personal accounts and traditional narratives / anecdotes — with each other we find that personal accounts have more than

11 Post-predicate elements in Adyghe

twice as many post-predicate items than traditional narratives. This difference is more pronounced in Turkey than in Adygea, but it is observable in both places (Table 3).

Table 3: Comparing post-predicate elements according to genre

| | Personal accounts | | Traditional narratives | |
|------------------------|-------------------|--------|------------------------|--------|
| | Adygea | Turkey | Adygea | Turkey |
| # main clauses | 554 | 158 | 216 | 226 |
| # post-pred | 79 | 19 | 21 | 7 |
| % post-pred per clause | 14.26% | 12.02% | 9.7% | 3.1% |
| % post-pred per clause | | 13.76% | | 6.3% |

Thus, it seems that place as well as genre correlates with the number of post-predicate elements. Traditional narratives from Turkey contain the lowest number of them (7 items), which are almost exclusively focal / modal and evidential particles, in particular the particle *nah*. The traditional narratives from Adygea also have post-predicate subjects in reported speech constructions (17) and some more post-predicate elements in various functions and of different formal types. On the other side of the spectrum we find the personal accounts from Adygea that have as many as 78 post-predicate elements.

The difference seems to be due to genre in combination with style, but it might have been enlarged by language contact with two typologically and genealogically different contact languages, Turkish and Russian. Turkish is a head-final language; the unmarked word order is SOV (e.g. Erguvanlı 1984: 43; Göksel & Kerslake 2005: 338). Post-predicate elements are restricted to informal style and mostly found in spoken language, but also in more informal writing. They are never stressed and generally backgrounded, i.e. they convey information that is shared by speaker and addressee; WH-words are not allowed to be placed after the predicate (Erguvanlı 1984: 43–63; Göksel & Kerslake 2005: 345–346). Not only S, DO and IO may occur in post-verbal position, but also various adverbials and subordinate clauses (complement clauses, relative clauses and adverbial clauses; Erguvanlı 1984: 63–66). Although these authors confirm that speakers accept and produce post-posed elements of various kinds (under particular information-structural conditions), the corpus data from colloquial standard Turkish (Iefremenko 2021) in WOWA indicate that such structures are relatively infrequent in actual usage: about 94% of the coded non-subject and non-pronominal constituents in this data set are pre-verbal.

Diana Forker

By contrast, Russian has been characterized as having free or pragmatically governed word order with many features of SVO languages (Dryer 2022). A small corpus study by Billings (2015) (500 transitive clauses from the Russian National Corpus) has shown that SVO dominates (89.6%), SOV is the second most frequent order (4.4%) and all other orders are also attested but rather infrequently. It is possible but not necessary that the differences between the texts from Adygea and the texts from Turkey are due to contact with Russian and Turkish respectively. The detailed study by Höhlig (1997) that compares Adyghe in contact with Russian in the homeland and Turkish in the diaspora shows many examples on how both contact languages influence Adyghe in various parts of the grammar although it does not explicitly discuss word order. In order to test the contact hypothesis in the future, it is necessary to study the word order in the oldest written examples of Adyghe which have been produced by speakers who probably have not been exposed to Russian or Turkish to the same degree as today's speakers, which goes beyond the scope of this study. And when testing contact influence, we have to keep in mind that language contact can not only lead to a change towards another pattern but also to an increased rigidity in the inherited pattern (e.g. Namboodiripad et al. 2019). Thus, the preference for verb-final utterances in Adyghe in Turkey could in principle also be due to such an effect and not to a preference for 'copying' the Turkish pattern.

4 Post-predicate elements in other Northwest Caucasian languages: Kabardian, Ubykh, Abkhaz and Abaza

In general, all Northwest Caucasian languages are described as head-final (Arkadiev & Lander 2021), but with flexible word order that permits all logically possible permutations. For Ubykh, the only Northwest Caucasian language that is no longer spoken, the latest grammar states that postverbal constituents are extremely rare in Ubykh texts (Fenwick 2011: 151–153), which must have been collected in Turkey after the forced exodus of the Northwest Caucasian people to the Ottoman Empire in the second half of the 19th century. In addition to SOV only OSV is a relatively common alternative, but apparently marked order in Ubykh that "appears to provide a certain degree of emphasis to the fronted absolute object." Judging from the publication of traditional narratives from all Northwest Caucasian languages in Colarusso (1999), SOV is clearly dominant, which is in accordance with my Adyghe data presented in Section 3.

In elicitation, which for Ubykh cannot be done anymore, Kabardian, Abkhaz and Abaza are similar to Adyghe. Kumakhov & Vamling (2009: 112–130) provide

11 Post-predicate elements in Adyghe

elicited Kabardian examples of postverbal subjects and objects in nominal and pronominal form. They add that heaviness influences the position of arguments, i.e. heavy arguments are preferably placed at the beginning of sentences but can also occur at the end. Furthermore, they show that because proper nouns only facultatively take case markers for absolutive and oblique they require a strict S-DO-IO order but can still be placed in post-predicate position.

- (39) a. Kabardian (Kumakhov & Vamling 2009: 129)
 S-DO-V-IO
Murat Nazirχʷ-i-še-nu-s' **Aslen.**
 Murat Nazir VER-3SG.A-lead-FUT-ASSERT Aslan
- b. S-V-DO-IO
Muratχʷišenüs' **Nazir Aslen.**
 Murat VER-3SG.A-lead-FUT-ASSERT Nazir Aslan
- c. V-S-DO-IO
χʷišenüs' **Murat Nazir Aslen.**
 VER-3SG.A-lead-FUT-assert Murat Nazir Aslan
 'Murat will lead Nazir to Aslan.'

Similarly, Abkhaz does not employ case marking for core arguments, such that in case of ambiguity the order of subject and object is fixed as S-O. Postverbal placement of arguments is allowed if this order is kept (Chirikba 2003a: 60)

Abkhaz allows for thetic utterances that introduce new referents (often in subject position) to place them after the verb (40) as I have mentioned it for Adyghe.

- (40) Abkhaz (Chirikba 2003b: 259)
 VS
jə-q'a-n ažər-jə-pa-cʷa hʷa jʷə-žja [a]-aj.šj-cʷa
 3PL-be-PST.FIN Adzhyr-3-son-PL QUOT two-HUM ART-brother-PL
 'There lived two brothers (reportedly known as) Sons of Adzhyr.'

In the following example from Abaza the direct object appears after the verb:

- (41) Abaza (courtesy of P. Arkadiev)
 IO-V-DO
mhamatg'aržj j-ł'a-jə-r-t-ł á-dg'əl
 muhamat.girey 3SG.N.ABS-CISL-3SG.M.IO-3PL.ERG-give(AOR)-DCL DEF-land
 'They gave land to Muhamat-Girey.'

Diana Forker

In answers to WH-questions in Kabardian the narrowly focused element can occur after the verb, but this order is marked compared to the neutral SOV order *Kumakhov & Vamling (2009: 142)*.

In direct reported speech constructions with quotes preceding the matrix verb of speech subjects or if the subject is omitted other remaining constituents regularly follow the verb as text examples from Kabardian (e.g. Colarusso 1999: sentence 70 from the Kabardian texts), Abkhaz (Chirikba 2003a, sentence 15) and Abaza (42) show. This pattern was also noticed for Adyghe (Section 3.1).

- (42) Abaza (courtesy of P. Arkadiev)

QUOTE-V-S

2M.ABS-REL.RSN-CISL-come what-QN 3M.ERG-say-DCL DEF-thief

zak-g'əj a-jə-m-rə-χ'-zə-kʷə

one.CLN-ADD 3N.IO-3M.ERG-NEG-CAUS-cool.down-INTF-CVB.NEG

“Why did you come?” said the thief, not calming down at all.’

Northwest Caucasian languages also allow certain types of adverbial clauses as complement clauses in post-predicate position (e.g. examples in [Kumakhov 2009: 192](#); [Arkadiev 2020](#)). For instance, according to [Chirikba 2003a](#): adverbial clauses with the present converb can either precede or follow the clause.

5 Discussion

Summarizing we can state that post-predicate elements are relatively rare in Adyghe texts despite the possibility of eliciting them. There are no restrictions concerning grammatical functions and parts of speech of post-predicate elements in Adyghe – they can be arguments and adjuncts of various kinds from short pronouns to more elaborate noun phrases, particles, etc. When comparing grammatical functions, I found more post-predicate subjects than objects and goals. However, I do not have data about the relative frequency. Thus, it might be the case that for functions such as subjects, locations or goals the probability of occurring in a position after the verb is higher than for objects, but this needs to be tested in future research. Subjects are probably overall more frequently represented in the texts than objects (or goals) since the vast majority of verbs have subject arguments, but only a part of them allow for or even require objects or goals. Direct reported speech constructions in which the quote precedes the verb

11 *Post-predicate elements in Adyghe*

of speech regularly put the subject (or indirect object in the function of addressee if there is no subject) after the verb.

The majority of (non-clausal) post-predicate elements are topical such that referents encode given information, but occasionally one also finds focal elements. In text-initial utterances the newly introduced referent sometimes follows the verb. There is a correlation with genre and geographical origin of speakers. More traditional genres such as legends, fairy tales and anecdotes show a smaller amount of post-predicate elements than personal accounts and autobiographies; and texts recorded in Adygea contain more post-predicate elements than those recorded in Turkey, which might be due to language contact (mainly between Russian and Adyghe speakers in Adygea).

The other Northwest Caucasian languages seem to behave similarly to Adyghe. For Ubykh, which is no longer spoken, texts gathered in Turkey point to a very strong tendency for verb-final word order. This fits well to the observed difference between the Adyghe texts from Turkey and those from Adygea. It also matches with the observations on Laz, a Kartvelian outlier in Turkey (Forker, this volume).

Finally, when comparing Northwest Caucasian languages to the other two indigenous language families in the Caucasus (see Forker 2024 [Chapter 10, this volume]) we can safely state that Northwest Caucasian languages shows the biggest preference for verb-final order and thus the lowest number of post-predicate items.

Diana Forker

Abbreviations

| | | | |
|--------|------------------------------|------|---------------------------------------|
| 1SG | first person singular | FIN | finite |
| 2SG | second person singular | FUT | future |
| 3SG | third person singular | INST | instrumental |
| 1PL | first person plural | INTF | intensifier |
| 2PL | second person plural | IO | indirect object |
| 3PL | third person plural | LAT | lative |
| A | agent | LNK | linking element |
| ABS | absolutive | LOC | locative |
| ADD | additive | M | male |
| ADJ | adjective | MAL | malefactive |
| ADV | adverbial | MOD | modal |
| ASSERT | assertive | N | neuter |
| AUX | auxiliary | NEG | negation |
| BEN | benefactive | OBL | oblique |
| CAUS | causative | PL | plural |
| CISL | cislocative | POSS | possession |
| CLN | non-human numeral classifier | PR | possessor series of personal prefixes |
| COM | comitative | PRT | particle |
| COND | conditional | PST | past tense |
| COORD | coordination | Q | question marker |
| CS | causal | QN | non-human question |
| CVB | converb | RE | refactive |
| DAT | dative | REC | reciprocal |
| DCL | declarative | REL | relativizer |
| DEF | definite | RSN | reason |
| DIR | directional | TEMP | temporal |
| DYN | dynamic | TRM | terminative |
| EL | elative | VER | version |
| ERG | ergative | | |

Digital corpora

Adyghe from the diaspora, collected by Catherine Paris, also published in [Paris \(1974\)](#)

The Pangloss Collection, Texts “Detchiyimko Pchipii and the prince Krmirgov Aytekkö”, “La princesse Kahraman”, “La guerre entre les Qabardes et les Abzakhs” (Shapsug Adyghe) <https://cocoon.huma-num.fr/exist/crdo/meta2/cocoon-af3bd0fd-2b33-3b0b-a6f1-49a7fc551eb1> (accessed April 11, 2023)

Ankara Turkish

Iefremenko, Kateryna. 2021. Oghuz (Ankara). In Geoffrey Haig, Donald Stilo, Mahir C. Doğan & Nils N. Schiborr, (eds.), WOWA – Word Order in Western Asia: A spoken-language-based corpus for investigating areal effects in word order variation. 13 October 2021. Bamberg: University of Bamberg. <https://multicast.aspra.uni-bamberg.de/resources/wowa/#turkic> (accessed April 11, 2023)

References

- Arkadiev, Peter M. 2020. *Abaza sketch grammar*. Moscow: RGGU.
- Arkadiev, Peter M. & Yury A. Lander. 2021. The Northwest Caucasian languages. In Maria Polinsky (ed.), *The Oxford handbook of languages of the Caucasus*, 369–446. Oxford: Oxford University Press.
- Arkadiev, Peter M., Alexander B. Letuchiy, Nina Sumbatova & Yakov G. Testelets. 2009. *Aspekty polisintetizma: očerki po grammatike Adygejskogo jazyka*. Moscow: Russian State University for the Humanities.
- Arkadiev, Peter M. & Timur A. Maisak. 2018. Grammaticalization in the North Caucasian languages. In Heiko Narrog & Bernd Heine (eds.), *Grammaticalization from a typological perspective*, 116–145. Oxford: Oxford University Press.
- Arkhangelskiy, Timofey, Irina Bagirokova, Yury Lander & Anna Lander. 2018–2023. *West Circassian (adyghe) corpus*. Online. <http://adyghe.web-corpora.net/>.
- Billings, Stephanie Kay. 2015. *A corpus-based analysis of Russian word order patterns*. Brigham Young University. (MA thesis). <https://scholarsarchive.byu.edu/etd/5624>.
- Chirikba, Viacheslav A. 2003a. *Abkhaz*. Munich: Lincom.
- Chirikba, Viacheslav A. 2003b. Evidential category and evidential strategy in Abkhaz. In Alexandra Y. Aikhenvald & R. M. W. Dixon (eds.), *Studies in evidentiality*, 243–272. Amsterdam: Benjamins.
- Colarusso, John. 1999. *A North West Caucasian reader*. Hamilton: McMaster University.
- Dryer, Matthew S. 2022. One way in which Slavic languages really are SVO languages. *Theoretical Linguistics* 48(1-2). 49–55.
- Erguvanlı, Eser. 1984. *The function of word order in Turkish grammar*. Berkeley: University of California Press.

Diana Forker

- Feer, Rainer. 2019. *The grammar, function and grammaticalization of Adyghe clause linking devices for cause and temporal succession*. Unknown. (MA thesis).
- Fenwick, Rohan S. H. 2011. *A grammar of Ubykh*. Munich: Lincom.
- Forker, Diana. 2021. Information structure in languages of the Caucasus. In Maria Polinsky (ed.), *The Oxford handbook of languages of the Caucasus*, 973–1002. Oxford: Oxford University Press. DOI: [10.1093/oxfordhb/9780190690694.013.28](https://doi.org/10.1093/oxfordhb/9780190690694.013.28).
- Forker, Diana. 2024. Post-predicate elements in Kartvelian and East Caucasian. In Geoffrey Haig, Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand, Donald Stilo, Laurentia Schreiber & Nils N. Schiborr (eds.), *Post-predicate elements in the Western Asian Transition Zone: A corpus-based approach to areal typology*, 265–287. Berlin: Language Science Press.
- Forker, Diana. In press. Clause chaining in Adyghe (West Caucasian). In Hannah S. Sarvasy & Alexandra Y. Aikhenvald (eds.), *Clause chaining in the world's languages*. Oxford: Oxford University Press.
- Göksel, Aslı & Celia Kerslake. 2005. *Turkish: A comprehensive grammar*. London/New York: Routledge.
- Höhlig, Monika. 1997. *Kontaktbedingter Sprachwandel in der Adygeischen Umgangssprache im Kaukasus und in der Türkei*. Munich: Lincom.
- Iefremenko, Kateryna. 2021. Oghuz (Ankara). In Geoffrey Haig, Donald Stilo, Mahir C. Doğan & Nils N. Schiborr (eds.), *WOWA — Word Order in Western Asia: A spoken-language-based corpus for investigating areal effects in word order variation*. (accessed on April 11, 2023). Bamberg: University of Bamberg. multicast.aspra.uni-bamberg.de/resources/wowa/#turkic.
- Jakovlev, Nikolaj F. & Daud A. Ashkhamaf. 1941. *Grammatika Adygejskogo literaturnogo jazyka* [A grammar of the Adyghe literary language]. Moscow: Izdatel'stvo AN SSSR.
- Kimmelman, Vadim I. 2011. Auxiliaries in Adyghe. Paper presented at the *conference on Caucasian languages*, Leipzig, May 2011.
- Krifka, Manfred. 2007. Basic notions of information structure. *Interdisciplinary Studies on Information Structure* 6. 13–55.
- Kumakhov, Mukhadin A. & Karina Vamling. 2009. *Circassian clause structure*. Malmö: Malmö University.
- Lander, Yury A. 2014. *Relativizacija v polisinteticheskem jazyke: Adygejskie otносительные конструкции* [*relativization in a polysynthetic language: Adyghe relative clauses in typological perspective*]. Moscow: University of Moscow. (Doctoral dissertation).

11 Post-predicate elements in Adyghe

- Lander, Yury A. 2017. Nominal complex in West Circassian: Between morphology and syntax. *Studies in Language* 41(1). 76–98.
- Letuchiy, Alexander B. 2009. Affixy benefaktiv i malefaktiv: *sintaksičeskie osobennosti i krug upotreblenij* [affixes of benefactive and malefactive: syntactic properties and use]. In Peter M. Arkadiev, Alexander B. Letuchiy, Nina Sumbatova & Yakov G. Testelets (eds.), *Aspekty polisintetizma: Očerki po grammatike Adygejskogo jazyka*, 329–372. Moscow: Russian State University for the Humanities.
- Namboodiripad, Savithry, Dayoung Kim & Gyeongnam Kim. 2019. English dominant Korean speakers show reduced flexibility in constituent order. In Daniel Edmiston, Marina Ermolaeva & Emre Hakgüder (eds.), *Proceedings of the fifty-third annual meeting of the Chicago linguistic society*, 247–260. Chicago: Chicago Linguistic Society.
- Paris, Catherine. 1974. *La Princesse Kahraman: Contes d'anatolie en dialecte chap-sough (tcherkesse occidental)*. Paris: SELAF (Centre National de la Recherche Scientifique).
- Rogava, Georgij V. & Zajnab I. Kerasheva. 1966. *Grammatika Adygejskogo jazyka* [A Grammar of Adyghe]. Krasnodar: Krasnodarskoe Knižnoe Izdatel'stvo.
- Serdobolskaya, Natalia V. 2016. Semantics of complementation in Adyghe. In Kasper Boye & Petar Kehayov (eds.), *Complementizer semantics in European languages*, 291–744. Berlin: De Gruyter Mouton.
- Serdobolskaya, Natalia V. & Alexander V. Motlokhov. 2009. Semantika konstrukcij s sentencial'nymi aktantami v Adygejskom jazyke [Semantics of Complementation in Adyghe]. In Peter M. Arkadiev, Alexander B. Letuchiy, Nina Sumbatova & Yakov G. Testelets (eds.), *Aspekty polisintetizma: Očerki po grammatike Adygejskogo jazyka* [aspects of polysynthesis: Essays on Adyghe grammar], 498–559. Moscow: Russian State University for the Humanities.
- Testelets, Yakov G. 2009. Nevyražennye aktanty v polipredikativnoj konstrukcii [Unexpressed arguments in bipredicative constructions]. In Peter M. Arkadiev, Alexander B. Letuchiy, Nina Sumbatova & Yakov G. Testelets (eds.), *Aspekty polisintetizma: Očerki po grammatike Adygejskogo jazyka* [aspects of polysynthesis: Essays on Adyghe grammar], 654–711. Moscow: Russian State University for the Humanities.
- Testelets, Yakov G. & Yury A. Lander. 2017. Adyghe. In Michael Fortescue, Marianne Mithun & Nicholas Evans (eds.), *The Oxford handbook of polysynthesis*, 948–970. Oxford: Oxford University Press.
- Westbury, Josh. 2016. Left dislocation: A typological overview. *Stellenbosch Papers in Linguistics Plus* 50. 21–45.

Chapter 12

Word order variation in Romeyka

Laurentia Schreiber^a & Mark Janse^b

^aUniversity of Bamberg ^bGhent University

The present chapter describes word order variation in Romeyka based on the multilingual spoken language dataset of the Word Order in Western Asia (WOWA) corpus. Descending from VO ancestry, Romeyka shows under contact from Turkish increasingly head-final syntax. While cross-linguistically relevant factors such as semantic role, flagging and phonological weight do not offer much explanation for the flexibility between pre- and post-verbal constituents in Romeyka, information structure and phrase type do seem to be relevant. In addition, inter-speaker variation has been found significant to account for word order variation in Romeyka, suggesting that in a setting of language shift, individual forms of bilingualism affect word order.

1 Introduction

Romeyka is a variety of Pontic Greek (henceforth PG) that is at present still spoken by Muslims in Trabzon Province in northeastern Turkey, although its status can be characterized as endangered (Schreiber 2016; Schreiber & Sitaridou 2017). Romeyka belongs to the Hellenic branch of Indo-European. Like most modern Greek dialects, it is descended from postclassical (Koine) Greek, with an undisputable Ionic substrate dating back to the Milesian colonization of the Black Sea coast in the 7th–6th c. BCE. The closest relatives of Pontic are Pharasiot and Cappadocian, collectively known as (East) Asia Minor Greek (henceforth AMG).¹

¹The designation ‘East Asia Minor Greek’ is due to Janse (e.g., 2008: 191–192, 2020: 202–203) and implied in Dawkins’ “Greek of eastern Asia Minor” (1916: 213). The qualification ‘East’ is necessary in light of Ralli’s (2020) broader acceptance of the geographical designation “Asia Minor Greek” (Ralli 2020). For a different view on the internal relationship between Pontic, Pharasiot and Cappadocian see Karatsareas (2016: 40–55).

Laurentia Schreiber & Mark Janse

The location of Romeyka, which is nestled in the remote, mountainous area of the Pontic Alps, has probably contributed to the preservation of the language and of some archaic features and facilitated the development of three main dialect areas around the townships of Of/Çaykara (abbreviated ROf), Sürmene (abbreviated RSür), and Tonya (see [Schreiber 2024](#)). Romeyka has been in contact with Turkish varieties at least since the 17th century, although early contacts may date back till the 11th c. ([Drettas 1997](#): 5–6) and it is difficult to assess the intensity of contact with Turkish throughout the Middle Ages and the Modern period. At least since intensified labour migration to larger cities in Turkey (as well as abroad) since the 1960s, the influence of Turkish has significantly increased, causing cultural assimilation and language shift at least in the urban speech communities ([Schreiber & Sitaridou 2017](#)). Today, the majority of Romeyka speakers are recessive bilinguals, with Turkish as dominant language, which affects the linguistic structure of Romeyka and facilitates contact-induced changes ([Schreiber 2024](#)).

The density of documentation and grammatical description of Romeyka is moderate, with increased interest in the field in the last years. After [Mackridge](#)'s (1987) work on the Muslim Pontic Greek variety still spoken in Turkey, [Sitaridou \(2014b, 2013, 2014a, 2016, 2021\)](#) has contributed research mainly on the syntactic domain of Romeyka, followed by Neocleous' 2017 doctoral thesis on word order and information structure in Romeyka ([Neocleous 2020](#), cf. [Neocleous 2022](#)). Recently, [Schreiber \(2024\)](#) has presented the first comprehensive grammatical description of Romeyka based on a naturalistic spoken language corpus. A considerably larger body of literature is available on Pontic Greek as spoken by Christian speakers in Turkey before the Greek-Turkish population exchange in 1923 ([Deffner 1878](#), [Parcharidis 1880, 1888](#)) and in Greece after 1923 ([Dawkins 1931, 1937](#), [Papadopoulos 1933, 1955, 1958–1961](#), [Tombaidis 1992, 1996](#), [Drettas 1997, 1999](#), [Revithiadou & Spyropoulos 2009](#)) as well as on its closest relatives Cappadocian ([Janse In press](#) and references therein) and Pharasiot ([Bağrıaçık 2018](#) and references therein).

The aim of the present chapter is to analyze the WOVA dataset of Romeyka ([Schreiber 2021](#)) with regard to the grammatical entities that occur in the post-verbal domain and to word order in Romeyka in general. Since Romeyka is a shifting language under strong contact with Turkish (see [Schreiber 2016](#) and [Schreiber & Sitaridou 2017](#) for a sociolinguistic assessment of language vitality), which displays fundamentally different word orders, the data reveal a lot of variation which needs to be accounted for. Thereby, theoretically relevant topics from Greek linguistics such as word order properties of strong and weak pronouns and the question about a potential shift in Romeyka word order directionality will be

12 Word order variation in Romeyka

touched upon. Most importantly, it will be argued that basic word order properties (see Section 2 for a discussion of terminology) in Romeyka as a shifting language varies significantly between speakers and seems to be crucially determined by the individual multilingual profiles of the speakers.

The WOVA dataset of Romeyka has been compiled and coded according to the methodology of the WOVA corpus outlined in Haig et al. 2024 [Chapter 1, this volume]; basic descriptive statistics have been carried out in R (logistic regression models). The data consist of five coherent texts produced by three speakers, extracted from the larger naturalistic spoken language corpus of Romeyka compiled by Schreiber (n.d.).² The texts were recorded during fieldwork in Turkey in June/July 2019. Romeyka examples in the present chapter are referenced as follows: examples that stem from the WOVA dataset are referenced as Schreiber (2021: text ID, token ID), and examples from the Romeyka corpus by Schreiber (n.d.) are referenced by the respective code in the corpus (as explained in Schreiber 2024).

In the following, Section 2 summarizes the present stage of research on word order in Romeyka. Section 3 sketches the general impact of information structure. In Section 4, the word order profile of Romeyka is characterized based on the WOVA data by focusing on different clause types (the NP in Section 4.1, the PP in Section 4.2), semantic and grammatical roles (Sections 4.3-4.5), auxiliaries in Section 4.6, and complex clauses in Section 4.7. Section 5 on areal aspects of language contact and Section 6 on the impact of recessive bilingualism discuss further important factors in the variability of Romeyka word order patterns.

2 Romeyka word order: Background and previous analyses

It is not straightforward to determine the present word order profile of Romeyka (a) due to a high pragmatically conditioned variability (see Section 3), and (b) due to ongoing language shift to Turkish and consequently high variation. It is generally agreed that Greek word order is determined by information structure. This was the case in Ancient Greek (van Emde Boas et al. 2019: 702–721), in Medieval Greek³ (Holton et al. 2019: 2022–2024) as well as in Standard Modern Greek (Holton et al. 2012: 518–520). As far as PG is concerned, it has been

²For an overview of speakers and data in the WOVA dataset of Romeyka, see Table 1 in Section 6. For a description of data collection and metadata see multicast.aspra.uni-bamberg.de/resources/wowa/data/hellenic/ponticgreek_romeyska/wowa_hell_ponticgreek_romeyska_metadata.pdf.

Laurentia Schreiber & Mark Janse

asserted that there is no basic worder (Drettas 1997: 277–280). On the other hand, Neocleous (2022, 2020), following Sitaridou (2016), investigated the diachronic development of Romeyka word order within the Minimalist framework and concluded that Romeyka is a “mixed directionality language” (Neocleous & Sitaridou 2022) with inherited VO order in pragmatically unmarked main clauses and OV order in subordinate clauses reinforced by contact with Turkish.

Neocleous (2022, 2020) claims that Romeyka has in main clauses an underlying VO word order, which is evident when all possible information-structural complications are set aside. Deviations from VO are explained through information-structural conditions holding in certain contexts (for a similar approach for Pharasiot, see Bağrıaçık 2018). In subordinate declarative clauses, unmarked word order is, according to Neocleous, OV with finite verbs and VO with infinitives. Although Neocleous seems not to distinguish between complement clauses preceding and following the matrix clause, most of his examples of subordinate clauses follow the matrix clause.

As has been addressed by Haig et al. (Haig et al. 2024 [Chapter 1, this volume]), it is by no means straightforward to determine unmarked or ‘basic’ word order in a language and there are different accounts on how to establish this (see Dryer 2013 for a ‘rule of thumb’ in determining dominant word order based on relative frequency, cf. also Dryer 1995). Neocleous (2022, 2020) defines a basic word order for both matrix and subordinate clauses in Romeyka based on the pragmatically unmarked word order, which he defines as an “‘all-focus sentence’, aka ‘a presentational focus sentence’, containing neither old information nor any presuppositions” (Neocleous 2020: 143). He elicits such clauses in response to the question ‘What happened?’, departing from the assumption that in response to this question all information is new and thus of equal discourse-pragmatic status.⁴ However, departing from a naturalistic spoken language corpus of multilingual speakers as in Schreiber (2024), frequencies of word order patterns show a different picture, although certain limitations apply as well, such as the size of the corpus. While many observations of Neocleous are confirmed by the present data (e.g., the impact of information structure), the analysis cannot be adopted wholesale (see especially Section 6 on inter-speaker variation). Furthermore, the present analysis follows largely the WOWA approach (see Haig et al. 2024 [Chap-

³See also Horrocks (1990: 45) and Rafiyenko & Seržant (2020: 11) for Postclassical Greek. It should be noted that in later publications, Horrocks (2007) assumes VSO as the informationally most neutral word order in both Postclassical (Horrocks 2007: 623) and Late Medieval and Early Modern Greek (Horrocks 2019: 2022–2023).

⁴Certainly, Neocleous (2020) is not the first to use this approach; for a description of how neutral word order has been defined in the previous literature, see Bağrıaçık (2018: 146–151).

ter 1, this volume]) which is role-specific; the existing literature on word order in Romeyka **does to our knowledge not** include any claims specific to Goals, Locations, etc. So, our prominent question should not be whether Greek had at any stage (Postclassical, Medieval, Modern) an unmarked VO word order, but rather whether OV has become more prominent in Romeyka — regardless of information structure — under contact influence from Turkish. Therefore, our analysis shall be based on frequencies of head-final orders. Note that this is still not straightforward to deal with, as Turkish allows for word order variation as well (Göksel & Kerslake 2005: 343–349), at least in informal spoken language — and certainly in the Trabzon Turkish dialect (see Schreiber *Submitted*).

3 The role of information structure

This section summarizes **of the** role of information structure in Romeyka word order as proposed by Neocleous (2022, 2020), although the naturalistic corpus data do not always conform to these predictions and, for example, inter-speaker differences will need to be kept in mind (see also Janse & Schreiber *In prep*). Word order in Romeyka is largely determined by information structure, defined in terms of the concepts of topic and focus. A topic of a clause is defined here broadly as old/given information, that is, “an entity that has usually already been introduced into the discourse and is taken up again” (Bağrıaçık 2018: 114) and which is, if not already familiar to the hearer (or at least to the speaker), “agreed on by the speakers” (Soltic 2015: 48, following Gundel & Fretheim 2004). A constituent is in focus if it contains emphasized information which is generally assumed to be in this context new to the hearer (cf. ‘information focus’ in Bağrıaçık 2018: 115). Both topic and focus can also yield contrastive information, thus called contrastive topic and contrastive focus. A contrastive topic is “an element that induces alternatives which have no impact on the focus value and creates oppositional pairs with respect to other topics” (Frascarelli & Hinterhölzl 2007: 88; cf. Bağrıaçık 2018: 267).

Neocleous (2020: 105) argues that there is a single subject position in Romeyka main and subordinate clauses and that all subjects (no differentiation regarding specificity) in pragmatically unmarked orders in Romeyka are left-dislocated topics,⁵ appearing in the left-most clause position (1).

- (1) Romeyka (Schreiber 2021: B, 0238)
- | | | |
|-------------------------------------|---------------|--------------|
| [<i>ena peđas</i>] _{TOP} | <i>ebidže</i> | <i>havus</i> |
| a boy | make.AOR.3SG | pool |
| ‘A boy made a pool.’ | | |

Laurentia Schreiber & Mark Janse

Both the pre-verbal and the post-verbal domain can host topics, but contrastive topics are only possible in pre-verbal position (example (2); Neocleous 2020: 186). Definite object topics, both pre-verbal (Neocleous 2020: 128) and post-verbal (Schreiber 2021), optionally trigger clitic doubling, that is, the coindexation of a (pro)nominal object topic by a clitic pronoun. Clitic doubling of definite object topics is an inherited Greek feature, which is obligatory in PG and other East Asia Minor Greek varieties such as Cappadocian and Pharasiot (Janse 2008), but not systematically attested in the Romeyka corpus. In PG (Drettas 1997: 276–280), clitic doubling occurs for nominal object topics in left-dislocated position (but not when the topicalizer *=ba(l)* occurs) by means of a referential resumptive pronoun to distinguish a topic from pre-verbal focus since focalization never triggers clitic doubling.⁶

Romeyka displays, like PG, an (arguably)⁷ clitic topicalization particle *=ba(l)* (3a/b), which according to Neocleous (2020: 120) assigns contrastive topic to the marked constituent, although the manifold functions of this particle outlined in Schreiber (2024: 141–143) require more detailed investigation. The focus position in Romeyka (for both information and contrastive focus) is immediately to the left of the verb (4) and can be filled by several constituents (Neocleous 2020: 129); multiple focus is possible resulting in movement of all focused constituents to pre-verbal position (Neocleous 2020: 181).

In sum, according to Neocleous (2020, 2022), the pragmatically neutral basic word order in Romeyka main clauses is (S)VO, as illustrated in (1) above; if OV order occurs in main clauses, this is argued to be due to either focalization or topicalization.

⁵We are aware that the term left-dislocation is associated with specific mechanisms in the generative literature (Kaltza & Sitaridou 2010, Neocleous 2020, 2022), but since we are not working within a generative framework, we prefer to use ‘topicalization’ for preverbal topics which are still within the clause and ‘topic left-dislocation’ for preverbal topics which are prosodically detached from the nuclear clause and constitute a separate intonation unit (Janse 2008), ‘backgrounding’ for postverbal topics within the clause and ‘topic right-dislocation’ for postverbal topics which constitute a separate intonation unit (in accordance with Janse 2008: 167–168).

⁶Compare Horrocks’ 2019 rule [92] for the obligatory co-occurrence of clitic-doubling with dislocated and non-dislocated preverbal topics versus rule [93] for the absence of clitic-doubling with preverbal foci in Late Medieval and Early Modern Greek (Horrocks 2019: 2024–2025).

⁷On the enclitic status of *pa(l)* in PG, see Papadopoulos (1955: 119, 1958–1961: volume 2: 138), Setatos (1994), Drettas (1997: 46, 434), Janse (2002: 225–226), Ralli (2006: 131–132), Kaltza & Sitaridou (2010: 263). Compare the use of *πάλιν* as an enclitic topic marker in Late Medieval Greek (Soltic 2013).

12 Word order variation in Romeyka

- (2) Romeyka (Schreiber 2024: 247, ex. 75a, constructed example)

[avudo to saxan]_{TOPi} epero to_i
this the plate take.PRS.1SG OPN.CL.3SG
'I take this plate.'

- (3) a. Romeyka (Schreiber 2021: D, 0390)

ulin efteme
all make.PRS.1PL

'We make everything.'

- b. Romeyka (Schreiber 2021: D, 0391)

pikniki ba efteme
picnic TOP make.PRS.1PL

'We make a picnic.'

- (4) Romeyka (Schreiber 2021: B, 0243)

[ta is]_{FOC} ebidže
the footprints make.AOR.3SG
'He left footprints.'

4 Word order profile

4.1 Word order in the nominal phrase (NP)

Word order in the NP is head-final in Romeyka and nominal modification is pre-nominal with the exception of enclitic genitive pronouns. Attributive adjectives precede the head noun (5),⁸ as do demonstratives (6) and numerals (7). Definite NPs trigger determiner spreading on attributive adjectives and in principle also on numerals,⁹ that is, the definite article occurs before each modifying element as well as before the head noun (e.g., examples 6, 8, 10; for details on determiner spreading and nominal agreement in Romeyka see Schreiber 2024).

⁸While we apply in this chapter generally a very simplified glossing system that ignores some morphological information (and we also abstained from indicating word accent in the examples), we indicate case information only in Section 4.1 on NP word order, but ignore nominal number and gender. It has to be noted that case flagging vs. bare marking, as it is differentiated in the WOVA coding strategy, cannot be considered a reliable factor in Romeyka, since nominative and accusative(/oblique) case endings are often reduced and it can be partly only inferred from the syntactic context which case is expected in a certain example. In the coding of the WOVA dataset, only those tokens are tagged as 'case' which show a clear case ending, like MASC.SG.NOM. -os and MASC.SG.ACC. -on.

⁹Although the Romeyka corpus shows several deviations (see Schreiber 2024).

Laurentia Schreiber & Mark Janse

- (5) Romeyka (Schreiber 2021: A, 0042)
geniše ðromo utš en
 broad road.NOM NEG be.PRS.3SG
 'There is no broad road.'
- (6) Romeyka (Schreiber n.d.: 08_04072019M_3; 161)
hatšino d omorfo don dobo
 this.ACC the nice.ACC the.ACC place.ACC
 'this nice place'
- (7) Romeyka (Schreiber 2021: C, 0285)
ðio nomade
 two persons.NOM
 'two people'
- (8) Romeyka (Schreiber n.d.: 04_01072019F_2; 087)
mo ta dært tane ta za
 with the.ACC four piece the.ACC cows.ACC
 'with the four cows'

Romeyka has pre-nominal nominal genitives (both nouns and NPs), i.e., the possessor precedes the possessed (9, 10).

- (9) Romeyka (Schreiber 2021: C, 0303)
tu spid i arθob
 the.GEN house.GEN the.NOM people.NOM
 'the people of the house'
- (10) Romeyka (Schreiber n.d.: 08_04072019M_2; 090–092)
du dünja olon da tehlikelija da dobe
 the.GEN world.GEN all.GEN the.NOM dangerous.NOM the.NOM places.NOM
 'the world's most dangerous places'

As for pronominal possession, Romeyka has pre-nominal full possessive pronouns (11) but also post-nominal weak/enclitic possessive(/genitive) pronouns (12).¹⁰ As with other pre-nominal modifiers in definite NPs, the head noun keeps its definite article when combined with a full (pre-nominal) possessive pronoun (11), which historically includes an incorporated definite article as well.

12 Word order variation in Romeyka

- (11) Romeyka (Schreiber 2021: A, 0129)

temetero do barxari
POSS.1PL the pasture
'our pasture'

- (12) Romeyka (Schreiber 2021: E, 0564)

andras ades
husband.NOM POSS.CL.3SG
'her husband'

Relative clauses in Romeyka are in principle pre-nominal (13), although post-nominal relative clauses exist as well (14). It is argued that pre-nominal relative clauses in Romeyka have evolved under contact influence from Turkish, while post-nominal relative clauses are a Hellenic relic (Neocleous 2020; Schreiber 2024).

- (13) Romeyka (Gandon 2016: 222, ex. 517, glosses modified)

opse iða [alis p epiren] ineka
yesterday see.AOR.1SG Alis.NOM REL take.AOR.3SG woman.ACC
'Yesterday I saw the woman who Ali married.'

- (14) Romeyka (Neocleous 2020: 71, ex. 87, presentation/glosses modified)

o peðas [op erðen aso cicenin] temon t anepsin
the child REL come.AOR.3SG from.the grocery my the nephew
en
be.PRS.3SG
'The child who came from the grocery's is my nephew.'

4.2 Adpositional phrases

Romeyka is a prepositional language. Prepositional phrases express in Romeyka semantic roles of location, goal, source/origin, instrument or benefactive, as well as some temporal (and other) adjuncts. However, these semantic categories are not exclusively flagged with prepositions. The overall rate of prepositional marking in the WOVA dataset for Romeyka is 61% (percentage calculated based on

¹⁰Throughout this chapter, we indicate clitic status only for weak possessive and object pronouns, and refrain from doing so for all other parts of speech that are traditionally considered clitics in Greek linguistics, such as definite articles, prepositions, relativizer, auxiliaries, negation and modal particles, and the coordinating conjunction *tše* 'and'.

Laurentia Schreiber & Mark Janse

the occurrence of prepositions in the functions ablative, addressee, benefactive, comitative, (caused) goal, instrumental, locative, recipient and beneficiary). For differences in the frequency with which adpositional phrases occur after the verb, see the sections on the respective semantic roles below.

Finally, it must be noted that Romeyka has a complex system of spatial orientation (see Schreiber 2024) and some spatial adverbs could be potentially considered circumpositions (see also Karatsareas 2016 work on circumpositions in Cappadocian), if they co-occur with a preposition, although their status as bound elements is not clear (examples 15, 16 vs. 17).

- (15) Romeyka (Schreiber n.d.: 05_03072019M_3; 29)
s ena sergi eban
 on a blanket above
 ‘on (top of) a blanket’
- (16) Romeyka (Schreiber n.d.: 01_28062019F_3; 42–43)
s oros apes-merea
 at.the forest inside-somewhere
 ‘inside the forest’
- (17) Romeyka (Schreiber n.d.: 01_04022016F_1; 052)
eb-ebuka asi yoryoran
 from-under from.the Gorgoras.ACC
 ‘from lower Gorgoras’ [as differentiated from upper Gorgoras]

4.3 Ordering of spatial expressions relative to the verb

4.3.1 Locations

The preposition indicating location (as well as goal/direction) is *s* ‘to, at’, which can merge with determiners and object pronouns, e.g., *s* ‘to, at’ + *to.DET.ACC.SG* > *so* ‘to the’ (18), *s* ‘to, at’ + *emasuna.OPN.1PL* > *semasuna* ‘to us’. The overall frequency of post-verbal locations (including PPs and spatial adverbials) is 42%, as in (19), the majority of locations is pre-verbal. There is no significant statistical correlation found between the position and the independent variables animacy, weight or flagging (i.e., any overt phonological marking of case). However, there is some inter-speaker variation to be observed (see Table 3 in Section 6 below). The position of spatial adjuncts is sensitive to discourse. The immediate pre-verbal position is argued to be the (information) focus position (Neocleous 2020: 132, 148). In this vein, as exemplified in (19), multiple dislocation of (place) constituents is possible in Romeyka, as is the case for SMG (Alexiadou 1997: 58).

12 Word order variation in Romeyka

- (18) Romeyka (Schreiber 2021: A, 0187)
eskiden gœl_{FOC} ebiname so bodami_{TOP}
 formerly lake make.IPF.1PL at.the valley
 'In earlier times, we made a lake at the valley.'
- (19) Romeyka (Schreiber 2021: A, 0001)
emistine_{TOP} [aða sin otšena]_{FOC} jašaevume
 we here at.the Ogene live.PRS.1PL
 'We live here at Ogene.'

4.3.2 Goals

For the discussion of goals in Romeyka, only goals of motion verbs and verbs of caused motion are considered. Goals in the WOWA dataset are predominantly expressed by prepositional phrases headed by the prepositions *s* 'to' and *os* 'until', but also adverbially. 78% of goals (both prepositional and adverbial) are post-verbal (20), which shows that goals are much more likely to be post-verbal than locations. While information structure affects word order variation in spatial adjuncts in Romeyka, this is not likely to be the only factor determining word order in light of the significantly higher number of post-verbal goals; see Rasekh-Mahand et al. 2024 [Chapter 7], this volume, on spoken Persian for a similar observation. However, in light of an assumed VO/VX order in declarative clauses in Romeyka (Neocleous 2020) – as in other dialects of modern Greek – it is rather the high number of pre-verbal locations and sources (see Sections 4.3.1 and 4.3.3) that is striking and requires explanation. Comparing (20) with (21), information structure accounts for the pre-verbal position of the PP in (21). Otherwise, no statistically significant correlation is found between position and the dependent variables animacy, weight, and flagging, although adverbial goals have a higher likelihood to be post-verbal than PPs. Finally, it has to be noted that there is high inter-speaker variation (see Table 4 in Section 6 below).

- (20) Romeyka (Schreiber 2021: A, 0175)
pao so raši
 go.PRS.1SG to.the mountain
 'I go to the mountain.'
- (21) Romeyka (Schreiber 2021: A, 0136)
[son barxari muna]_{TOP} [direk araba]_{FOC} bai
 to.the pasture POSS.CL.1PL direct car go.PRS.3SG
 'A bus goes directly to our pasture.'

Laurentia Schreiber & Mark Janse

As for caused goals in the WOWA dataset, 100% are post-verbal (22), but note that due to very low token numbers (N=4) in the generally small WOWA dataset for Romeyka this information is only tentative and needs further investigation.

- (22) Romeyka (Schreiber 2021: D, 0488)
eferenam son barxari ksila
 bring.IPF.1PL to.the pasture wood
 'We brought wood to the pasture.'

4.3.3 Sources

The majority of sources in the WOWA dataset, i.e., 80%, are pre-verbal, including PPs with the preposition *as* 'from' and adverbials. This result needs to be taken with some caution, though, since nearly all examples stem from a single speaker. Information structure is likely to account for the position of the source, cf. ex. (23a) in assumed historically unmarked VX position vs. (23b) in pre-verbal contrastive focus position where the PP contrasts with the PP in (23a), i.e., the previous sentence in the same recording.

- (23) a. Romeyka (Schreiber 2021: A, 0024–0025)
bazen para berename edroyame asa bakale
 sometimes money take.IPF.1PL eat.IPF.1PL from.the shops
 'Sometimes we took money, we ate [food] from the shops.'
- b. Romeyka (Schreiber 2021: A, 0026)
bazen aso spidi eberenam tš ebejname
 sometimes from.the house take.IPF.1PL and go.IPF.1PL
 'Sometimes we took [food] from the house.'

4.4 Ordering of direct objects relative to the verb

4.4.1 Nominal direct object

This section focuses on direct objects (DOs) of transitive verbs. In the WOWA dataset, 66% of nominal direct objects are post-verbal (arguments of 'have'/existentials, which are predominantly pre-verbal, not included in this count). The percentage appears to be the same for definite and indefinite nominal DOs, which suggests that definiteness does not play a role. Note, however, that in Cappadocian, word order is sensitive to definiteness, that is, indefinite object NPs tend to occur in post-verbal position (Janse 2006). The difference in word order between examples (24) and (25) is probably rather than in definiteness to

12 Word order variation in Romeyka

be found in information structure, with the object NP in (24) in focus position and the object NP in (25) in topic position. However, there may be also an interference from the frequent occurrence of post-verbal nominal object NPs in Trabzon Turkish (Schreiber *Submitted*), a phenomenon described for informal spoken Standard Turkish as ‘backgrounding’, and which applies usually to definite NPs, although a non-definite NP can be placed in spoken Turkish in the post-verbal position “if it refers to an entity or category that has been mentioned (or implied) in the immediately preceding discourse” (Göksel & Kerslake 2005: 346).

Numerically, more complex NPs/PPs in the WOVA dataset, i.e., those with more than two words usually involving some kind of nominal modification or genitives, tend to be pre-verbal (26). Although this is contrary to the traditional assumption that very complex NPs/PPs preferably appear at the end of an utterance (see, e.g., Behaghel 1909 departing from German), it does align with similar findings from the spoken-language corpora investigated in this volume (see, e.g., Rasekh-Mahand et al. 2024 [Chapter 7] and Leitner 2024 [Chapter 14, this volume]). However, it is likely that information structure is the more decisive factor, which might just happen to overlap with the factor of ‘weight’ (see, e.g., 26).

A significant correlation was found between the dependent variable position and the independent variable animacy: human and animate nominal DOs are slightly more likely to be pre-verbal than inanimate nominal DOs. Interestingly, a reverse significant effect was found for pronominal human and animate DOs, which tend to be more likely post-verbal than inanimate pronominal DOs (see Section 4.4.2). As is the case for all semantic categories, the order of nominal DOs with regard to the verb is sensitive to information structure (see Section 3) and inter-speaker variation is relevant here as well (see Table 2 in Section 6). Finally, it also needs to be stated that the linear order of nominal objects with regard to the verb seems to be at times within the same speaker in free variation, even if other variables remain stable (e.g., 27 vs. 28), i.e., there is intra-speaker variation. This needs to be most likely attributed to ongoing language shift under strong influence from Turkish OV orders, as information structure cannot always be convincingly invoked as explanation for all OV orders.

Laurentia Schreiber & Mark Janse

- (24) Romeyka (Schreiber 2021: E, 0564)
andras ades ba ksila gofdi
 husband POSS.CL.3SG TOP wood cut.PRS.3SG
 'Her husband cuts wood.'
- (25) Romeyka (Schreiber 2021: E, 0572)
efidže so ðormo ban ena ksilo
 leave.AOR.3SG at.the road above a wood
 'He lost a log on the street.'
- (26) Romeyka (Schreiber 2021: A, 0144–0145)
ifedi eyo ebiya išde muskaræ utš dane muskar ebiya
 last_year I buy.AOR.1SG DP calves three piece calve buy.AOR.1SG
 'Last year I bought calves. I bought three calves.'
- (27) Romeyka (Schreiber 2021: A, 0073)
efteme fasulijas
 do.PRS.1PL beans
 'We do beans.' [i.e., 'We grow beans.']}
- (28) Romeyka (Schreiber 2021: A, 0099)
opsar ebsame
 fish catch.AOR.1PL
 'We fished.'

4.4.2 Pronominal direct objects

The percentage of post-verbal pronominal direct objects in the WOWA dataset is with 58% slightly lower than that of nominal DOs. Importantly, (en)clitic object pronouns are not coded in the corpus since they are bound. Romeyka has both clitic object pronouns following the predicate and free object pronouns preceding the predicate. The two are mainly differentiated based on the criterion of stress, whereby enclitic object pronouns have a reduced phonological form and do not impact the stress pattern of the verb. However, in the Romeyka corpus (Schreiber n.d.) there appear to be also post-verbal full object pronouns, which are sometimes difficult to be differentiated from weak ones and which are probably reinforced by contact with Turkish (see below; see also Schreiber 2024: 103). In the WOWA dataset, the percentage of 58% post-predicate pronominal DOs only refers to full pronominal forms, the vast majority being third person pronouns. While none of the coded categories like weight or flagging is significant

12 Word order variation in Romeyka

for the position of pronominal DOs, there is a significant tendency for pronominal DOs denoting human or animate entities to appear post-verbally as opposed to inanimate pronominal DOs (29 vs. 30). However, it is obvious from the examples, that information structure plays a significant role here as well (see 29). Still, it is unclear whether 42% of pre-verbal pronominal DOs are largely due to information structure since pronouns are usually given information which can occur in pre- and post-verbal position (see Section 3).

- (29) Romeyka (Schreiber 2021: D, 0408–0409)

layo dune ado utš eksoro
how be.IPF.3SG this NEG know.PRS.1SG
'How it was? I don't know this.'

- (30) Romeyka (Schreiber 2021: B, 0246)

utš iðan adona
NEG see.AOR.3PL OPN.3SG
'They did not see him [=the bear].'

An important issue is the post-verbal placement of full pronominal objects (often third person pronouns) versus weak enclitic object pronouns. In the WOVA dataset, 60% of pronominal DOs are weak enclitic pronouns (thus not coded for position), 40% are full pronominal forms out of which 58% are post-verbal. In comparison, in the larger Romeyka corpus, 63% of all pronominal DOs are clitic pronouns (Schreiber 2024: 100, Table 12). In (30), a weak object pronoun would be likely to occur since 'the bear' is a topic which has been mentioned several times in the preceding context. Instead, the full pronominal form is placed in post-predicate (enclitic) position. As another example, in (31), the full pronominal form in post-verbal position is preferred over the weak pronominal form *=(a)ta*. It is possible that a contact explanation can account for the preference of post-posed full object pronouns in Romeyka, as (Trabzon) Turkish has no clitic object pronouns and object pronouns can appear post-verbally in informal spoken Turkish (also cf. only 13% post-verbal pronominal DOs in Hodgson In Press). According to Brendemoen (2005: 30), post-verbal pronominal DOs in Trabzon Turkish have arisen due to contact with PG. The potential mutual influence suggests a convergence-type of change between Romeyka and Trabzon Turkish.

- (31) Romeyka (Schreiber 2021: B, 0234)

ama utš eboresane dosin adonusine
but NEG can.AOR.3PL give.INF OPN.3PL
'But they could not hit them.'

Laurentia Schreiber & Mark Janse

In sum, VO is assumed to be the unmarked order of pronominal DO and verb in Romeyka, whereby OV orders are motivated by information structure. The remaining question is what motivates the post-verbal position of full object pronouns. In terms of information structure, pronominal VO with full object pronouns can only be explained, if their information structural value is comparable to that of weak clitic pronouns, that is 'familiar topics'. If the post-verbal position of full pronominal DOs in the Romeyka corpus is split up according to person and number, it is evident that third person singular full object pronouns are most likely to be post-verbal, although strikingly third person plural full object pronouns have the least chance to be post-predicate (unlike ex. 31).¹¹ So probably, gender could play a role in the sense that gender cannot be differentiated in weak third person singular object pronouns but does reflect in strong third person object pronouns. Furthermore, it is not clear whether phonological weight could also play a role, although 3SG strong pronominal forms are not significantly shorter (i.e., more 'clitic-like') than 3PL object pronouns.

4.5 Ordering of other obliques relative to the verb

Other obliques refer to the semantic roles of recipients, addressees, comitatives, instruments, benefactives, and others. In the WOWA dataset, these categories do not figure prominently, so any quantitative analysis is pointless. Instead, the present section discusses some examples for each semantic category.

The WOWA dataset contains only two tokens for recipients, both of which are pronominal. Both pronominal recipients occur pre-verbally (32; but cf. 35). In general, the unmarked word order for nominal recipients is VO (33) with OV orders triggered by information structure, namely focus (34; see Schreiber 2024: 249–250). In ditransitive constructions, the unmarked word order is V–IO–DO (Schreiber 2024: 249). This applies also to pronominal recipients (see (35) and unlike (32) with a topicalized object pronoun).

- (32) Romeyka (Schreiber 2021: A, 0182)
emenan ndona na ðiyune
 OPN.1SG what PRT give.PRS.3PL
 'What do they give to me?'

¹¹Distribution of bound (weak) pronominal object pronouns in the Romeyka corpus (Schreiber n.d.) per person and number: 1SG: 41 bound out of 67, i.e., 61% bound; 2SG: 18 out of 28, i.e., 64% bound; 3SG: 72 out of 133; i.e., 54% bound; 1PL: 17 out of 26, i.e., 65% bound; 2PL: 6 out of 10, i.e., 60% bound; 3PL: 63 out of 79, i.e., 80% bound.

12 Word order variation in Romeyka

- (33) Romeyka (Schreiber 2024: 250, ex. 93, questionnaire data)

ta mila ðokan ti mana tuna
the apples give.AOR.3PL the mother POSS.CL.3PL
'They gave the apples to their mother.'

- (34) Romeyka (Schreiber 2024: 250, ex. 96, questionnaire data)

din batsi eðotše ena ido ..sturatši
the girl give.AOR.3SG a DEM ..stick
'He gave a stick to the girl.'

- (35) Romeyka (Schreiber 2024: 251, ex. 102, questionnaire data)

etšine bal ðotš emena milo
he TOP give.AOR.3SG OPN.1SG apple
'He gave me an apple.'

In the WOVA dataset, all three tokens of addressees are pronominal and appear post-verbally (36, the stress pattern *ípen ádona* reveals that the pronoun must be indeed the post-posed strong form and not a clitic). In general, like with other obliques, nominal addressees are expected to follow the verb in unmarked word order, although they can move to pre-verbal focus position (note that the Romeyka corpus does not feature an example of a nominal addressee, but cf. ex. (37) with *ta patsiðes* 'the girls' as contrastive topic). Pronominal addressees, seem to occur nearly in all cases (of the Romeyka corpus) post-verbally.

- (36) Romeyka (Schreiber 2021: E, 0582)

iben adona
say.AOR.3SG OPN.3SG
'He told her [...].'

- (37) Romeyka (Schreiber n.d.: 02_02022015F_1; 073–074)

elejane ištera ta peðia kopela ta patsiðes elejane yospiðes
say.IPF.3PL later the boys girl the girls say.IPF.3PL prostitutes
'Then they said to the boys girl, to the girls they said prostitutes.'

Comitatives, i.e., referents denoting accompanying persons (or at least animate entities), occur in the WOVA dataset predominantly in post-verbal position (38a), although pre-verbal placement is possible as well (see the PP as pre-posed given topic in (38b), although stylistic variation seems to play a role here as well).

- (38) a. Romeyka (Schreiber 2021: A, 0060–0061)

jaja ebejnane me ta za
by_foot go.IPF.3PL with the cows

Laurentia Schreiber & Mark Janse

- b. *me ta za jaja ebejnane*
 with the cows **by_foot** go.IPF.3PL
 'They went **by foot with** the cows.'

Instruments appear in the WOWA dataset in the vast majority pre-verbally, which may be explained by focalization of new information (39) or contrastive focus. However, based on the data of the Romeyka corpus, it seems that instruments do not differ from other obliques in terms of unmarked VO order (40). Ex. (41) shows that for information structural reasons both nominal obliques and objects can occur pre-verbally, i.e., Romeyka allows for multiple focus, which is argued to be "order-preserving" (Neocleous 2020: 181–182). However, then it is not clear why the oblique precedes the DO in (29).

- (39) Romeyka (Schreiber 2021: E, 0570)
mo d aksinari ešgise da ksila
 with the axe split.AOR.3SG the woods
 'He split the wood with the axe.'
- (40) Romeyka (Schreiber n.d.: 09_04072019_7; 11)
ekoftame me ti kerenti
 cut.IPF.1PL with the scythe
 'We cut with the scythe.'
- (41) Romeyka (Schreiber 2021: A, 0036)
ula me ta rašes ta yomare ekovalename
 all with the pannier the loads carry.IPF.1PL
 'We always carried the loads with the panniers.'

Benefactives refer to situations where X does something in the interest of Y, generally implying that Y is a sentient being. Although no benefactives appear in the WOWA dataset, they are realized in Romeyka by means of the preposition *ja(t)* 'for' (42). Their position seems not to differ from that of comitatives, which are prepositional phrases as well, and which appear often in the pre-verbal domain for information structural reasons, although their unmarked word order is post-verbal.

- (42) Romeyka (Schreiber 2024: 147, ex. 565, questionnaire data)
sade jad emena faji utš eθelisa pseθinimo
 only for OPN.1SG food NEG want.AOR.1SG cook.NMZ
 'I did not want to cook just for myself.'

12 Word order variation in Romeyka

Among other obliques in the WOVA dataset, i.e., those which are none of the semantic roles above, 57% are in post-verbal position, which equals roughly the overall percentage of post-verbal placement in the WOVA dataset which is 55%. Since nearly all of these other obliques are prepositional phrases, they follow the constraints outlined for other PPs above.

4.6 Auxiliaries

Neocleous & Sitaridou (2022) discuss the following auxiliaries in Romeyka: (i) *ime* (+ particle), (ii) *iχa* (+infinitive), (iii) *eš(i)* (+ finite verb in present tense or imperfective past). They always precede the main verb, irrespective of whether it is finite, infinitive or particle. Additionally, there is a periphrastic progressive construction with *steko/stekome* ‘stand’ or *kahome* ‘sit’.

The invariable form *eš(i)* plus finite verb is used as a periphrastic progressive denoting processes that are close to completion and goes most likely back to the 3SG present tense form of the verb *eχo* > *eš(i)* (ex. 43; cf. Drettas 1997: 334 on a related progressive form in PG).¹² The inflected imperfective forms of the verb *eχo* ‘have’ are used as an auxiliary in the formation of counterfactual conditional clauses (44), which are formed by one of the modal particles *na/an/as* + inflected imperfective of *eχo* + non-finite verb/inflected infinitive (Schreiber 2024: 298, Table 37; see also Sitaridou 2014a).

- (43) Romeyka (Schreiber 2021: B, 0241)

eš erde argo

AUX come.AOR.3SG bear

‘The bear is/was? coming.’

- (44) Romeyka (Schreiber n.d.: 04_01072019F_13; 53)

eyo na m iχa škisen da¹³ da ksila [...]

I PRT NEG AUX split.INF? OPN.CL.3PL the woods

‘If I had not chopped the wood, [...].’

With the limited use of the auxiliary *iχa* (morphologically homonymous with imperfective 1SG form of *eχo* suggesting two functions of *eχo* as lexical verb

¹²According to M. Bagriacik (p.c.), the form *eš* goes probably back to a homonymous existential auxiliary already existing in older stages of Greek, rather than to the ‘have’-auxiliary, as the former presents a more likely grammaticalization pathway for a progressive form.

¹³The analysis of the verb form *škis-en=da* is not clear, we analyse *=ta* here as a weak object pronoun but it also resembles the suffix *-ta* marking gerunds like *jelax-ta* ‘laughing’. The form *škisen-* could be potentially a reduced infinitive, cf. *škisini.INF*.

Laurentia Schreiber & Mark Janse

and auxiliary), Romeyka stands out from other varieties of modern Greek like SMG. Its closest relative Cappadocian has a pluperfect with impersonal *iton/itan* (homonymous with the 3rd person aorist form of *ime*) preceded by a finite main verb. Diachronically AMG also uses the auxiliary *ime*, morphologically homonymous with the copula *ime* 'be' (i.e., *ime* can thus function both as existential and auxiliary). For the word order properties of copula and 'become' complements in Romeyka, see Section 4.7.2.

In both cases where forms of *exo* are used as an auxiliary in Romeyka, the auxiliary precedes the main verb, although importantly, in the counterfactual conditionals the verb following the auxiliary is not (i.e., in the case of the infinitive) or only partly (i.e., in the case of the 'inflected infinitive', see Schreiber 2024: 229–233 going back to Sitaridou 2014a) inflected. Neocleous (2020: 269) confirms AuxV order in Romeyka main and subordinate clauses. The construction Vfin + *iton* in pluperfects which exists in Cappadocian is not attested for Romeyka.

4.7 Complementation

4.7.1 Complement and adjunct clauses

In Romeyka both finite and non-finite complementation exist. Depending on the type of predicate, a complementizer is used to introduce the complement clause (CC), while other clause types do not require a complementizer. In Schreiber (2024: 278), it has been argued that more than one complementation strategy is available for some clause types due to contact influence from Turkish, resulting in an increase of non-finite complementation strategies. While the non-finite strategy of using infinitives in some CCs is an archaic trait of Romeyka, non-finite deverbal nouns as a complementation strategy have increased under contact with Turkish. Within the finite complementation strategies, complementation by means of the complementizer *na* is more restricted in Romeyka compared to SMG, while juxtaposition with paratactic syntax and without complementizer is widespread (45), especially with verbs of saying and in (in)direct speech.

- (45) Romeyka (Schreiber n.d.: 02_2906019F_1; 02)
egusame [o jaja evren arkon]
 hear.AOR.1PL the Yahya find.AOR.3SG bear
 'We heard that Yahya has found a bear'

In Romeyka CCs, the complement clause predominantly follows the matrix verb (45). For some predicate types, among which are verbs of saying, the reverse order is possible as well, see for example the preverbal headless relative clause in (46); even circum-positions exist (47).

12 Word order variation in Romeyka

- (46) Romeyka (Schreiber n.d.: 01_28062019F_3; 24)
 [to leyo] utš eyrigo
 what say.PRS.1SG NEG understand.PRS.1SG
 'I don't understand what I say.'
- (47) Romeyka (Schreiber n.d.: 08_04072019M_2; 066)
 [t aleyo] kseris [dohna e]
 the horse know.PRS.2SG what be.PRS.3SG
 'Do you know what "aleyo" is?'

Na-clauses and infinitives obligatorily follow the main verb (48), (49). However, deverbal nouns calquing Turkish complement clauses appear before the main verb but they are strictly speaking NPs and thus no actual CCs (50). Nominalizations selected by some aspectual verbs like *bašlaevo* 'start' which requires a PP follow the main verb (51). If a complementizer is used, it appears at the beginning of the CC.

- (48) Romeyka (Schreiber n.d.: 02_02022015F_1; 014)
 utš eθelena [n andriz]
 NEG want.IPF.1SG PRT marry.IPF.1SG
 'I didn't want to marry.'
- (49) Romeyka (Schreiber 2024: 285, ex. 376, questionnaire data)
 utš eboresa [tšimeθina]
 NEG could.AOR.1SG sleep.INF.1SG
 'I could not sleep.'
- (50) Romeyka (Schreiber 2021: A, 0193)
 [hab-ađadžega to panimo] eyo utš eyabo
 from-here the go.NMZ I NEG like.PRS.1SG
 'I don't want to go from here.'
- (51) Romeyka (Schreiber n.d.: 04_01072019F_13; 30)
 ebašlaepse [so borbatima]
 start.AOR.3SG at.the walking
 'She started to walk.'

Subordination of adjunct and relative clauses exhibits pre-dominantly head-final syntax, although there is a lot of variation only partly dependent on the

Laurentia Schreiber & Mark Janse

clause type. Romeyka adjunct and relative clauses are predominantly finite, although some non-finite strategies exist. The dependent clause is predominantly pre-posed and generally introduced by pre-verbal adverbial subordinators or relative markers (ex. 52; for the syntax of relative clauses, see also Section 4.1. above).

- (52) Romeyka (Schreiber n.d.: 04_01072019F_13; 45)
 [omon d eruise s ormi] ejendune natsurula
 when REL fall.AOR.3SG to.the river become.IPF.3SG wet
 'When she fell into the river, she got wet.'

With regard to head-order directionality within the complement clause, according to Neocleous (2020: 118), the unmarked word order in subordinate/complement clauses is head-final (53) as a consequence of contact with Turkish head-final syntax. However, the example in (45) above seems to form a counter-example to this generalization, since the CC in (45) is a pragmatically neutral, information-structurally unmarked kind of statement (the object is new, not topical nor contrastive) and following Neocleous (2020), we would expect OV order here. Thus, both OV and VO orders seem to be possible in unmarked CCs; potential restrictions with regard to predicate types need further research.

- (53) Romeyka (Schreiber 2021: C, 0332)
 eterezen [o argo erθen]
 look.AOR.3SG the bear come.AOR.3SG
 'He saw that the bear came.'

4.7.2 Copula and 'become'-complements

In the WOWA dataset, only 8% of copula complements appear after the copula, which means that the copula *ime* 'be' appears predominantly in clause-final position. Neocleous (2020: 117) also confirms that copula clauses with the 3rd person form *en/ine* are always head-final. However, when it comes to an explanation of the very low number of copula complements that appear post-verbally in the WOWA dataset (N=2), it is not straightforward to determine any decisive factor. In any case, predicate nominals (54) and predicate adjectives (55) seem to behave alike. Information structure can also account for some of the pre-predicate copula complements (56), while interrogative copula clauses are head-final due to the focus position of the *wh*-element (57). Finally, since the overwhelming majority of clause-final copulas occur in the text of a single speaker (see Table 5 in Section 6 below), the speaker variable may have an effect as well. Still, it is not

12 Word order variation in Romeyka

clear what determines post-predicate copula complements as in (58), although information structure may serve as an explanation here as well.

- (54) Romeyka (Schreiber 2021: A, 0128)

ta mandria muna boš en
the stables POSS.CL.1PL empty be.PRS.3SG
'Our stables are empty.'

- (55) Romeyka (Schreiber 2021: A, 0020)

džumartesi tatili en
saturday holiday be.PRS.3SG
'Saturday is a free day.'

- (56) a. Romeyka (Schreiber 2021: D, 0504–0506)

ama do vutero poli
but the butter much
'But the butter [was] plentiful.'

- b. *do vutero bolin adone*

the butter much be.IPF.3SG
'The butter was plentiful.'

- c. *eliyo utš en do diri*

little NEG be.PRS.3SG the cheese
'The cheese was not scarce.'

- (57) Romeyka (Schreiber 2021: D, 0408)

layo dune
how be.IPF.3SG
'How was it?'

- (58) Romeyka (Schreiber 2021: A, 0049)

en ja ta ðorma muna patikas
be.PRS.3SG DP the roads POSS.CL.1PL unpaved
'Our roads are unpaved (as you know).'

Finally, it has to be noted that the copula – and especially its 3SG present tense form *en* – is often omitted (59, also 56a above; see also the last column in Table 5 in Section 6). Due to clause-final null-copulas in Turkish, it is compelling to assume a contact influence here, although an internal explanation may also play a role due to the particular nature of the verb *ime*. In Cappadocian, the full verb

Laurentia Schreiber & Mark Janse

ime ‘be’ is used in existentials, where it is never dropped; besides, a copula *ime* ‘be’ exists which behaves as a clitic (=me) since MedGr times and thus results always in verb-final orders, although it is never left out in third person singular present tense.

- (59) Romeyka (Schreiber n.d.: 02_9062019F_1; 24)
etšinos xaremenos
 he happy
 ‘He is happy.’

Interestingly, ‘become’-complements in the WOVA dataset are 69% post-verbal, suggesting a different behaviour compared to copula clauses. However, it must be noted that nearly all ‘become’-complements are produced by the same speaker (i.e., Speaker 2, see Table 1 in Section 6), so this result is to be treated with caution. Although the number of coded tokens is too small for any statistical analysis, there is in the dataset a tendency for adjectives as ‘become’-complements to be more likely post-predicate than nominal complements (but cf. *ejendune gedže* ‘it became night’ (Schreiber 2021: B, 0262; E, 0529), also *inete akšemis* ‘it became evening’ (Schreiber 2021: D, 0437) vs. *gedže ejendune* (Schreiber 2021: B, 0242)). Again, information structure has an influence here; see (60) vs. (61) in topic position.

- (60) Romeyka (Schreiber 2021: D, 0445)
ula inumunesten annera
 all become.IPF.1PL soakingly_wet
 ‘We became allover soakingly wet.’
- (61) Romeyka (Schreiber 2021: A, 0210)
emeklis ba na inese na stetšis ađatšeka
 retired TOP PRT become.PRS.2SG PRT stay.PRS.2SG here
 ‘When you become retired, you will stay here.’

5 Areal issues & language contact

Similarly to the well-documented influences of Anatolian Turkish on AMG described by Dawkins (1916), who inspired much of the literature on language contact, long-standing language contact with Turkish in the Trabzon area has evidently led to contact-induced changes in Romeyka in several domains of the language including the lexicon and grammar (for a tentative overview see

12 Word order variation in Romeyka

Chapter 6 in Schreiber 2024; see also Brendemoen 1998, 1999, 2002, 2005, 2006, 2010, 2019 for Greek influences on Turkish). Importantly, similarly strong influences of Turkish are reported from Laz (a Kartvelian language, see Kutscher 2008; Lacroix 2019, 2009, Öztürk & Pöchtrager 2011) and Homshetsma/Hemshinli (Western Armenian; Vaux 2007) which are both minority languages in the neighbouring provinces of Rize and Artvin in northeastern Turkey and which share a sociolinguistically and historically similar contact setting with Turkish as dominant language of the area. Although a comparison of contact-induced influences from Turkish on the morphosyntax of Laz and Hemshinli is beyond the scope of this chapter, Neocleous (2020: 282–284) reports a clear restructuring of Laz word order patterns based on Turkish to pragmatically unmarked word order OV (see also the extremely low percentage of post-predicate elements in the WOVA dataset of Arhavi Laz, Stilo & Lacroix 2021) and unlike its Kartvelian relative Georgian (Neocleous 2020: 243–247). As far as what has been deducible for Hemshinli, it also shares similarities with Turkish for example in non-finite subordination which are otherwise less common in related varieties outside the specific contact setting (Gandon 2016: 210–212). Finally, comparing the word order properties of PG as spoken in Armenia (Hodgson In Press) with that of Romeyka, Armenian PG has only an overall score of 32% post-posed elements, as opposed to 55% in Romeyka.

Another aspect of language contact in the area is the contact influence PG exerted on the Turkish Eastern Black Sea dialect in several domains including word order (Brendemoen 1998, 1999, 2005, 2006, 2019). For example, post-verbal pronominal DOs in Trabzon Turkish (62) are argued by Brendemoen (2005: 30) to arise due to contact with PG (cf. the percentage of post-verbal pronominal DOs in colloquial spoken Turkish of Ankara (Iefremenko 2021) at 7%). When considering the areal picture of contact-induced changes and convergence, the influence of indigenous minority languages on the majority language should not be neglected, although this seems to apply to a lesser degree to the influence of Armenian (and Laz?) on regional Trabzon Turkish (Brendemoen 2005: 29). In any case, potential mutual contact influences highlight the point that for the purpose of inter-language comparison, not primarily the respective standard variety (such as Istanbul Turkish) should be considered, but rather regional varieties (as is done by Neocleous 2020).

- (62) Trabzon Turkish (Brendemoen 2005: 30, ex. 2, presentation adapted)
- | | |
|--------------|------------|
| <i>yedi</i> | <i>oni</i> |
| eat.PST.3SG | OPN.3SG |
| 'He ate it.' | |

Laurentia Schreiber & Mark Janse

6 The role of inter-speaker variation

In order to explain (some of) the variability in word order patterns in Romeyka that appear in the quantitative data and can only partly be explained by linguistic factors, it is crucial to consider the nature of Romeyka which is currently spoken in Turkey as shifting variety, and the composition of the present sample. As Schreiber (2024) has shown, the character of Romeyka as shifting language is not (yet) characterized by language attrition as defined by Thomason (2001: 12) as including structural simplification and loss without compensation but rather with a high inter- (and intra-) speaker variation. Indeed, it is the idiolectal variation based on the individual multilingual profiles of the speakers which explains some of the variability in word order patterns. In other words, the overall figure of 55% post-verbal placement (including 66% post-verbal placement of nominal DOs) in the WOVA dataset of Romeyka does not reflect a stable norm in 'the speech community', but a mean value aggregating over very different individuals. As Craevschi (2022) has shown, the Romeyka data set exhibits the greatest degree of inter-speaker variation among the twenty-four WOVA data sets analysed by him. In fact, the influence of the independent variable 'speaker' outweighs significantly the influence of all other variables which were controlled for in the analysis, even when the imbalanced contribution of the three speakers to the overall data set is taken into consideration (speaker 3 only contributes around 10% of the total tokens). This is shown in Table 1.

Table 1: Overview of speakers and their corresponding texts in the WOVA dataset

| Speaker | Speaker characteristics | Texts provided | Total token |
|---------|-----------------------------------|----------------|-------------|
| 1 | male, middle-aged, ROF, Karaçam | A | 198 |
| 2 | female, middle-aged, ROF, Karaçam | B, D, E | 251 |
| 3 | male, middle-aged, RSür, Beşköy | C | 52 |

The influence of the speaker variable is not the same for all constituent types, and due to the low absolute numbers of tokens for some constituent types, cannot be readily statistically validated for all roles. It does turn out to be significant for predicting the placement of nominal DOs (see also Craevschi 2022). As shown in Table 2, Speaker 1 has with nominal DOs predominantly OV, while Speaker 2 has dominantly OV order. Speaker 3 appears to be largely balanced but note the smaller absolute number of tokens in the data of Speaker 3. A similar inter-

12 *Word order variation in Romeyka*

speaker difference is visible for free pronominal DOs, although the percentages for post-verbal placement are there lower in general (see also Section 4.4.2).

Table 2: Percentage of post-verbal nominal direct objects per speaker

| | Total nominal DOs ('do'+'do-def') | Total VO | % VO |
|---------------------------|-----------------------------------|----------|------|
| Speaker 1 (=text A) | 51 | 18 | 35% |
| Speaker 2 (=text B, D, E) | 103 | 86 | 83% |
| Speaker 3 (=text C) | 21 | 12 | 57% |

A similar picture of inter-speaker variation arises for the semantic roles of locations (Table 3) and goals (Table 4). While Speaker 1 shows predominantly pre-verbal locations (and more or less balanced pre- and post-verbal goals), Speaker 2 uses predominantly post-verbal locations and especially goals. Speaker 3 shows clearly preverbal locations — other than with nominal DOs — although the amount of data provided by Speaker 3 is too little to get a clear picture.

Table 3: Percentage of post-verbal locations per speaker

| | Total locations | Total VX | %VX |
|---------------------------|-----------------|----------|-----|
| Speaker 1 (=text A) | 32 | 11 | 34% |
| Speaker 2 (=text B, D, E) | 35 | 23 | 66% |
| Speaker 3 (=text C) | 16 | 1 | 6% |

Table 4: Percentage of post-verbal goals per speaker

| | Total goals (no pronouns) | Total VX | %VX |
|---------------------------|---------------------------|----------|-----|
| Speaker 1 (=text A) | 32 | 17 | 53% |
| Speaker 2 (=text B, D, E) | 44 | 43 | 98% |
| Speaker 3 (=text C) | 1 | 1 | nc |

Ignoring for a moment Speaker 3 (due to low absolute token numbers), it is evident that Speakers 1 and 2 differ rather consistently: Speaker 2 postpones these three argument types approximately twice as often as Speaker 1. With regard to nominal direct objects, locations, and goals, then, an account of word order

Laurentia Schreiber & Mark Janse

purely in terms of language-internal features such as information structure, animacy, or weight, is clearly missing a very important dimension of variation.

To account for the inter-speaker variation just described, one would need to consider the individual multilingual profiles and language competences of the speakers. Speaker 1 and 2 stem from the same municipality, which is located remotely and is reported to have high language vitality (Schreiber 2016); both speakers are roughly of the same age group. Still, Speaker 1 shows more head-final syntax than Speaker 2. This can be explained by interference from Turkish head-final word orders due to a multilingual profile where Turkish is (at least at the time of data collection) the dominant language. Gender is likely to account for the dominance of Turkish in the multilingual repertoire of (male) Speaker 1 as opposed to (female) Speaker 2. Usually, men are more exposed to Turkish than woman due to higher mobility for various reasons (like labour and military service, but also differences in education, see Schreiber 2016). However, it should be noted that individual language biographies can easily override this gender bias. Since unfortunately no detailed biographical information is available for Speaker 1 and 2, gender is initially assumed here as the decisive variable causing the different word order patterns.

As for the individual multilingual profile of (male) Speaker 3 who shows a more balanced word order with regard to pre-predicate and post-predicate elements, it has to be mentioned that apart from Turkish and Romeyka he is also competent in Modern Greek, which is likely to have in turn an influence on his data.

In sum, inter-speaker differences in the individual multilingual repertoires of the speakers are able to account for at least some of the variation in word order patterns found in Romeyka.

However, when it comes to copula complements (Table 5), the picture of inter-speaker variation is different with overall low numbers of post-predicate complements irrespective of the percentage of post-predicate other semantic roles. This suggests that there is indeed a change in word-order patterns in copula complements, which is reflected in the data by all three speakers. Moreover, all three speakers tend to omit some copulas; the explanation of this phenomenon, however, requires further research and could be potentially affected by the method of data elicitation for the WOWA dataset (see below).

In order to be able to integrate the findings on word order variation in the present WOWA dataset correctly, some critical notes on the dataset and methodology of data collection are in order. Firstly, with 500 tokens, the present dataset is very small and on the lower edge of what can meaningfully be analysed by quantitative means. It has also to be noted that the WOWA Romeyka dataset has

12 Word order variation in Romeyka

Table 5: Copula complements in the WOWA dataset per speaker

| | Total copula complements | Total VX | % VX | Omitted copulas |
|---------------------------|--------------------------|----------|------|-----------------|
| Speaker 1 (=text A) | 19 | 2 | 10% | 2 |
| Speaker 2 (=text B, D, E) | 4 | 0 | 0% | 6 |
| Speaker 3 (=text C) | 3 | 1 | 33% | 4 |

a relatively high number of tokens (N=98) that could not be coded due to non-canonical constructions such as mixing with Turkish or elliptical constructions which also add to the picture of Romeyka as a shifting variety. Secondly, part of the five texts in the WOWA dataset were elicited by means of a storytelling task prompted by picture cards which could have had an influence on the data as well, especially with regard to the omission of copulas which was striking in the narratives elicited with the help of the picture cards. Finally, the fact that the five texts stem from three different speakers which are not directly comparable in terms of gender, age, speech community and their multilingual competences further complicates the analysis. It has to be mentioned, though, that with regard to diatopic variation, the three main dialect areas (Schreiber 2019) are not expected to show significant differences in the domain of word order, except for the potentially different amount of exposure to and use of Turkish, which is considered to be higher in the villages closer to the sea and lower in the more remote mountain villages (see Schreiber 2019).

7 Conclusion

The aim of the present chapter was to analyze the WOWA dataset of Romeyka (Schreiber 2021) with regard to word order in Romeyka in general and the grammatical entities that occur in the post-verbal domain. Romeyka has been described as having inherited VO word order, which has developed mixed directionality under contact with Turkish, which is visible especially in unmarked OV order in subordinate clauses (Neocleous 2020, 2022) but also in ongoing change in certain domains such as copula complements, although the diachronic picture is complex here. Furthermore, the analysis of the present WOWA dataset has revealed that inter-speaker variation mirrors ongoing language shift to Turkish, which complicates the attempt to define default word order patterns for the language and requires a nuanced methodology in assessing word order as if to allow for any meaningful conclusion. In general, information structure accounts for much of the variability in word order patterns that has been described above.

Laurentia Schreiber & Mark Janse

Furthermore, PPs seem to behave differently than other obliques/objects, as well in locations and goals as in benefactives and comitatives.

To conclude, the picture of word order in Romeyka is by no means clearly deducible from quantitative data, as is indicated by the number of 55% overall frequency for post-verbal placement. There are several aspects accounting for the significant variation found in the present WOWA dataset: (i) the role of pragmatics, namely information structure, is highly relevant in Romeyka with at the same time hardly a significant correlation of other factors such as semantic role, flagging or weight, although goals show a tendency to be post-predicate which seems to qualify as an areal (or otherwise for certain reasons universal?) pattern in other languages of the area as well; (ii) the high amount of inter-speaker variation which can be traced back to different levels of Turkish influence in the individual multilingual profiles of the speakers and reflects the status of Romeyka as a shifting variety; but also (iii) considerable intra-speaker variation as a characteristic of language shift; and (iv) ongoing language change as in the case of copula complements, be it internally caused and reinforced by language contact, which requires a very fine-grained and domain-specific investigation not only on the synchronic feature but involving diachronic developments as well as potential contact influences.

Abbreviations

| | | | |
|-----|--------------------|---------|----------------------|
| ACC | accusative | NOM | nominative |
| AOR | aorist | OPN | object pronoun |
| AUX | auxiliary | PL | plural |
| CL | clitic | PRS | present tense |
| DEM | demonstrative | PRT | aspectual particle |
| DP | discourse particle | PST | past tense |
| GEN | genitive | REL | relativizer |
| INF | infinitive | SG | singular |
| IPF | imperfective | TOP | topicalizer |
| NEG | negation | 1, 2, 3 | 1st, 2nd, 3rd person |
| NMZ | nominalization | | |

Acknowledgements

The authors thank the Romeyka speakers and acknowledge financial support from the Alexander-von-Humboldt Foundation within the framework of the

12 Word order variation in Romeyka

project on ‘Post-predicate Elements in Iranian: Inheritance, Contact, and Information Structure’ (PI’s: Geoffrey Haig, Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand) for field research in Trabzon/Çaykara in June/July 2019. Furthermore, our gratitude is due to an anonymous reviewer for very helpful detailed remarks.

References

- Alexiadou, Artemis. 1997. *Adverb placement. A case study in antisymmetric syntax*. Amsterdam/Philadelphia: Benjamins. DOI: [10.1075/la.18](https://doi.org/10.1075/la.18).
- Bağrıaçık, Metin. 2018. *Pharasiot Greek: Word order and clause structure*. Ghent: Ghent University. (Doctoral dissertation).
- Behaghel, Otto. 1909. Beziehungen zwischen Umfang und Reihenfolge von Satzgliedern. *Indogermanische Forschungen* 25. 110–142.
- Brendemoen, Bernt. 1998. Einige Bemerkungen über die Wortstellung in anatolischen Dialekten. In Nurettin Demir & Erika Taube (eds.), *Turkologie heute – Tradition und Perspektive: Materialien der 3. Deutschen Turkologen-Konferenz*, 27–46. Wiesbaden: Harrassowitz.
- Brendemoen, Bernt. 1999. Greek and Turkish language encounters in Anatolia. In Bernt Brendemoen, Elizabeth Lanza & Else Ryen (eds.), *Language encounters across time and space: Studies in language contact*, 353–378. Oslo: Novus.
- Brendemoen, Bernt. 2002. *The Turkish dialects of Trabzon: Their phonology and historical development*. Wiesbaden: Harrassowitz.
- Brendemoen, Bernt. 2005. Sentence subordination in the turkish eastern black sea dialect: Another example of copying from Greek? In Dag Haug & Eirik Welo (eds.), *Haptakahaptātiš: Festschrift for Fridrik Thordarson on the occasion of his 77th birthday*, 29–47. Oslo: Novus.
- Brendemoen, Bernt. 2006. Aspects of Greek-Turkish language contact in Trabzon. In Hendrik Boeschoten & Lars Johanson (eds.), *Turkic languages in contact*, 63–73. Wiesbaden: Harrassowitz.
- Brendemoen, Bernt. 2010. Some remarks on the copula in the Eastern Black Sea dialects. In Hendrik Boeschoten & Julian Rentzsch (eds.), *Turkology in Mainz/Turkologie in Mainz*, 47–54. Wiesbaden: Harrassowitz.
- Brendemoen, Bernt. 2019. The Eastern Black Sea dialects of Turkey from the point of view of language contact. In Christos Tzitzilis & Georgos Papanastassiou (eds.), *Language contact in the Balkans and Asia Minor*, 248–261. Thessaloniki: Aristotle University of Thessaloniki.
- Craevschi, Alexandru. 2022. *Historical contingency and typological tendencies in languages of Western Asia: A quantitative study of word order of non-subject constituents*. Bamberg: University of Bamberg. (MA thesis).

Laurentia Schreiber & Mark Janse

- Dawkins, Richard M. 1916. *Modern Greek in Asia Minor*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Dawkins, Richard M. 1931. Notes on the study of the Modern Greek of Pontos. *Byzantion* 6. 389–400.
- Dawkins, Richard M. 1937. The Pontic dialect of Modern Greek in Asia Minor and Russia. *Transactions of the Philological Society* 36. 15–52.
- Deffner, Michael. 1878. Die Infinitive in den pontischen Dialekten und die zusammengesetzten Zeiten im Neugriechischen. *Monatsberichte der Königlich Preussischen Akademie der Wissenschaften zu Berlin* 1878. 191–230.
- Drettas, Georges. 1997. *Aspects pontiques*. Paris: Association de Recherches Pluridisciplinaires.
- Drettas, Georges. 1999. Το ελληνο-ποντιακό διαλεκτικό σύνολο [The Greek-Pontic dialectal set]. In Anastasios-Foivos Christidis, Maria Arapopoulou & Giannoula Giannoulopoulou (eds.), *Διαλεκτικοί θύλακοι της ελληνικής γλώσσας*, 91–100. Athens: Ministry of National Education & Religious Affairs/Centre for the Greek Language.
- Dryer, Matthew S. 1995. Frequency and pragmatically unmarked word order. In Pamela A. Downing & Michael Noonan (eds.), *Word order in discourse*, 105–135. Amsterdam: Benjamins.
- Dryer, Matthew S. 2013. Determining dominant word order. In Matthew S. Dryer & Martin Haspelmath (eds.), *The world atlas of language structures online*. (accessed on November 15, 2022). Leipzig: Max Planck Institute for Evolutionary Anthropology. <http://wals.info/chapter/s6>.
- Frascarelli, Mara & Roland Hinterhölzl. 2007. Types of topics in German and Italian. In Kerstin Schwabe & Susanne Winkler (eds.), *On information structure, meaning and form: Generalizations across languages*, 87–116. Amsterdam: Benjamins.
- Gandon, Ophélie. 2016. *La relativisation dans une perspective aréale: l'aire Caucase – Anatolie de l'Est – Iran de l'Ouest*. Université Sorbonne Nouvelle. (Doctoral dissertation).
- Göksel, Aslı & Celia Kerslake. 2005. *Turkish: A comprehensive grammar*. London/New York: Routledge.
- Gundel, Jeanette K. & Thorstein Fretheim. 2004. Topic and focus. In Laurence Horn & Gregory Ward (eds.), *The handbook of pragmatics*, 175–196. Oxford: Blackwell.
- Haig, Geoffrey, Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand, Donald Stilo, Laurentia Schreiber & Nils N. Schiborr. 2024. Post-predicate elements in the Western Asian Transition Zone: Data, theory, and methods. In Geoffrey Haig, Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand, Donald Stilo, Laurentia Schreiber & Nils N. Schiborr (eds.), *Post-*

12 Word order variation in Romeyka

- predicate elements in the Western Asian Transition Zone: A corpus-based approach to areal typology*, 1–49. Berlin: Language Science Press.
- Hodgson, Katherine. In Press. Pontic Greek (Armenia). In Geoffrey Haig, Donald Stilo, Mahîr C. Doğan & Nils N. Schiborr (eds.), *WOWA – Word Order in Western Asia: A spoken-language-based corpus for investigating areal effects in word order variation*. Bamberg: University of Bamberg.
- Holton, David, Geoffrey Horrocks, Marjolijn Janssen, Tina Lendari, Io Manolessou & Notis Toufexis. 2019. *The Cambridge grammar of medieval and early Modern Greek*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Holton, David, Peter Mackridge, Irene Phillipaki-Warburton & Vassilios Spyropoulos. 2012. *Greek: A comprehensive grammar of the modern language*. London/New York: Routledge.
- Horrocks, Geoffrey. 1990. Clitics in Greek: A diachronic review. In Maria Roussou & Stavros Panteli (eds.), *Greek outside Greece*, vol. 2, 35–52. Athens: Diaspora Books.
- Horrocks, Geoffrey. 2007. Syntax: From Classical Greek to the Koiné. In Anastasios F. Christidis & Maria Arapopoulou (eds.), *A history of Ancient Greek: From the beginnings to Late Antiquity*, 618–631. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Horrocks, Geoffrey. 2019. Syntax. In David Holton, Geoffrey C. Horrocks, Marjolijn Janssen, Tina Lendari, Io Manolessou & Notis Toufexis (eds.), *The Cambridge grammar of medieval and early Modern Greek*, vol. 4, 1861–2040. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Iefremenko, Kateryna. 2021. Oghuz (Ankara). In Geoffrey Haig, Donald Stilo, Mahîr C. Doğan & Nils N. Schiborr (eds.), *WOWA – Word Order in Western Asia: A spoken-language-based corpus for investigating areal effects in word order variation*. (accessed on April 11, 2023). Bamberg: University of Bamberg. multicast.aspra.uni-bamberg.de/resources/wowa/#turkic.
- Janse, Mark. 2002. Aspects of Pontic grammar. *Journal of Greek Linguistics* 3. 203–231.
- Janse, Mark. 2006. Object position in Cappadocian and other Asia Minor Greek dialects. *Modern Greek Dialects and Linguistic Theory* 2. 115–129.
- Janse, Mark. 2008. Clitic doubling from ancient to Asia Minor Greek. In Dalina Kallulli & Leon Tasmowski (eds.), *Clitic doubling in the Balkan languages*, 165–202. Amsterdam: Benjamins.
- Janse, Mark. 2020. Back to the future: Akritic light on diachronic variation in Cappadocian (East Asia Minor Greek). In Klaas Bentein & Mark Janse (eds.), *Varieties of Postclassical and Byzantine Greek*, 201–239. Berlin: De Gruyter Mouton.

Laurentia Schreiber & Mark Janse

- Janse, Mark. In press. Η καππαδοκική διάλεκτος [The Cappadocian dialect]. In Christos Tzitzilis (ed.), *Neoellinikes dialekti [The Modern Greek dialects]*. Thessaloniki: Instituto Neoellinikon Spuðon.
- Janse, Mark & Laurentia Schreiber. In prep. Word order and information structure in Romeyka.
- Kaltsa, Maria & Ioanna Sitaridou. 2010. Topicalisation in Pontic Greek. *Modern Greek Dialects and Linguistic Theory* 4. 262–279.
- Karatsareas, Petros. 2016. The Asia Minor Greek adpositional cycle. A tale of multiple causation. *Journal of Greek Linguistics* 16. 47–86.
- Kutscher, Silvia. 2008. The language of the Laz in Turkey: Contact-induced change or gradual language loss. *Turkic Languages* 12. 82–102.
- Lacroix, René. 2009. *Description du dialecte Lazé d'Arhavi (Caucasique du Sud, Turquie)*. Lyon: Université Lumière Lyon 2. (Doctoral dissertation).
- Lacroix, René. 2019. Laz. In Geoffrey Haig & Geoffrey Khan (eds.), *The languages and linguistics of Western Asia: An areal perspective*, 830–860. Berlin: De Gruyter Mouton. DOI: [10.1515/9783110421682-021](https://doi.org/10.1515/9783110421682-021).
- Leitner, Bettina. 2024. Khuzestani Arabic. In Geoffrey Haig, Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand, Donald Stilo, Laurentia Schreiber & Nils N. Schiborr (eds.), *Post-predicate elements in the Western Asian Transition Zone: A corpus-based approach to areal typology*, 387–404. Berlin: Language Science Press.
- Mackridge, Peter. 1987. Greek-speaking Moslems of North-East Turkey. Prolegomena to a study of the Ophitic sub-dialect of Pontic. *Byzantine and Modern Greek Studies* 11. 115–137.
- Neocleous, Nicolaos. 2020. *Word order and information structure in Romeyka: A syntax and semantics interface account of order in a minimalist system*. Cambridge: University of Cambridge. (Doctoral dissertation).
- Neocleous, Nicolaos. 2022. The evolution of VO and OV alternation in Romeyka. In Hiwa Asadpour & Thomas Jügel (eds.), *Word order variation: Semitic, Turkic and Indo-European languages in contact*, 141–161. Berlin: De Gruyter Mouton.
- Neocleous, Nicolaos & Ioanna Sitaridou. 2022. Never just contact: the rise of final auxiliaries in Asia Minor Greek. *Diachronica* 39. 369–408.
- Öztürk, Balkız & Markus A. Pöchtrager. 2011. *Pazar Laz*. München: Lincom Europa.
- Papadopoulos, Anthimos A. 1933. Συμβολὴ εἰς τὴν ἔρευναν τῆς ποντικῆς διαλέκτου (ἢτοι γραμματικὰ καὶ συντακτικὰ ζητήματα) [A contribution to the study of the Pontic dialect: grammatical and syntactic issues]. *Ἄθηνα* 45. 15–48.

12 Word order variation in Romeyka

- Papadopoulos, Anthimos A. 1955. *Ιστορικὴ γραμματικὴ τῆς ποντικῆς διαλέκτου* [Historical grammar of the Pontic dialect]. Athens: Επιτροπὴ Ποντιακῶν Μελετῶν.
- Papadopoulos, Anthimos A. 1958–1961. *Ιστορικὸν λεξικὸν τῆς ποντικῆς διαλέκτου* [Historical dictionary of the Pontic dialect], vol. 1–2. Athens: Myrtidis.
- Parcharidis, Ioannis. 1880. *Γραμματικὴ τῆς διαλέκτου Τραπεζούντος. Περὶ επιθέτων, αντωνυμιών καὶ βαρυτόνων ρημάτων* [Grammar of the Trabzon dialect. On adjectives, pronouns and baritone verbs], vol. Χειρόγραφο 335. Athens: Κέντρο Ερεύνης των Νεοελληνικών Διαλέκτων καὶ Ιδιωμάτων, Academy of Athens.
- Parcharidis, Ioannis. 1888. Συλλογή ζώντων μνημείων της αρχαίας ελληνικῆς γλώσσας εν Ὀφει' [Collection of living monuments of the ancient Greek language in Ofi']. Ο εν Κωνσταντινουπόλει Ελληνικός Φιλολογικός Σύλλογος 18. 120–178.
- Rafiyenko, Dariya & Ilja A. Seržant. 2020. Postclassical Greek: An overview. In Dariya Rafiyenko & Ilja A. Seržant (eds.), *Postclassical Greek: Contemporary approaches to philology and linguistics*, 1–15. Berlin: De Gruyter Mouton.
- Ralli, Angela. 2006. Syntactic and morphosyntactic phenomena in Modern Greek dialects: The state of the art. *Journal of Greek Linguistics* 7. 121–159.
- Ralli, Angela. 2020. Selected topics of the morphology of Asia Minor Greek: An introduction. In Angela Ralli (ed.), *The morphology of Asia Minor Greek*, 1–19. Leiden: Brill.
- Rasekh-Mahand, Mohammad, Elham Izadi, Mehdi Parizadeh, Geoffrey Haig & Nils N. Schiborr. 2024. Post-predicate elements in modern colloquial Persian: A multifactorial analysis. In Geoffrey Haig, Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand, Donald Stilo, Laurentia Schreiber & Nils N. Schiborr (eds.), *Post-predicate elements in the Western Asian Transition Zone: A corpus-based approach to areal typology*, 183–216. Berlin: Language Science Press.
- Revithiadou, Anthoula & Vasilis Spyropoulos. 2009. *Οφίτικη ποντιακή: έρευνα γλωσσικής καταγραφής με έμφαση στη διαχρονία και συγχρονία της διαλέκτου* [Ophitic Pontic: Language inventory survey with emphasis on the diachrony and synchrony of the dialect]. Athens: John S. Latsis Public Benefit Foundation.
- Schreiber, Laurentia. 2016. Assessing sociolinguistic vitality: An attitudinal study of Rumca (Romeyka). In Heike Wiese, Heiko F. Marten & Oliver Bunk (eds.), *Arbeitspapiere "Sprache, Variation und Migration": Studentische Arbeiten*. accessed on 17 Nov 2017. Potsdam: Universität Potsdam. http://www.uni-potsdam.de/fileadmin01/projects/svm/Arbeitspapiere/MA_Schreiber_May.pdf.
- Schreiber, Laurentia. 2019. Romeyka. In Geoffrey Haig & Geoffrey Khan (eds.), *The languages and linguistics of Western Asia: An areal perspective*, 892–933. Berlin: De Gruyter Mouton.

Laurentia Schreiber & Mark Janse

- Schreiber, Laurentia. 2021. Pontic Greek (Romeyka). In Geoffrey Haig, Donald Stilo, Nils N. Schiborr & Mahîr Dogan (eds.), *WOWA – Word Order in Western Asia: A spoken-language-based corpus for investigating areal effects in word order variation*. Bamberg: University of Bamberg. multicast.aspra.uni-bamberg.de/resources/wowa/.
- Schreiber, Laurentia. 2024. *A (Contact-)Grammar of Romeyka*. Bamberg/Ghent: University of Bamberg / Ghent University. (Doctoral dissertation). DOI: [10.20378/irb-95115](https://doi.org/10.20378/irb-95115).
- Schreiber, Laurentia. Submitted. Muslim Pontic Greek in Turkey: Language shift and bilingual language use. In Konstantinos Sampanis, Matthias Kappler & Eleni Karantzola (eds.), *Sociocultural aspects of Greek-Turkish language contacts*. Wiesbaden: Harrassowitz.
- Schreiber, Laurentia. N.d. The Romeyka corpus. In prep.
- Schreiber, Laurentia & Ioanna Sitaridou. 2017. Assessing the sociolinguistic vitality of Istanbulite Romeyka: An attitudinal study. *Journal of Multilingual and Multicultural Development* 39. 1–16.
- Setatos, Michalis. 1994. Το ποντιακό πα [The Pontic pa]. *Ελληνική Διαλεκτολογία* 4. 39–48.
- Sitaridou, Ioanna. 2013. Greek-speaking enclaves in Pontus today: The documentation and revitalization of Romeyka. In Mari Jones & Sarah Ogilvie (eds.), *Keeping languages alive: documentation, pedagogy, and revitalization*, 98–112. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Sitaridou, Ioanna. 2014a. Modality, antiveridicality, and complementation: The Romeyka infinitive as a negative polarity item. *Lingua* 148. 118–146.
- Sitaridou, Ioanna. 2014b. The Romeyka infinitive: Continuity, contact and change in the Hellenic varieties of Pontus. *Diachronica* 31. 23–73.
- Sitaridou, Ioanna. 2016. Reframing the phylogeny of Asia Minor Greek: The view from Pontic Greek. *CHS Research Bulletin* 4. 1–17.
- Sitaridou, Ioanna. 2021. (in)Vulnerable inflected infinitives as complements to volitionals and modals: Evidence from Galician and Romeyka. In Thórhallur Eythórsson & Jóhannes Gísli Jónsson (eds.), *Syntactic features and the limits of syntactic change*, 161–177. Oxford: Oxford University Press.
- Soltic, Jorie. 2013. Late Medieval Greek πάλιν: A discourse marker signalling topic switch. *Greek, Roman & Byzantine Studies* 53. 390–419.
- Soltic, Jorie. 2015. *The Late Medieval Greek πολιτικὸς στίχος poetry. Language, metre and discourse*. Ghent: University of Ghent. (Doctoral dissertation).
- Stilo, Donald & René Lacroix. 2021. Laz (Arhavi). In Geoffrey Haig, Donald Stilo, Mahîr C. Doğan & Nils N. Schiborr (eds.), *WOWA – Word Order in Western Asia: A spoken-language-based corpus for investigating areal effects in word order variation*. Bamberg: University of Bamberg. multicast.aspra.uni-bamberg.de/resources/wowa/.

12 Word order variation in Romeyka

- der variation. Bamberg: University of Bamberg. multicast.aspra.uni-bamberg.de/resources/wowa/.
- Thomason, Sarah G. 2001. *Language contact*. Edinburgh: Edinburgh University Press.
- Tombaidis, Dimitrios E. 1992. Η τύχη των μικρασιατικών ιδιωμάτων στον ελληνικό χώρο [The fate of Asia Minor idioms in the Greek area]. *Centre for Asia Minor Studies Bulletin* 9. 241–250.
- Tombaidis, Dimitrios E. 1996. Η ποντιακή διάλεκτος [The Pontic dialect]. In Dimitrios Tombaidis (ed.), *Μελετήματα ποντιακής διαλέκτου*, 222–233. Thessaloniki: Kodhikas.
- van Emde Boas, Evert, Albert Rijksbaron, Luuk Huitink & Mathieu de Bakker. 2019. *The Cambridge grammar of Classical Greek*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Vaux, Bert. 2007. Homshetsma: The language of the Armenians of Hamshen. In Hovann Simonian (ed.), *The Hemshin: History, society and identity in the highlands of Northeast Turkey*, 257–278. London/New York: Routledge.

Chapter 13

Post-predicate arguments in Modern Eastern Armenian

Katherine Hodgson^a, Victoria Khurshudyan^b & Pollet Samvelian^c

^aUniversity of Cambridge ^bAFFIL ^cUniversité Paris III - Sorbonne Nouvelle

This study uses a corpus of oral narratives to investigate the positioning of DOs, as well as other arguments, including goals, in Modern Eastern Armenian (MEA). We find a preference for OV, very strong for indefinite DO (96.8% OV), weaker for definite DO (67% OV). Animacy and weight appear to have a slight effect favouring VO, but the numbers are not statistically significant. Definiteness, animacy, and weight also appear to have a slight effect favouring post-predicate position for other roles. Other roles articulated as pronouns occur less frequently in post-predicate position than lexical NPs. There is no clear evidence that any of the other factors investigated (givenness, topicality, crowding effect, verb type, clause type) affects the position of arguments. The (generally informal spoken) MEA data from this study exhibit similarities to the 'OVX' pattern that characterizes comparable registers in languages of the Mesopotamia region, with goals showing a preference for post-predicate position (68.9%), in contrast to other arguments.

1 Introduction

Modern Eastern Armenian (MEA) is generally grouped with SOV languages based on the branching direction of its various constituents (quite consistently left-branching), but also some syntactic properties of its VP (e.g. the preverbal position of the focus and bare/indefinite objects), which are assumed to be characteristic of OV languages. The quantitative study of [Stilo \(2018\)](#) also shows a clear preference for OV order. However, according to some studies ([Dum-Tragut 2009](#), [Badikyan 1976](#), among others), definite DOs display a clear preference for

Katherine Hodgson, Victoria Khurshudyan & Pollet Samvelian

the postverbal position, and grammars of literary MEA generally consider VO to be the unmarked word order. In a recent study, [Samvelian et al. \(2023\)](#) conducted a quantitative investigation of word order in MEA. Based on a small task-oriented corpus and two experiments, they conclude that (S)VO order cannot be qualified as a marked option in MEA, since definite DOs display a strong preference for the VO order in “out-of-the-blue” sentences. Their results confirm, on the other hand, the preference of non-definite DOs for the OV order, indicating furthermore that indefinite (with the indefinite article) and bare DOs are equally likely to favor the OV order. Apart from definiteness, length is also mentioned as a relevant factor, since long indefinite and bare DOs are more likely to behave like definite DOs by appearing in postverbal position.

Apart from DOs, other arguments, especially goals of verbs of motion and caused motion, may also occur in post-predicate position in MEA. This phenomenon has been shown to have an areal dimension, being characteristic of many languages of Western Asia; see contributions to this volume. The purpose of the present study is to investigate factors affecting the position (pre- vs. post-predicate) of DOs, as well as certain other types of argument that may occur variably in pre- or post-predicate position. Specifically, we aim to check whether the same word order preferences for the placement of DOs reported in [Samvelian et al. \(2023\)](#) also hold in a corpus of unscripted spoken language, as well as to investigate the word order preferences of goals and other types of arguments that show variable position. Besides definiteness and length, we also investigate the relevance of some other factors in the placement of DOs and other arguments:

- Topicality: It has been claimed that word order in MEA is closely linked to information structure ([Hodgson 2019](#)). Given that our corpus is annotated for topic persistence and referential distance, as well as other factors connected to topicality, such as givenness and animacy, we can check whether there is a correlation between topicality and postverbal placement.
- Type of referential element (lexical NP vs. pronoun).
- Crowding effect: [Hayrapetyan \(1981\)](#) mentions the presence (or not) of the subject as a relevant feature in the pre- or postverbal placement of the DO in Classical Armenian. This factor may also be relevant in MEA.
- We also investigate the possibility that clause type (main vs. subordinate) and verb type (simple vs. periphrastic) could have an effect on the position of objects.

13 *Post-predicate arguments in Modern Eastern Armenian*1.1 **Typological preliminaries and background**

The position of direct objects in Eastern Armenian is somewhat controversial. Although Armenian is often assumed to be an OV language, Eastern Armenian in particular shows considerable flexibility in the position of objects, especially definite objects, and in WALS is described as having no dominant order (Dryer 2013). The placement of DOs has been the focus of a few studies, including corpus-based and experimental ones. Samvelian et al. (2023) provide a thorough survey of the literature on the issue. They note that despite the fact that typological and theoretical syntactic studies have generally grouped Armenian with SOV languages (Der-Houssikian 1978: 227–228, Dryer 1998: 286, 310, Dum-Tragut 2002, Giorgi & Haroutyunian 2016: 190, Hawkins 1979: 625, 1983: 286, Hodgson 2013: 6, Kahnemuyipour & Megerdoomian 2011, 2017: 81, Kozintseva 1995: 8, Minassian 1980: 263, Tamrazian 1991: 101, 1994: 7, among others), Armenian grammars and descriptive studies, on the other hand, generally refer to the postverbal position as the “natural” position of the object. This is either overtly claimed based on small scale quantitative studies (Badikyan 1976), or is induced by the fact that in most examples illustrating transitive sentences and the DO, the latter is placed in the postverbal position.

Given the fact that OV-VO variation is not trivial in MEA, Samvelian et al. (2023) build on quantitative methods in order to provide a reliable picture of word order distribution in MEA, as well as different factors that may be involved in the choice of OV versus VO order. The main factor investigated by Samvelian et al. (2023) is definiteness. Indeed, several studies have mentioned the relevance of this factor in the placement of the DO (Badikyan 1976, Dum-Tragut 2009, Stilo 2018), with definite DOs occurring more frequently in postverbal position. In a preliminary corpus investigation based on a sample of 570 transitive sentences from the EANC (Eastern Armenian National Corpus, see below), Faghiri & Samvelian (2020) report that definite DOs are overwhelmingly postverbal (79.1 VO vs. 20.9% OV).

The results of Samvelian et al. (2023) are based on a small-scale corpus study and 2 experiments. Their task-oriented spoken corpus includes recordings of picture-based storytelling from 10 native speakers of MEA (see Khurshudyan 2006 and Samvelian et al. 2023 for a detailed description of the corpus and its annotation). Their corpus contains 231 finite declarative transitive sentences with SOV or SVO orders. The results confirm that definite DOs tend to appear in the postverbal position. Samvelian et al. (2023: 476) also show the relevance of length in the placement of the DO: “long and/or heavy bare and indefinite DOs appear frequently in the SVO order, while simple (that is short or minimal) bare and

Katherine Hodgson, Victoria Khurshudyan & Pollet Samvelian

indefinite DOs are more likely to appear in the SOV order.”

Samvelian et al. (2023) also provide two sentence production experiments. The first experiment, which compares definite and indefinite DOs, uses a cued sentence recall protocol, and the second one, which compares indefinite and bare DOs, uses constrained sentence production protocol. Furthermore, Samvelian et al. (2023) study the effect of animacy and length.

In the first experiment, 82.7% of definite DOs occur in the postverbal position, while the percentage of postverbal indefinite DOs is 38.3%. As for animacy, although its main effect is not significant, it nevertheless has an effect on the order with definite DOs: animate definite DOs favor SVO more than inanimate definite DOs do. The second experiment shows that both indefinite and bare objects are overwhelmingly preverbal: 74.4% vs. 75.7% respectively. The experiment also confirms the effect of length: non-simple (or long) DOs are more likely to appear in the SVO order.

To sum up, both Faghiri & Samvelian (2020) and Samvelian et al. (2023) report a clear-cut divide between definite DOs on the one hand and indefinite and bare DOs on the other hand. In both corpus-based and experimental studies, definite DOs are overwhelmingly postverbal. Therefore, not only does definiteness seem to be the best predictor for the pre- or postverbal placement of the DO, but also postverbal position seems to be the default placement for definite DOs.

The results of Samvelian et al. (2023) are in sharp contrast with the findings of Stilo (2018). In his data from Colloquial Yerevan Armenian, Stilo (2018) finds that both definite and indefinite DOs show a strong preference for preverbal position: indefinite DOs are 95% preverbal, while definite DOs show a slightly weaker, but still strong preference for preverbal position (86.1%). The other dialects of Armenian included in the study of Stilo (2018) also show a general strong preference for preverbal position in the case of both indefinite and definite DOs: indefinite DOs are preverbal in 100% of cases in the dialects of Erzurum and Stepanakert, and 81% preverbal in Lori, while definite DOs are 98% preverbal in Stepanakert, 91.9% preverbal in Erzurum, and 83.2% preverbal in Lori.

The contrast between the results of Stilo (2018) and those of Samvelian et al. (2023) can be accounted for by several facts: dialectal variation, the language register, and the “genre” of the corpus (discourse, oral, written, etc.), as well as the fact that the data in the experimental studies of Samvelian et al. (2023) include only “out-of-the-blue” declarative non-embedded sentences, which may be considered unmarked, while the present study includes all types of sentences. However, in the absence of the data from colloquial Yerevan Armenian, there could be also other reasons for the discrepancies. A similar pattern has been observed in Romeyka, where those studies based on elicitation of out-of-the-blue sentences,

13 *Post-predicate arguments in Modern Eastern Armenian*

with overt subjects and objects, yield predominantly VO structures, while the data from connected spontaneous spoken discourse show a higher rate of OV (Schreiber & Janse 2024 [Chapter 12, this volume]). As Samvelian et al. (2023) note in their conclusion, it is very likely that the rate of SOV is higher in spontaneous oral discourse. It is also likely that geographical variation, perhaps associated with different language contact patterns, is relevant, as Stilo (2018) presents data from various dialects spoken in different parts of the Armenian-speaking world. However, even his data from Yerevan show a far lower percentage of post-predicate arguments than those of Samvelian et al. (2023).

In this context, it is important to note that formal literary MEA, as used in writing and formal speech, shows significant differences in morphology, phonology, and syntax¹ from any form of colloquial spoken Armenian, including the colloquial MEA spoken in Yerevan from which Stilo's data are taken. As stated in the introduction, VO order is promoted as the unmarked word order in grammars of the formal literary language.² It is likely that the difference between the results of Stilo (2018), even for speakers from Yerevan, and those of Samvelian et al. (2023) reflects the fact that the former deals with colloquial language, and the latter includes data with characteristics of formal literary language,³ indicating another potential syntactic difference between literary and colloquial MEA. The present study provides further evidence in support of the proposal that register is a key factor in the difference between the results of Stilo (2018) and Samvelian et al. (2023), since the 'outlier' speaker with the highest percentage of VO (speaker

¹Morphological differences between formal literary EA and colloquial EA as spoken in Yerevan include the form of the 3sg. present auxiliary (formal *e* vs. colloquial *a*) and certain forms of the 'emphatic' pronoun (formal nom.pl. *irenk'* vs colloquial *irank'*, formal gen.sg. *ir*, dat.sg. *iren* vs. colloquial gen.sg. *ira*, dat.sg. *iran*) among many others. Phonological differences include the change of the diphthong /ay/ > [e], as in the demonstratives (distal), which have the forms *es*, *ed*, *en* in the colloquial language; see also the formal/colloquial correspondences *hayr/her* 'father', *mayr/mer* 'mother', *dzayn/dzen* 'voice', *layn/len* 'wide', etc. Syntactic differences include the use of different cases with certain adpositions, for example the use of the dative of 1st and 2nd person pronouns with postpositions such as *het* 'with', *mot* 'close to, by', *hamar* 'for' etc. in the formal literary language, as opposed to the genitive in the colloquial language: formal *indz het* 'with me', *indz mot* 'close to me', *indz hamar* 'for me' vs. colloquial *im mot*, *im het*, *im hamar*, as well as differences in relativization strategies (notably use of indeclinable complementizer instead of declined relative pronoun) described in Hodgson (2019).

²Donabédian (p.c.) even reports hearing a teacher of formal literary Western Armenian state that OV order is 'Turkish', and therefore incorrect.

³For example, examples (18–21) in Samvelian et al. (2023), taken from their corpus, show features characteristic of formal literary language (3sg. aux. *e*, genitive of "emphatic" pronoun *ir* etc.), and while the words used in the experiments could be described as register-neutral, the instructions that appear on the screen as shown in Samvelian et al. (2023) Fig. 1 are in formal literary EA, which is likely to have prompted the use of this form of language in the responses.

Katherine Hodgson, Victoria Khurshudyan & Pollet Samvelian

3, with 44% VO, as opposed to an average of 17.4% VO for all the other speakers) is also the only one who uses certain word forms associated with the formal literary language (see Table 3 and associated discussion). These findings echo similar findings from Persian, where different grades of formality (and the difference between spoken and written modalities) have a significant impact on certain aspects of word order, see Rasekh-Mahand et al. (Rasekh-Mahand et al. 2024 [Chapter 7, this volume]) for details.

The discussion of the placement of DOs in Stilo (2018) takes place in context of the wider issue of post-predicate constituents in many OV languages of Western Asia. These languages differ from 'rigid' OV languages in that they regularly allow at least certain constituents to appear in post-predicate position, giving (O)VX word order. Stilo (2018) and subsequent studies show that the type of constituent that is most common and widespread in post-predicate position is goal of verbs of motion or caused motion (see Haig et al. 2024 [Chapter 1, this volume], for an overview. In some languages, similar behaviour is shown by other constituents which, like goals, can be considered to have the semantic property of 'endpoint', namely recipient, benefactive, addressee, and object of change of state predicates such as 'become'. Arguments without this semantic property, such as ablative, instrumental, locative, and comitative, do not typically appear in post-predicate position in these languages (see Haig & Khan 2019, Stilo 2018). The data in Stilo (2018), which include four different dialects of Armenian (Erzurum, Lori, Stepanakert, and colloquial Yerevan), indicate that in all of these, goals show a preference for post-predicate position. In some dialects, recipient and benefactive also show a tendency to appear in post-predicate position, though not as frequently as goals. Addressee arguments do not seem to be affected by this tendency in Armenian, showing 90–100% pre-predicate position in all the dialects investigated. In fact, most of the historically OV languages in this volume exhibit the same split (see Haig et al. 2024 [Chapter 1, Section 4, this volume]), distinguishing addressees from spatial goals. Instrumental, ablative, comitative, and locative are predominantly pre-predicate across the whole area.

This pattern is associated with a particular geographic location, with the epicentre in the Mesopotamian region (modern Northern Iraq, Western Iran, and southeastern Turkey) (Haig & Khan 2019, Haig et al. 2024 [Chapter 1, this volume]). As for the typological profile of languages showing OVX word order, these have been characterised as OV languages showing some properties typical of VO languages, such as prepositions and/or initial complementizers. The phenomenon reflects the area's status as a 'transition zone' from Turkic-type head-final, through Iranian mixed typologies, to Semitic head-initial (Stilo 2006, Haig & Khan 2019, Haig et al. 2024 [Chapter 1, this volume]). Armenian, too, could

13 *Post-predicate arguments in Modern Eastern Armenian*

be described as a language with mixed typology, having undergone a change from mainly head-initial Classical Armenian (prepositions, probable VO preference) to mainly head-final modern Armenian, which does, however, retain some properties associated with head-initial languages, such as initial complementizers. Various proposals have been made regarding the causes of the OVX phenomenon, including iconicity (arguments with endpoint semantics appearing in final position), and contact with languages such as Aramaic (or Russian) that typically have post-predicate arguments (Haig & Khan 2019, Haig et al. 2024 [Chapter 1, this volume]). However, in the case of Armenian, it is possible that post-predicate arguments represent a conservative feature retained from Classical Armenian. This could apply to the presence of VO orders as well as OVX, as suggested by both Samvelian et al. (2023) and Stilo (2018), although the fact that post-predicate goals, but not objects, seem to appear less frequently in subordinate clauses, which have been claimed to show a general tendency for more conservative syntax, perhaps suggests the possibility that OVX may be a more recent phenomenon.

2 The Methodology and the corpus

The corpus is composed of 7 oral narratives by 7 participants (6 women and a man), who narrate their favorite movies. It was compiled within the framework of the Eastern Armenian National Corpus⁴ (henceforth EANC ArmFilmNarr). The recording was done in Yerevan in 2007–2008, and the total recording time is 1.35h. The corpus contains 11832 tokens, divided into 2241 clauses. The corpus was originally created for the study of topic accessibility and continuity of subjects and DO in MEA (in a distinct research project) based on a framework inspired by Givón (1975), Givón (1983) and Du Bois (1987) (for more information on this study, see Hodgson et al. *in press*). The purpose of the present study is to investigate factors affecting the position (pre- vs. post-predicate) of DOs, as well as certain other types of argument that may occur variably in pre- or post-predicate position. Thus we note the position (pre- or post-predicate) of monotransitive DO, goal, addressee, recipient, benefactive, endpoint of ‘become’, ablative, instrumental, locative, and comitative arguments. For each of these, we note other factors

⁴Eastern Armenian National Corpus is a comprehensive corpus of Modern Eastern Armenian comprising approximately 110 million tokens. It encompasses written and oral data starting from the mid 19th century to the present. The corpus is provided with full morphological annotation, offering robust search functionalities, and is openly accessible at www.eanc.net. For more details on Eastern Armenian National Corpus, see Khurshudyan et al. (2022).

Katherine Hodgson, Victoria Khurshudyan & Pollet Samvelian

that could potentially affect the position of the argument: weight (number of words/intonation words), type of anaphoric element (e.g. pronoun vs. definite NP vs. indefinite NP), animacy, and givenness. The presence and position of an overt subject argument is also noted, in order to test for crowding effects, i.e. the tendency to avoid having more than one overt argument on the same side of the predicate. The type of verb form is also noted, as the distinction between periphrastic and simple verbs could potentially affect the position of arguments, as could clause type (main vs. subordinate clause). For DO, figures are also given for topic persistence (number of mentions of the referent in the following 10 clauses) and referential distance (distance in clauses to previous mention of the referent, noted as 1, 2, or 3, with 3 indicating 3 or more).

Table 1: Example of annotation of a sentence

| # | text | Predicate type | Voice | Order | Arg.O | Arg.A | Pers.O | Pers.A | H.O | H.A | NG.O | NG.A | Pre/PostV O | Pre/PostV A | Weight O | Weight A | Other role | Weight | Type | Animacy | Given/New | Pre/post | Others | Verb form | Clause type | Force, Negation |
|----|----------|----------------|-------|----------------|------------|-----------------|--------|--------|-------------------------------------|-----|------|------|-------------|-------------|----------|----------|------------|--------|------|---------|-----------|----------|--------|-----------------------|-------------|-----------------|
| 59 | 2_F tr | locOVC | | NP.DEF V.AGR | 3 3 NH | H N G Pre | | | 1 Loc 1 PRO.LOC I N Pre | | | | | | | | | | | | | | | RDO TDA TPO TPA | | |

/ andey / duriā bac'um a
'there she opens the door'

In the first column (clause-arm), we find the clause (in Figure 1 the clause and its translation are shown below the columns). The second column shows the type of predicate (here 'tr', i.e. monotransitive). There is a column for voice, which is left blank when active. The word order of the clause as a whole is shown (LocOVC, i.e. Locative, Object, (lexical) Verb, Copula/auxiliary). Then, the properties of O are noted in the grey columns, and A in the green columns. These include type of argument (O is NP.DEF, i.e. definite NP, and A is V.agr, i.e. verb agreement), person (3sg for both), animacy (H = human, NH = non-human), givenness (G = given, N = new), the position of overt arguments (Pre, i.e. pre-predicate, for O, A is left blank, because it is expressed by verb agreement alone), and weight of overt arguments (blank for A, 1, i.e. one word, for O). The next column shows that the clause also contains a locative (Loc). In the following columns, its values for weight (1), type of argument, i.e. type of anaphoric element (PRO, i.e. pro-form), animacy, givenness, and position are given. Other columns show the verb type (IPT-C, i.e. imperfective participle + copula/auxiliary), which is of interest particularly in terms of simple (monolectic) vs. complex (participle + auxiliary) verb forms, and the clause type (left blank for main clauses). Referential distance (RD) and topic persistence (TP) are noted in separate columns for subjects and objects of main clauses in which both are 3rd person. Examples of the main cate-

13 *Post-predicate arguments in Modern Eastern Armenian*

gories of anaphoric elements (examples 1-10) and verb types (examples 11-17) are given below:

Anaphoric elements

- (1) **Verb agreement** (for subject only)

Eastern Armenian

Č^c-git-em

NEG-know-1SG.PRS

'I don't know'

- (2) **Zero anaphora** (especially for DO, but also some other object-like elements: example (2) shows zero anaphora for both DO and recipient)

Eastern Armenian

dra hamar a nvir-um

DEM2.GEN for be.3SG.PRS give-IPFV

'he gives it to her because of that'

- (3) **Agreement marker** (effectively genitive clitic, can be used for objects of some adpositions)

Eastern Armenian

ayjik-ə het-ə xos-um a

girl-DEF with-AGR3 speak-IPFV be.3SG.PRS

'the girl talks with him'

- (4) **Personal pronoun**

Eastern Armenian

k'ez šat em sir-um

2SG.DAT much be.1SG.PRS love-IPFV

'I love you very much'

- (5) **Demonstrative**

Eastern Armenian

ed bac^c-um en

DEM2 open-IPFV be.3PL.PRS

'they open that'

- (6) 'Emphatic'⁵

⁵For a discussion of this element and its behaviour in this corpus, see Hodgson et al. (in press). See also Donabedian-Demopoulos (2007), Sigler (2001)

Katherine Hodgson, Victoria Khurshudyan & Pollet Samvelian

Eastern Armenian

menk^c iran k-gtn-enk^c
1PL.NOM EMP.DAT FUT-find-1PL.PRS
'we will find him'

(7) **Pro-adverb**

Eastern Armenian

əndey duř-ə bac^c-um a
there door-DEF open-IPFV be.3SG.PRS
'there she opens the door'

(8) **Bare NP**

Eastern Armenian

tak^c si a gal-is
taxi be.3SG.PRS come-IPFV
'a taxi comes'

(9) **NP with indefinite article**

Eastern Armenian

tenc^c mi tak^c si gal-is a
thus IA taxi come-IPFV be.3SG.PRS
'so a taxi comes'

(10) **Definite NP**

Eastern Armenian

tak^c si-n kangn-ac^cn-um en
taxi-DEF stand-CAUS-IPFV be.PL.PRS
'they stop the taxi'

Verb types

Simple

(11) **Monolectic present of some verbs**

Eastern Armenian

un-i ir ristaran-ə
have-3SG.PRS EMP.GEN restaurant-DEF
'he has his restaurant'

13 Post-predicate arguments in Modern Eastern Armenian

(12) Aorist

Eastern Armenian

duk^c mard span-ec^cik^c
2PL.NOM person kill-2PL.AOR
'you killed a person'

(13) Subjunctive

Eastern Armenian

vor iran dur ga
COMP EMP.DAT like come.3SG.SUB
'so that she likes it'

(14) Future/conditional forms with the prefix k- are also classed as 'simple'

here

Eastern Armenian

k-ogn-enk^c
FUT-help-1PL
'we will help'

Complex (participle + auxiliary)

(15) Present

Eastern Armenian

heto tař-er-ə gr-um a
after letter-PL-DEF write-IPFV be.3SG.PRS
'after (that) it writes the letters'

(16) Perfect

Eastern Armenian

heto arden bolševik-ner-ə mt-el en Hayastan
after already bolshevik-PL-DEF enter-PFV be.3PL.PRS Armenia
'then the Bolsheviks have already entered Armenia'

(17) Future

Eastern Armenian

Yes gn-alu em
1SG.NOM go-FPT be.1SG.PRS
'I will go'

Katherine Hodgson, Victoria Khurshudyan & Pollet Samvelian

3 Results and analyses

3.1 Word order variation

Our corpus of oral narratives of favorite films comprising 2241 clauses shows, overall, twelve possible word order combinations (see Table 2).

Table 2: The distribution of word order configurations in EANC Arm-FilmNarr corpus

| # | WO | # | % |
|-------|-----|------------------|-------|
| 1. | SV | 415 | 41.8% |
| 2. | OV | 275 | 27.7% |
| 3. | AOV | 94 | 9.5% |
| 4. | VO | 69 | 6.9% |
| 5. | VS | 52 | 5.2% |
| 6. | AVO | 32 | 3.2% |
| 7. | AV | 30 | 3.0% |
| 8. | OVA | 10 | 1.0% |
| 9. | OAV | 10 | 1.0% |
| 10. | VA | 3 | 0.3% |
| 11. | VAO | 2 | 0.2% |
| 12. | VOA | 1 | 0.1% |
| Total | | 993 ⁶ | 100% |

According to the corpus results, the most frequent word order is SV, with around 42% (415) of all occurrences, which could be accounted for by the abundant number of intransitive verb constructions typical of the narrative genre.

3.2 Direct object

3.2.1 General overview

The second most frequent word order is OV. The absence of the agent (A) can be accounted for by MEA's pro-drop character, which is particularly frequent in

⁶The difference between the total in this table (993) and the total number of clauses in the corpus (2241) is due to the fact that the table only counts clauses that contain overt subjects and/or objects, and a verb. Since Armenian makes frequent use of zero anaphora for both subjects and objects, many clauses have no overt subject or object. There are also some incomplete or syntactically anomalous clauses that have not been counted here.

13 *Post-predicate arguments in Modern Eastern Armenian*

oral discourse. OV word order also indicates the prevalence of preverbal position for objects in general. Since almost all clausal objects in MEA are postverbal, it is more informative to limit ourselves to non-clausal objects. Therefore, we concentrate on non-clausal objects, and every mention of objects will be understood as referring to monotransitive, non-clausal objects, unless otherwise stated. The overall distribution of non-clausal objects is 78.7% preverbal vs. 21.3% postverbal (see table 2). The data do not show a significant difference between the behaviour of lexical NP and pronominal objects, with the former showing 21.9% VO, the latter 18.9% VO (see Table 2). Armenian does not possess clitic pronouns, so the pronouns in question are 'strong' independent pronouns, with the equivalent of 'weak' unstressed pronouns being zero anaphora.

Table 3: The distribution of all overt monotransitive non-clausal DOs in EANC ArmFilmNarr corpus

| DO type | Total | VO | % VO |
|------------|-------|-----|-------|
| Lexical NP | 374 | 82 | 21.9% |
| Pronominal | 106 | 20 | 18.9% |
| Total | 480 | 102 | 21.3% |

The net preference for preverbal position (21.3% VO, i.e. 78.7% OV) shown in these data is contrary to the study by Samvelian et al. (2023), but roughly consistent with the data in Stilo (2018). Potential factors that could account for this difference are discussed above in section 2: discourse mode (oral vs. written), genre (oral narratives vs out of the blue sentences), and register (colloquial vs. formal). The current oral corpus of favorite film narratives potentially includes all sentence modalities which can be part of a structured narrative, and not simply declarative, out-of-the-blue sentences, as was the case for the data used in the study by Samvelian et al. (2023).

Another important difference is register, since Samvelian et al. (2023) include language with characteristics of formal register, whereas the current corpus covers generally colloquial register, although with some semi-formal elements (the context of the recordings was generally informal, though the speakers were aware that they were being recorded, which may have prompted them to use some elements of formal/literary EA). In Samvelian et al. (2023), it has already been proposed that EA word order variation could also be correlated with register variation, as also discussed for Persian in Rasekh-Mahand et al. 2024 [Chapter

Katherine Hodgson, Victoria Khurshudyan & Pollet Samvelian

7, this volume]; the significant morphological, phonological, and syntactic differences between colloquial and formal/literary EA are discussed in section 2.¹ Evidence that register is indeed a significant factor in this context is provided by the fact that Speaker 3 (see Table 4), the ‘outlier’ with a significantly higher percentage of postverbal DOs than any of the others (44%, compared to an average of 17.4% for all the other speakers, and 21.3% in the corpus as a whole, see Table 4), is the only speaker to use formal/literary forms of demonstratives (two examples of medial demonstrative *ayd* as opposed to colloquial *ed/et*) and of the 3rd person ‘emphatic’ pronoun nominative plural *irenk^c* as opposed to colloquial *irank^c* (*gen.sg. ir* is also used once by Speaker 1 as well as by Speaker 3).

Table 4: The distribution of postverbal DOs according to speaker in EANC ArmFilmNarr corpus

| Speaker | Total O | VO | % VO |
|---------|---------|----|-------|
| 1 | 23 | 5 | 21.7% |
| 2 | 79 | 13 | 16.5% |
| 3 | 45 | 20 | 44.4% |
| 4 | 51 | 12 | 23.5% |
| 5 | 34 | 6 | 17.6% |
| 6 | 43 | 7 | 16.3% |
| 7 | 63 | 8 | 12.7% |

3.2.2 Impact factors

The following set of impact factors that could potentially be relevant for EA word order variation have been included in our analysis:

- a. definiteness
- b. givenness
- c. animacy
- d. topic persistence
- e. referential distance
- f. weight (heavy NP shift)

13 *Post-predicate arguments in Modern Eastern Armenian*

- g. lexical vs. pronominal Os
- h. crowding / null subject (pro-dropping) effects /overt A
- i. main vs. subordinate clauses
- j. simple vs. complex verb forms

a) Definiteness ‘Definiteness’ here refers to the presence of the definite article (which is enclitic on the noun). According to Samvelian et al. (2023), EA word order variation is directly correlated with definiteness, with definite DOs being mainly postverbal, and indefinite/bare DOs preverbal. We checked the distribution of preverbal and postverbal bare, indefinite and definite DOs in the current study, and the results confirm the correlation between the definiteness of DOs and postverbal position (see Table 5).

Table 5: The distribution of preverbal and postverbal bare, indefinite (with article) and definite DOs in EANC ArmFilmNarr corpus

| Object type | Total | VO | % VO |
|---|------------------|-----|-----------|
| Definite NP | 232 | 76 | 33% |
| Indefinite NP (with indefinite article) | 21 | 2 | 10% |
| Bare NP (indefinite without article) | 103 | 2 | 2% |
| Total | 356 ⁷ | 275 | mean: 15% |

As Table 5 shows, the distribution of definite DOs is 67% preverbal vs. 33% postverbal, whereas that of bare DOs is 98% preverbal vs. 2% postverbal. The indefinite DOs have an intermediate position with 90% preverbal vs. 10% postverbal. Therefore, there is a certain hierarchy of postverbal word order possibility depending on definiteness, in which definite DOs are the most postverbal, followed by indefinite (with article) DOs, and bare DOs are the least postverbal of all. This hierarchy corresponds to the grammatical semantics of definite \Rightarrow specific \Rightarrow non-specific. The peculiarity of EA indefiniteness is that it is bipartite with indefinite (specific) and bare (non-specific) semantics, and the ‘classical’ indefinite noun would tend to be bare, i.e., non-specific, in EA, rather than with an indefinite article, i.e., specific. As the indefinite article is mainly used for marking

⁷This total is smaller than that of Table 5, because it only includes lexical NPs, while Table 5 also includes pronominal objects.

Katherine Hodgson, Victoria Khurshudyan & Pollet Samvelian

(specific) indefiniteness, its usage is fairly rare. Hence, the results of the current study show general tendencies that are consistent with [Samvelian et al. \(2023\)](#) in that EA postverbal word order is associated with definiteness and that the more definite/specific the DO is, the more likely it is to be postverbal.

b) Givenness ‘Given’, as opposed to ‘new’, is used here to indicate referents that have been previously mentioned in the discourse. Given Os are considerably more likely to appear in post-predicate position than Os which represent new information. However, this effect is weaker than the effect of grammatical definiteness (definite NP O = 32.9% post-predicate, indefinite (including bare) NP O = 3.3% post-predicate), although the net preference of post-predicate Os for givenness is still considerable (over 80% of post-predicate Os are given) ([see 6](#)). Thus, it is likely that the givenness effect is merely a reflection of the effect of definiteness (note that in Armenian, certain categories of NPs may be grammatically definite even if not given, e.g. possessives, partitives, and some nominalized non-nominal constituents):

Table 6: The distribution of given and new DOs in EANC ArmFilmNarr corpus

| | Total | VO | % VO |
|---------|-------|----|-------|
| O given | 289 | 86 | 29.8% |
| O new | 190 | 17 | 8.9% |

c) Animacy We observe that animate Os are more likely to appear in post-predicate position than inanimate ones. Note, however, that animate referents are considerably more likely to be definite than inanimate ones (animate DO = 79.7% definite, inanimate DO = 59.5% definite), so in order to understand whether the effect of animacy is significant, we need to investigate it in combination with definiteness:

We find that among definite Os, animate referents appear slightly more frequently in post-predicate position than inanimate ones, although a Chi-square 2x2 contingency table shows that the difference between definite animate and definite inanimate DOs is not statistically significant. This is similar to the results of [Samvelian et al. \(2023: 481\)](#), who find that the main effect of animacy is not significant, but “there is a marginally significant interaction ... indicating that animacy has an effect on the order of definite DOs”. The number of indefinite

13 *Post-predicate arguments in Modern Eastern Armenian*

Table 7: The distribution of animate and inanimate DOs in EANC Arm-FilmNarr corpus

| | Total | VO | % VO |
|---------------------------|-------|----|-------|
| Animate O definite NP | 63 | 27 | 42.8% |
| Inanimate O definite NP | 170 | 51 | 30% |
| Animate O indefinite NP | 16 | 0 | 0% |
| Inanimate O indefinite NP | 113 | 4 | 3.5% |

DOs in post-predicate position is, as we have seen, very small, both for animate and inanimate referents.

d) Topic persistence Based on the methodology of Givón (1983), topic persistence was measured as the number of occurrences of that referent in the following 10 clauses (for more details on the methodology and on MEA data see Hodgson et al. *in press*). The average topic persistence of preverbal Os is equal to 1.6, whereas that of postverbal ones is 1.9. Therefore, postverbal Os have higher topic persistence than preverbal Os. Taking into account the previous impact factors, it could be argued that prototypically postverbal Os are mostly definite, given, and animate, hence have higher topic persistence. The average topic persistence of postverbal Os is higher than that of preverbal definite Os, which show an average topic persistence of 1.5 (the same as that of definite Os as a whole). Human Os have on average a considerably higher topic persistence (3.7) than non-human Os (1), so the fact that postverbal position is possibly associated with animacy/humanity could be a factor in the higher average topic persistence of postverbal as opposed to preverbal Os. Indeed, if we look at objects that are both definite and human, there is no significant difference in average topic persistence between preverbal and postverbal examples (preverbal: 3.08, postverbal: 3.13).

Table 8: Average topic persistence of pre- and post-predicate DOs in EANC ArmFilmNarr corpus

| Average topic persistence | |
|---------------------------|-----|
| Pre-predicate O | 1.6 |
| Post-predicate O | 1.9 |

Katherine Hodgson, Victoria Khurshudyan & Pollet Samvelian

e) Referential distance There is only a very small difference between the average referential distance (distance in clauses to previous mention of the referent) of pre-predicate and post-predicate Os, with post-predicate Os showing a slightly smaller average referential distance (2.3) than pre-predicate Os (2.5) (see Table 10).

Table 9: Average referential distance of pre- and post-predicate DOs in EANC ArmFilmNarr corpus

| Average referential distance | |
|------------------------------|-----|
| Pre-predicate O | 2.5 |
| Post-predicate O | 2.3 |

f) Weight (heavy NP shift) In order to check the correlation between the weight of DOs and their word order variation, the length of DOs in words was measured, more particularly for 1-word, 2-word and 3+ word Os (see Table 10). The results showed a higher frequency of postverbal position for 2-word Os (35% postverbal) vs. 1-word Os (15.4% postverbal). The fact that non-specific indefinites, lacking the indefinite article, which, as we have seen, overwhelmingly appear in preverbal position, are often one-word phrases is a probable factor in the higher frequency of preverbal position for 1-word Os. When O is composed of more than three words, the frequency of postverbal position is actually lower than that for 2-word DOs (23% postverbal), though still higher than that for 1-word DOs.

Subsequently, the measurements were refined in order to explain the distribution of 3+word Os as well as the difference in behaviour between 2-word and 3+word Os. To do this, supplementary factors of definiteness and the pronominal character of Os were added to the analysis of 2-word and 3+ word Os (see Table 10).

According to the results, 2-word definite Os are 43.4% postverbal (cf. 21.3% postverbal for all Os⁸) and 3+ word definite Os are 31.6% postverbal. We then zoomed in on indefinite 3+word Os, distinguishing those with the simple indefinite article *mi* 'a' and the indefinite expression composed of the indefinite article *mi* 'a' and the quantifier *hat* 'unit' which is often in reality the equivalent of the indefinite article in colloquial register (see Table 12). 21% of all 3+ word Os

⁸This figure excludes those Os that appear in both pre- and post-predicate position.

13 Post-predicate arguments in Modern Eastern Armenian

Table 10: The distribution of 1-word, 2-word, and 3+ word Os correlated with O type in EANC ArmFilmNarr corpus

| | 1-word O | | | 2-word O | | | 3+-word O | | |
|------------|----------|----|-------|----------|----|-------|-----------|----|-------|
| | Total | VO | %VO | Total | VO | %VO | Total | VO | %VO |
| Bare | 73 | 0 | 0% | 22 | 2 | 9.1% | 5 | 0 | 0% |
| Indefinite | 0 | 0 | 0% | 5 | 1 | 20% | 14 | 1 | 7.1% |
| Definite | 105 | 27 | 25.7% | 83 | 36 | 43.4% | 38 | 12 | 31.6% |
| Pronominal | 88 | 14 | 16.7% | 10 | 3 | 30% | 4 | 1 | 25% |
| Total | 266 | 41 | 15.4% | 120 | 42 | 35% | 61 | 14 | 23% |

include the simple indefinite article *mi* ‘a’, whereas 79% include the indefinite article with a quantifier. The indefinite article in EA being principally unstressed, the expression of the indefinite article with a quantifier *mi hat* ‘a unit’ could be considered as one prosodic word, hence it could be included in our measurements as one word rather than two due to its ‘real weight’. However, even when *mi hat* is counted as one word rather than two, 2-word objects still show a higher percentage of OV order (36.2%) than 3+-word objects (26.9%), something which is unexpected from the point of view of heavy NP shift. The generally inconclusive evidence for an effect of weight are consistent with the findings from other corpora of spontaneous spoken language investigated in this volume, which report only marginal effects of weight on object placement (see Ch.1, section 5, this volume).

Table 11: The distribution of 3+ word indefinite Os in EANC ArmFilmNarr corpus

| 3+-word indefinite O | Total | VO | % VO |
|----------------------|-------|----|-------|
| <i>mi</i> | 3 | 1 | 33.3% |
| <i>mi hat</i> | 11 | 0 | 0% |

g) Lexical vs. pronominal O The linguistic character of DOs showed little impact on the word order distribution, with lexical DOs being 21.9% postverbal, and pronominal DOs being 18.9% postverbal. Overall, preverbal DOs are largely dominant in both cases and the distribution proportion in line with that of all DOs in the corpus (21.3% postverbal, Table 3).

Katherine Hodgson, Victoria Khurshudyan & Pollet Samvelian

Table 12: The distribution of preverbal and postverbal lexical and pronominal DOs in EANC ArmFilmNarr corpus

| Type of O | Total | VO | % VO |
|------------|-------|----|-------|
| Lexical NP | 374 | 82 | 21.9% |
| Pronoun | 106 | 20 | 18.9% |

h) Crowding / Null Subject Effect One of the hypotheses concerning the impact factors was that argument crowding or its opposite, null subject, could affect word order variation so that the presence of an overt subject could induce postverbal DOs to avoid crowding, or the presence of a preverbal DOs could be correlated to null subject effect.

Table 13: The distribution of DOs with and without other overt arguments in EANC ArmFilmNarr corpus

| | Total overt DO | VO | % VO |
|---------------------------------------|----------------|----|-------|
| Overt S | 148 | 35 | 23.6% |
| No overt S | 339 | 69 | 20.4% |
| No overt S or other role ⁹ | 267 | 51 | 19.1% |
| Overt preverbal S or other role | 175 | 39 | 22.3% |

To check this, we first observed the distribution of overt/no overt subjects (S) which, however, manifested insignificant impact on the position of DO (see Table 13). Overall, the distribution is almost identical, therefore, no correlation is observed between the crowding/null subject effect and the word order variation. The same is true if we take into account the presence of elements with other roles as well as subject; the presence of a preverbal argument does not seem to be associated with any increase in postverbal position for DO.

i) Main vs. subordinate clauses In some languages, object position differs depending on whether the object is in a main clause or a subordinate clause. Our MEA data do not show any significant difference in the position of objects between main clauses and subordinate clauses:

⁹‘Other role’ refers to those elements discussed in section 3.3.

13 *Post-predicate arguments in Modern Eastern Armenian*

Table 14: The distribution of DOs in main and subordinate clauses in EANC ArmFilmNarr corpus

| Clause type | Total O | VO | % VO |
|--------------------|---------|----|-------|
| Main clause | 391 | 80 | 20.5% |
| Subordinate clause | 87 | 20 | 22.9% |

j) **Simple vs. complex verb forms** In some languages, different types of verb form are associated with different positions of arguments. For example, some verb forms of nominal origin may show argument positions analogous to those of noun modifiers, which in modern Armenian almost invariably precede the element they modify. MEA has complex (periphrastic) verb forms involving participles, which have some nominal characteristics, as well as simple verb forms inherited from Classical Armenian.

Thus we might expect a stronger preference for pre-predicate arguments with periphrastic verb forms. However, direct objects show no evidence for such a pattern, with little difference between different types of verb form. In fact, periphrastic verb forms show a slightly higher percentage of post-predicate Os than simple verb forms (21.3% vs. 18.3%).

Table 15: The distribution of DOs with complex and simple verbs in EANC ArmFilmNarr corpus

| Verb type | Total O ¹⁰ | VO | % VO |
|--------------|-----------------------|----|-------|
| Complex verb | 314 | 67 | 21.3% |
| Simple verb | 115 | 21 | 18.3% |

3.3 Other post-predicate arguments

3.3.1 General overview

In addition to objects, other types of arguments also show variable position in Armenian and neighbouring languages of Western Asia. As discussed in Haig & Khan (2019), previous studies find that across the area, there is a tendency for goal arguments of verbs of motion and caused motion to appear in post-predicate

¹⁰Here, only clauses with a single participle + auxiliary or a single simple verb are counted.

Katherine Hodgson, Victoria Khurshudyan & Pollet Samvelian

position. In some languages, this tendency is extended to other elements that could be considered to share ‘endpoint’ semantics, namely recipient, benefactive, endpoint of change of state verbs such as ‘become’, and addressee; see Haig et al. 2024 [Chapter 1, Section 4, this volume] for an updated overview.

Stilo (2018) finds that in his Armenian data, there is indeed a tendency for goals to appear in post-predicate position. He finds a weaker tendency for benefactive and recipient, but no such tendency for addressee, which strongly prefers pre-predicate position. He finds that instrumental, ablative, locative, and comitative arguments show a preference for pre-predicate position across the area, being generally unaffected by the tendency for post-predicate position associated with goals and goal-like elements. We investigate all these types of arguments, and find that goals do indeed show a preference for post-predicate position (approximately 70% post-predicate). This tendency also seems to apply to benefactive, though the numbers involved are small. The numbers for recipient of ‘give’, and of verbs with similar meanings, are also small, but unlike Stilo’s (2018) data, show few examples in post-predicate position. Like Stilo (2018), we find that addressee arguments, which are rarely expressed overtly, show no tendency to appear in post-predicate position in our Armenian data. In contrast, the name in sentences such as ‘they call him/her/it X’, which are also infrequent, shows a marked preference for post-predicate position.

Table 16: Frequency of post-predicate placement, other roles

| Other roles | Total | Post-predicate | % Post-predicate |
|---|-------|----------------|------------------|
| Name (they call him/her/it X) | 5 | 4 | 80% |
| Benefactive | 11 | 8 | 72.7% |
| Goal | 122 | 84 | 68.9% |
| Ablative | 50 | 20 | 40% |
| Comitative | 44 | 13 | 29.5% |
| Location | 116 | 30 | 25.8% |
| Become | 9 | 2 | 22.2% |
| Instrumental | 71 | 15 | 21.1% |
| Recipient (transfer of possession in general) | 11 | 2 | 18% |
| Recipient (of verb <i>tal</i> ‘give’) | 6 | 1 | 16.7% |
| Addressee | 6 | 0 | 0% |
| Total other roles ¹¹ | 445 | 178 | 40% |

¹¹This figure represents the total of 16, minus Recipient (of verb *tal* ‘give’), as this is already included in Recipient (transfer of possession in general).

13 Post-predicate arguments in Modern Eastern Armenian

If we consider goals separately from the other roles in 15, we see that they have a much higher instance of post-predicate position (for the other categories with very high post-predicate figures, i.e. name and benefactive, the numbers are too small to draw firm conclusions):

Goal: 68.9% post-predicate

Other roles: 29.1% post-predicate

The relatively high percentage of post-predicate position (40%) for ablative is unexpected in the light of proposals that interpret the tendency for post-predicate position as an iconic expression of 'endpoint' semantics. It is possible that a different type of analogy is at work here, with ablative equated with goal as both are typical arguments of verbs of motion (ablative as starting point, goal as endpoint). However, it is more likely that the relatively high post-predicate percentage of ablative in these texts simply reflects the fact that it is more likely than average to be given (76% vs. 65% total other roles) and animate (32% vs. 27% total other roles), factors which seem to favour post-predicate position (grammatical definiteness is not relevant here, as the ablative case ending in MEA cannot co-occur with the definite article).

3.3.2 Impact factors

a) Definiteness As in the case of DOs, 'definiteness' is used here to indicate the presence of the definite article. Note that many of the roles investigated here (those that take ablative, instrumental, locative, or genitive case, and most nominative goals and locations) grammatically exclude the definite article. The fact that goals, which show a marked preference for postverbal position, are often grammatically indefinite for reasons of morphology rather than semantics gives a large number of postverbal indefinites, masking the effect of definiteness in itself. Therefore, goals are shown separately from other roles in table 17 below. However, even when goals are excluded, we still find that definites are more likely than indefinites to appear in post-predicate position (38.1% vs. 26.9%). Indeed, goals themselves also show a higher percentage of post-predicate position when grammatically definite (75% vs. 64.9% for indefinite). Nonetheless, the effect of definiteness on roles other than DO is not statistically significant.

b) Givenness In the light of the fact that many other roles cannot take the definite article for grammatical reasons, it might be expected that givenness could

Katherine Hodgson, Victoria Khurshudyan & Pollet Samvelian

Table 17: The distribution of definite and indefinite NP other roles in EANC ArmFilmNarr corpus

| | Total | Post-predicate | % Post-predicate |
|---------------------|-------|----------------|------------------|
| Indefinite NP goal | 57 | 37 | 64.9% |
| Definite NP goal | 52 | 39 | 75% |
| Indefinite NP other | 119 | 32 | 26.9% |
| Definite NP other | 105 | 40 | 38.1% |

show a stronger correlation than definiteness with post-predicate position. However, for roles other than goal, we find no apparent effect of givenness at all. Note that the correlation between givenness and post-predicate position is much weaker for other roles than for direct object, with new other roles showing 30.1% post-predicate position, compared to 8.9% for new direct objects (see Table 18).

Table 18: The distribution of given and new other roles in EANC ArmFilmNarr corpus

| | Total | Post-predicate | % Post-predicate |
|-------------|-------|----------------|------------------|
| Given goal | 77 | 56 | 72.7% |
| New goal | 39 | 24 | 61.5% |
| Given other | 221 | 64 | 29.0% |
| New other | 103 | 31 | 30.1% |

c) **Animacy** As with direct objects, we see that animate referents appear more frequently in post-predicate position than inanimate ones, although, once again, the effect does not reach statistical significance. However, the difference is smaller here than that found with direct objects, where animates are 28% post-predicate and inanimates 18%. A possible reason for this is that many of the inanimate other role referents are goals, which differ from all other roles in showing a preference for post-predicate position (goals are almost exclusively inanimate). Thus, in Table 19, we present the data for other roles excluding goals. It can be seen that if we discount goals, the effect of animacy becomes more apparent.

As we have seen, animate referents are more likely to be definite than inanimate ones, so in order to accurately gauge the effect of animacy, definiteness must also be taken into account, as shown in Table 20. As with DOs, we find that

13 *Post-predicate arguments in Modern Eastern Armenian*

Table 19: The distribution of animate and inanimate other roles in EANC ArmFilmNarr corpus

| | Total | Post-predicate | % Post-predicate |
|-----------------------------|-------|----------------|------------------|
| Total other roles animate | 122 | 45 | 36.9% |
| Total other roles inanimate | 331 | 135 | 40.7% |
| Other roles animate -goal | 113 | 38 | 33.6% |
| Other roles inanimate -goal | 218 | 58 | 26.6% |

for definite NPs animate referents do show a higher proportion of post-predicate position than inanimates, although again, this does not reach statistical significance, while for indefinite NPs, which show lower frequency of post-predicate position, there does not seem to be any effect of animacy. For the reasons discussed above, these figures do not include goals.

Table 20: The distribution of animate and inanimate other roles in EANC ArmFilmNarr corpus divided by definiteness

| Definite NP | | | | | | Indefinite NP | | | | | |
|------------------------|----|-------|-----------|----|-------|--------------------------|----|-----|-----------|----|-------|
| Animate | | | Inanimate | | | Animate | | | Inanimate | | |
| N | VX | %VX | N | VX | %VX | N | VX | %VX | N | VX | %VX |
| 41 | 19 | 46.3% | 64 | 21 | 32.8% | 25 | 7 | 28% | 94 | 25 | 26.6% |
| Total definite NP: 105 | | | | | | Total indefinite NP: 119 | | | | | |
| Total definite VX: 40 | | | | | | Total indefinite VX: 32 | | | | | |
| % definite VX: 38.1% | | | | | | % indefinite VX: 26.9% | | | | | |

d) Weight As in the case of DOs, we find that other roles with weight 1 (composed of one word) show a lower frequency of post-predicate position than those which are longer, indicating that weight may be a factor promoting post-predicate position. This is the case even if we exclude pronouns, which are typically composed of one word and show a stronger preference for pre-predicate position than lexical NPs (see following section e) 'Lexical vs. pronominal'). Very heavy elements (weight 4+) show the highest percentage of post-predicate position, indicating the possibility of heavy NP shift. The effect of weight is not particularly strong, but other roles present somewhat stronger evidence than DOs for its relevance as a factor favouring post-predicate position (see Table 21).

Katherine Hodgson, Victoria Khurshudyan & Pollet Samvelian

Table 21: The distribution of other roles according to weight in EANC
ArmFilmNarr corpus

| Weight | Total | Post-predicate | % Post-predicate |
|-------------|-------|----------------|------------------|
| 1 | 239 | 87 | 36.4% |
| 1 (NP only) | 19 | 7 | 36.8% |
| 2 | 139 | 59 | 42.4% |
| 3 | 51 | 21 | 41.4% |
| 3+ | 74 | 32 | 43.2% |
| 4+ | 23 | 11 | 47.8% |

e) Lexical vs. pronominal A comparison of lexical NPs and pronouns shows that the former appear more frequently in post-predicate position in the EANC ArmFilmNarr corpus. However, note that certain types of pronouns, such as interrogative and relative pronouns, show particular syntactic behaviour that places them in pre-predicate position, so it will be more informative to investigate those types of pronouns which can appear in either pre- or post-predicate position. For this reason, we look at demonstrative pronouns, personal pronouns, and the ‘emphatic’ pronoun *ink’ə* (for a discussion of this element and its behaviour in this corpus, see [Hodgson et al. *in press*](#); see also [Donabedian-Demopoulos 2007](#)). Since all these elements are inherently definite, it is also informative to compare them with definite NPs. We still find that lexical NPs show a clearly higher percentage of post-predicate occurrences than any of these pronouns, and if we compare these pronouns with definite NPs, the difference is greater still. It is interesting that other roles seem to show a clearer difference between the behaviour of lexical and pronominal elements than DOs, which show only a small difference in the frequency of post-predicate position.

f) Crowding effect As discussed in the corresponding section on DOs, it has been proposed that the presence of another pre-predicate argument could favour post-predicate position, in order to avoid ‘crowding’ of more than one argument on the same side of the predicate. However, our data do not provide evidence for this, as in fact the percentage of post-predicate arguments is higher (51.3%) when there is no other overt argument than when there is an overt pre-predicate subject and/or object (36.8%). When both subject and object are pre-predicate, other arguments are less frequent still in post-predicate position (33.3%). In the presence of a post-predicate subject, other roles appear more infrequently in post-predicate position (20%), implying that there may be a tendency to avoid more

13 *Post-predicate arguments in Modern Eastern Armenian*

Table 22: The distribution of lexical and pronominal other roles in EANC ArmFilmNarr corpus

| Type of element | Total | Post-predicate | % Post-predicate |
|--------------------|-------|----------------|------------------|
| Total pronouns | 116 | 31 | 26.7% |
| Total lexical NP | 337 | 149 | 44.2% |
| Demonstratives | 12 | 4 | 33.3% |
| 'Emphatic' pronoun | 10 | 2 | 20% |
| Personal pronouns | 17 | 6 | 35.3% |
| Definite NP | 157 | 79 | 50.3% |

than one post-predicate argument. However, when there is a postverbal object, the figures are very close to the average for other roles as a whole (37.9%, as compared to $\approx 40\%$ for other roles in general). Thus, these data do not provide conclusive evidence for any type of crowding effect.

Table 23: The distribution of other roles according to the presence of other overt arguments in EANC ArmFilmNarr corpus

| | Total | Post-predicate | % Post-predicate |
|---------------------------------|-------|----------------|------------------|
| No overt S, A, or O | 146 | 75 | 51.3% |
| Overt preverbal S | 149 | 51 | 34.2% |
| Overt preverbal A | 7 | 3 | 42.9% |
| Overt preverbal O | 46 | 21 | 45.6% |
| Overt preverbal A and O | 21 | 7 | 33.3% |
| Total overt preverbal only | 223 | 82 | 36.8% |
| Overt preverbal A, postverbal O | 8 | 2 | 25% |
| Overt preverbal O, postverbal A | 0 | 0 | 0% |
| Overt postverbal S | 25 | 5 | 20% |
| Overt postverbal A | 0 | 0 | 0% |
| Overt postverbal O | 29 | 11 | 37.9% |
| Overt postverbal A and O | 0 | 0 | 0% |
| Total overt postverbal only | 54 | 16 | 29.6% |

g) **Main vs. subordinate clause** In the section on direct objects, we saw that in these data, there is no significant difference between the position of direct ob-

Katherine Hodgson, Victoria Khurshudyan & Pollet Samvelian

jects in main vs. subordinate clauses. However, other roles, and especially goals, show a higher frequency of post-predicate position in main clauses as compared to subordinate clauses. Subordinate clauses have been observed to show more conservative word order patterns than main clauses, for example the persistence of OV in subordinate clauses in Germanic languages such as German. Thus a possible explanation for these findings is that the tendency for post-predicate goals is a relatively recent phenomenon that has spread by contact from other languages of the area, such as Iranian languages and Neo-Aramaic, and has not spread fully to subordinate clauses. In this context, it is interesting that direct objects do not show such a difference, suggesting that their variable position could indeed be a conservative feature inherited from Classical Armenian, rather than a more recent contact-induced phenomenon. However, note that the percentage of postverbal goals (48%, see Table 24) is still much higher than that of postverbal DOs (22.9%, see Table 14) in subordinate clauses, so we can say that the tendency for post-predicate goals is still present. In addition, we only have a small number of subordinate clauses with goal arguments, so it is not possible to draw firm conclusions on this issue.

Table 24: The distribution of other roles in main and subordinate clauses in EANC ArmFilmNarr corpus

| | Total | Post-predicate | % Post-predicate |
|----------------------|-------|----------------|------------------|
| MC total other roles | 341 | 144 | 42.2% |
| SC total other roles | 84 | 27 | 32.1% |
| MC goals only | 94 | 70 | 74.5% |
| SC goals only | 25 | 12 | 48% |

h) Simple vs. complex verb form We observe that complex (participle + auxiliary) verb forms show a lower percentage of post-verbal arguments, including goals, than simple verb forms. A possible explanation for this phenomenon is that arguments of participial (nominalized) verb forms tend to show positional characteristics of noun modifiers, i.e. preceding the element they modify. It is also possible that the phenomenon is linked to properties of focus marking in Eastern Armenian, as the auxiliary in complex verb forms can mark focus when the focused element precedes the lexical verb, but not when it follows. However, neither of these explanations is particularly convincing given the fact that direct objects do not seem to show this pattern (as seen in section 3.2.2, in this

13 *Post-predicate arguments in Modern Eastern Armenian*

corpus, complex verb forms in fact show a very slightly higher percentage of post-predicate DOs than simple verb forms). Further research is clearly needed to clarify the interaction between verb type, word order, and information structure in Armenian.

Table 25: The distribution of other roles with complex and simple verbs in EANC ArmFilmNarr corpus

| | Total | Post-predicate | % Post-predicate |
|--------------------------------|-------|----------------|------------------|
| Complex verb total other roles | 288 | 110 | 38.2% |
| Complex verb goals only | 77 | 53 | 68.8% |
| Simple verb total other roles | 53 | 27 | 50.9% |
| Simple verb goals only | 18 | 14 | 77.8% |

3.3.3 Summary of other roles

The data from our MEA corpus confirms that in MEA, as in other languages of the wider area, goals of verbs of motion and caused motion show a preference for post-predicate position (approximately 70%). However, in contrast to some languages of Western Asia (see chapter 1, this volume), there is no such tendency observed for other constituents sharing the semantics of ‘endpoint’, such as recipient or addressee. An apparent exception is benefactive, which shows an even stronger preference for post-predicate position (72.7%), although the small number of examples makes this less reliable. It is also worth noting that the number of overt recipient and addressee referents in this corpus is very low. Apart from goal, virtually all the other roles investigated which have more than 20 examples (comitative, location, instrumental) show similar figures, of 20–30% post-predicate position, similar to those for direct objects overall. Ablative has a slightly higher figure (40% post-predicate), but this may be because the ablative referents in this corpus show higher than average figures for givenness and animacy, which may have some effect favouring post-predicate position.

Definiteness, too, is shown to favour post-predicate position, but indefinite other roles do not show the extreme preference for pre-predicate position that is characteristic of indefinite direct objects. Even bare indefinite other roles show 38.7% post-predicate position, while indefinite other roles in general (including those with the indefinite article or an indefinite proform) show 39.2%, virtually identical to the average of other roles as a whole (40%). Weight appears to

Katherine Hodgson, Victoria Khurshudyan & Pollet Samvelian

have an effect on position, with heavier elements appearing somewhat more frequently in post-predicate position. Other roles show more evidence of an effect of weight than direct objects, although this is still not particularly strong. Other roles also show more clearly than direct objects the differences in behaviour between pronouns and lexical NPs, with the latter being more likely to appear in post-predicate position (44.2%, vs. 26.7% for pronouns). As with direct objects, there is no evidence for a crowding effect, whereby the presence of other pre-predicate arguments could promote post-predicate position in order to avoid ‘crowding’ of arguments on one side of the predicate. Unlike direct objects, other roles present possible evidence that post-predicate constituents may be more common in main than subordinate clauses, and with simple rather than complex verb forms. A possible explanation for the former could be that the post-predicate goal phenomenon is a recent contact-induced development that has spread more slowly to subordinate clauses, although the numbers are too small to draw any firm conclusions. The link between argument position and verb form is a topic for further research.

4 Conclusions

As regards direct objects, definiteness proved to be a key impact factor for the postverbal position: 33% (def) vs. 10% (indef) vs. 2% (bare). This is consistent with the previous study by [Samvelian et al. \(2023\)](#), with the difference that in the present study, the percentage of post-predicate definite Os is considerably lower than those reported by [Samvelian et al. \(2023\)](#), who find 82.7% of definite Os in post-predicate position in their first experiment. The percentage of post-predicate definite DOs in the present study is intermediate between the very high figures found by [Samvelian et al. \(2023\)](#), and the very low figures (around 14% for colloquial Yerevan) reported by [Stilo \(2018\)](#). One probable factor behind the difference is that the data in the experimental studies of [Samvelian et al. \(2023\)](#) include only out-of-the-blue sentences; note that a similar pattern has been observed in Romeyka, where those studies based on elicitation of out-of-the-blue sentences yield predominantly VO structures, while the data from connected spontaneous spoken discourse show a much higher rate of OV ([Schreiber & Janse 2024](#) [Chapter 12, this volume]). As [Samvelian et al. \(2023\)](#) note in their conclusion, it is very likely that the rate of SOV is higher in spontaneous oral discourse.

Another relevant factor, also proposed by [Samvelian et al. \(2023\)](#), is register. [Samvelian et al. \(2023\)](#) includes data with characteristics of formal literary language, which show significant morphological, phonological, and syntactic differences from colloquial Yerevan EA, such that the two should be considered

13 *Post-predicate arguments in Modern Eastern Armenian*

different forms of language. The association of post-predicate Os with formal registers is supported by the fact that the speaker who uses by far the highest percentage of postverbal Os in the present study (44%, as opposed to an average of 17.4% for all the other speakers, and 12.7% for the speaker with the lowest percentage) is also the only one who uses certain word forms associated with the formal literary language. Thus if we discount this one speaker, who uses a more formal register, the percentage of postverbal Os in this study is not so different from that recorded by Stilo (2018) for colloquial Yerevan. In addition, a similar figure (approx. 90% OV) is obtained for nominal direct objects in the Agulis corpus of spoken vernacular Armenian (Hodgson *In press*).

The effect of grammatical definiteness is stronger than that of the pragmatic property of givenness (29.8% of given Os appear in post-predicate position, vs. 8.9% of new information Os). Among definite Os, animate referents show a slightly higher percentage of post-predicate position (42.8% for animates vs. 30% for inanimates), although this does not reach statistical significance. This, too, is consistent with the findings of Samvelian et al. (2023). Given that definiteness and animacy are characteristics associated with topical referents, it is unsurprising that topic persistence is higher for postverbal Os (1.9 (postverbal) vs. 1.6 (preverbal)). Post-predicate Os are also associated with slightly lower average referential distance than pre-predicate ones (2.3 vs. 2.5), which is also to be expected given the association of post-predicate position with topicality in general. Some effect of heavy NP shift effect was observed, with longer NPs being more frequent in post-predicate position. (13% (1-word Os) vs. 31% (2-word Os) vs. 19% (3+word Os)). This is also broadly consistent with the findings of Samvelian et al. (2023). Neither the object type (lexical or pronominal) nor the crowding / null subject effect had any evident impact on the position of DOs. Overall, the present corpus study of oral narratives showed that OV word order is more frequent in MEA than VO (79% preverbal vs. 21% postverbal). A prototypical postverbal O in this corpus is definite, given (91%), human (41% vs. 27% of preverbal objects), with higher topic persistence.

As regards other post-predicate constituents, the same factors that have been found to be associated with post-predicate position for DOs (definiteness, animacy, and weight) seem to have a slight effect in the case of other roles too, although the numbers involved cannot be considered statistically significant. The effect of definiteness is less pronounced than for DOs, with 50.3% of definite NP other roles appearing in post-predicate position, vs. 39.2% of indefinites. As we can see, indefinite other roles do not show such a strong tendency to avoid post-predicate position as indefinite DOs. As with DOs, animate definite other roles

Katherine Hodgson, Victoria Khurshudyan & Pollet Samvelian

(excluding goals) are more likely to appear in post-predicate position than inanimate definite ones (46.3% vs. 32.8%). As with DOs, animacy does not seem to affect the position of indefinites. Other roles present slightly stronger evidence of heavy NP shift to post-predicate position than DOs, with those comprised of 4+ words showing the highest percentage of post-predicate position (weight 1 = 36.4% post-predicate, weight 2 = 42.4%, weight 3 = 41.4%, weight 4+ = 47.8%), although the observed effect is still fairly weak. Other roles present evidence that pronominal arguments are less likely to appear in post-predicate position than lexical NPs (26.7% post-predicate, vs. 44.2% for lexical NPs), while for DOs there is no apparent difference. As for direct objects, no evidence is found of a crowding effect.

The preference for goals to appear in post-predicate position is a separate issue, that has been shown to have an areal dimension. This preference is confirmed by the data in this study, where 68.9% of goals appear in post-predicate position. This study presents no evidence that the preference for post-predicate position is extended to other constituents with 'endpoint' semantics, such as recipients or addressees, with the possible exception of benefactive. However, the numbers of overt examples of all these types of argument (recipient, addressee, benefactive) are very small, so we cannot draw a firm conclusion here. The fact that the tendency for goals to appear in post-predicate position is more pronounced in main than subordinate clauses is possible evidence that it is a relatively recent, contact-induced phenomenon. The position of direct objects shows no significant difference between main and subordinate clauses, and it is possible that the existence of postverbal objects, and perhaps other arguments, too, is a conservative characteristic inherited from Classical Armenian (see Samvelian et al. 2023, Stilo 2018), which may perhaps also explain its apparent association with formal register. This is a topic for future research. In any case, Modern Eastern Armenian can be said to fit the typological profile of an 'OVX' language, in that despite showing mainly head-final characteristics, it also has some characteristics associated with typically head-initial languages, such as initial complementizers.

References

- Badikyan, Khachik. 1976. *Žamanakakic‘ hayereni parz naxadasut‘yan šaradasut‘yuna*. Yerevan: Yerevani hamalsarani hratarakchutyun.
- Der-Houssikian, Haig. 1978. The semantic significance of S, O, V sequences in Armenian. In Mohammad A. Jazayery, Edgar C. Polomé & Werner Winter (eds.), *Linguistic and literary studies, vol. 2: Descriptive linguistics*, 227–236. Lisse: Peter de Ridder Press.

13 *Post-predicate arguments in Modern Eastern Armenian*

- Donabedian-Demopoulos, Anaïd. 2007. A la recherche de la logophoricité en arménien. In Jocelyne Fernandez-Vest (ed.), *Combat pour les langues du monde/Fighting for the world's languages, hommage à Claude Hagège*, 165–176. Paris: Editions L'Harmattan.
- Dryer, Matthew S. 1998. *Aspects of word order in the languages of Europe*. Berlin: De Gruyter Mouton.
- Dryer, Matthew S. 2013. Order of object and verb. In Matthew S. Dryer & Martin Haspelmath (eds.), *The world atlas of language structures online*. Leipzig: Max Planck Institute for Evolutionary Anthropology.
- Du Bois, John. 1987. The discourse basis of ergativity. *Language* 63(4). 805–855. DOI: [10.2307/415719](https://doi.org/10.2307/415719).
- Dum-Tragut, Jasmine. 2002. *Word order correlations and word order change: An “applied-typological” study on literary Armenian variants*. Munich: Lincom.
- Dum-Tragut, Jasmine. 2009. *Armenian: Modern Eastern Armenian*. Amsterdam: Benjamins. DOI: [10.1075/loall.14.26](https://doi.org/10.1075/loall.14.26).
- Faghiri, Pegah & Pollet Samvelian. 2020. Word order preferences and the effect of phrasal length in SOV languages: Evidence from sentence production in Persian. *Glossa: A journal of general linguistics* 5(1). DOI: [10.5334/GJGL.1078](https://doi.org/10.5334/GJGL.1078).
- Giorgi, Alessandra & Sona Haroutyunian. 2016. Word order and information structure in Modern Eastern Armenian. *Journal of the Society for Armenian Studies* 25. 185–201.
- Givón, Talmy. 1975. Focus and the scope of assertion: Some Bantu evidence. *Studies in African Linguistics* 6. 185–205.
- Givón, Talmy. 1983. Topic continuity in discourse: An introduction. In Talmy Givón (ed.), *Topic continuity in discourse: A quantitative cross-language study*, 1–42. Amsterdam: Benjamins Publishing Company.
- Haig, Geoffrey & Geoffrey Khan. 2019. Introduction. In Geoffrey Haig & Geoffrey Khan (eds.), *The languages and linguistics of Western Asia: An areal perspective*, 1–29. Berlin: De Gruyter Mouton. DOI: [10.1515/9783110421682-001](https://doi.org/10.1515/9783110421682-001).
- Haig, Geoffrey, Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand, Donald Stilo, Laurentia Schreiber & Nils N. Schiborr. 2024. Post-predicate elements in the Western Asian Transition Zone: Data, theory, and methods. In Geoffrey Haig, Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand, Donald Stilo, Laurentia Schreiber & Nils N. Schiborr (eds.), *Post-predicate elements in the Western Asian Transition Zone: A corpus-based approach to areal typology*, 1–49. Berlin: Language Science Press.
- Hawkins, John A. 1979. Implicational universals as predictors of word order change. *Language* 55. 618–648.
- Hawkins, John A. 1983. *Word order universals*. New York: Academic Press.

Katherine Hodgson, Victoria Khurshudyan & Pollet Samvelian

- Hayrapetyan, Sergo A. 1981. *Uyiy xndri šaradasut'una dasakan grabarum. Herald of Social Sciences* 9. 71–84.
- Hodgson, Katherine. 2013. *Discourse configurationality in Eastern Armenian: The nominal projection*. Cambridge: University of Cambridge. (MA).
- Hodgson, Katherine. 2019. *Relative clauses in colloquial Armenian: Syntax and typology*. Paris: Institut national des langues et civilisations orientales. (Doctoral dissertation).
- Hodgson, Katherine. In press. Armenian, dialect of Agulis. In Geoffrey Haig, Donald Stilo, Mahîr C. Doğan & Nils N. Schiborr (eds.), *WOWA — Word Order in Western Asia: A spoken-language-based corpus for investigating areal effects in word order variation*. Bamberg: University of Bamberg.
- Hodgson, Katherine, Victoria Khurshudyan & Anaïd Donabedian. in press. Word order, anaphora, and topicality in Eastern Armenian. In Claudine Chamoreau, Enrique Palancar & Anaïd Donabedian (eds.), *Topicality and the shaping of grammar: New perspectives from lesser-known languages*. Amsterdam: Benjamins.
- Kahnemuyipour, Arsalan & Karine Megerdoomian. 2011. Second position clitics and the vP phase: The case of the Armenian auxiliary. *Linguistic Inquiry* 42(1). 152–162. DOI: [10.1162/ling_a_00033](https://doi.org/10.1162/ling_a_00033).
- Kahnemuyipour, Arsalan & Karine Megerdoomian. 2017. On the positional distribution of an Armenian auxiliary: Second-position clisis, focus, and phases. *Syntax* 20(1). 77–97.
- Khurshudyan, Victoria. 2006. *Средства выражения хезитации в устном армянском дискурсе в типологической перспективе: Hesitation means in oral Armenian discourse in typological perspective*. Moscow: Russian State University for the Humanities. (Doctoral dissertation).
- Khurshudyan, Victoria, Timofey Arkhangelskiy, Misha Daniel, Vladimir Plunganian, Dmitri Levonian, Alex Polyakov & Sergei Rubakov. 2022. Eastern Armenian national corpus: State of the art and perspectives. In Victoria Khurshudyan, Nadi Tomeh, Damien Nouvel, Anaïd Donabedian & Chahan Vidal-Gorene (eds.), *Proceedings of the workshop on processing language variation: Digital Armenian (DigitAm) within the 13th Language Resources and Evaluation Conference*, 28–37. Marseille: European Language Resources Association. <https://aclanthology.org/2022.digitam-1.5>.
- Kozintseva, Natalia. 1995. *Modern Eastern Armenian*. Munich: Lincom Europa.
- Minassian, Martiros. 1980. *Grammaire d'Arménien Oriental*. New York: Delmar.
- Rasekh-Mahand, Mohammad, Elham Izadi, Mehdi Parizadeh, Geoffrey Haig & Nils N. Schiborr. 2024. Post-predicate elements in modern colloquial Persian: A multifactorial analysis. In Geoffrey Haig, Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand, Donald

13 Post-predicate arguments in Modern Eastern Armenian

- Stilo, Laurentia Schreiber & Nils N. Schiborr (eds.), *Post-predicate elements in the Western Asian Transition Zone: A corpus-based approach to areal typology*, 183–216. Berlin: Language Science Press.
- Samvelian, Pollet, Pegah Faghiri & Victoria Khurshudyan. 2023. On the persistence of SVO: the case of Modern Eastern Armenian. *Linguistics* 61(3). 459–497. DOI: [10.1515/ling-2021-0013](https://doi.org/10.1515/ling-2021-0013).
- Schreiber, Laurentia & Mark Janse. 2024. Word order variation in Romeyka. In Geoffrey Haig, Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand, Donald Stilo, Laurentia Schreiber & Nils N. Schiborr (eds.), *Post-predicate elements in the Western Asian Transition Zone: A corpus-based approach to areal typology*, 317–351. Berlin: Language Science Press.
- Sigler, Michele. 2001. A logophoric pronoun in Western Armenian. *Annual of Armenian Linguistics* 21. 13–30.
- Stilo, Donald. 2006. Circumpositions as an areal response: The case study of the Iranian zone. In Lars Johanson & Christiane Bulut (eds.), *Turkic-Iranian contact areas: Historical and linguistic aspects*, 310–333. Wiesbaden: Harrassowitz.
- Stilo, Donald. 2018. Preverbal and postverbal peripheral arguments in the Araxes-Iran linguistic area. Paper presented at the *Conference Anatolia-Caucasus-Iran: Ethnic and Linguistic Contacts* 10-12 May 2018. Yerevan University, Yerevan, Armenia.
- Tamrazian, Armine. 1991. Focus and WH-movement in Armenian. *UCL Working Papers in Linguistics* 3. 102–121.
- Tamrazian, Armine. 1994. *The syntax of Armenian: Chains and the auxiliary*. London: University College London. (Doctoral dissertation).

Chapter 14

Khuzestani Arabic

Bettina Leitner^a

^aUniversität Wien

This chapter describes the basic word order profile of Khuzestani Arabic and discusses possible reasons for deviations from the default word order VX (X representing non-subject arguments). This discussion includes an analysis of where the change from VX to XV may be triggered by language contact or by language internal reasons related to information structure. The description is mainly based on data from the WOZA-corpus (<https://multicast.aspra.uni-bamberg.de/resources/wowa/#semitic>) and supplemented by the author's own corpus data.

1 Introduction and data

The Arabic variety spoken in the southwestern Iranian region of Khuzestan belongs to the Mesopotamian dialectal area and the subgroup of *gələt* dialects¹. The grammar of Khuzestani Arabic (KhA) has been described mainly by Bruce Ingham and the author of this chapter (among the most important contributions are Ingham 1973, 1976, 2008, and Leitner 2022b). This chapter presents the first analysis of word order structures in KhA since Ingham (1991) and has the advantage of being based on a comparatively large text corpus.

Arab settlement in southern and western Iran (i.e. Khuzestan and Fars) is already documented for Sasanian times (226–651 AD), and thus precedes the arrival of the Arab Muslim armies (Zarrinkūb 1975: 27). However, the real Arab dispersal into Iran began after the initial Islamic victories when many tribes from the

¹The term *gələt*, first used by Blanc (1964) to classify the Iraqi Arabic dialects, is based on the 1sg PFV verb for 'to say': *gələt* versus *qəltu*—the latter being the other group of dialects spoken in Iraq and southern Anatolia. *gələt*-dialects are associated with Bedouin and rural Arabic, even though nowadays of course almost no speakers live as nomads any longer and many have moved to cities, cf. Leitner (2021b).

Bettina Leitner

vicinities of Kufa and Basra entered Iranian soil following the conquest (cf. Leitner 2022b: 6–7 and the references mentioned there). Many of the Arab tribes who immigrated into Khuzestan had originated in Arabia (cf. Savory 1986: 81; cf. Nad-jmabadi 2009: 132, Fn. 28–29; Field 1939: 604) and first settled in southern Iraq. Their subsequent immigration to Khuzestan led to an extensive Arabization of the province, parts of which were officially called Arabistan from the 16th/17th century until 1923 (Oppenheim 1967: 3, 10; cf. Ingham 1997: ix). Most Arab tribes, such as the Kaṣab, adopted Shiism after their settlement in Iran, but some remained Sunnis, e.g. the Muntafiq, who migrated to Hoveyzeh in 1812 (Savory 1986: 81).

The Iran-Iraq War (1980–1988) forced many families to flee their hometowns and thus led to considerable demographic changes. Both the city of Khorramshahr/Muhammadra (and its port) and the city of Abadan (and its refineries) were completely destroyed in the course of the Iran-Iraq War by Iraqi artillery and aerial bombardments.

The region's capital city Ahvaz in turn has witnessed an immense growth in the past decades (according to Nejatian 2015 the number of inhabitants in Ahvaz grew from 334,399 in 1976 to 724,653 in 1991, and to 1,112,021 in 2011).

Persian, being the majority language as well as the only official language and language of education and administration in Iran, plays a crucial role for the people in Khuzestan. The majority of the Khuzestani Arabs are bilingual, but there are still monolingual Arabic speakers, especially among the older generation. KhA is insulated from influence by MSA, but sharing a long geographically open border with Iraq, Khuzestan is not totally isolated from the Arabic-speaking world. The linguistic influence Persian has had on KhA is strongest in lexicon, but it is also evident in some aspects of its phonology and syntax. This paper will focus on possible language contact influences in the domain of syntax with a focus on word order and sentence structure. For this purpose, we will characterize the word order profile of KhA relying primarily on the WOZA corpus data². For a more general evaluation of language contact phenomena in Khuzestani Arabic, cf. Gazsi (2011), Matras & Shabibi (2007); Leitner (2020).

The data for this contribution was gathered in field studies in Khuzestan in 2016 and comprises 6 texts (about 9,600 transcribed words) from 8 different speakers (5 female, 3 male, aged between 30 and 65). Table 1 provides an overview of this data, which contains three narrative interviews, one conversation, one traditional tale, and one procedural description (recipe). Examples taken from the author's data other than that of the WOZA-corpus data will be labelled as '(own data)'.

²<https://multicast.aspra.uni-bamberg.de/resources/wowa/#semitic>.

Table 1: Metadata WOWA corpus

| Abbreviation for Examples | Text Name | Genre | Speakers' Gender | Speakers' Age |
|---------------------------|------------------------|---------------------|------------------|---------------|
| A | Möze - Past times | Narrative interview | F | 65 |
| B | Shepherd | Narrative interview | M | 30 |
| C | Hamidiye women | Conversation | F, F | 60, 60 |
| D | Ghazawiyya Palm farmer | Narrative interview | M, M | 35, 30 |
| E | Umm Sa'ad - Ḥamda | Traditional tale | F | 45 |
| F | Amine - recipes | Procedural text | F | 30 |

The main body of this chapter contains general information on KhA sentence structure and word order (section 2). This is followed by a discussion on the factors that may trigger pre-predicate position of constituents in KhA and the likelihood of an explanation of these changes via Persian influence or, otherwise, due to language-internal reasons related to information structure and focus-fronting (section 3).

2 Word order profile

Out of the dataset's 546 analyzable tokens³, 479 were found in post-predicate position and only 67 in pre-predicate position, which confirms that Khuzestani Arabic, like most Arabic varieties, is a VO language. This suggests that the influence of the contact language Persian, an OV language, on KhA word order is not very strong. In the following, a brief word order profile of KhA will be given.

2.1 Adjective/noun

Adjectives generally follow nouns in KhA as in most other Arabic varieties (1).

- (1) Khuzestani Arabic (own data)

balla xall nšərrb-a *māy fāyər yiğsil*
 DM HORT make_drink.IPFV.1PL-3SG.M water boiling wash.IPFV.3SG.M
ṣadr-a
 breast-3SG.M

'Let us make him drink hot [lit. boiling] water that makes him feel good [lit. cleans his breast].'

³Tokens are defined as non-subject-constituents with one of the following roles: direct object; goal; recipient; addressee; location; instrument; comitative; copula complement noun; possessed NP in a possessive expression; and complement of a change-of-state verb.

Bettina Leitner

2.2 Possessor/possessed

Possession is expressed either via synthetic nominal attribution or via the analytic genitive. The basic syntagm for synthetic nominal attribution constructions (Arabic *ʔiḍāfa*) is NOUN (in construct state) + NOUN/DEF-NOUN. The second noun is usually a (definite or indefinite) substantive, as in (2) and (3).

- (2) Khuzestani Arabic (Leitner 2021a: D, 0591)

ḥalib ʔl-hōš
milk DEF-COW.COLL
'cow's milk'

- (3) Khuzestani Arabic (Leitner 2021a: A, 0166)

tāsa-t rōba
bowl-cs yoghurt
'a bowl [full] of yoghurt'

The two default types of the analytic genitive syntagm are: NOUN (POSSESSED) + MĀL + NOUN (POSSESSOR) (4) and NOUN + MĀL-PRONOMINAL SUFFIX (5). There are also examples in which the element after *māl* is an adverb. This linker for nominal attribution is usually labeled in Arabic dialectology as a "genitive exponent" or "genitive marker" (see Leitner 2022b: 176–189 and the references mentioned there for a more detailed elaboration of such constructions in KhA).

- (4) Khuzestani Arabic (Leitner 2021a: E, 0652)

ḡaṣr māl malək
castle GL.SG.M king
'a castle of a king'

- (5) Khuzestani Arabic (Leitner 2021a: D, 0537)

ʔl-xūṣ māl-a
DEF-palm_fronds GL.SG.M-3SG.M
'its [the palm's] fronds'

- (6) Khuzestani Arabic (Leitner 2021a: A, 0217)

matal fad-na xamsīn ḥōliyye fad-na sittīn
for_example at-1PL fifty young_female_buffalo at-1PL sixty
ḥōliyye
young_female_buffalo
'We had like fifty [young female] buffaloes or sixty buffaloes.'

For possessive constructions with the preposition *fad*, lit. ‘at’, the default syn-
tagm is *fad*-PRO (POSSESSOR) + POSSESSED (6).

While *māl* can be used both predicatively and attributively, *fad* can only be used predicatively. In the WOVA corpus, there are 4 out of 32 instances of the possessive construction with *fad* that have the POSSESSED in pre-predicate position, i.e. preceding *fad*-PRO, as in (7): *?amān ma fad-na* ‘we don’t have safety’. This marked pre-predicative word order is often used in combination with negation to stress non-possession of a certain item and often co-occurs with a repetition of an already mentioned noun (here: ‘safety’), as illustrated in the following example.

- (7) Khuzestani Arabic (Leitner 2021a: B, 0224)

as-surūh w salaf w taṣb w ntāra w
DEF-grazing and fodder and exhaustion and watching and
b-əl-?aham ham ha-l-ayyām mas?ala mas?alt əl-?amān
in-DEF-most_important also DEM-DEF-days question question DEF-safety
?amān ma fad-na əl-halāl b-īd-ak w yəmbāg
safety NEG at-1PL DEF-cattle in-hand-2SG.M and be_stolen.IPFV.3SG.M
‘The grazing and the fodder, the exhaustion, and the guarding, and the
important thing these days is the question of safety, we don’t have safety,
the cattle that is in your hand might be stolen [any minute].’

kəllšāy ‘everything’ often precedes a negative possessive-construction *mā fad*-
PRO, as in the following example (8), to express ‘to really have nothing’, i.e. for
emphasizing the fact that one really does not own anything (and with that im-
plicitly contrasting her with others who have more). This structure might be a
calque on Persian *hičči na-dāšt* ‘she had nothing’, but is also found in Iraqi Ara-
bic (see e.g. Leitner et al. 2021: 172 “*kull wakit ma findi*. ‘Ich habe gar keine Zeit.’”
and “*kull šī māku*. ‘Es gibt gar nichts.’”; cf. section 3).

- (8) Khuzestani Arabic (Leitner 2021a: E, 0614)

w hāy l-əbnayya bass əhəya təsrāh b-əl-ğanam
and DEM DEF-girl but 3SG.F graze.IPFV.3SG.F with-DEF-sheep
kəllšāy mā fad-ha
everything NEG at-3SG.F
‘And this girl was always just grazing the sheep, she had nothing [else].’

2.3 Demonstrative/noun

Demonstratives usually come before the noun (9).

Bettina Leitner

- (9) Khuzestani Arabic (Leitner 2021a: C, 0502)

hādann lə-hədūm
DEM.PL.F DEF-clothes
'these clothes'

Though their position before the noun prevails, demonstratives can also follow the head. In such constructions, however, the noun is often emphasized (10).

- (10) Khuzestani Arabic (own data)

əl-walad hāda rabbō-(h)
DEF-boy DEM.SG.M raise.PFV.3PL.M-3SG.M
'They raised this boy.'

Also, the noun can be both preceded and followed by a demonstrative (11; such constructions are usually limited to the SG proximal demonstratives M *hād*, F *hādi*, *hāy*).

- (11) Khuzestani Arabic (own data)

əhna hāy əl-farab hāy
1PL DEM DEF-arabs DEM
'we Arabs [COLL]'

2.4 Numeral/noun

Numerals generally precede nouns (12, 13).

- (12) Khuzestani Arabic (Leitner 2021a: A, 0217)

sittīn hōliyye
sixty young_female_water_buffalo
'sixty [young female] water **buffalos**'

- (13) Khuzestani Arabic (Leitner 2021a: B, 0226)

sitt əšhur
six month.PL
'six months'

2.5 Adpositions

Prepositional phrases usually follow the verbal predicate, as in (14) and (15). A counterexample is e.g. provided by (18), where *mān zugur* 'from childhood (on)' precedes the predicate.

- (14) Khuzestani Arabic (Leitner 2021a: E, 0654)
 $gālat$ $ʔāna$ $ʔaðəllan$ $bə-hāda$ $ǵasər$ $māl$ $əl-malək$
 say.PFV.3SG.F 1SG stay.IPFV.1SG in-DEM.SG.M castle GL.SG.M DEF-king
 'She said: "I will stay in this, the king's castle."
- (15) Khuzestani Arabic (Leitner 2021a: F, 0751)
 w $ənnōb$ $tāli$ $nrawwi$ $əb-ṣinīyye$
 and then next form_balls.IPFV.1PL on-tablet
 '...and then we form balls [of dough for baking bread] on the tablet.'

2.6 Auxiliary/main verb

The default position for auxiliary verbs is before the main verb (16, 17).

- (16) Khuzestani Arabic (Leitner 2021a: F, 0785)
 $gabul$ ma $čānu$ $ystəfādūn$ $ləbləbi$
 formerly NEG AUX.3PL.M use.IPFV.3PL.M chick_peas
 'In former times they didn't use chick peas [for cooking].'
- (17) Khuzestani Arabic (Leitner 2021a: A, 0187)
 $ǵarafna$ $l-əl-hōr$ $gəmna$ $ənħušš$
 row.PFV.1PL to-DEF-marshland AUX.1PL cut_grass.IPFV.1PL
 'We rowed to the marshland [hōr], we started to cut grass.'

However, as has been suggested in Leitner (2020, 2022a), there seems to be an ongoing change probably triggered by contact with Persian that yields clause-final position of the auxiliary, cf. also the following example (18). This development is paralleled by the tendency towards postpredicate position of copulas (cf. section 3 below; Leitner 2022a). Of course, it may never be entirely ruled out that it is rather pragmatic reasons that cause some of the postpositions of the auxiliary (e.g. as a time frame setter, cf. Brustad 2000), but the comparative numbers presented in Leitner (2022a) speak rather for an explanation as a contact feature.

- (18) a. Khuzestani Arabic (own data)
 $hāde$ ham $mən$ $zuǵur$ $yəštəǵəl$ $čān$
 DEM.SG.M also from childhood work.IPFV.3SG.M AUX
- b. New Persian (own data)
 in ham az $kudeki$ $kār$ $mi-kard$
 DEM.SG also from childhood work PROG-do.PST.3SG
 'This one has also been working from childhood on.'

Bettina Leitner

2.7 Complement clause/matrix verb

Complement clauses follow the matrix verb and a complementizer *əlli* (19) or *ənnu* 'that' (20). In general, however, the complementizers are often omitted and asyndetic constructions are preferred as in (21).

- (19) Khuzestani Arabic (own data)
ətgūl əlli lyōm mā ətrūh l-əš-šəgəl
 say.IPFV.3SG.F that today NEG go.IPFV.3SG.F to-DEF-work
 'She says that today she won't go to work.'
- (20) Khuzestani Arabic (own data)
w maṣrūf ənnu mətəl
 and known that for_example
 'And [it is] known that for example...'
- (21) Khuzestani Arabic (own data)
gāl əlyōm māku ṭalfa
 say.PFV.3SG.M today EXIST.NEG going_out
 'He said that today there is no going out.'

2.8 Nominal direct object/verb

The default or unmarked word order is VO as in (22). This order appears 274 times out of a total of 317 direct objects in the WOWA-KhA-corpus. Following, 43 tokens are found in pre-predicate position (OV). Of these 43 OV-constructions, 27 show a resumptive pronoun (co-referential with the object) after the verb as in (23) and only 16 had no resumptive pronoun after the verb, e.g. (24). The 27 examples of OV + resumptive pronoun thus are not plain OV constructions, but instead cases of topicalization (as further discussed in section 3).

- (22) Khuzestani Arabic (Leitner 2021a: C, 0434)
šafat-l-i maṣğiza
 see.PFV.1SG-for-1SG miracle
 'I saw a miracle.'
- (23) Khuzestani Arabic (Leitner 2021a: C, 0392)
əl-haywāna nəħlib-ha
 DEF-animal.SG milk.IPFV.1PL-3SG.F
 'We milk the cattle.'

- (24) Khuzestani Arabic (Leitner 2021a: A, 0100)
- ləbasne əxwīəṣāt-ne ləbasne əhžīəlāt-ne yaṣni*
 wear.PFV.1PL ring.DIM.PL-1PL wear.PFV.1PL bracelet.DIM.PL-1PL DM
šīla-t balbūl ləbasne yaṣni ət-ṭōg u-māṣxa
 shawl.DIM-CS balbūl wear.PFV.1PL DM DEF-necklace and-māṣxa
ləbasne
 wear.PFV.1PL
- ‘... we put on our rings, we put our bracelets, ... we wore the *balbūl* shawl⁴, [and] the necklace and *māṣxa* [kind of jewelry].’

2.9 Pronominal direct object/verb

Pronominal direct objects are generally suffixed to the verb and thus inherently postverbal as in (25) and (26). Only in cases where the speaker wants to express additional emphasis and/or mark it as the topic of an utterance (cf. Brustad 2000: 331, 333 on comparable examples of independent pronouns that are sentence-initial and the topic but not subject of a sentence), an independent pronoun may additionally be mentioned preceding the verb with the suffixed pronoun, see example (27) (and the discussion of such examples in section 3).

- (25) Khuzestani Arabic (Leitner 2021a: C, 0356)
- təsmaʃ-ni*
 hear.IPFV.2SG.M-1SG
 ‘You hear me.’
- (26) Khuzestani Arabic (own data)
- hāy ətʃəhm-əc səʔli-ha suʔāl*
 DEM understand.IPFV.3SG.F-2SG.F ask.IMP.SG.F-3SG.F question
 ‘She understands you. Ask her a question!’
- (27) Khuzestani Arabic (Leitner 2021a: C, 0412)
- walla āna iyā-ni hād əl-biəhdāš⁵ māl*
 by_god 1SG come.PFV.3SG.M-1SG DEM.SG.M DEF-healthcare_center GL.SG.M
salf-i
 district-1SG
 ‘And I – He came to me, [from] this healthcare center of my district...’

⁴A thin shawl, lit. ‘made of (the material) *balbūl*’, cf. Steingass (2001: 179) on the Persian term *bulbul čašm* ‘a sort of silk’.

⁵< Pers. *behdāšt* ‘hygiene, healthcare’ (Junker & Alawi 2002: 108).

Bettina Leitner

2.10 Goal/verb

The default position of goals is post-predicate (28).

- (28) Khuzestani Arabic (Leitner 2021a: C, 0464)

ham rəhna ən-naxal rəhna l-əš-šilib
also go.PFV.1PL DEF-palm_groves go.PFV.1PL to-DEF-rice_fields
'We also went to the palm groves, we went to the rice fields...'

From the 83 goals in the WOVA-corpus only five were in pre-predicate position: three times the adverb *hnā* 'here' as in (29), once *əb-baṭn-a* 'in its belly' (30) and once the 1SG pronoun *āna*, which is however indicated as well by a pronominal affix on the verb and added sentence-initially for emphasis and marking it as a sentence topic (see example (38) below and the discussion on whether it should be considered a pre-predicate token in section 3).

- (29) Khuzestani Arabic (Leitner 2021a: A, 0091)

wa hnā yō ḥaṭtan warde yō əzmām
and here or put.PFV.3PL.F nose_ring or nose_ring
'And here they put a *warde* or a *zmām* [two types of nose rings].'

- (30) Khuzestani Arabic (Leitner 2021a: F, 0739)

nṭēh bə-diyāy əb-baṭn-a yħuṭṭūn šwayyūn təmən
fall.IPFV.1PL with-chicken in-belly-3SG.M put.IPFV.3PL.M some rice
w kāšməš w fəlfəl ʔaswad w l-ħawār
and raisins and pepper black and DEF-spices
'We take the chicken, in its belly we put some rice and raisins and black pepper and spices.'

2.11 Other obliques/verb

In the WOVA-corpus, of all 25 obliques labelled as "other" (which are mostly adverbs) 6 were found in pre-predicate position as in the following example (31):

- (31) Khuzestani Arabic (Leitner 2021a: A, 0095)

walla dāyman hēč mā nilbas
by_god always like_this NEG dress.IPFV.1PL
'It's not always that we dress like this.'

2.12 Copular and become-constructions

In general, there is no present tense copula in Arabic. Several dialects have, as a consequence of contact with languages that do have obligatory present tense copulas, developed an obligatory copula for the imperfective (cf. e.g. Procházka 2019 on the dialects of Eastern Anatolia), but KhA has not despite its long term contact with Persian.

The WOWA-corpus features one imperfective copular-complement in pre-predicate position (out of 17 copular constructions⁶), (32), and two pre-predicate become-complements (out of 28), one of them is cited here in (33) (*ha-l-gadd-āt-ha tṣīr* ‘it becomes about this size’). The latter structure again might be due to contact influence or due to information packaging and pragmatic reasons, as it seems to be an echo or a recall of the previous *yṣīr čibīr-e* ‘it becomes big’.

Even though in the WOWA-corpus we find only one attestation of pre-predicate copulas, we know from previous studies that they are more often found in sentence-final position than other verbs in KhA (see Leitner 2022a).

- (32) Khuzestani Arabic (Leitner 2021a: B, 0278)

hādanni t̪alyān t̪əli yṣīr

DEM.PL.F lamb.PL lamb **COP**

‘These are *t̪alyān* [‘lambs’], *t̪əli* [‘lamb’] we call it.’

- (33) Khuzestani Arabic (Leitner 2021a: D, 0508)

hāy əl-fahla yṣīr čibīr-e w hāy ən-naxla la
 DEM DEF-male_palm become.IPFV.3SG.M big-F and DEM DEF-palm no
zəgīr-e eh zəgīr-e tağriban ha-l-gadd-āt-ha tṣīr
 small-F yes small-F about DEM-DEF-size-PL.F-3SG.F become.IPFV.3SG.F
nəfṣəg gadd čaff əd hāy wəhda-t ən-natye
 split.IPFV.1PL size palm hand DEM thing-CS DEF-female_palm

‘This male palm grows big, but this palm not, small, yes small, it becomes about this size, we split – as [big as] a hand – this thing of the female palm.’

3 Areal issues and information structure

As stated in the introduction, KhA is not entirely isolated from the rest of the Arabic-speaking world due to its border with Iraq, although it is spoken in a

⁶Of these 17 copular constructions, 15 copulas were imperfective forms and two were perfective forms; 14 copulas were forms of *ṣār* lit. ‘to become’ and only three were based on the lexeme *kān* ‘to be’.

Bettina Leitner

region in which the sociolinguistically dominant language is not Arabic but Persian. The use of KhA is mostly restricted to conversations within the family and among friends.

To the best of my knowledge, we don't have a detailed survey on word order in (Muslim/ *gələt*) Iraqi Arabic, with which KhA is closely related. But since the overall picture of KhA word order shows that most word order features are most likely inherited, as the post-predicate position of objects and other complements is the default position, we can assume that KhA in this regard does not deviate much from its neighbor Iraqi Arabic. Against this background, this section will focus on those cases of non-default word order trying to propose possible explanations. The following thus is a brief outline of some of the factors that may trigger pre-predicate position in KhA and discusses whether changes in word order and use of marked word order are likely to result from contact with Persian or are rather to be explained as information structural strategies. The latter builds on the theoretical approaches of Brustad (2000: 315–362) and her analysis of information packaging and its influences on word order in spoken Arabic and Ingham (1991) and his analysis of KhA sentence structure. Ingham proposes a basic division of sentence types into i) uninodal, in which new information comes first and which are usually verb-initial unless there is focus fronting (e.g. 36), and ii) binodal, in which the topic precedes new information/the comment. Example (34) illustrates the binodal sentence type (Ingham 1991: 722), in which the object is fronted (usually given information and a definite noun⁷) is topical and indexed by a resumptive pronoun marking the original post-verbal position of the object. This example clearly shows how putting an object in pre-predicate position can be used as an information structural tool to indicate the topic of a sentence (cf. Brustad 2000: 348–349). The phrase *hāy əd-dār* ‘this house’ already appears earlier on in the sentence, but in each instance the speaker clearly refers to another room and the one following the conjunction *bass* ‘but’ is the one made the topic followed by the new information, vic. that it should not be opened. After the preceding rhythmic enumeration (“You may open this house, and you may open this room, and you may open this room”), the part after *bass* is also accompanied by a differing intonation contour (pitch goes up with *dār*), and a short pause before she goes on saying *lā thəddin-ha* ‘(this one) don't you open it’. Within the latter phrase, we find the feminine singular object pronoun *-ha* referring back to the object *hāy əd-dār* ‘this house’, thus the construction resembles that of a normal topicalization structure as found in all varieties of Arabic.

⁷Cf. Brustad (2000: 339) and the examples provided there on the fact that topic in Arabic also includes temporal verbs.

- (34) Khuzestani Arabic (Leitner 2021a: E, 0635)
- gāl-ha thəddīn hād əl-biət w thəddīn
 tell.PFV.3SG.M-3SG.F open.IPFV.2SG.F DEM DEF-house and open.IPFV.2SG.F
 hāy əd-dār w thəddīn hāy əd-dār bass hāy əd-dār
 DEM DEF-room and open.IPFV.2SG.F DEM DEF-room but DEM DEF-room
 lā thəddīn-ha
 NEG open.IPFV.2SG.F-3SG.F
- ‘He said: “You [may] open this house, and you [may] open this room, and you [may] open this room, but don’t you open this room.”’

Out of the 43 OV instances in the KhA data from the WOWA-corpus, 27 featured a resumptive pronoun on the verb as in the example above or in example (23). As stated above, this structure is not foreign to Arabic and must not be attributed to contact influence. Whether or not such topicalized sentences appear more commonly in Arabic dialects that start shifting towards OV due to contact with an OV language has yet to be determined.

The WOWA-corpus of KhA contains 16 OV phrases that do not feature a resumptive pronoun on the verb such as (24) above cited here again (35) for the sake of the discussion:

- (35) Khuzestani Arabic (Leitner 2021a: A, 0100)
- ləbasne əxwīəšāt-ne ləbasne əhžiəlāt-ne yaʃni
 wear.PFV.1PL ring.DIM.PL-1PL wear.PFV.1PL bracelet.DIM.PL-1PL DM
 šiəla-t balbūl ləbasne yaʃni ət-łōg u-māšxa
 shawl.DIM-CS balbūl wear.PFV.1PL DM DEF-necklace and-māšxa
 ləbasne
 wear.PFV.1PL
- ‘... we put on our rings, we put our bracelets, ... we wore the *balbūl* shawl, [and] the necklace and the *māšxa* [kind of jewelry].’

In this example, in which the speaker (rhythmically) lists various items that women used to wear in the past for weddings, she switches from the default VO structure to the marked OV in the middle of the sentence (note that this turn is introduced by the discourse marker *yaʃni*). The shift in word order is paralleled by a shifted stress distribution in the second (OV) part of the sentence where in both cases the speaker puts the main stress on the verb *ləbasne* ‘we wore’, whereas in the first part the main stress lies on the objects. Information packaging seems to be the most likely cause for such a change towards marked word order. According to Brustad (2000: 343) “objects that are contrastive may occupy

Bettina Leitner

pre-verbal position (OVS)” and later on adds that “objects without resumptive pronouns are highly contrastive” (Brustad 2000: 348). In this example, such a contrast may lie in the shift from the event-oriented first part (with a focus on the habitual event, vic. what they used to wear) towards a topic-oriented second part (with a focus on items that are part of a set of things they used to wear). In Ingham’s (1991) terminology, the latter part of this sentence seems to be of the type “uninodal with focus fronting” (Ingham 1991: 721–722) and is thus also not new or undocumented for Arabic dialects. However, against the definition of this sentence type, the nuclear stress in this very example does not fall on the fronted item but on the following verb. It remains unclear, why the speaker once marks a pre-predicate object with the definite article (*at-tōg*, albeit the only pre-predicate direct object with definite article in the WOWA corpus) and once without (*māṣxa*), as both seem to have a generic character representing a set of items. In general this example does not seem to support Ingham’s (1991) assumption that possibly a “definite ‘true’ object” cannot appear in KhA in preverbal position without a resumptive pronoun (Ingham 1991: 722, Fn. 5).

Another instance of a pre-predicate object (*kāllšī* ‘everything’) without resumptive pronoun is the following (36):

- (36) Khuzestani Arabic (Leitner 2021a: C, 0363)

ḥəṣadna *lammēna* *təbən lammēna* *ğanēna*
 harvest.PFV.1PL gather.PFV.1PL straw gather.PFV.1PL breed.PFV.1PL
haywān kāllšī *sawwēna* *ya* *fazīz galb-i*
 cattle everything do.PFV.1PL VOC dear heart-1SG
 ‘We harvested, gathered straw, we gathered – we bred cattle, we made
 everything, my dear.’

This again is a uninodal sentence with focus fronting, in this case also fulfilling the requirement of heavy stress on the fronted object (*kāllšī* ‘everything’). The indefinite pronoun *kāllšī* appears three times in the WOWA-corpus and always in pre-predicate position. It may also precede negated verbs as in the following example (37), in which we find additionally a fronted and topicalized object *al-farūs* (indexed by the resumptive pronoun *-hən* on the verb):

- (37) Khuzestani Arabic (Leitner 2021a: A, 0072)

al-farūs *kāllšī* *mā* *nsawwī-l-hən*
 DEF-bride everything NEG make.IPFV.1PL-DAT-3PL.F
 ‘The bride[s], we didn’t do anything with them [like putting on henna,
 etc.]’

As stated above for example (8), where *kəllšāy* ‘everything’ precedes a negative possessive-construction, these structures may be calques on (Spoken) Persian structures such as *hičči na-kardam* ‘we did nothing’ and *har kari kardim* ‘we did everything’. Their existence in Iraqi Arabic (see section 2.2 above) might speak against this, as influence of Persian on Iraqi Arabic is mostly restricted to the lexical domain. Taking all this under consideration, it seems most likely to be an inherited structure in KhA, focus fronting of *kəllšāy* ~ *kəllšī* that indicates contrast⁸, or, as in (36), some kind of closure of an enumeration (a category or context not mentioned by Brustad or Ingham). Of course, Persian word order might have reinforced the use of this structure and increased the frequency of fronting of *kəllšī*.

The following sentence (38) (already cited above as (27) and repeated here for the sake of convenience) it is most likely also of the binodal type with the 1SG pronoun *āna* presenting the sentence topic and being taken up by a referential pronoun on the verb.

- (38) Khuzestani Arabic (Leitner 2021a: C, 0412)

walla āna iyā-ni hād əl-biəhdāš⁹ māl
by_god 1SG come.PFV.3SG.M-1SG DEM.SG.M DEF-healthcare_center GL.SG.M
salf-i
district-1SG

‘And I – He came to me, [from] this healthcare center of my district ...’

A feature that can more likely be attributed to contact influence is the sentence-final position of auxiliaries (cf. section 2.6 for examples), copulas and the verb ‘to become’ (cf. section 2.12 for examples). This fits very well into the stages of shift towards XV structures as described by El Zarka & Ziagos (2020) for Southern Iranian Arabic. There, this shift seems to be more advanced than in KhA, but in both varieties it appears to have started with elements such as copulas and auxiliaries (see Leitner 2022a).

We can thus conclude that, overall, the data and its analysis clearly show that the inherited default word order (VX) is retained in Khuzestani Arabic. However, pragmatic factors related primarily to information structure and to a much lesser degree contact with Persian may cause that elements are moved to pre-predicate position, thus yielding XV word order. For future studies on KhA word order and information packaging, it would be interesting to further include a comparison of information structure in Persian and KhA.

⁸In example (37) the speaker was clearly contrasting wedding traditions of the past and the present.

⁹< Pers. *behdāšt* ‘hygiene, healthcare’ (Junker & Alawi 2002: 108).

Bettina Leitner

Abbreviations

| | | | |
|-------|----------------------|-------|------------------------|
| AUX | auxiliary | IPFV | imperfective |
| COLL | collective (noun) | KhA | Khuzestani Arabic |
| CS | construct state | M | masculine |
| DAT | dative | MSA | Modern Standard Arabic |
| DEF | definite (article) | NEG | negation |
| DEM | demonstrative | Pers. | Persian |
| DIM | diminutive | PFV | perfective |
| DM | discourse marker | PL | plural |
| EXIST | existential particle | PRO | pronoun |
| F | feminine | PROG | progressive marker |
| GL | genitive linker | PST | past tense |
| HORT | hortative particle | SG | singular |
| IMP | imperative | VOC | vocative particle |

References

- Blanc, Haim. 1964. *Communal dialects in Baghdad*. Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press.
- Brustad, Kristen. 2000. *The syntax of spoken Arabic: A comparative study of Moroccan, Egyptian, Syrian, and Kuwaiti dialects*. Washington: Georgetown University Press.
- El Zarka, Dina & Sandra Zagos. 2020. The beginnings of word order change in the Arabic dialects of Southern Iran in contact with Persian: A preliminary study of data from four villages in Bushehr and Hormozgan. *Iranian Studies* 53(3–4). 465–488. DOI: [10.1080/00210862.2019.1690433](https://doi.org/10.1080/00210862.2019.1690433).
- Field, Henry. 1939. *Contributions to the anthropology of Iran*. Chicago: Museum of Natural History.
- Gazsi, Dénes. 2011. Arabic-Persian language contact. In Stefan Weninger, Janet C. E. Watson, Michael Streck & Geoffrey Khan (eds.), *The Semitic languages: An international handbook*, 1015–1021. Berlin: De Gruyter.
- Ingham, Bruce. 1973. Urban and rural Arabic in Khūzistān. *Bulletin of the School of Oriental and African Studies* 36. 523–553.
- Ingham, Bruce. 1976. Regional and social factors in the dialect geography of Southern Iraq and Khuzistan. *Bulletin of the School of Oriental and African Studies* 39. 62–82.

- Ingham, Bruce. 1991. Sentence structure in Khuzestani Arabic. In Alan S. Kaye (ed.), *Semitic studies: In honor of Wolf Leslau on the occasion of his eighty-fifth birthday, November 14th, 1991*, vol. 1, 714–728. Wiesbaden: Harrassowitz.
- Ingham, Bruce. 1997. *Arabian diversions: Studies on the dialects of Arabia*. Reading: Ithaca Press.
- Ingham, Bruce. 2008. Najdi Arabic. In Kees Versteegh (ed.), *Encyclopedia of Arabic language and linguistics*, vol. 3, 326–334. Leiden: Brill.
- Junker, Heinrich F. J. & Bozorg Alawi. 2002. *Persisch-Deutsch: Wörterbuch*, 9. unveränd. aufl. Wiesbaden: Harrassowitz.
- Leitner, Bettina. 2020. Khuzestan Arabic. In Christopher Lucas & Stefano Manfredi (eds.), *Arabic and contact-induced change*, 115–134. Berlin: Language Science Press.
- Leitner, Bettina. 2021a. Arabic (Khuzestan). In Geoffrey Haig, Donald Stilo, Mahîr C. Doğan & Nils N. Schiborr (eds.), *WOWA — Word Order in Western Asia: A spoken-language-based corpus for investigating areal effects in word order variation*. Accessed on 06.03.2023. Bamberg. <http://multicast.aspra.uni-bamberg.de/resources/wowa/>.
- Leitner, Bettina. 2021b. New perspectives on the urban–rural dichotomy and dialect contact in the Arabic Ḡel̄t dialects in Iraq and South-West Iran. *Languages* 6(4). 198. DOI: 10.3390/languages6040198. <https://www.mdpi.com/2226-471X/6/4/198>.
- Leitner, Bettina. 2022a. Clause-final verbal copulae in Khuzestan Arabic and other Eastern Arabic varieties. In *Proceedings of the 13th International Conference (June 10–13, 2019) [Association Internationale de Dialectologie Arabe (AIDA)]*, 165–175. Kutaisi: Akaki Tsereteli State University.
- Leitner, Bettina. 2022b. *Grammar of Khuzestani Arabic: A spoken variety of South-West Iran*. Studies in Semitic Languages and Linguistics 108. Berlin: Brill.
- Leitner, Bettina, Fady German & Stephan Procházka. 2021. *Lehrbuch des Irakisches-Arabischen: Praxisnaher Einstieg in den Dialekt von Bagdad*. German & Arabic (Semitica Viva 7). Wiesbaden: Harrassowitz.
- Matras, Yaron & Maryam Shabibi. 2007. Grammatical borrowing in Khuzestani Arabic. In Yaron Matras, Georg Bossong & Bernard Comrie (eds.), *Grammatical borrowing in cross-linguistic perspective*, 137–149. Berlin: De Gruyter Mouton.
- Nadjmabadi, Shahnaz Razieh. 2009. The Arab presence on the Iranian coast of the Persian Gulf. In Lawrence G. Potter (ed.), *The Persian Gulf in history*, 129–145. New York: Palgrave Macmillan US. DOI: 10.1057/9780230618459_7.
- Nejatian, Mohammad Hossein. 2015. Ahvaz iv. population, 1956–2011. In *Encyclopaedia Iranica online edition*. New York. <http://www.iranicaonline.org/articles/ahvaz-04-population>.

Bettina Leitner

- Oppenheim, Max Freiherr von. 1967. *Die Beduinen: 4,1: Die Arabischen Stämme in Chūzistān (Iran). Pariastämme in Arabien*. Leipzig: Harrassowitz.
- Procházka, Stephan. 2019. The Arabic dialects of Eastern Anatolia. In Geoffrey Haig & Geoffrey Khan (eds.), *The languages and linguistics of Western Asia: An areal perspective*, 159–189. Berlin: De Gruyter Mouton. DOI: [10.1515/9783110421682-005](https://doi.org/10.1515/9783110421682-005).
- Savory, R.M. 1986. Khūzistān. In Peri J. Bearman, Thierry Bianquis, Clifford E. Bosworth, Emericus J. van Donzel & Wolfhart P. Heinrichs (eds.), *Encyclopaedia of Islam, second edition*, vol. V, 80–81. Leiden: Brill.
- Steingass, Francis Joseph. 2001. *A comprehensive Persian-English dictionary: Including the Arabic words and phrases to be met with in Persian literature being Johnson and Richardson's Persian, Arabic, and English dictionary*. London/New York: Routledge. <https://dsal.uchicago.edu/dictionaries/steingass/>.
- Zarrinkūb, Abd Al-Husain. 1975. The Arab conquest of Iran and its aftermath. In R. N. Frye (ed.), *The Cambridge history of Iran*, vol. 4, 1–56. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press. <https://www.cambridge.org/core/books/cambridge-history-of-iran/6AB6C254CCD1E6D299449CD836500498>.

Chapter 15

Neo-Aramaic in Iran and northeastern Iraq

Paul M. Noorlander^a

^aUniversity of Cambridge

This chapter offers a brief overview of the word order typology of Neo-Aramaic dialects spoken by Jewish and Christian minorities of Iran and northeastern Iraq. A characteristic of the dialects in this region is the contact-induced shift from VO to OV word order under the influence of neighbouring Iranian and Turkic languages. In Iranian Azerbaijan, convergence with Azeri has resulted in an additional increase in Adjective-Noun order, and a different treatment of Addressees from Goals. In many respects, however, the constituent order remains consistent with that of so-called VO languages, such as prepositional marking and Noun-Genitive order.

1 Introduction

Aramaic¹ is a Semitic language that has been attested in writing since the first millennium BC and used to be spoken more widely in West Asia. The modern Aramaic vernaculars in Iran and northeastern Iraq mainly belong to the North Eastern Neo-Aramaic (NENA) subgroup.² Another relevant Neo-Aramaic subgroup, known as Mandaic, spoken by the Mandaeans of southwestern Iran and southern Iraq (e.g. Häberl 2011) lies beyond the scope of this chapter.

¹The orthography has been adapted slightly to normalize transcription across dialects. Khan's (2016) <c>, <j>, <k> correspond to <k>, <g> and <q> here. Panoussi's (1990) <e> and Khan's (2004) <i> both correspond to <ə> here. Garbell (1965b) and Khan's (2008b) <o> and <u> for /ø/ and /y/ in J. Urmi respectively correspond to <ö> and <ü> here. Superscript * indicates the following word or syllable is pronounced with additional velarization or pharyngealization.

²For the closely related Central Neo-Aramaic group in Anatolia, see Noorlander (2024 [Chapter 16, this volume]).

Paul M. Noorlander

NENA comprises a continuum of highly diverse and severely endangered dialects of Jewish (J.) and Christian (C.) communities that used to span an area from western Iran to southeastern Turkey. Most of the Jewish dialects are extinct or border extinction, and only a rapidly diminishing number of elderly speakers—generally known as *kurdim*—reside in Israel today. Apart from their regional identification, e.g. *sənaye* 'people from Səna, i.e. Sanandaj', *urməžnaye* 'people from Urmi, i.e. Urmia', the Christian speakers self-identify as *suraye* 'Syrian Christian' and refer to their language as *surət* 'Syriac'. The Christians belong to various denominations, primarily the Chaldean Catholic Church and the Assyrian Church of the East, which may or may not coincide also with their linguistic and ethnic identification, respectively. Since more recent times, however, the self-identification among native speakers in both the homeland and diaspora as the Assyrian people, i.e. *'aturaye*, has extended beyond tribal, religious and geographic affiliations, and the same holds true for Chaldeans, albeit to a lesser extent. The havoc wreaked by the tumultuous 20th century and the recent atrocities in the name of Islamic State in the spread of the Syrian Civil War into Iraq has resulted in the massive displacement of Aramaic-speaking Christians and the destruction of entire villages. Consequently, the vast majority of speakers no longer reside in their original environment in Iran but as diaspora communities in Northern America (San Diego, California & Detroit, Michigan) and Australia (Sydney). Today the largest Assyrian communities in Iran reside in Urmia and Tehran. The majority of Aramaic speakers in the Middle East, however, is found in Iraqi Kurdistan where the use of the literary *koine* based on the variety of the Urmia county (West Azerbaijan, Iran) has become increasingly widespread and accepted in education, media and sermons.

Figure 1 displays a selection of originally Neo-Aramaic speaking towns in Iran and northeastern Iraq. The Greater Zab River serves as an isogloss for both Jewish and Christian dialects, dividing the Jewish dialects into two major groups: *Lishana Deni*, e.g. Zakho and Duhok, in the west vs. the Trans-Zab Jewish subgroup in the east (Mutzafi 2008), such as Arbel (Erbil, Hewlēr), Urmia (Orumiyyeh) and Sanandaj (Sine). The dialects around the settlement Barzan represent a transition zone. The Trans-Zab cluster has been heavily influenced by contiguous Iranian languages (e.g. Kapeliuk 2004; Noorlander 2014; Khan 2020), in particular those dialects in the southeastern periphery, in Iranian Kurdistan and Kermanshah. The Trans-Zab Jewish dialects in the north also had outposts into southeastern Turkey, namely Başkale and Gawar (Yüksekova; Garbell 1965b). While the Christian dialects form a continuum from Turkey through Iraq to Iran, clusters can also be recognized in Iranian Azerbaijan and the Iraqi provinces of Erbil and Sulaymaniyah, with, however, only one easternmost outpost Sena

15 Neo-Aramaic in Iran and northeastern Iraq

(Sanandaj) in Iranian Kurdistan. The dialects near the Iraq-Iran-Turkey borders such as Diyana (Soran) constitute a transition zone.

In what follows I shall focus on the NENA dialects in the eastern periphery whose statistically dominant ordering of subject, object and verb can be characterized as SOV, and where the post-predicate slot is reserved for Goals (for a definition, see §2.2.2), i.e. SVG. The object placement in these dialects is distinct from the typology of (Central) Semitic word order, as well as the majority of Neo-Aramaic dialects in modern-day Turkey and Iraq (see Noorlander 2024 [Chapter 16, this volume]). This chapter will show, however, that the same basic, i.e. statistically dominant, word order does not hold to the same degree in every dialect for each argument type, in line with the general rationale of the WOWA project.

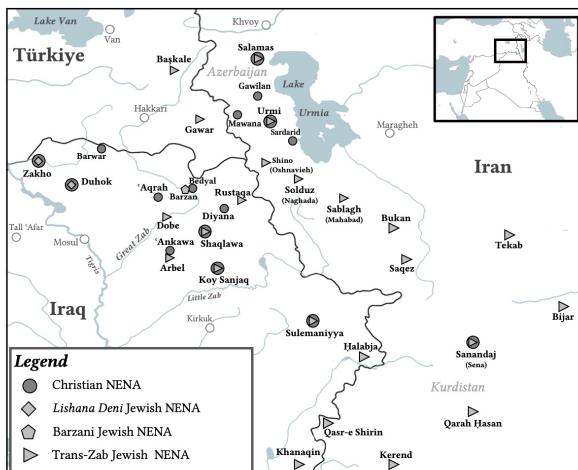


Figure 1: Location of the main Northeastern Neo-Aramaic dialects discussed in this chapter

Table 1 shows a list of the datasets from the WOWA corpus with their sources³ and partial metadata used for the analysis of non-subject arguments and their respective position before or after the predicate in accordance with the framework and coding guidelines of the WOWA databank.⁴ A handful of additional

³Numbered texts and numbered segments are separated by colons, e.g. 25:\$2 means Text 25, Paragraph 2, and page numbers and segments by periods, e.g. 101:\$2, Page 101, Paragraph 2, page numbers and lines by dots, e.g. 101.1, Page 101, Line 1.

⁴See https://multicast.aspra.uni-bamberg.de/resources/wowa/data/_docs/guidelines/wowa_-coding-guidelines.pdf.

Paul M. Noorlander

data were taken from Panoussi (1990: 120–128) for Christian Sanandaj, which is not part of the WOVA corpus. Concerning the J. Urmi dialect based on Khan (2008b) and C. Urmi dialect based on Khan (2016), it is likely that these dialects cannot be taken as representatives of NENA of Iranian Azerbaijan as a whole. Even a cursory glance at the material collected by Garbell (1965b) and Hopkins (1989) suggests that there seems to be more variation, and the same holds true for the Jewish and Christian dialects of Salmas documented by Duval (2009) and Tsereteli (1976). The final results from other texts could, therefore, be different and approximate more closely the typology of the NENA varieties elsewhere.

Hopkins (1999), Khan (2012a, 2019a,b), and Noorlander (2021: 100–206) provide general overviews of the Trans-Zab Jewish NENA dialects, especially in Iran. Gutman (2018)⁵ provides a comparative overview of Noun-Genitive orders, Noorlander & Molin (2022) an overview of Verb-Object and Verb-Oblique, Khan (2020: 398–401) that of Auxiliary-Verb and Verb-Object. Most grammatical descriptions do not discuss word order in detail, except for Khan's voluminous grammars (Khan 2008b, 2016) and Coghill (2018), though, apart from Molin (2021) and Noorlander & Molin (2022), no statistics are provided. Nevertheless, for virtually all NENA dialects considered here, which pattern constitutes the basic word order is largely unquestioned, except for Christian Urmi and Sardarid (see §2.2.1).

The following sections provide a general overview of word order for which a synopsis is offered in Table 2, where plus (+) corresponds to placement after the head, and minus (–) corresponds to placement before the head, respectively. Word order configurations in NENA, however, are sensitive to pragmatic effects not coded in the WOVA corpus, e.g. any argument can undergo focalization to the immediately pre-verbal position or topicalization to clause-initial position (e.g. Noorlander & Molin 2022: 243–245; the difference between definite and indefinite arguments is coded, however, see §2.2.1.). For our purpose, word order patterns of the clause will be identified on the basis of frequency, as discussed in Haig et al. (2024 [Chapter 1, this volume]), in line with (Dryer 2007: 73–78). Finally, we use the basic surface-syntax-based parameters coded for the WOVA corpus rather than pragmatic or formal criteria of movement.

⁵See especially p. 143 for J. Zakho, pp. 220–230 for J. Urmi, pp. 232–234 for J. Sanandaj, p. 291 for Kurdish. Compare also Cohen (2012) on Jewish Zakho.

15 *Neo-Aramaic in Iran and northeastern Iraq*

Table 1: NENA datasets from the WOWA corpus discussed in this chapter

| Doculect | Speakers | Total tokens | Analysed tokens | Source |
|-------------|----------|--------------|-----------------|---|
| J. Sanandaj | 4 | 2837 | 1184 | Noorlander 2022c based on Khan 2009 |
| J. Urmī | 1 | 923 | 502 | Noorlander & Stilo 2022 based on Khan 2008b: 398–439 |
| C. Urmī | 2 | 865 | 724 | Noorlander 2022b based on Khan 2016: Texts A2, A39 |
| C. Shaqlawa | 3 | 524 | 444 | Noorlander 2022a based on Khan et al. 2022: Texts 4, 23 and 35 |

Table 2: Overview of dominant configurations

| Doculect | VO | VAddr | VGoal | NGen | NAdj | AdjSt | CopPred |
|-------------|----|-------|-------|------|------|-------|---------|
| C. Barwar | + | + | + | + | + | + | +/- |
| C. Shaqlawa | - | + | + | + | + | +/- | +/- |
| C. Urmī | - | - | + | + | + | +/- | +/- |
| C. Sanandaj | - | + | + | + | + | (?) | - |
| J. Sanandaj | - | + | + | + | + | +/- | - |
| J. Urmī | - | - | + | + | +/- | - | - |

2 Word order profile

2.1 Noun phrases

2.1.1 Determiner/noun

Across all doculects of NENA considered here, Demonstrative-Numeral-Noun order predominates, e.g.

Paul M. Noorlander

- (1) Demonstrative-Numeral-Noun

C. Urmi (Khan 2016: A55:§7)

'annə tré 'ojaxə

DEM.PL two clan.PL

‘these two clans’

Noun-Demonstrative-Adjective order also occurs, particularly in the expressions of ‘the elder’ or ‘the eldest’:

- (2) Noun-Adjective-Demonstrative-Adjective

C. Urmi (Khan 2016: A1:§29)

kačala 'asli 'o 'gur-a

bald.person.M.SG original DEM.M.SG big-.M.SG

‘the elder, original, baldhead’

2.1.2 Noun/attribute

Attributes, such as adjective phrases, follow the head noun they modify, e.g.

- (3) Noun-Adjective

J. Sanandaj (Khan 2009: B:§58)

knəš-ta rab-ta

synagogue-SG.F big-SG.F

‘a big synagogue’

- (4) Noun-Adjective

C. Sanandaj (Panoussi 1990: 125,§6)

şoma rab-a

fast.M.SG big-.M.SG

‘the great fast’

- (5) Noun-Modifier-Adjective

C. Urmi (Khan 2016: A42: §34)

brata 'uxča šapár-ta

girl.SG.F such beautiful-SG.F

‘such a beautiful girl’

Adjective-Noun order, e.g. (6), if tolerated, is pragmatically restricted—generally increasing the attribute’s emotional significance—and its higher rate of occurrence is area-specific, namely specific to Iranian Azerbaijan, see §3.2.5 for discussion.

- (6) Modifier-Adjective-Noun
 C. Urmi (Khan 2016: A3:§81)
'uxča šapira qala
 such **beautiful**-M.SG **voice**M.SG
 'such a **beautiful** voice'

The primary adjectives denoting relative size, i.e. 'small' and 'big', tend to remain closer to the head noun (cf. Khan 2016II: 44):

- (7) J. Koy Sanjaq (Mutzafi 2004: 202.§26)
xa belá ruww-á jwan
 a house.M.SG big-M.SG beautiful
 'a **beautiful, large** house'
- (8) J. Sulemaniyya (Khan 2004: R:§144)
bela ruww-á hula'-á
 house.M.SG big-M.SG Jewish-M.SG
 'a **big Jewish** house'

Genitive constructions show Noun-Genitive order (see Gutman 2018, especially Chapter 4, for an overview and recent analysis of NENA genitive constructions). Prepositions similarly also serve as heads, e.g. J. Koy Sanjaq *qam-əd ʔod=belá* lit. front-of of=house 'in front of the house' (Mutzafi 2004: 175). Juxtaposition can also suffice, e.g. C. Diyana-Zariwaw *šəmma sawun-i* lit. name grandfather-my 'the name of my grandfather' (Napiorkowska 2015: 315).

- (9) Noun-Genitive
 C. Sardarid (Younansardaroud 2001: 13:§5)
šəmm-əd d-o naša
 name-CSTR GEN-DEM.M.SG man.M.SG
 'the name of that man'
- (10) Noun-Genitive
 J. Koy Sanjaq (Mutzafi 2004: 1B:§18)
šułtan-əd ʔod=ħaywan-é
 king-CSTR LINK=animal-PL
 'the king of the animals'

Genitive-Noun order is restricted, also known as the emotive genitive,⁶ intensifying the speaker's emotional attitude, e.g.

⁶See Hopkins (2009), Cohen (2012: 100–102), Gutman (2018: 143, 182,315).

Paul M. Noorlander

(11) Genitive-Noun

C. Diyana (Napiorkowska 2015: 18.1:§35)

ala *munix-əd* *xəmyan-i*

God.M.SG give.rest.PTCP.M.SG-CSTR uncle.M.SG-my

‘my late uncle’

Other constituents can intervene between head and genitive, as shown in (12a). Pronominal possessors are suffixed directly to the head or expressed by a following independent genitive, e.g. (12b).

(12) a. Coordination, Noun-Genitive

C. Diyana (Napiorkowska 2015: 18.7:§16)

šop-əd *'aqle* *'u* *'əd=xzür-u*

print.PL-CSTR foot.PL and LINK=pig.PL-their

‘their (lit. the) footprints and also [those] of their piglets’

b. free pronoun, Noun-Genitive

C. Diyana (Napiorkowska 2015: 18.6:§7)

dost-əd *did-i*

friend.M.SG-CSTR GEN-my

‘a friend of **mine**’

2.2 Verbal complements

2.2.1 Object/verb

While Verb-Object predominates in NENA dialects, the dialects in Iran and north-eastern Iraq generally show Object-Verb order. Earlier treatments of the Christian dialects in Iran identified no primary word order on the basis of frequency (Younansardaroud 2001: 209; Khan 2020: 398–401). As shown in Table 3, when lumping all types of direct objects together, the statistically dominant order overall in the NENA doculects considered here is OV. Table 3 gives the general numerical data for direct object placement in the NENA doculects in Iran as well as C. Shaqlawa (NE Iraq), excluding *wh*-elements.

Different types of **object**, however, should be considered in their own right, drawing on the distinctions made in the WOWA data (also possessums, see §3.2.1). Table 4 gives the statistics for direct objects divided in accordance with the additional variables of definiteness and pronominal categories coded in the WOWA corpus, which are illustrated in (13–14). ‘**Pronoun**’, here, includes personal and demonstratives, both bare and prepositional, such as (13b) and (14b), but excludes

15 Neo-Aramaic in Iran and northeastern Iraq

Table 3: Rate of post-predicate (PP) objects

| Doculect | Object | |
|-------------|----------|-----|
| | <i>n</i> | PP |
| C. Urmi | 258 | 16% |
| C. Shaqlawa | 108 | 12% |
| J. Sanandaj | 386 | 5% |
| C. Sanandaj | 50 | 4% |
| J. Urmi | 172 | 1% |

indefinite and reflexive pronouns, which are subsumed under 'Other', such as (13c) and (14c). The number of pronominal tokens is, however, relatively low, especially in the case of C. Shaqlawa and C. Sanandaj. It is thus not possible to draw any conclusions about these two dialects without more tokens. Moreover, bound pronominal objects are more common than their independent counterparts in NENA (see Noorlander & Molin 2022).

- (13) a. Nominal definite (flagged), Object-Verb

J. Sanandaj (Khan 2009: A:§18)

'ay broná həl-d-ay bratá gbe-Ø
DEM.SG boy.M.SG DOM-GEN-DEM.SG girl.SG.F IND.want-A.3SG.M
'The boy loves the girl.'

- b. Pronominal, Object-Verb

J. Sanandaj (Khan 2009: C:§3)

'aná 'ea šmi-li mən Bahrám
I this heard.PFV-A.1SG from Bahram
'I heard this from Bahram.'

- c. Other, Object-Verb

J. Sanandaj (Khan 2009: A:§48)

kəl-e kalw-i-wa-le
all-of.it.SG.M write-A.3PL-PST-O.3SG.M
'They would write everything down.'

- (14) a. Nominal indefinite, Verb-Object

C. Urmi (Khan 2016: A39:§42)

Ø-mayy-ət 'raba goz-ə
SBJV-bring-A.2SG.M many walnut-PL
'You should bring many walnuts.'

Paul M. Noorlander

- b. Pronominal (flagged), Object-Verb
 C. Urmī (Khan 2016: A2:§25)
 'atən **ka-diyyi** bət-⁺qaṭl-ət.
 you.SG.M DOM-GEN.1SG FUT-kill-A.2MS
 'You shall kill me.'
- c. Other, Object-Verb
 C. Urmī (Khan 2016: A2:§35)
gan-o ⁺rapp-a-la ⁺al-sepa
 REFL-3SG.F threw.PFV-O.3SG.F-A.3SG.F on-sword.SG.M
 'She threw herself onto the sword.'

Table 4: Rate of post-predicate (PP) objects divided by definiteness and argument type

| Doculect | Indefinite | | Definite | | Nominal | PP | Nominal | PP |
|-------------|------------|---------|-----------------|----------|-----------------|----|----------|-----|
| | Doculect | Nominal | Other | Definite | | | | |
| C. Urmī | <i>n</i> | PP | <i>n</i> | PP | <i>n</i> | PP | <i>n</i> | PP |
| C. Urmī | 49 | 49% | 19 | 16% | 153 | 8% | 37 | 8% |
| C. Shaqlawa | 45 | 13% | 7 | 29% | 49 | 8% | 7 | 29% |
| J. Urmī | 65 | 0% | 13b | 8% | 87 | 1% | 13 | 0% |
| C. Sanandaj | 32 | 3% | — | — | 18 | 6% | (1 | 0%) |
| J. Sanandaj | 244 | 3% | 20 ⁷ | 5% | 82 ⁸ | 7% | 18 | 0% |

All else being equal, Table 4 demonstrates that OV order has grammaticalized completely in the Jewish doculects as well as Christian Sanandaj. J. Urmī, as represented in Khan (2008b), seems to have the most rigid kind of OV. It is possible, however, that Jewish NENA doculects of Iran collected by Garbell (1965b) and Hopkins (1989), although predominately OV, contain a higher rate of post-predicate Os than Khan (2008b). The higher rate of independent pronouns in Iranian Azerbaijan, namely J. and C. Urmī, may well be due to contact with Azeri. If OV order was completely grammaticalized in Christian Urmī, we would expect a rate similar to that in Jewish Urmī. Definiteness, however, is a major factor in object placement in C. Urmī. An overall decrease in the rate of post-predicate

⁷This also includes arguments bound as a possessor to the nominal element of light verb constructions.

⁸The four tokens with the idiomatic phrase 'May God give X rest' with VO order in J. Sanandaj have been excluded here (see Noorlander & Molin 2022).

15 Neo-Aramaic in Iran and northeastern Iraq

objects can be observed: the indefinite nominals and other pronouns are more likely to occur in pre-verbal position than, respectively, the definite nominals and personal and demonstrative pronouns. This also seems to hold true for C. Shaqlawa, but to a lesser extent still, i.e. only 13% of the indefinite objects are post-predicate.

2.2.2 Verb/goal

The endpoint of motion verbs and caused motion verbs, such as ‘to come’ and ‘to bring’ respectively, are subsumed under *Goal* (abbreviated G) here, while *Recipient* (R) refers to the human endpoint of a transfer like ‘to give’ and *Addressee* (Addr) to that of verbs of speech, e.g. ‘to say’, ‘to ask’, ‘to talk’. *Beneficiaries* (Ben), i.e. the indirect participant who is advantaged or disadvantaged by the action, have also been added here for completeness’ sake. These argument classes are illustrated in (15–18) for C. Sanandaj. Table 5 displays the statistics resulting from the relevant datasets, which comprises all pronouns and full nominals. Here, the tokens from Younansardaroud (2001) for the dialect of Sardarid have also been added.

- (15) a. Goal, motion verb
 C. Sanandaj (Panoussi 1990: 1:§4)
say arxe
 IMP.go.SG.M mill.PL
 ‘Go to the mill!’
- b. Goal, caused motion verb
 C. Sanandaj (Panoussi 1990: 2:§14)
tam-dāre-Ø-le gaw ṣanoq-aw
 PST.PFV-put-A.3SG.M-O.3SG.M in chest-his
 ‘He placed him in the wooden chest.’
- (16) Addressee
 C. Sanandaj (Panoussi 1990: 4:§13)
mere tlas-a gor-əd baxta
 said.PFV.PST.3SG.M to-3SG.F husband.SG.M-CSTR woman.SG.F
 ‘The woman’s husband said to her..’

Paul M. Noorlander

(17) Recipient

- C. Sanandaj (Panoussi 1990: 3:§16)
tm-ēw-án-wa-lu tlas-ox
 PST.PFV-give-A.1SG.M-PST-O.3PL to-2SG.M
 ‘I had given them **to you**.’

(18) Beneficiary

- C. Sanandaj (Panoussi 1990: 2:§2)
ayət ta kalba hādax gī-wəd-lox
 you.SG.M for dog.SG.M such ANT-did-A.2SG.M
 ‘You have done such a thing **for a dog**.’

Table 5: Rate of post-predicate (PP) Goals, Recipients and Addressees (nominal and pronominal)

| Doculect | G | | R | | Addr | | Ben | |
|-------------|----------|-----|-----------------|------|-----------------|-----|----------|------|
| | <i>n</i> | PP | <i>n</i> | PP | <i>n</i> | PP | <i>n</i> | PP |
| J. Urmi | 59 | 86% | 19 | 11% | 55 | 33% | 19 | 32% |
| C. Urmi | 129 | 92% | 11 | 73% | 37 | 24% | 7 | 43% |
| C. Sardarid | — | — | 11 ⁹ | 100% | 5 ¹⁰ | 0% | — | — |
| C. Shaqlawa | 44 | 91% | 28 | 96% | 31 | 97% | 18 | 100% |
| C. Sanandaj | 44 | 84% | 4 | 75% | 5 | 80% | 11 | 55% |
| J. Sanandaj | 207 | 91% | 38 | 87% | 32 | 72% | 16 | 81% |

These data are consistent with the findings in Noorlander & Molin (2022). The post-verbal position is preferred for Goals across all dialects, and the same holds true for Recipients and Addressees in Iranian Kurdistan, here represented by the Jewish and Christian dialects of Sanandaj. The handful of tokens in C. Sanandaj are relatively low, but suggest a typology similar to that of its Jewish counterpart, except in the case of beneficiaries, which in general do not seem to betray a clear tendency. It is far more common for Addressees than for Recipients to be placed before the verb in the Christian NENA dialects of Urmi and Sardarid (see §3.2.3 for the areal significance of this Addressee/Recipient split), even though Recipients and Addressees are generally marked by the same preposition *qa-*, e.g.

⁹Younansardaroud 2001: 11:§5, 13:§1, 13:§2, 15:§3, 17:§1

¹⁰Younansardaroud 2001: 9:§3, 15:§4, 16:§2, 2x 16:§3, 2x 16:§5, 2x 16:§6, 17:§8, 17:§10

15 Neo-Aramaic in Iran and northeastern Iraq

- (19) a. Verb-Recipient

C. Sardarid (Younansardaroud 2001: 17:§10)

'axnan xa ton čapač jarāy Ø-yav-ax qa dar⁺bar
we a ton sawdust must SBJV-give-1PL to court

'We must give a ton of sawdust to the court.'

- b. Addressee-Verb

C. Sardarid (Younansardaroud 2001: 15:§3)

'Šāh ²Abbās qa vazir mār=ələ
Shah Abbas to vizier GRD.say=COP.3SG.M

'Shah Abbas says to the vizier...'

In comparison to objects, the placement of the aforementioned endpoint roles turns out to be more flexible overall. In the rare occasion that a ditransitive clause contains two full nominal objects, each argument class typically occurs at either side of the verb: the Theme, like the O, before the verb, but the Recipient, like Goals, after it, and thus OVR as illustrated in (19a). The same order, i.e. OVR, is also common in most Kurdish varieties (Haig 2022). This constituent order is cross-linguistically rare, as most languages reflect a preference to place both arguments at either side (Haspelmath 2015).

In the Jewish Urmi doculect (Khan 2008a), the pre-verbal position of O and R as well as Addressees is apparently the norm. The relative position of the Theme (O) and the Recipient (R) in a ditransitive clause is not entirely fixed, e.g.

- (20) a. Recipient-Theme-Verb

J. Urmi (Khan 2008a: §122)

ba-⁺yal-i ¹ruzi fərya höl-Ø
to-children-my provision abundant IMP.give-SG

- b. Theme-Recipient-Verb

J. Urmi (Khan 2008a: §113)

¹ruzi fərya ba-⁺yal-i höl-Ø
provision abundant to-children-my IMP.give-SG
'Give abundant provision to my children.'

The most common order for Khan (2008a), however, is ROV, especially for pronominal Recipients. A contrastive or topical O may precede the R, and immediately pre-verbal placement may add narrow focus to the Recipient (see also Noorlander & Molin 2022: 244–246).

This notwithstanding, the dominant order in the majority of Trans-Zab Jewish dialects is OVR. Statistics based on others doculects of Jewish NENA in Iran

Paul M. Noorlander

approximate more closely the typology of that of Jewish varieties in Iranian Kurdistan. Texts in [Garbell \(1965b\)](#) and [Hopkins \(1989\)](#) contain far more cases of post-verbal Recipients and [Addressees](#) than our J. Urmi dialect here ([Khan 2008a](#)),¹¹ as illustrated in (21) below, which suggests VR and VAddr are the more frequent position among Trans-Zab Jewish NENA dialects as a whole.

- (21) a. Theme-Verb-Recipient

J. Urmi ([Garbell 1965b](#): 149.18)

əsrá dehwé hwəl-le ba d-o mar
ten gold.PL gave.PFV-A.3SG.M to GEN-DEM.SG owner.CSTR
xmará
donkey.SG.M

‘He gave ten pieces of gold to the donkey owner.’

- b. Verb-Addressee

J. Urmi ([Garbell 1965b](#): 149.20)

mar-a ba d-o görá
said.PFV-A.3SFG to GEN-DEM.SG man.SG.M

‘He said to that man..’

2.2.3 Become/complement

In contradistinction to direct objects but similarly to Goals, the final state of change-of-state verbs, such as ‘to become’, ‘to turn into’, typically follows the predicate (e.g. [Khan 2008a](#): 323), as shown in (22). Under this class one may also subsume the complements of ‘to name’ and ‘to fill’, although, here, the object complement does not represent the final outcome of the primary object, but rather specifies the content of the verb. Nevertheless, the pre-verbal position seems to be more frequent due to language contact (see §3.1.1). The complement can also be treated as a Recipient in J. Urmi and J. Sanandaj and flagged as such (see [Noorlander & Molin 2022](#): 251–252).

- (22) a. Become-Complement

J. Solduz ([Garbell 1965b](#): 209)

pra xdər-e dehwé
earth.SG.M became.PFV-S.3SG.M gold.PL
‘The earth turned into pieces of gold.’

¹¹[Khan](#)’s (2008a) texts are based on one male speaker, as the number of speakers available was much smaller than at the time of [Garbell \(1965b\)](#), who was able to consult more speakers.

b. Object-Verb-Complement

J. Solduz (Garbell 1965b: 231)

tunnú xurjine *^tmaly-i-la* *dehwé*
 both saddle.bag.PL filled.PFV-O.3PL-A.3SG.F gold.PL
 'She filled both saddle bags with pieces of gold.'

With the verbs 'to say' and 'to make', the double object construction shifts the semantics to that of 'to name X Y' and 'to make X into Y'. Thus, with the ambivalent verb (C.) (h)wd or (J.) (h)wl 'to make', the post-verbal placement of the object correlates with its two-argument valence and the semantics of the resulting condition, i.e. 'to turn into', rather than the effect of a single argument verb, i.e. 'to make' (Noorlander & Molin 2022: 252–253); contrast *kăbăb* (23a) with (23b) below.

(23) a. Object-Verb

J. Sanandaj (Khan 2009: B:§35)

kăbăb *kol-i-wa*
 kebab.SG.M make-A.3PL-PST
 'They made kebab.'

b. Verb-Complement

J. Sanandaj (Khan 2009: B:§35)

kol-í-wa-le *kăbăb*
 make-A.3PL-PST-O.3SG.M kebab.SG.M
 'They made it into kebab.'

2.2.4 Other obliques

Here, obliques are confined to constituents related to *Place*, such as the locative complement of position verbs like 'to sit', e.g. (24), and the *Source* of motion, e.g. (25). They are more likely post-predicate than objects, as given in Table 6 for the same datasets, which comprises both lexical and pronominal arguments. In Table 6, we observe that the rate of post-predicate locatives is higher in the Christian varieties overall and in Christian Urmi especially, whereas the Jewish varieties show a stronger verb-final preference. Thus, even in C. Sanandaj, the rate of post-predicate Oblique is high, while the dialect otherwise patterns almost exactly like its Jewish counterpart. The relatively high rates of post-predicate Obliques suggests a general tendency for local case relations (Source, Place, Goal) to occur after the predicate, at least more frequently than objects. This is matched by similar findings from Balochi, see Nourzaei & Haig (2024 [Chapter 4, this volume]).

Paul M. Noorlander

(24) Place/Locative

C. Sanandaj (Panoussi 1990: 4:§11)

ay xōr-e gāw mezgəd ītīw-a =le
 DEM.SG friend.SG.M-his in mosque seated.PTCP-SG.M =COP.3SG.M
 'That friend of his is sitting in the mosque.'

(25) Source/Ablative

C. Sanandaj (Panoussi 1990: 3:§11)

kod yōma gaz m-šāqāl-Ø-wa-le mən šūqa
 each day honey.SG.M FUT-take-A.3SG.M-PST-O.3SG.M from market
 'Every day he bought Turkish honey from the market.'

Table 6: Rate of post-predicate (PP) place and source constituents (both nominal and pronominal)

| Doculect | Place | | Source | |
|-------------|----------|-----|----------|------|
| | <i>n</i> | PP | <i>n</i> | PP |
| C. Urmī | 64 | 81% | 39 | 44% |
| C. Sanandaj | 11 | 64% | 11 | 100% |
| C. Shaqlawa | 12 | 58% | 7 | 57% |
| J. Urmī | 40 | 40% | 19 | 21% |
| J. Sanandaj | 64 | 39% | 28 | 14% |

2.3 Other predicate types

2.3.1 Copulas

Post-predicate copula placement correlates with verb-final syntax (e.g. Dryer 2007: 91; see §2.4.2, for the use of the copula in verbal clauses), and constitutes a typological trait of the languages in the area (e.g. Matras 2009: 270; Haig 2017: 404–405). The syntax of the copula in main clauses in the Trans-Zab Jewish dialects differs from that in the Christian dialects in the same region (Khan 2012b). Post-predicate placement is almost categorical in these Jewish dialects, with the only exception being certain modal contexts, consistent with an overall higher rate of OV in these Jewish dialects. The post-predicate position is favoured but less fixed in the Christian dialects.

NENA dialects generally distinguish between two copula bases:

15 Neo-Aramaic in Iran and northeastern Iraq

- (a) pronominal copulas, e.g. C. Urmi *'ina* ‘they are’, J. Urmi *'ilu* ‘they are’;
- (b) verbal copulas, i.e. *(h)wy* or *(h)vy* ‘to be’, e.g. C. Urmi *'avi* ‘they may be’, J. Urmi *haweni* ‘they are’.

Other particles can be added to either base to express negation, past tense, subordination, and deixis, depending on the dialect. Importantly, the latter is excluded from this discussion, since the deictic (or presentative) copula has a fixed pre-predicate position throughout (e.g. Molin 2021: 227–247).

When the copula is placed after a constituent, there is a strong tendency for the copula to undergo cliticization and attachment to the immediately preceding element, for which reason I shall distinguish between bound, i.e. enclitic, and unbound copulas.

Post-predicate, thus often bound, copulas are used in present and/or past tense affirmative clauses, e.g.

- (26) a. Predicate-Copula, present (bound)
 J. Koy Sanjaq (Mutzafi 2004: 1A:§1)
 'oni=š be'erəx tremma nafar-e =lu
 they=ADD approximately three.hundred person-PL =COP.3PL
 ‘They are about three hundred people.’
- b. Predicate-Copula, past
 J. Koy Sanjaq (Mutzafi 2004: 1A:§1)
 kullú 'oni xet mšəlmān-é we-lū
 all those others Muslim-PL COP.PST-3PL
 ‘All those others were Muslims.’
- (27) a. Predicate-Copula, present (bound)
 C. Koy Sanjaq (Askar 2021: 215.§10)
 šm-ew šúm-ün =ile ba äşəl
 name.SG.M-his Simon =COP.3SG.M in origin
 ‘His name is actually Simon.’
- b. Predicate-Copula, past
 C. Koy Sanjaq (Askar 2021: 220.§25)
 ana dkan-əd osta akram yən-wa
 I shop-of artisan Akram COP.1SG.M-PST
 ‘I was in the artisan shop Akram.’

In deontic contexts, especially in idiomatic wishes, Copula-Predicate order is used in all dialects, e.g.

Paul M. Noorlander

(28) Copula-Predicate

J. Shino (Garbell 1965b: 231.7)

**şultaná Ø-hawe-Ø basim-a*
king.SG.M SBJV-be-3SG.M healthy-SG.M
'May the king be blessed!'

(29) Copula-Predicate

C. Urmī (Khan 2016: A2:§4)

malka Ø-’av-ət basim-a
king.SG.M SBJV-be-2SG.M healthy-SG.M
'May the king be well!'

All copula forms, whether bound or unbound, follow the predicate in all Jewish dialects of Iran and most Jewish dialects of northeastern Iraq, except in these deontic contexts.

The copula placement is more free in the Christian varieties, and the Jewish dialects in the Erbil region. Moreover, the Trans-Zab Jewish dialects in Iraq differ in negative copula placement. It can either follow or precede the predicate in J. Arbel (Khan 1999: 320), while the negative copula follows the nominal predicate in J. Koy Sanjaq (Mutzaifi 2004: 107) and J. Sulemaniyya (Khan 2004: 254), as it does in the Jewish dialects of Iran. Copula syntax is summarized in Table 7 by contrasting Christian and Jewish Urmī.

Table 7: Copula placement in Jewish and Christian Urmī

| | C. Urmī | NENA!J. Urmī |
|-------------------------|----------------------------|-----------------------------|
| 'My son is hungry.' | <i>bruni kpína=la</i> | <i>bröní kpiná=ile</i> |
| 'He is hungry.' | <i>kpína=la</i> | <i>kpiná=ile</i> |
| 'I am a king.' | <i>’ana xa malk=ən</i> | <i>’ana xa *şültane=len</i> |
| 'Who is your friend?' | <i>xorux mánı=la</i> | <i>*barüxox mǎni=le</i> |
| 'My son is not hungry.' | <i>bruni lela kpina</i> | <i>bröní kpiná lewe</i> |
| 'He is/IS hungry.' | <i>’ilə kpina</i> | — |
| 'I am/AM a king.' | <i>’ana ’ivən xa malka</i> | — |

The unbound copula freely occurs before the predicate in the dialects of Iranian Azerbaijan, and similarly also other dialects in Iraq such as C. Diyana (Napiorkowska 2015), as illustrated in (30a), instead of being cliticized to the predicate, e.g. (30b). The cliticization of the copula to the *subject* constituent, such as

garda ‘net’ in **ham gárdə=la* **allo* ‘also a net is on her’ (Khan 2016: II: 289), is rare. The complement occurs after the copula in 16/96 (17%) cases in the C. Urmī doculect and 11/86 (13%) cases in the C. Shaqlawa doculect, which, as expected, occurs more frequently than in the J. Sanandaj doculect, which only has 5/215 (2%) cases. Copula-Predicate order with a lexical subject, as shown in (30a), can be analysed as a cleft sentence, i.e. ‘I am (the one who is) the vizir of your father’, which is used in contexts of identification and specification and the expression of properties that are permanent or contra-presuppositional (Khan 2016: II: 158–162).

(30) a. Copula-Predicate

C. Urmī (Khan 2016: A2:§25)

'ana 'in-va vazzir-ət bab-ət diyy-ux

I COP.1SG-PST vizier-CSTR father-CSTR GEN-2SG.M

‘I was the vizier of your father.’

b. Predicate-Copula

C. Urmī (Khan 2016: A2:§25)

'ana 'atxa naš=ən-va

I such man.SG.M=COP.1SG-PST

‘I was such a man.’

As compared in (31) and (32), while the affirmative copula tends to be post-predicate, the negative copula is generally pre-predicate in Christian dialects, contrast *=la* ‘she is’ and *lewa* ‘she is not’ in (31) and *=ən* ‘I am’ and *lən* ‘I am not’ in (32).

(31) a. Copula-Predicate

C. Shaqlawa (Khan et al. 2022: Text 23:§28)

har máre-wən bráte =la

every.time say.INF-1SG.M girl.SG.F =COP.3SG

‘I keep saying it is a girl.’

b. Predicate-Copula

C. Shaqlawa (Khan et al. 2022: Text 23:§28)

har máre-wat lewa brata

every.time say.INF-2SG.F NEG.COP.3SG.F girl.SG.F

‘You keep saying it is not a girl.’

Paul M. Noorlander

- (32) a. Copula-Predicate
- C. Urmi (Khan 2016: A43:§15)
- 'ána=da lēn tliqa yala*
I=ADD NEG.COP.1SG lost child
'I am not a lost child.'
- b. Predicate-Copula
- C. Urmi (Khan 2016: A43:§15)
- ána=da brūn-malk =ən*
I=ADD son-king =COP.1SG
'I am the son of a king.'

Finally, the Christian dialects may have a special copula that fuses the relativizer *d* with the copula, e.g. *d* 'that/which/who' + *'ile* 'is' > *t-ile* 'that/which/who is', e.g.

- (33) Copula-Predicate
- C. Shaqlawa (Khan et al. 2022: Text 4:§42)
- ṣāṭāne =le t-ile xor-a*
devil.SG.M =COP.3SG REL-COP.3SG.M friend.SG.M-her
'It is the devil who is her friend.'

2.3.2 Auxiliaries

The combination of Verb-Auxiliary and Object-Verb ordering is considered to be a form of harmonic word order (e.g. Dryer 1992: 100), since both are considered head-final in the standard assumption that the auxiliary constitutes the head of auxiliary in content verb pairings, since it bears verbal inflectional properties pertinent to the clause. The copula can serve as an auxiliary in NENA dialects, expressing several TAM properties as well as negation together with the non-finite verb. The syntax of the copula as an auxiliary in a verbal predicate can sometimes differ from its syntax in a non-verbal predicate.

First of all, as expected, the Object-Verb-Auxiliary pattern of the copula is what we find in the Jewish Trans-Zab dialects, as illustrated in (34a). Future and modal auxiliaries, such as **msy* 'be able' in (34b), show Auxiliary-Object-Verb order in-at least historically-same subject modal complements.

15 Neo-Aramaic in Iran and northeastern Iraq

- (34) a. Object-Verb-Auxiliary

J. Urmī (Garbell 1965b: 194)

balki xa danká mən-nu əl-d-o araqčón
 maybe a CLF from-3PL DOM-GEN-DEM.SG cap.SG.M
xəzy-á Ø-hawe-la
 seen.PTCP-O.SG.M SBJV-be-A.3SG.F

‘Maybe one of them would have seen that cap.’

- b. Auxiliary-Object-Verb

J. Urmī (Garbell 1965b: 194)

**məssé *maé m-mešá *palé-t-Ø*
 can.3SG.M water.PL in-forest.SG.F take.out.SBJV-A.3SG.M

‘He would be able to find water in the forest.’

In northeastern Iraq, however, the negative copula, which functions as a negative auxiliary with certain verbal forms, always precedes the content verb in J. Koy Sanjaq, such as *lewan* in (35), and contrasts with its post-predicate placement as a copula (Mutzafi 2004: 108) in §2.3.1. Other Trans-Zab Jewish dialects do not make use of this, but place a negator (*la*) before the verb phrase, such as Neg-V-Aux in (36).

- (35) Object-Negative Auxiliary-Verb

J. Koy Sanjaq (Mutzafi 2004: 2A:§4)

'ixalá le-wan xəl-tá
 food.SG.M NEG-COP.A.1SG.F eaten.PTCP-A.SG.F

‘I have not eaten any food.’

- (36) Object-Negator-Verb-Auxiliary

J. Sulemaniyya (hypothetical example based on Khan 2004)

xalá la-xəlte =yan
 food.SG.M NEG-eaten.PTCP-A.SG.F =COP.A.1SG.F

‘I have not eaten any food.’

The Christian NENA varieties, in turn, favour Auxiliary-Verb order throughout, as illustrated in (37), without affecting the Object-Verb order. C. Urmī could be characterised as ‘VO’ in light of the pre-verbal auxiliary placement in contrast to the Verb-Auxiliary order in others dialects where OV predominates throughout (Khan 2020: 399). There is no a priori reason, however, to consider the position of the auxiliary more ‘basic’ than that of the object in the manifestation of Aux-OV order, cf. also Dutch and German, which also exhibit Aux-OV order in

Paul M. Noorlander

main clauses and are generally considered V-final in formal approaches to word order. See also Stilo (2015: 345) on Aux-OV in same subject ‘want’ complements in Colloquial Armenian and Azeri; Aux-OV is also the norm for Kurdish (see Mohammadirad 2024 [Chapter 9, this volume]).

- (37) a. Auxiliary-Object-Verb
 C. Urmī (Khan 2016: B17L§4)
'axnan k-av-ax-va makkə praxa
 we IND-be-1PL-PST maize.PL hull.INF
 ‘while we were hulling the maize’
- b. Auxiliary-Object-Verb
 C. Urmī (Khan 2016: A16:§3)
lá-⁺ams-ən id-i yavv-ən-na
 NEG-can-S.1SG.M hand.SG.F-my give-A.1SG.M-O.3SG.F
 ‘I cannot give my hand.’

2.3.3 Complement of non-finite verbs

Finally, the complement of non-finite verb follows the syntax of the complement of finite verbs. Thus, phasal verbs like ‘to begin’ can combine with a nominal or non-finite form of the verb, such as an infinitive or gerund, respectively. If the nominal/non-finite form of the verb had followed the common pattern of Noun-Attribute, the order would have been Verb-Complement, as would be expected for the majority of NENA dialects. However, in the Trans-Zab Jewish dialects, if the complement corresponds with an object, it also betrays the same syntax, and is thus placed before the non-finite verb, as shown in 38a. The placement of the prefixal preposition *b-* before the complement *?ərbe* ‘sheep’ of the infinitive *zwana* ‘to sell’ suggests a type of compounding or noun incorporation strategy, i.e. ‘He began sheep-selling’. Interestingly, the same order occurs in C. Urmī, as shown in 38b, although here the preposition *b-* always attaches to the verbal form. How common this is among the other NENA dialects in the region requires further investigation.

- (38) a. Object-Verb(Non-finite)
 J. Arbel (Khan 1999: S:§72)
bde-le bə-?ərbe zwana
 begin.PFV-A.3MSG at-sheep.PL selling.INF
 ‘He began selling sheep.’

b. Object-Verb(Non-finite)

C. Urmi

*šuri-lun ʔərbə bə-zvana
 begin.PFV-A.3PL sheep.PL at-selling.INF
 'They began selling sheep.'

3 Areal issues

In the NENA-speaking area, predicate-final order becomes more prevalent in the east, where, today, varieties of Central Kurdish are dominant.¹² The convergence towards OV in the Christian NENA varieties of Iranian Azerbaijan, however, is incomplete, as it still maintains a greater degree of flexibility for object placement and betrays features of predicate-initial typology (§3.2) in its ordering of indefinite objects and possessums (§3.2.1), and that of light verb complements (§3.2.2, see also §2.3.2 on auxiliaries). Thus, although Christian Urmi is by sheer frequency characterizable as predicate-final, it is, on closer examination, typologically more mixed than the Tran-Zab Jewish group.

The areal convergence in word order can be merely incidental, such as in the case of Noun-Genitive, Demonstrative-Noun-Adjective, and the prevalence of Verb-Goal and Become-Complement, which are common to Semitic and Iranian. The higher rates of OV in the main dialects discussed in this chapter, however, are doubtless due to influence from neighbouring OV languages, and yet the outcome differs per region and community. For example, the word order profile of the Jewish and Christian dialects of Sanandaj as representative of the dialects of Iranian Kurdistan matches in many ways that of the local Iranian varieties, i.e. Central Kurdish and Gorani (see [Mohammadirad 2024](#) [Chapter 9, this volume]). The fact that they show a similar general tendency towards Object-Verb and Predicate-Copula order is most likely due to contact with Iranian. However, many configurations are is still liable to language-internal developments, such as the syntax of objects, which is sensitive to definiteness in dialects like C. Urmi. Moreover, the same syntactic structure is attested where contact with neighbouring OV languages presumably played no direct role, such as AUX-OV order and the pre-verbal placement of the object before non-finite verbal forms (see 2.3.3). The syntax of copulas and auxiliaries (see 2.3.2 and 2.3.2) also exhibits language-internal peculiarities. Convergence in word order can thus be partly understood as contact-induced reinforcement of pre-existing parallel patterns (e.g.

¹²This corresponds to [Stilo's \(2005\)](#) Buffer Zone 1, bordering a low OV and high OV zone.

Paul M. Noorlander

Silva-Corvalán 1994, 2008¹³; Heine 2008: 42–43, 48–49), which presupposes that syntactic OV presumably goes back to an original situation of more fluid order driven by pragmatic configurations.

Areal features are present in all Trans-Zab Jewish varieties, but the effect of contact on Christian varieties seems to be more varied. Doubtless, speakers' attitudes play a crucial role in susceptibility to contact-induced change in NENA dialects (Noorlander 2014) and thus word order shifts. One may think that Christian NENA varieties show considerably higher rates of VO than their Jewish peers. This seems to hold true for the Christian dialects of Iranian Azerbaijan, but it does not seem to apply to the southeasterly located dialects such as Christian Shaqlawa, Koy Sanjaq, Sulemaniyya and Sanandaj, where OV seems to be as rigid as it can be in Trans-Zab Jewish dialects.

Regional effects, in turn, may also cut across communal differences. Both Jewish and Christian NENA dialects of Iranian Azerbaijan, for instance, show a higher rate of Addressee-Verb order for verbs of speech, which parallels the northernmost dialects of Kurdish (Haig 2022), and Adjective-Noun order for evaluative adjectives, which parallels Azeri. On the other hand, other features are completely insensitive to word order shifts: flagging, for instance, remains prepositional in all NENA dialects, and none of the Neo-Aramaic varieties discussed here have developed a system of postpositions, despite having undergone a shift from VO to OV.

Further research is required on the embedding of the shift from VO to OV in other internally and externally caused developments, as well as on the social-historical circumstances. Moreover, it is possible that the shift documented for NENA, especially in the east, is ultimately rooted in the spoken varieties of Mesopotamia during the Achaemenid period.¹⁴

3.1 Iraqi and Iranian Kurdistan

3.1.1 Complement/become

Similarly to Kurdish, a general post-predicate proclivity becomes apparent in object complements (see §2.2.3) of verbs of naming and turning something into something else in the Jewish varieties of northeastern Iraq and Iranian Kurdistan. The Iranian preposition *ba-* (see Mohammadirad 2024 [Chapter 9, this volume]) has been transferred into these Jewish varieties along with the pattern, e.g.

¹³I am indebted to G. Haig for directing my attention to this reference.

¹⁴See Haig et al. (in press) for a discussion of this from a wider areal and typological perspective.

15 Neo-Aramaic in Iran and northeastern Iraq

(39) a. Verb-Complement

J. Sanandaj (Khan 2009: D:§1)

xir-Ø ba-xá broná
 became.PFV-S.3SG.M to-INDEF boy.SG.M
 'He became a boy.'

b. Verb-Complement

J. Sanandaj (Khan 2009: B:§41)

kol-i-wa-le ba-lešà
 make-A.3PL-PST-O.3MS to-dough.MS
 'They made it into dough.'

This is, however, not supported by the statistics, as the pre-verbal position, for example in (40) below, occurs far more often than in the NENA dialects outside of the relevant area. The rate of post-predicate final states is 22% (4/18) in C. Shaqlawa, 27% (3/11) in J. Urmī, 30% (12/41) in J. Sanandaj, and 62% (8/13) in C. Urmī, which can be contrasted with 90% (18/20) in C. Barwar.

(40) a. Complement-Verb

C. Shaqlawa (Khan et al. 2022: Text 35:§33)

'en-aw kor pəš-lu
 eye.PL-his blind became.PFV-S.3SG.M
 'His eyes became blind.'

b. Complement-Verb

C. Shaqlawa (Khan et al. 2022: Text 28:§19)

'āt bet-i nura qam-'awd-ət-e
 you.SG house.SG.M-my fire.SG.F PST.PFV-make-A.2SG.M-O.3SG.M
 'You have turned my home into a hell.'

3.1.2 Light-verb complements

Light verb constructions are also consistent with their usage in neighbouring languages, the non-referential nominal element preceding the light verb. The object NP, as expected, occurs before the complex verb, e.g. (41). In Christian dialects of northeastern Iraq, recent Arabic loans are also incorporated into this strategy (Hakeem 2021: 474–475), e.g. (42).

Paul M. Noorlander

(41) Noun-Light Verb

C. Sanandaj (Panoussi 1990: 126:§16)

xay-u ləbas-i hazər k-od-i-lu

one-of.them clothes-my ready **IND**-make-A.3PL-O.3PL

‘One of them **prepares** my clothes.’

(42) Noun-Light Verb

C. Shaqlawa (Khan et al. 2022: Text 12:§28)

dăbi 'ana 'istərahət Ø-'awd-ən

must I rest **SBJV**-do-1SG.M

‘I must **rest**.’

3.1.3 Attribute/noun

The NENA dialects in this area have, in general, not changed the placement of attributes, contrary to the dialects in Iranian Azerbaijan (§3.2.5). Attribute-Noun order is infrequent in the majority of NENA dialects, drawing attention to the listener with additional emotional weight from the speaker’s perspective. This position thus rarely occurs with more objective statements, except when two or more attributes are contrasted.¹⁵ In several cases, however, the lexical item or morpheme is transferred along with the pattern. In (43a) below, for instance, the Persian loan-adjective *behtarīn* ‘best’ precedes the noun, and thus follows the expected Iranian order for superlatives. Interestingly, in (43b) below, the originally Kurdish adjective *zirej* precedes the head, presumably for pragmatic reasons, even though Noun-Adjective order is also the convention in Kurdish.

(43) a. Adjective-Noun

C. Sanandaj (Panoussi 1990: 122:§9)

behtarīn ixale

best food.SG.M

‘the best kinds of food’

b. Adjective-Noun

C. Diyana (Napiorkowska 2015: 301)

rbə zirej naš-e

much clever **INVAR** person-PL

‘very clever people’

¹⁵See Gutman (2018: 143, 224, 232–233, 246–247, 250, 255).

15 Neo-Aramaic in Iran and northeastern Iraq

The adjective *xoš* is another case in point: it is a Persian *Wanderwort* in the NENA speaking area – also found in Turkish and Iraqi Arabic – and seems to be equally compatible with Adjective-Noun order in virtually all NENA dialects, in particular in combination with the noun *naša* ‘man’:

- (44) Adjective-Noun
C. Shaqlawa (Khan et al. 2022: Text 17:§12)

xoš naša
good man.SG.M
'a good man'

- (45) Adjective-Noun
J. Arbel (Khan 1999: 462.§326)

xoš naše=le
good man=COP.3SG.M
'He is a good man.'

Furthermore, ordinal numbers in the Jewish NENA dialects of northeastern Iraq and Iranian Kurdistan all add the Iranian suffix *-(a)min* to the native Aramaic numeral, e.g. *tmanyamín* ‘eighth’ from *tmanyā* ‘eight’ + *min*. Ordinals follow their heads as attributes as they do in the majority of NENA dialects, and this order incidentally converges with Kurdish. In J. Sanandaj, however, the ordinal can also precede the noun as it does in Gorani (MacKenzie 1966: 24), e.g.

- (46) Ordinal-Noun
J. Sanandaj (Khan 2009: 213)

arpa-mín gorá
four-ORD man.SG.F
'fourth man'

3.2 Iranian Azerbaijan

3.2.1 Object/verb and possesum/existential

There is a direct correlation between object and possesum placement in NENA dialects. In locative-exisential possessor constructions, exemplified in (47–48), the possesum can be considered the object-like argument, and hence, not surprisingly, it occupies the same position as object NPs in verbal clauses in the majority of NENA dialects. Figure 2 shows the post-predicate possesum placement and the corresponding figures for definite objects. The VO dialects of NENA,

Paul M. Noorlander

represented here by Barwar (northwestern Iraq) in the top, and the OV dialects of NENA, represented by J. Urmī in the bottom, are largely consistent throughout, although definiteness is a factor of preverbal object placement in C. Barwar. The possessum (25 out of 38), however, occurs post-verbally far more often than definite objects in C. Urmī, and is comparable to indefinite objects (24 out of 49, see §2.2.1). It is conceivable that discourse organisation also plays a role in possessum-possessor constructions. Since possessums are generally indefinite, we would expect to observe the same distribution. The post-predicate possessums occur more frequently still, although not in a statistically significant way. This higher rate of post-predicate possessums might be due to formulaic language, e.g. opening formulas introducing discourse-new arguments, as illustrated in (47), which would favour post-predicate placement.

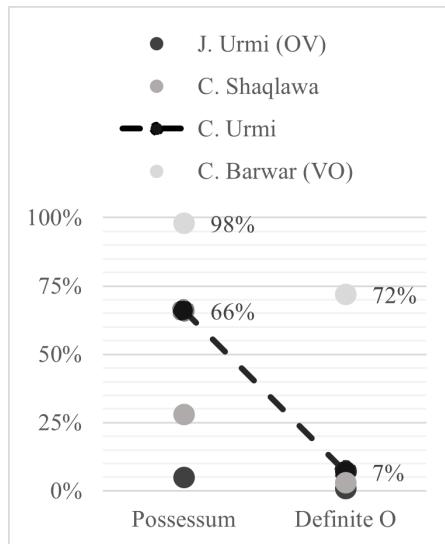


Figure 2: Rate of post-predicate (PP) possessums and definite objects

(47) Existential-Possessum

C. Urmī (Khan 2016: A39:§1)

'*ət-va xə-malka. əha malka ət-va-le tla*
EXIST-PST one-king.SG.M DEM.SG.M king.SG.M EXIST-PST-3SG.M three
bnunə
son.PL

'There was a king. This king had three sons.'

(48) Possessum-Existential

C. Sanandaj (Panoussi 1990: 3:§1–2)

xa gora k-awe... ay gora məšulman-a tre išənyase
 one man.SG.M IND-be DEM.SG man.SG.M muslim-SG.M two woman.PL
k-āwe-le
 IND-be-3SG.M

‘There was (lit. is) a man... This Muslim man had (lit. has) two wives.’

3.2.2 Light-verb complements

Moreover, similarly to indefinite objects and to possessums, the nominal element of light verb constructions from Kurdish, Persian and Azeri can occur after the light verb in C. Urmi, e.g. *kullə 'odilun +hazər* ‘they should prepare everything’ (Khan 2016: A3:§70). By contrast, such non-referential nominal elements precede the light verb in J. Urmi as do all types of objects and possessums (Garbell 1965a: 173), e.g. *ixalé +hazər wudun* ‘prepare food!’ (J. Urmi, Garbell 1965b: 156).

3.2.3 Addressee/verb & verb/goal

Addressees, in turn, seem to have shifted in the same predicate-final direction as objects in Iranian Azerbaijan (§2.2.2), which is more prevalent in the northeast. Here, the syntactic organisation is role-specific and area-specific. The pre-verbal **Addressee** but post-verbal Goal and Recipient split in C. Urmi and Sardarid Azerbaijani matches the findings for some varieties of Central Kurdish and northernmost dialects of Northern Kurdish (Haig 2022: 358–359; Mohammadirad 2024 Chapter 9, this volume). Influence from especially Azeri and Persian but also Armenian, however, cannot be ruled out either. A higher rate of Verb-Goal order, for example, also occurs in local Azeri dialects due to Colloquial Persian influence (Kiral 2001: 75–77).

3.2.4 Complement/become

The Complement, i.e. a resulting condition, is generally placed before the verb in the NENA dialects of Iranian Azerbaijan studied here, which may even be fronted before the object, as can be observed in (49). This pre-predicate placement matches the word order in Turkic and Persian, rather than what is expected in Kurdish. The same holds true for Recipient-Theme-Verb order in the Jewish Urmi material in Khan (2008b), as exemplified by (20) in §2.2.2.

Paul M. Noorlander

(49) Complement-Object-Verb

C. Sardarid (Younansardaroud 2001: 15:§1)

trə 'axunvatə 'tla d-anı vəd-li
two brother.PL three GEN-DEM.PL made.PFV-1SG
'Into two brothers I turned three of them.'

3.2.5 Attribute/noun

Adjective-Noun and Genitive-Noun, alongside Object-Verb, are the dominant orders in Turkic languages that NENA dialects in Iranian Azerbaijan have been in contact with,¹⁶ which could be considered parallel to the shift from VO to OV (Gutman 2018: 222, 233, 250–251). The complement of nominal forms of the verb, such as agent nominalisations or participles ending in *-ana*, precedes the verb in compound-like attributes across Trans-Zab Jewish NENA dialects, similarly to their OV typology, contrast (50a) with (50b) and (50c). In C. Urmi, the attribute generally follows the head, as given in (51a), but sporadically the opposite order does occur, as illustrated in (51b). Also, when the adjective constitutes the head of a compound, J. Urmi patterns in a head-final fashion but C. Urmi head-initial, cf. J. Urmi *dəqná-xwará* lit. 'beard-white' and C. Urmi lit. *xvār-dəqna* 'white-beard' for 'grey-bearded'.

(50) a. Noun-Genitive

J. Urmi (Garbell 1965a)

gör-ət xalünt-xun
husband.SG.M-CSTR sister.SG.F-your.2PL
'the husband of your sister'

b. Genitive-Noun

J. Urmi (Garbell 1965b: 212)

xalünt-xun gör-an-a
sister.SG.F-your.2PL marry-AGN-SG.M
'your sister's husband'

c. Genitive-Noun (compound-like)

J. Urmi (Garbell 1965b: 86)

masy-e döq-an-a
fish-PL catch-AGN-SG.M
'fisherman, lit. fish catcher'

¹⁶See also Garbell (1965b: 171–172), Khan (2016I: 39), Gutman (2018: 220–224, 332–334).

15 Neo-Aramaic in Iran and northeastern Iraq

(51) a. Noun-Genitive

C. Urmī (Khan 2016: III:44)

doq-an-əd nuyn-e
catch-AGN-CSTR fish-PL

'fisherman, lit. catcher of fish'

b. Genitive-Noun

C. Urmī (Khan 2016: A48:§32)

*'o prəzla *taptəpp-án-a damurči*
DEM.SG iron.SG.M bash-AGN-SG.M blacksmith.SG.M
'the iron hammerer blacksmith'

Similarly, ordinal numbers formed out of the fusion of the Iranian suffix *-amin* and Turkic suffix *-inji* (-Incl) also precede the noun in J. Urmī as they do in the source language of this morphological transfer, e.g. *xa tre-minji baxtā* 'a second woman' (Garbell 1965b: 206).

Finally, more frequent Adjective-Noun order due to Azeri occurs among NENA speakers in Iranian Azerbaijan. Contrast the following two near-identical descriptions in J. Sanandaj (W Iran) and J. Urmī (NW Iran):

(52) Noun-Adjective

J. Sanandaj (Khan 2009: B:§158)

kništa rab-ta=w kništa zor-ta
synagogue.SG.F big-SG.F=and synagogue.SG.F small-SG.F
'a big synagogue and a small synagogue'

(53) Adjective-Noun

J. Urmī (Khan 2008b: §156)

xa rab-ta knəšta xa zör-ta knəšta
a big-SG.F synagogue.SG.F a small-SG.F synagogue.SG.F
'a big synagogue and a small synagogue'

Table 8 contrasts corpus-based frequencies of Adjective-Noun order for the adjectives 'small, young' and 'red' in Jewish and Christian Urmī. This is consistent with a dominant Noun-Adjective order in C. Urmī (Khan 2016: II:39). There is a greater degree of flexibility in J. Urmī,¹⁷ however, and a dominant order cannot be identified for more evaluative adjectives like *zora* 'small, young' in this dialect.

¹⁷See Garbell (1965b: 82–84), Khan (2008a: 216–219); Gutman (2018).

Paul M. Noorlander

Table 8: Rate of AdjN in NENA dialects of Iranian Azerbaijan

| | | NENA!J. Urmi | | C. Urmi | |
|--------------|--|--|-------|------------------|-------|
| | | (Garbell 1965b ¹⁸ , Khan 2008b) | | (Khan 2016) | |
| | | <i>n</i> | ADJ-N | <i>n</i> | ADJ-N |
| small, young | | 33 | 49% | 81 ¹⁹ | 6% |
| red | | 20 | 0% | 18 | 0 |

When two adjectives modify the noun, they can also be placed at either side, cf. (54c). When the adjective modifies a noun that is part of a nominal annexation construction, however, it tends to follow the noun phrase, as illustrated in (54d).

- (54) a. Adjective-Noun
 J. Urmi (Garbell 1965b: 83)
zür-ta xalünt-u
 small-SG.F sister.SG.F-their
 'their **youngest** sister'
- b. Noun-Adjective
 J. Urmi (Garbell 1965b: 172)
brata zür-ta
 girl.SG.F small-SG.F
 'the **youngest** daughter'
- c. Adjective-Noun-Adjective
 J. Urmi (Garbell 1965b: 192)
xa zür-ta tkana šüsaband
 a small-SG.F shop.SG.F glass.covered
 'a **small** glass-covered shop'
- d. Noun-Genitive-Adjective
 J. Urmi (Garbell 1965b: 86)
*brat-ət *šültana zür-ta*
 girl.SG.F king.SG.M small-SG.F
 'the king's **youngest** daughter'

¹⁸including Jewish Shino.

¹⁹excluding the high frequency idiom *yala sura* 'baby'

15 Neo-Aramaic in Iran and northeastern Iraq

Adjective/Noun configurations are said not to correlate with other configurations (e.g. Dryer 1992: 95–96), but the above finding for Jewish Urmi warrants further research into this understudied area. For example, is the syntax of adjectives more likely to be affected by contact than other nominal attributes or not?

Furthermore, sporadically, the attribute can consist of a gerundial verb phrase preceding the head noun, reminiscent of the Relative-Noun order in Turkic (Garbell 1965a: 173), e.g. (55–56).

(55) Numeral-Adjective-Gerund-Noun

C. Urmi (Khan 2016: A56:§1)

*xa šaþər-ta max *šrá bəllaya brata*
 a beautiful-SG.F like lantern shine^{e.GRND} girl.SG.F
 ‘a beautiful girl shining like a lantern’

(56) Gerund-Noun

J. Shino/Solduz (Garbell 1965b: 84)

*ba-šatoe xriw-e *mae*
 for-drink.GRND bad-PL water.PL
 ‘water bad for drinking’

3.2.6 Standard/adjective

Finally, in the Jewish dialects of Iranian Azerbaijan, all instances of the standard of comparison seem to occur consistently before the adjective rather than after it, compare (57) with (58). A stronger preference for the position before the predicate converges with the typology of local OV languages.

(57) Standard-Adjective

J. Solduz (Garbell 1965b: 211.19)

*mənn-áw *raba *raba bis sqil-é ita g-d-ay *ahrá*
 from-her very very more beautiful-PL EXIST in-GEN-DEM.SG.F city.SG.F
 ‘There are far, far more beautiful women than she in this city.’

(58) Adjective-Standard

J. Koy Sanjaq (Mutzaifi 2004: 1B:§24)

’o bís-faqir Ø-hawé-Ø mənn-éw
 he more-poor SBJV-be-3SG.M from-3SG.M
 ‘Even if he is poorer than him.’

Paul M. Noorlander

Abbreviations

| | | | |
|-------|--------------------------------|------|-----------------------------|
| 1 | 1st person | J. | Jewish (linguistic variety) |
| 2 | 2nd person | LINK | linker |
| 3 | 3rd person | M | masculine |
| A | agent | n | total number of tokens |
| ADD | additive | NENA | Northeastern Neo-Aramaic |
| Addr | addressee | NP | Noun phrase |
| ADJ | adjective | O | object |
| Adj | adjective | PL | plural |
| AGN | agent nominalization | PP | post-predicate |
| ANT | anterior | PRED | predicate |
| AUX | auxiliary | Pred | predicate |
| BEN | beneficiary | PST | past |
| C. | Christian (linguistic variety) | PTCP | participle |
| COP | copula | R | recipient |
| CSTR | construct | S | subject (intransitive) |
| DEM | demonstrative | SG | singular |
| EXIST | existential | St | standard of comparison |
| F | feminine | V | verb |
| G | goal | WOWA | = Haig et al. (2022) |
| GEN | genitive | | |

Acknowledgements

I am indebted to the anonymous reviewers as well as Dorota Molin and especially Geoffrey Haig for their helpful comments on an earlier draft of this chapter. I hereby acknowledge the generous support of the European Research Council (ALHOME, 101021183). Views and opinions expressed are however those of the author only and do not necessarily reflect those of the European Union or the European Research Council Executive Agency. Neither the European Union nor the granting authority can be held responsible for them.

References

- Askar, Kawther N. 2021. *Der neuaramäische Dialekt von 'Armoṭa*. Heidelberg: Heidelberg University. (Doctoral dissertation).

15 *Neo-Aramaic in Iran and northeastern Iraq*

- Coghill, Eleanor. 2018. Information structure in the Neo-Aramaic dialect of Telkepe. In Evangelia Adamou, Katharina Haude & Martine Vanhove (eds.), *Information structure in Lesser-described languages*, 293–327. Amsterdam: Benjamins.
- Cohen, Eran. 2012. *The syntax of Neo-Aramaic: The Jewish dialect of Zakho*. Piscataway, NJ: Gorgias Press. DOI: [10.31826/9781463234737](https://doi.org/10.31826/9781463234737).
- Dryer, Matthew S. 1992. The Greenbergian word order correlations. *Language* 68. 81–138.
- Dryer, Matthew S. 2007. Word order. In Timothy Shopen (ed.), *Language typology and syntactic description*, vol. 1, 61–131. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Duval, M. Rubens. 2009. *Les Dialectes Néo-Araméens de Salamas*. Piscataway, NJ: Gorgias Press. DOI: [10.31826/9781463213961](https://doi.org/10.31826/9781463213961).
- Garbell, Irene. 1965a. The impact of Kurdish and Turkish on the Jewish Neo-Aramaic dialect of Persian Azerbaijan and the adjoining regions. *Journal of the American Oriental Society* 85(2). 159–177. DOI: [10.2307/597988](https://doi.org/10.2307/597988).
- Garbell, Irene. 1965b. *The Jewish Neo-Aramaic dialect of Persian Azerbaijan*. De Gruyter Mouton. DOI: [10.1515/9783110877991](https://doi.org/10.1515/9783110877991).
- Gutman, Ariel. 2018. *Attributive constructions in North-Eastern Neo-Aramaic*. Berlin: Language Science Press. DOI: [10.5281/zenodo.1182527](https://doi.org/10.5281/zenodo.1182527).
- Häberl, Charles G. 2011. Neo-Mandaic. In Stefan Weninger, Geoffrey Khan, Michael P. Streck & Janet C. E. Watson (eds.), *The Semitic languages*, 725–737. Berlin: De Gruyter. DOI: [10.1515/9783110251586.725](https://doi.org/10.1515/9783110251586.725).
- Haig, Geoffrey. 2017. Western Asia: East Anatolia as a transition zone. In Raymond Hickey (ed.), *The Cambridge handbook of areal linguistics*, 396–423. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Haig, Geoffrey. 2022. Post-predicate constituents in Kurdish. In Yaron Matras, Geoffrey Haig & Ergin Öpentin (eds.), *Structural and typological variation in the dialects of Kurdish*, 335–377. Cham: Springer International Publishing. DOI: [10.1007/978-3-030-78837-7_8](https://doi.org/10.1007/978-3-030-78837-7_8).
- Haig, Geoffrey & Geoffrey Khan. 2019. *The languages and linguistics of Western Asia: An areal perspective*. Berlin: De Gruyter Mouton.
- Haig, Geoffrey, Paul M. Noorlander & Nils N. Schiborr. in press. Which word order features are stable in a contact setting? Corpus-based evidence from the Western Asian transition zone. In Jeroen Darquennes, Joe Salmons & Wim Vandebussche (eds.), *Language contact: An international handbook*, vol. 2. Berlin: De Gruyter Mouton.

Paul M. Noorlander

- Haig, Geoffrey, Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand, Donald Stilo, Laurentia Schreiber & Nils N. Schiborr. 2024. Post-predicate elements in the Western Asian Transition Zone: Data, theory, and methods. In Geoffrey Haig, Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand, Donald Stilo, Laurentia Schreiber & Nils N. Schiborr (eds.), *Post-predicate elements in the Western Asian Transition Zone: A corpus-based approach to areal typology*, 1–49. Berlin: Language Science Press.
- Haig, Geoffrey, Donald Stilo, Mahir C. Doğan & Nils N. Schiborr. 2022. WOWA – *Word Order in Western Asia: A spoken-language-based corpus for investigating areal effects in word order variation*. Bamberg. multicast.aspra.uni-bamberg.de/resources/wowa/.
- Hakeem, Salam N.H. 2021. Arabic loanwords in the Neo-Aramaic dialect of Ankawa. In Geoffrey Khan & Paul M. Noorlander (eds.), *Studies in Neo-Aramaic grammar and lexicon* (Cambridge Semitic Languages and Cultures 5), 469–486. Cambridge: Cambridge University Faculty of Asian, Middle Eastern Studies & Open Book Publishers.
- Haspelmath, Martin. 2015. Ditransitive constructions. *Annual Review of Linguistics* 1(1). 19–41. DOI: [10.1146/annurev-linguist-030514-125204](https://doi.org/10.1146/annurev-linguist-030514-125204).
- Heine, Bernd. 2008. Contact-induced word order change without word order change. In Peter Siemund & Noemi Kintana (eds.), *Language contact and contact languages*, 33–60. Amsterdam: Benjamins. DOI: [10.1075/hsm.7.04hei](https://doi.org/10.1075/hsm.7.04hei).
- Hopkins, Simon A. 1989. A tale in the Jewish Neo-Aramaic dialect of Nayada. *Jerusalem Studies in Arabic and Islam* 12. 243–281.
- Hopkins, Simon A. 1999. The Neo-Aramaic dialects of Iran. *Irano-Judaica* 4. 311–327.
- Hopkins, Simon A. 2009. “That monster of a man” and the emotive genitive. In Gideon Goldenberg & Ariel Shisha-Halevy (eds.), *Egyptian, Semitic and general grammar: Studies in memory of H. J. Polotsky*, 363–389. Jerusalem: The Israel Academy of Sciences & Humanities.
- Kapeliuk, Olga. 2004. Iranian and Turkic structural interference in Arabic and Aramaic dialects. *Jerusalem Studies in Arabic and Islam* 29. 176–194.
- Khan, Geoffrey. 1999. *A grammar of Neo-Aramaic: The dialect of the Jews of Arbel*. Leiden: Brill.
- Khan, Geoffrey. 2004. *The Jewish Neo-Aramaic dialect of Sulemaniyya and Halabja*. Leiden: Brill.
- Khan, Geoffrey. 2008a. *The Jewish Neo-Aramaic dialect of Urmi*. Piscataway, NJ: Gorgias Press.
- Khan, Geoffrey. 2008b. *The Neo-Aramaic dialect of Barwar*. Leiden: Brill. <http://dx.doi.org/10.1163/ej.9789004167650.i-2198>.

15 Neo-Aramaic in Iran and northeastern Iraq

- Khan, Geoffrey. 2009. *The Jewish Neo-Aramaic dialect of Sanandaj*. Piscataway, NJ: Gorgias Press.
- Khan, Geoffrey. 2012a. North Eastern Neo-Aramaic. In Stefan Weninger, Geoffrey Khan, Michael P. Streck & Janet C. E. Watson (eds.), *The Semitic languages: An international handbook*, 708–724. Berlin: De Gruyter Mouton.
- Khan, Geoffrey. 2012b. The copula in North-Eastern Neo-Aramaic. In Federico Corriente, Gregorio del Olmo Lete, Ángeles Vicente & Juan-Pablo Vita (eds.), *Dialectology of the Semitic Languages: Proceedings of The IV Meeting On Comparative Semitics Zaragoza 06/9–11/2010*, 25–31. Sabadell/Barcelona: Editorial Ausa.
- Khan, Geoffrey. 2016. *The Neo-Aramaic dialect of the Assyrian Christians of Urmi I–IV*. Leiden: Brill.
- Khan, Geoffrey. 2019a. The Neo-Aramaic dialects of eastern Anatolia and north-western Iran. In Geoffrey Haig & Geoffrey Khan (eds.), *The languages and linguistics of Western Asia: An areal perspective*, 190–236. Berlin: De Gruyter Mouton.
- Khan, Geoffrey. 2019b. The Neo-Aramaic dialects of western Iran. In Geoffrey Haig & Geoffrey Khan (eds.), *The languages and linguistics of Western Asia: An areal perspective*, 305–353. Berlin: De Gruyter Mouton.
- Khan, Geoffrey. 2020. Contact and change in Neo-Aramaic dialects. In Bridget Drinka (ed.), *Historical linguistics 2017: Selected papers from the 23rd international conference on historical linguistics, San Antonio, Texas, 31 July – 4 August 2017*, 387–407. Amsterdam: Benjamins.
- Khan, Geoffrey, Masoud Mohammadirad, Dorota Molin & Paul M. Noorlander. 2022. *Neo-Aramaic and Kurdish folklore from Northern Iraq*. Cambridge: Open Book Publishers. DOI: [10.11647/OPB.0307](https://doi.org/10.11647/OPB.0307).
- Kiral, Filiz. 2001. *Das gescprochene Aserbaidschanisch von Iran: Eine Studie zu den syntaktischen Einfüssen des Persischen*. Wiesbaden: Harrassowitz.
- MacKenzie, David N. 1966. *The dialect of Awroman (Hawraman-i Luhon): Grammatical sketch, texts, and vocabulary*. English. Kobenhavn: Kommissionær/Munksgaard.
- Matras, Yaron. 2009. *Language Contact*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Mohammadirad, Masoud. 2024. Zagros region: The Kurdish-Gorani continuum. In Geoffrey Haig, Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand, Donald Stilo, Laurentia Schreiber & Nils N. Schiborr (eds.), *Post-predicate elements in the Western Asian Transition Zone: A corpus-based approach to areal typology*, 231–264. Berlin: Language Science Press.
- Molin, Dorota. 2021. *The Jewish Neo-Aramaic dialect of Dohok: A comparative grammar*. Cambridge: University of Cambridge. (Doctoral dissertation).

Paul M. Noorlander

- Mutzafi, Hezy. 2004. *The Jewish Neo-Aramaic dialect of Koy Sanjaq*. Wiesbaden: Harrassowitz.
- Mutzafi, Hezy. 2008. Trans-Zab Jewish Neo-Aramaic. *BSOAS* 1. 409–431.
- Napiorkowska, Lidia. 2015. *The Neo-Aramaic dialect of Diyana-Zariwaw*. Leiden: Brill.
- Noorlander, Paul M. 2014. Diversity in convergence: Kurdish and Aramaic variation entangled. *Kurdish Studies* 2(2). 201–224.
- Noorlander, Paul M. 2021. *Ergativity and other alignment types in Neo-Aramaic: Investigating morphosyntactic microvariation*. Leiden: Brill.
- Noorlander, Paul M. 2022a. NE Neo-Aramaic (Christian) Shaqlawa. In Geoffrey Haig, Donald Stilo, Mahîr C. Doğan & Nils N. Schiborr (eds.), *WOWA – Word Order in Western Asia: A spoken-language-based corpus for investigating areal effects in word order variation*. Bamberg: University of Bamberg. multicast.aspra.uni-bamberg.de/resources/wowa/.
- Noorlander, Paul M. 2022b. NE Neo-Aramaic (Christian) Urmî. In Geoffrey Haig, Donald Stilo, Mahîr C. Doğan & Nils N. Schiborr (eds.), *WOWA – Word Order in Western Asia: A spoken-language-based corpus for investigating areal effects in word order variation*. Bamberg: University of Bamberg. multicast.aspra.uni-bamberg.de/resources/wowa/.
- Noorlander, Paul M. 2022c. NE Neo-Aramaic (Jewish Sanandaj). In Geoffrey Haig, Donald Stilo, Mahîr C. Doğan & Nils N. Schiborr (eds.), *WOWA – Word Order in Western Asia: A spoken-language-based corpus for investigating areal effects in word order variation*. Bamberg: University of Bamberg. multicast.aspra.uni-bamberg.de/resources/wowa/.
- Noorlander, Paul M. 2024. Arabic and Aramaic in eastern Anatolia. In Geoffrey Haig, Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand, Donald Stilo, Laurentia Schreiber & Nils N. Schiborr (eds.), *Post-predicate elements in the Western Asian Transition Zone: A corpus-based approach to areal typology*, 443–482. Berlin: Language Science Press.
- Noorlander, Paul M. & Dorota Molin. 2022. Word order typology in North Eastern-Neo-Aramaic: Towards a corpus-based approach. In Hiwa Asadpour & Thomas Jügel (eds.), *Word order variation Semitic, Turkic and Indo-European languages in contact*, 235–258. Berlin: De Gruyter Mouton.
- Noorlander, Paul M. & Donald Stilo. 2022. NE Neo-Aramaic (Jewish Urmî). In Geoffrey Haig, Donald Stilo, Mahîr C. Doğan & Nils N. Schiborr (eds.), *WOWA – Word Order in Western Asia: A spoken-language-based corpus for investigating areal effects in word order variation*. Bamberg: University of Bamberg. multicast.aspra.uni-bamberg.de/resources/wowa/.

15 *Neo-Aramaic in Iran and northeastern Iraq*

- Nourzaei, Maryam & Geoffrey Haig. 2024. Balochi: A cross-dialect investigation of post-verbal elements. In Geoffrey Haig, Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand, Donald Stilo, Laurentia Schreiber & Nils N. Schiborr (eds.), *Post-predicate elements in the Western Asian Transition Zone: A corpus-based approach to areal typology*, 111–143. Berlin: Language Science Press.
- Panoussi, Estiphan. 1990. On the Senaya dialect. In Wilhelm Heinrichs (ed.), *Studies in Neo-Aramaic*, 107–129. Atlanta, GA: Scholars Press.
- Silva-Corvalán, Carmen. 1994. *Language contact and change: Spanish in Los Angeles*. Oxford: Clarendon.
- Silva-Corvalán, Carmen. 2008. The limits of convergence in language contact. *Journal of Language Contact* 2(1). 213–224.
- Stilo, Donald. 2005. Iranian as a buffer zone between the universal typology of Turkic and Semitic. In Éva Csató, Bo Isaksson & Carina Jahani (eds.), *Linguistic convergence and areal diffusion. Case studies from Iranian, Semitic and Turkic*, 35–63. London/New York: Routledge Curzon.
- Stilo, Donald. 2015. An introduction to the Atlas of the Araxes-Iran linguistic area. In Bernard Comrie & Lucía Golluscio (eds.), *Language contact and documentation/contact lingüístico y documentación*, 343–356. Berlin: De Gruyter Mouton.
- Tsereteli, Konstantin. 1976. **Образцы современной ассирийской речи (саламасские тексты)**. In Institut naradov Azii & Institut vostokovedeniya (eds.), *Семитские языки: сборник статей III*, 208–219. Moskva: Nauka.
- Younansardaroud, Helen. 2001. *Der neuostaramäische Dialekt von Särdä:rid*. Wiesbaden: Harrassowitz.

Chapter 16

Arabic and Aramaic in eastern Anatolia

Paul M. Noorlander^a

^aUniversity of Cambridge

This chapter offers a brief overview of the word order typology of *Q̠alṭu*-Arabic and Neo-Aramaic dialects spoken by minorities in southeastern Anatolia. Constituent ordering is generally consistent with the typology of VO languages, and representative of the majority of Central Semitic languages. Convergence with local languages, however, has resulted in the development of often post-predicate copulas and a higher rate of OV order, and in some doculects even a complete shift to OV.

1 Introduction

For centuries, Jews, Christians and Muslims have co-existed in the historical region of eastern Anatolia. Jewish (J.) and Christian (C.) communities used to speak their own Aramaic and/or Arabic variety, predating the arrival of Turkish and Kurdish. Aramaic was one of the principal languages in Syria, Anatolia and Mesopotamia before the Islamic period, and following the Arab conquests, most of the Jews and Christians gradually shifted to Arabic, leading to a diversity of regional and communal dialects. Nowadays, Anatolia is characterized by increasing nationalization and homogeneity within a predominantly Turkish-speaking Muslim society. The ethnic cleansing during the First World War alongside continuous persecution and systematic marginalization of minorities led to a massive displacement of these minorities. Virtually all Jews left the region under duress to Israel after 1948.

Linguistically, eastern Anatolia constitutes part of a continuum of Arabic and Aramaic dialects that once extended from Syria-Palestine to modern-day Iraq and Iran. Figure 1 displays a map of the original locations and distribution of several Arabic and Aramaic dialects in Anatolia.

Paul M. Noorlander

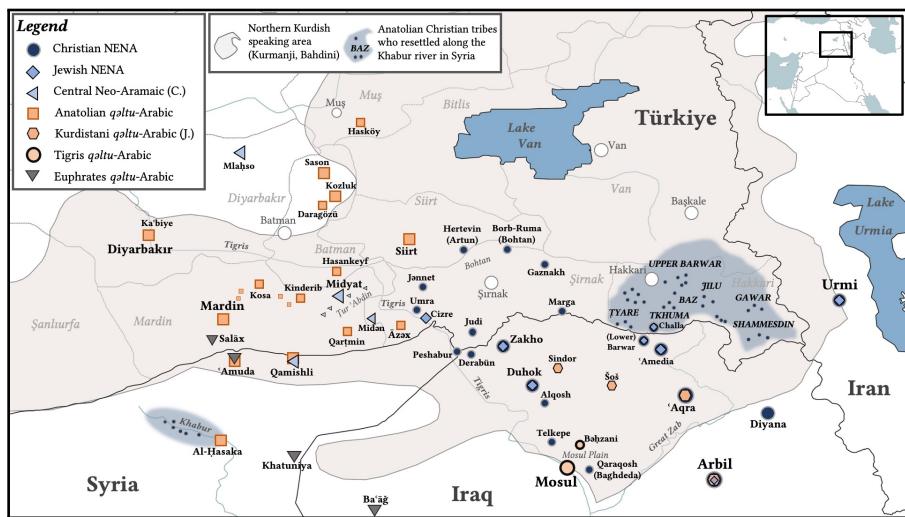


Figure 1: *Qaltru*-Arabic and Neo-Aramaic dialects in southeastern Anatolia

The present outline takes a corpus-based approach to word order following the design of the WO WA corpus (Haig et al. 2022 and Haig et al. 2024 [Chapter 1, this volume]) and relies on datasets from within and without WO WA. Those approaches (e.g. Dahlgren 1998; El Zarka & Zagos 2020) that exclude pragmatically-driven fronting or topicalization to clause-initial position from word order statistics may reach different conclusions than the current chapter. Table 1 lists the WO WA datasets in *Qaltru*-Arabic, as well as Central and Northeastern Neo-Aramaic, used in this chapter with their respective sources.¹ These datasets were designed for the corpus-based analysis of non-subject arguments (see Dahlgren 1998 for a corpus-based study of subjects in Arabic, and Molin (2021) for that in NENA) and their respective position before or after the predicate in accordance with the framework and coding guidelines of the WO WA databank.² The sets for Barwar and J. Dohok, though dialects originally spoken in northwestern Iraq, are, for all practical purposes, considered also representative of the majority of NENA dialects in eastern Anatolia (see Noorlander 2024 [Chapter 15, this volume] for a discussion of NENA in Iran and northeastern Iraq). A handful of object tokens were also counted for the NENA dialect of Bohtan (Fox

¹Numbered texts and numbered segments are separated by colons, e.g. 25:\$2 means Text 25, Paragraph 2, and page numbers and segments by periods, e.g. 101:\$2, Page 101, Paragraph 2.

²See https://multicast.aspra.uni-bamberg.de/resources/wowa/data/_docs/guidelines/wowa_coding-guidelines.pdf

16 Arabic and Aramaic in eastern Anatolia

2009: 116–137), which is not part of the WO WA corpus. Moreover, Arabic data outside of the WO WA corpus were taken from Noorlander (2023) for Kinderib and Daragözü *Qəltu*-Arabic and Cilician Levantine Arabic.

Table 1: Datasets from the WO WA corpus discussed in this chapter

| Doculect | Speakers | Total tokens | Analysed tokens | Source |
|---|----------|--------------|-----------------|--|
| Τuroyo, Midyat, CNA | 2 | 1014 | 778 | Noorlander (2022d) based on the digitalization by with Lyavdansky et al. (2020) of Ritter's (1967) texts 1–2, 24, 27 |
| Mlaħso, CNA | 2 | 824 | 703 | Noorlander (2022c) based on Jastrow (1994: 74–129) |
| J. [redacted] Dohok, NENA | 4 | 916 | 517 | Molin (2022) |
| Barwar, NENA | 2 | 963 | 963 | Stilo (2022) based on Khan (2008a) |
| Ka'bīye, <i>Qəltu</i> -Arabic | 3 | 788 | 643 | Noorlander (2022a) based on Jastrow (2022: Texts II, IX, XII, XIV) |
| J. [redacted] Baghdad, <i>Qəltu</i> -Arabic | 2 | 1339 | 490 | Noorlander (2022b) |

1.1 Arabic

The Arabic dialects of modern-day Turkey belong to four major groups (Jastrow 2006):

1. *Anatolian Arabic*, i.e. sedentary Mesopotamian, divided into at least four subgroups

Paul M. Noorlander

- a) Mardin (Muslim, Christian, Jewish);
 - b) Siirt (Muslim, Christian);
 - c) Diyarbakir (Christian, Jewish);
 - d) Kozluk-Sason-Muş (Muslim).
2. *Khawetna Arabic* (Khatuniya), i.e. Bedouin Mesopotamian, stretching from northern Syria into Turkish Mardin (Talay 1999)
 3. *Cilician-Antiochian Arabic* (Arnold 1998; Procházka 2002), a type of Levantine Arabic spoken by various ethnoreligious groups, of which Alevis constitute the majority, on the coastal region along the Mediterranean (Turkish Mersin, Adana and Hatay);
 4. *Shawi Arabic*, originally Bedouin, in modern-day Urfa Procházka 2003;

The Anatolian dialects belong to the so-called *qəltu*-subgroup of *Mesopotamian Arabic* that preserves the voiceless uvular stop /q/ and first singular suffix *-tu*, as in *qəltu* 'I said,' against the later arrivals in Mesopotamia of ultimately Bedouin origin which innovated a corresponding velar stop /g/ and lost the final *-u*, thus *gələt* 'I said' (Blanc 1964; Jastrow 1978, 2006; Talay 2012). Today, only a few Muslim speakers of *Qəltu*-Arabic remain in Siirt, Mardin and the mountains between Kozluk-Muş. Outside of Turkey, *Qəltu*-Arabic is also represented by:

- dialects spoken in Syria (Behnstedt 1992);
- Jewish dialects of Iraqi Kurdistan (Jastrow 1990);
- several varieties along the Tigris, including the various ethnoreligious communities of the Mosul Plain (Jastrow 1979) and the Jewish (Bar-Moshe 2019) and Christian (Abu-Haidar 1991) communities of Baghdad;
- and finally Muslim and Jewish communities along the Euphrates, spanning from Hit in Iraq to Khatuniya in Syria and Salāx in Turkey (Talay 1999).

Anatolian *Qəltu*-Arabic dialects form a continuum with Levantine Arabic (Talay 2014), and, as minorities outside of the core Arabic-speaking regions, they share similarities with other peripheral varieties of Arabic such as Cypriot Arabic and Central Asian Arabic (Akkuş 2017); though, the former is of Levantine origin and the latter presumably of Iraqi origin.

16 Arabic and Aramaic in eastern Anatolia

The various other Bedouin dialects spoken in Iraq subsumed under Mesopotamian Arabic have more in common with the varieties of Arabia, which includes the Muslim *gələt*-dialects of Baghdad in contradistinction to the Jewish and Christian *qəltu*-dialects of the same city (Blanc 1964) as well as the Arabic of Khuzestan (Leitner 2024 [Chapter 14, this volume]).

Overviews of Mesopotamian Arabic are offered by Jastrow (1978) and (Talay 2012), and that of Arabic varieties in Turkey by Jastrow (2006), Arnold (2015) and Procházka (2019). Word order has been an understudied area, although Jastrow (1978: 131–141) and Birnstiel (2022: 204–218) provide comparative studies of copula syntax, for example, and Dahlgren (1998) offers large-scale, corpus-based studies of Arabic word order, especially concerning the position of subjects. A comparative, corpus-based study of object placement in several Anatolian Arabic dialects can be found in (Noorlander 2023).

1.2 Aramaic

Aramaic is represented in eastern Anatolia by

- the diverse group of *Northeastern Neo-Aramaic* (NENA) spoken by Jews and Christians of Iranian Kurdistan, Iranian Azerbaijan, Iraqi Kurdistan, and southeastern Anatolia;
- *Central Neo-Aramaic* (CNA) consisting of the Neo-Aramaic dialects known as Turoyo spoken by the Christians of Tur ‘Abdin in modern-day Mardin and Şırnak, and the extinct dialect of Mlahso (Turkish: Lice) in Diyarbakir (Jastrow 1994).

This chapter focuses on the dialects in southeastern Anatolia, i.e. the dialects of Turoyo and Mlahso, as well as the NENA dialects in the western periphery. (The eastern periphery is treated in Noorlander (2024 [Chapter 15, this volume]).

The Neo-Aramaic dialects of rural Tur ‘Abdin and that of the city of Midyat exhibit slight variation, while Turoyo in general is distinct from Mlahso. Waltisberg (2016), relying primarily on Ritter (1967), provides a corpus-based overview of Turoyo syntax.

NENA used to be spoken in Christian villages in Şırnak and Siirt, south of the Bohtan river, notably Hertevin (Aramaic name: Artun; Jastrow 1988), Borb-Ruma (i.e. Bohtan, Fox 2009) and Mount Judi (Sinha 2000). The Jewish NENA dialects of Cizre (Nakano 1973) in Şırnak and of Challa (Fassberg 2010) in Hakkari belong to the so-called *Lishana Deni* cluster whose core region is in northwestern Iraq. The Christian NENA dialects of the tribes in Hakkari used to form a densely

Paul M. Noorlander

populated area, e.g. Tkhumā and Upper/Lower Tyare, extending into Turkish Van (Tsereteli 1963), Iranian Azerbaijan, and Iraqi Kurdistan, such as Lower Barwar (Khan 2008a). Several communities originating in Anatolia re-settled in Iraq or along the Khabur river northwest of Al-Hasaka in Syria (Talay 2008, 2009).

Talay (2008) and Khan (2019) provide overviews of the NENA varieties of eastern Anatolia. Individual grammars, for instance, of Barwar (Khan 2008a: 823–950), of Tel Kepe (Mosul Plain; Coghill 2018), of Jewish Zakho (Cohen 2012) and of Jewish Dohok (Molin 2024) offer detailed studies of information structure and word order. Noorlander & Molin (2022) offer corpus-based word order comparisons in Jewish NENA.

2 Word order profile

2.1 Noun phrases

Noun phrases display Numeral-Noun-Adjective order, e.g.

- (1) *Qəltu*-Arabic Kinderib (Jastrow 2003: 2.5:§19)
 $fəθəθ$ $arbaʃ$ $xams$ $šəberi$ $zğār$
 in-three.F four.F five.F straw_basket.PL little.PL
 ‘in three, four, five little straw baskets’
- (2) NENA Txuma (Talay 2009: 166.§16)
 $?arpa$ $xamšá$ $plaš-e$ $xelan-e$
 four five battle.M-PL severe-PL
 ‘four, five severe battles’
- (3) CNA Mlahso (Jastrow 1994: 130.§137, §139)
 tre $aḥ-é...$ $ə=aḥó$ $rab-ó$
 two brother.M-PL DEF.SG=brother.MSG big-MSG
 ‘the two brothers... the elder brother’

Noun-Numeral occurs with the numeral ‘one’ in *Qəltu*-Arabic and Turoyo, as exemplified in (4–5). Adjective-Noun order also sporadically occurs (see §3.1.7.).

- (4) *Qəltu*-Arabic Ka‘biye (Jastrow 2022: 99)
 $karm$ $wēhəd$
 vineyard.MSG one.MSG
 ‘a vineyard’

16 Arabic and Aramaic in eastern Anatolia

- (5) CNA Turoyo, Midən (Jastrow 1985: 275.§9)
 barθo ḥðo
 girl.FSG one.FSG
 'a girl'

Demonstratives precede the noun everywhere except in CNA where the demonstrative is a suffix added to the determined noun and/or to the adjective that immediately follows it (Waltisberg 2016: 46–47), as shown in (7c), which originated in the patterns Noun-Demonstrative and Noun-Adjective-Demonstrative. Adjectives agree in definiteness with their head nominal in *Qəltu*-Arabic and Turoyo, cf. (6) and (7). Attributive demonstratives in the majority of NENA correspond to prefixal definite articles in CNA, e.g. *u*= < **hū* in (7a) and *a*= < **han* in (7b). The near deixis proclitic attributive demonstratives can also be augmented with a deictic suffix *-ha* in the NENA dialect of Hertevin (Jastrow 1988: 33–34), e.g. *'ād=’oda-ha* 'this room over here,' which parallels the situation in Kurdish (see Mohammadirad 2024 [Chapter 9, this volume]).

- (6) *Qəltu*-Arabic Ka‘biye (Jastrow 2022: XXI:§7)
 ād əl-ḥāfez əl-məskin-∅
 DEM.SG DEF-blind.MSG DEF-poor-MSG
 'this poor blind beggar'
- (7) a. CNA Turoyo, Kfarze (Ritter 1967: 67:§92)
 ú=səsy-ayði ú=kom-o
 DEF.MSG=horse.MSG-my DEF.MSG=black-MSG
 'my black horse'
 b. CNA Turoyo, Anhəl (Ritter 1967: 58:§119)
 ám=medon-ani áh=ḥren-e
 DEF.PL=thing.MPL-DEM.PL DEF.PL=other-PL
 'those other things'
 c. CNA Turoyo, Midən (Jastrow 1985: 266.§9)
 á=[tre kürfe kom]-anək
 DEF.PL=two.M snake.MPL black-DEM.PL
 'those two black snakes'
- (8) NENA Hertevin (Jastrow 1988)
 ʔád= naša taw-a
 DEM.SG= man.MSG good-MSG
 'this good man'

Paul M. Noorlander

- (9) NENA Bohtan (Fox 2009: 122.§87)

at abra xen-a
DEM.MSG man.MSG other-MSG
'this other boy'

While the morphology of attributive constructions varies considerably, Noun-Genitive order predominates in both Arabic and Aramaic for both genitive nouns and pronouns, e.g.

- (10) *Qəltu*-Arabic *Āzəx* (Jastrow 1981: VI6:§40)

bayt əl-ḥakəm
house.MSG DEF-judge.MSG
'the house of the judge'

- (11) *Qəltu*-Arabic *Ka'biye* (Jastrow 2022: IV:§16)

bayt abu-y
house.MSG father.MSG-my
'the house of my father'

- (12) CNA Turoyo, Midyat (Ritter 1967: 24:§55)

ú=bayto d-ú=tağər u
DEF.MSG=house.MSG GEN-DEF.SG=merchant.MSG and
i=zangan-ayðe kul-a
DEF.FSG=wealth.FSG-his all-FSG
'the house of the merchant and all his wealth'

- (13) CNA Mlah̄so (Jastrow 1994: 126.§126)

beytó d-ə=malkó
house.MSG GEN-DEF.SG=king.MSG
'the house of the king'

- (14) NENA Hertevin (Jastrow 1988: 156.§583)

l-ʔarʔ-əd bab-ew Yaqo
to-land-CSTR father.MSG-his **jakob**
'to the land of his father Jakob'

2.2 Verbal complements

2.2.1 Verb/object

Verb-Object order predominates in all relevant languages,³ with the exception of Mlahso and the NENA dialect of Bohtan (Borb-Ruma), where Object-Verb predominates. Drawing on distinctions made in the WOWA corpus, however, argument type and definiteness are major factors in several VO doculects, as borne out by the statistics in Figure 2 categorized according to referentiality and identifiability, i.e. definite as opposed to indefinite NPs, and argument type, i.e. pronouns as opposed to nouns. ‘Pronoun,’ here, comprises independent personal and demonstrative pronouns, as illustrated in (15c) for Arabic and (16a) for Aramaic, while all remaining independent pronouns, such as reflexive and indefinite pronouns, are subsumed under ‘Other,’ exemplified in (15d) and (16d). In general, 2 shows there is an increasing likelihood for post-verbal position across all doculects if the object is indefinite. Even in the case of Mlahso where OV order is largely grammaticalized, indefinite objects are slightly more likely post-verbal than their definite counterpart (see §3.1.1 on variation among speakers and the role of contact in Mlahso). This, however, does not mean that definiteness plays a significant role in every dialect. An additional, preliminary study of 96 direct object NPs and their placement in NENA Hertevin) (Jastrow 1988: §§86–100, §§166–172, §§307–323, §§419–466), reveals no significant difference between definite and indefinite object NPs: 25 out of 35 (0.71) indefinites are post-verbal and 47 out of 61 (0.77) definites are post-verbal.

- (15) a. Definite, OV

Qəltu-Arabic *Ka'biye* (Jastrow 2022: II:§19)
mō na-řref madra əštōr ya-hṣəd-ū-nu
 NEG A.1PL-know millet.MSG how A.3-harvest-A.PL-O.3MSG
 ‘We do not know how to harvest the millet.’

- b. Indefinite, VO

Qəltu-Arabic *Ka'biye* (Jastrow 2022: II:§5)
tə-t-řūh-o tá-hṣəd-o madra
 FUT-S.2-go-S.PL A.2-harvest-A.PL millet.MSG
 ‘You shall go to harvest millet.’

- c. Pronominal, OV

Qəltu-Arabic *Ka'biye* (Jastrow 2022: XIV:§2)

³See Dahlgren (1998) on Arabic, Waltisberg (2016: 289–290) on Turoyo, and Noorlander & Molin (2022) on NENA.

Paul M. Noorlander

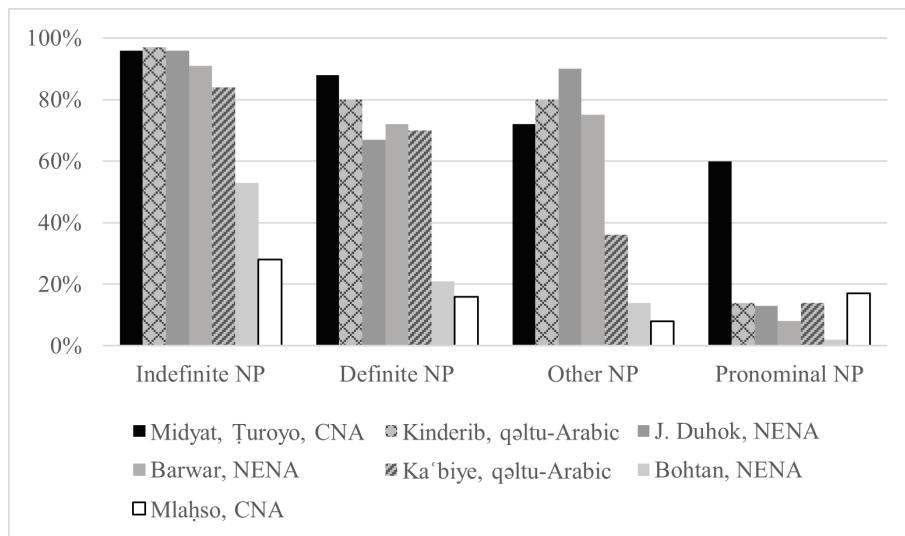


Figure 2: Rate of post-predicate (PP) nominal and pronominal objects

ənti ana t-āxəd-ki
 2FSG 1SG FUT-A.1SG.take-O.2FSG
 'I will take you.'

- d. Other, OV
Qəltu-Arabic Ka'biye (Jastrow 2022: II:§7)
kəll-en qatl-ōn
 all-of.them killed-A.3PL
 'They killed them all.'
- (16) a. Definite, OV
 CNA Turoyo, Midyat (Ritter 1967: 27:§25)
i=hadiy-ayo gə-mšayáʃ -no -le =yo
 DEF.FSG=gift.FSG-DEM.FSG FUT-send -A.1MSG -R.3MSG =T.3MSG
 'I will send him the present.'
- b. Indefinite, VO
 CNA Turoyo, Midyat (Ritter 1967: 27:§25)
tláb -le -le hadiye men-i
 asked.PFV -A.3MSG -R.3MSG gift.FSG from-1SG
 'He asked a present for himself from me.'
- c. Pronominal, OV

CNA Turoyo, Midyat (Ritter 1967: 83:§50)

haθe ono ló=həzj -o -li
 DEM.F.SG 1SG NEG=saw.PFV -O.3F.SG -A.1SG

‘I did not see this one.’

d. Other, VO

CNA Turoyo, Midyat (Ritter 1967: 27:§54)

mayta-lle kul-le
 brought.PFV-A.3PL all-of.them

‘He brought them all.’

The tokens of object pronouns are low, since they are, by default, expressed with object suffixes on the verb; their independent expression thus attracts attention in the discourse. This notwithstanding, the data indicate their word order preference should not be characterised in the same manner as nouns, suggesting OV order instead in the NENA doculects and Ka‘biye *Qəltu*-Arabic doculect.

A fronted definite object generally triggers object indexing, i.e. clitic doubling or cross-referencing verbal object suffixes, as illustrated in (15a) for Arabic and (16a) for Aramaic. Topicalization with pronominal resumption is well-known in Arabic linguistics and also occurs in Anatolian Arabic, e.g. see Wittrich (2001: 164–165) for examples of topicalization in the *Qəltu*-Arabic dialect of Āzəx. Moreover, pre-verbal placement is conditioned by specificity in at least the Kozluk-Sason-Muş dialects (Akkuş 2017). The object indexing originally used to be dedicated to topicalization and subsequently developed into a differential object coding strategy. Other studies of Arabic word order (Dahlgren 1998; El Zarka & Zia-gos 2020), however, have treated such definite objects – often in clause-initial position – with additional object indexing on the verb as clause-external arguments, and not instances of OV. How frequently this pre-verbal placement occurs, be it due to topicalization or specificity, has not been studied in detail. Preposed objects of any kind – be they topicalized to clause-initial position or simply fronted before the verb – were subsumed under OV in the current approach, and the importance of treating them as such is borne out by the statistics in 2. The additional factor of object indexing requires further investigation, but see Noorlander & Molin (2022) on Jewish NENA and Noorlander (2023) on Anatolian Arabic.

2.2.2 Verb/goal

Lexicalized arguments – in contrast to bound verbal person markers – denoting endpoint roles (see Introduction, this volume) like the goal of verbs of (caused) motion, such as ‘go’ and ‘bring,’ are generally post-verbal throughout, as given

Paul M. Noorlander

in the first column of Table 2. The second column of Table 2 combines the tokens of *Recipients* of ditransitive verbs like ‘give’ and *Beneficiaries*, and the last column shows the tokens of *Addressees* of verbs of speech like ‘say’. These respective roles are illustrated for Ka‘biye Arabic and Mlahso Aramaic in (17–18). Thus, endpoints are generally treated the same across docullects, except for Recipient/Beneficiaries and especially Addressees in Mlahsó, which are pre-verbal more often than in the other docullects (this is an areal phenomenon; see §3.1.4).

Table 2: Rate of post-predicate (PP) goal-like arguments

| Docullect | G | | R/Ben | | Addr | |
|--------------------------------|----------|------|----------|-----|----------|------|
| | <i>n</i> | PP | <i>n</i> | PP | <i>n</i> | PP |
| Midyat, Turoyo, CNA | 140 | 97% | 24 | 96% | 25 | 100% |
| J. Dohok, NENA | 112 | 99% | 34 | 95% | 31 | 100% |
| Kinderib, <i>Qəltu</i> -Arabic | 76 | 100% | 21 | 95% | (5 | 60%) |
| Ka‘biye, <i>Qəltu</i> -Arabic | 87 | 92% | 29 | 79% | 12 | 75% |
| Mlahso, CNA | 152 | 97% | 42 | 69% | 34 | 50% |

(17) a. Verb-Goal

Q̠altu-Arabic *Ka'b̠iye* (Jastrow 2022: XIV:§4)

t̠a-ḥreb *t̠a-ğ̠i* *bayt*

S.2FSG-flee S.2FSG-come house.MSG

‘She flees **home**.’

b. Verb-Recipient

Q̠altu-Arabic *Ka'b̠iye* (Jastrow 2022: XIII:§1)

ana t-a-ḥ̠ti *b̠ənt-i* *š̠ān əben* *ax̠ū-y*

I FUT-A.1SG-give daughter.FSG-my to son.MSG.CSTR brother-my

‘I shall give my daughter **to the son of my brother**.’

c. Verb-Addressee

Q̠altu-Arabic *Ka'b̠iye* (Jastrow 2022: XIV:§24)

əl-xōğ̠a *y-qūl-∅* *š̠ā-ll-ūlād*

DEF-Khoja A.3M-say-A.SG to-DEF-boy.PL

‘The Khoja says **to the lads**.’

(18) a. Verb-Goal

CNA Mlaḥṣo (Jastrow 1994: 108.§25)

ase-lan *sayni beytō*

went.PFV-S.1PL same house.MSG

‘We went **to the same house**.’

b. Verb-Recipient

CNA Mlaḥṣo (Jastrow 1994: 163.§117)

ə=brat-ezav *hiv-le* *l-ə=nošk-ano*

DEF.SG=daughter.FSG-his gave.PFV-A.3MSG DEF.SG=person-DEM.MSG

‘He gave **that person** his daughter.’

c. Addressee-Verb

CNA Mlaḥṣo (Jastrow 1994: 90.§115)

malkó el-áv emir-le

king.MSG to-3MSG said.PFV-A.3MSG

‘The king said **to him**...’

Relative object ordering in three-argument clauses depends on construction type. In the *prepositional dative construction*, the prepositional Recipient comes second. In a *double object construction*, both arguments are treated like O, and the Recipient comes first. This alternation is shown in (19) for NENA.⁴

⁴For more examples, see (Coghill 2014) and Noorlander (2018: 144–153) for NENA, Waltisberg (2016) for Turoyo, Camilleri et al. (2014) and Birnstiel (2022) for Arabic.

Paul M. Noorlander

- (19) a. Theme(O)-Recipient(Prepositional)

NENA Hertevin (Jastrow 1988: §437)

dah b-yāw-ah-la h̥akimut-an l-ohá

how FUT-give-.A.1PL-O.3FSG government.FSG-our to-DEM.MSG

‘How are we to grant lordship over us to that one?’

- b. Recipient(O)-Theme(O)

NENA Hertevin (Jastrow 1988: §437)

yāw-á-lehən ʔan čičoke beʔe

give-A.3FSG-O.3PL DEM.PL chick.PL egg.PL

‘She would give these chicks eggs.’

The default order of the prepositional dative construction in both Turoyo (Waltisberg 2016: 298) and NENA (e.g. Noorlander & Molin 2022: 251) as well as Anatolian *Qəltu*-Arabic is *Verb-Theme-Recipient*:⁵

- (20) CNA Turoyo, Midyat (Ritter 1967: 27:§30)

húle-le=ste kallat ǵalabe l-ú-haloq-ano

gave.PFV-A.3MSG=ADD money.PL much to-DEF.MSG-barber-DEM.MSG

‘He gave the barber much money.’

- (21) a. *Qəltu*-Arabic Kinderib (Jastrow 2003: 6.1:§24)

ta-ʃti-∅ r̥g̥if lə-ʂāhdət ət-tannōr

3F-give-SG flatbread.MSG to-owner.FSG.CSTR DEF-oven

‘She gives the owner of the oven a flatbread.’

- b. *Qəltu*-Arabic Hasankeyf (Fink 2020: 6.4.2:§5)

ilzam yə-ʃti-∅ parāt l-əmm w-abū

must A.3M-give-A.SG money.PL to-mother.FSG and-father.MSG

‘He must give his mother and father money.’

- c. *Qəltu*-Arabic Hasköy (Talay 2002: I.2.2.:§9)

qən-na n-āxəz p̥elāv šā ixt-ət-na

wanted.PFV-A.1PL A.1PL-buy shoe.SG for sister-FSG.CSTR-our

‘We wanted to buy shoes for our sister.’

2.2.3 Become/complement

Final sates of inchoative verbs, such as ‘become,’ ‘make,’ ‘turn into (tr./intr.)’ tend to follow the predicate:

⁵ Birnstiel (2022: 218–230) points to the default order of Verb-Recipient-Theme, but this does not seem to hold for all of *Qəltu*-Arabic.

- (22) a. *Qəltu*-Arabic *Ka'bkiye* (Jastrow 2022: XIII:§2)

ṣār-∅ *kačal*

became.PFV-S.3MSG bald

‘He turned bald.’

- b. *Qəltu*-Arabic *Ka'bkiye* (Jastrow 2022: IX:§11)

n-say-en *kəde pūšiy-āt*

A.1PL-make-O.3PL such headscarf-PL

‘We make them into headscarves.’

- (23) a. CNA *Mlaħso* (Jastrow 1994: 112.§50)

kul-én *ve-len* *nayar-ezan*

all-of.them became.PFV-S.3PL enemy.PL-our

‘They all became our enemies.’

- b. CNA *Mlaħso* (Jastrow 1994: 116.§75)

bāṭrāk *Elyás sim-le* *el-áv* *šammás*

patriarch.MSG Elyas made.PFV-A.3MSG DOM-3MSG deacon.MSG

‘Patriarch Elyas made him deacon.’

In dialects with a higher rate of OV, such as the NENA dialect of Bohtan, the relative placement of the argument of the verb ‘make,’ distinguishes between the preverbal direct object and the postverbal endpoint denoting the final state, as reflected in the following example (see Noorlander 2024 [Chapter 15, this volume] for parallels in Iran):

- (24) a. Object-Verb

NENA Bohtan (Fox 2009: 55)

xa kaboba iwad-le

one kebab.MSG make.IMPV-O.3MSG

‘Make a kebab!'

- b. Verb-Complement

NENA Bohtan (Fox 2009: 56)

wəd-lo-le kaboba

made.PFV-A.3FSG-O.3MSG kebab.MSG

‘She made it into a kebab.’

2.2.4 Other obliques

Post-verbal position is the most common for obliques. The first column of Table 3 gives the statistics of place and source constituents, illustrated in (25a)

Paul M. Noorlander

for Arabic and (26a) for Aramaic. Pre-verbal placement, by contrast, is common in Ka'biye Arabic, e.g. (25b), and predominates in Mlahso, e.g. (26b). Moreover, while all obliques generally behave similarly across **docluects**, instruments, given in the second column of Table 3, are more likely pre-verbal than other obliques in Turoyo Aramaic.

Table 3: Rate of post-predicate (PP) oblique arguments (pronominal and nominal)

| Doculect | Place/Source | | Instrument | |
|--------------------------------|--------------|-----|------------|-----|
| | <i>n</i> | PP | <i>n</i> | PP |
| Kinderib, <i>Qəltu</i> -Arabic | 43 | 98% | 13 | 92% |
| Barwar, NENA | 177 | 74% | 21 | 71% |
| Midyat, Turoyo, CNA | 121 | 88% | 22 | 55% |
| Ka'biye, <i>Qəltu</i> -Arabic | 82 | 61% | 19 | 47% |
| Mlahso, CNA | 56 | 34% | 13 | 15% |

2.3 Other predicates

2.3.1 Copulas

Semitic languages generally lack a verbal copula in present realis clauses. The juxtaposition of a (pro)noun and a nominal predicate are sufficient, and this occurs in all relevant major subgroups of Arabic and Aramaic in eastern Anatolia. The use of pronominal copulas, however, is a hallmark of *Qəltu*-Arabic as well as Central and Northeastern Neo-Aramaic (and a well-documented areal phenomenon, see §3.2). Their relative position not only varies across dialects, but also depends on clause type. Overall, pronominal copulas exist for all clause types, except past and unrealis clauses, where a copular 'be' verb is preferred, e.g. Arabic *kwn*, Aramaic *hwj*. The paradigmatic organisation of pronouns and copulas is closely intertwined in Central Neo-Aramaic and *Qəltu*-Arabic, as compared for the peripheral dialects in Table 4. It is not unlikely that the pronominal inflection in Mlahso was based on an Arabic model. An overview with contrastive illustrations from a sample of the relevant languages is given in Table 5.⁶

Table 4: Comparison of personal pronoun and copula in Sason Arabic and Mlahso

| Sason Arabic (Akkuş 2017: 14) | | Mlahso, CNA (Jastrow 1988) | |
|----------------------------------|-------------|-------------------------------|--------------|
| 3MSG | <i>iyu</i> | <i>=ye</i> | <i>hiye</i> |
| 3FSG | <i>iya</i> | <i>=ye</i> | <i>hiya</i> |
| 3PL | <i>iyen</i> | <i>=nen</i> | <i>hiyen</i> |

Generally, the negative and relative copula precede the predicate, as does the so-called deictic copula—or “demonstrative” or “presentative” copula—, which asserts an actual state of affairs in the immediately observable present, often with speaker or listener deixis. The latter is thus frequently used after verbs of perception, generally incompatible with questions, and ultimately derived from a deictic particle combined with a pronominal element. These three copula types are illustrated in (27) and (28).

- (27) a. Negative copula

⁶On copula syntax in *Qəltu*-Arabic, see Jastrow (1978: 131–141) and Birnstiel (2022: 204–218), on that in NENA, see e.g. Khan, Khan (2002: 322–330, 2008a 823–842), Cohen (2012: 30–65), on that in Turoyo, see Waltisberg (2016: 112–122, 208–210, 238–240).

Paul M. Noorlander

Q̠al̠tu-Arabic Qartmin (Jastrow 1978: 137)

ma-nne *f̠ə-l-bayt*

NEG-COP.3MSG in-DEF-house.MSG

'They are not at home.'

- b. Relative copula

Q̠al̠tu-Arabic Qartmin (Jastrow 1978: 138)

la-nne *f̠ə-s-suri*

REL-COP.3PL in-DEF-Syria

'(Yazidis) who are in Syria'

- c. Deictic copula

Q̠al̠tu-Arabic Qartmin (Jastrow 1978: 140)

kənā *rəfqət-u* *ğaw*

DEIC.COP.3PL companion.MPL-his came.PFV.3PL

'Look! There they are, his companions are coming.'

- (28) a. Negative copula

CNA Midən, Turoyo (Ritter 1967: 115;§206)

ám=may-anı *dəθxu* **lan-ne** *basim-e*

DEF.PL-water.PL-DEM.PL GEN.2PL NEG-COP.3PL nice-PL

'That water of yours is not **tasty**'

b. Relative copula

CNA Midən, Turoyo (Ritter 1967: 115:§24)

d-kət-ne *yatiw-e*
 REL-EXIST-COP.3PL seated-PL

'(those) who are seated'

c. Deictic copula

CNA Midən, Turoyo (Ritter 1967: 116:§48)

ka-lən-ne *tamo*
 DEIC-3PL=COP.3PL there
 'Look, they are there!'

The default position of the copula in affirmative present realis clauses is after the nominal predicate in the majority of the Anatolian *Qaltru*-Arabic varieties as well as in that of Neo-Aramaic. The copula, however, is not necessarily clause-final, as shown in (29b), nor is it obligatory, as shown in (29c). The predicate is expected to be downgraded to the background when following the copula in a focalisation strategy like (29b) where the subject pronoun is in narrow focus for the purpose of identification or specification. The copula can be completely lacking in clauses like (29c), a structure that is akin to the original Semitic non-verbal clause, reflecting *Topic-Comment* order. The frequency of this structure is unknown, and this has not been coded in the WOWA corpus.

(29) a. Default

CNA Midən, Turoyo (Ritter 1967: 79:§12)

ono Hóre =no!
 I Hore =COP.1SG
 'I am Hore!'

b. Focalisation

CNA Midən, Turoyo (Ritter 1967: 82:§40)

óno =no *Šex* *Dhām*
 I =COP.1SG Sheikh Dham
 'It is I, Sheikh Dham.'

c. Absent

CNA Midən, Turoyo (Ritter 1967: 116:§1)

ono Slemān Hanna Maskobi
 I Sleman Hanna Maskobi
 'I am Sleman Hanna Maskobi.'

Paul M. Noorlander

Pre-posed copulas, in turn, are a typical trait of the Arabic dialects of Siirt (Lahdo 2009), comparable to the situation in Levantine Arabic, except for interrogative clauses (Jastrow 1978: 132, and §3.2). Across NENA dialects in the region, pre-predicate placement of the affirmative copula is possible when the predicate serves the purpose of identification or when it expresses a transitory state, in which case the predicate will be most often adverbial, e.g. (30a) (see, for example, Molin 2022: 219–262 regarding J. Dohok, NENA). The latter parallels the structure of the deictic copula, as shown in (30b).

- (30) a. Present affirmative copula

NENA J. Challa (Fassberg 2010: 5.6:§17)

?āya =le l-tama
he =COP.3MSG on-there
'He is there.'

- b. Present deictic copula

NENA J. Challa (Fassberg 2010: 102)

faqida dexun, wəl-le l-axxa
military.leader 2PL.GEN DEIC-COP.3MSG on-here
'Your leader, he is right here.'

Table 5: Comparison of copula placement in *Qəltu*-Arabic and Central Neo-Aramaic

| <i>Qəltu</i> -Arabic | | | | |
|---------------------------|-----------------------|----------------------|------------------------|------------------------|
| Siirt ^a | Kinderib ^a | Ka'biye ^b | Hasankeyf ^c | |
| mayye falbayt | mayye falbayt | fəlbayt maye | mo fəlbayt=e | 'She is not at home.' |
| əlbənt iyy falbayt | əlbənt fəlbayt=ye | əlbənt falbayt=ye | əlbənt falbayt=e | 'The girl is at home.' |
| əlbənt ayysap iyye? | əlbənt ayni=ye? | əlbənt əndah=he? | əlbənt angəs=e? | 'Where is the girl?' |
| NENA | | | | |
| J. Challa ^d | Bohtan ^e | Turoyo | Mlahso ^f | CNA |
| lewa go besa | lewa bata | latyo bú=bayto | b-beytó letyo | 'She is not at home.' |
| brata (?ila) go besa(=la) | brata bata=la | í=barθo bú=bayto=yo | ə=brató b-beytó=yo | 'The girl is at home.' |
| ?aya ma=yle? | awa m=ile? | hawo mən=yo? | awo mən=yo? | 'What is that?' |

These are hypothetical examples to illustrate the patterns.

^aJastrow (1978: 137), Lahdo (2009: 73–76, 172–175), ^bJastrow (2022: 47), ^cFink (2020: 76–77, 152–153), ^dFassberg (2010: 100–101), ^eFox (2009), ^fJastrow (1994: §35, §62, §142)

2.3.2 Auxiliaries

Tense-Aspect-Mood is generally expressed by preverbal uninflected particles, which may have originated in auxiliaries. Complements of modal and phasal

16 Arabic and Aramaic in eastern Anatolia

verbs immediately follow, as given in (31). Deictic copulas are also pre-verbal, conveying imminent or ongoing events in the immediately observable present (see §3.2 for examples).

(31) Auxiliary-Verb-Object

- a. *Qəltu*-Arabic Ka³biye (Jastrow 2022: II:§2)
mo y-ṭiq-∅ *yə-šreb-*∅ *mayy əl-fašqi*
 NEG S.3-can-MSG A.3-drink-MSG water DEF-dung

‘He **cannot** drink the sewage water.’

- b. CNA Midyat, Turoyo (Ritter 1967: 24:§12)
hat lú-k-qudr-ət ∅-*mbaṭl-ət* *úw-*
 you.SG NEG-IND-can-S.2MSG SBJV-stop-A.2MSG DEF.MSG-
amro d-aloho
 command.MSG GEN-god.MSG

‘You **cannot** thwart God’s command.’

2.3.3 Complements of non-finite verbs

The bare object of infinitives regularly precedes the verb in the NENA dialects of Hertevin and Bohtan, illustrated in (32-33) below; cf. by contrast, NENA Barwar (Khan 2008b: B5:§175) *lewa mšurya xala gəlla* ‘It had not started eating grass’; see also §2.3.3 in Chapter (Noorlander 2024), this volume. Interestingly, however, in Bohtan the general rate of post-verbal object NPs is 0.33 (out of 93), while this is 0.75 (out of 96) in Hertevin. In Hertevin, therefore, only objects of infinitives have shifted to OV.

(32) NENA Hertevin (Jastrow 1988: §318-§319)

- a. Object-Verb(Infinitive)
b-dar-ah *'ida* *gəlla* *čla'a*
 FUT-throw-A.1PL hand.FSG grass.MSG mow.INF
 ‘We started mowing grass.’
- b. Verb(Finte)-Object
člé'-lah-le *gəll-an*
 mowed.PFV-A.1PL-O.3MSG grass.MSG-our
 ‘We mowed our grass.’

Paul M. Noorlander

(33) NENA Bohtan (Jastrow 1988: §118)

- a. Object-Verb(Infinitive)

ani darəš-i qanyon-e xlowa
they begin-A.3PL sheep-PL milk.INF
'They started milking sheep.'

- b. Verb(Finite)-Object

oyün=se xolü-∅ qanyon-e
he=ADD milk-A.3MSG sheep-PL
'He too was milking sheep.'

3 Areal issues

Turkish and Northern Kurdish have been the dominant languages in eastern Anatolia since recent times, and Aramaic-Armenian bilingualism presumably also occurred (Jastrow 1994: 3). Aramaic and Arabic have been in contact with each other from the beginning and both at various stages with Persian – and Greek – in Antiquity. Moreover, Aramaic and *Qaltru*-Arabic varieties of Anatolia and the Mediterranean Region were an integral part of dialect continua stretching from the Levant through Anatolia to Mesopotamia (Jastrow 2007). Intra-Semitic contact and Semitic-Iranian contact therefore has a long and complex history.⁷

Finding themselves between mainstream Arabic, a prototypical example of a head-initial language, and Turkish, that of a head-final language, the relevant Arabic and Aramaic varieties exhibit numerous hallmarks that can be characterized against the backdrop of these two spheres of influences. At the same time, these contact-induced typological traits cannot be disentangled from language-internal developments. Iranian languages like Kurdish, in turn, have a more mixed word order typology, being in several respects rather similar to Semitic, except for the more rigid preverbal object position, the fixed clause-final copula placement, and the higher number of postpositions, which exhibit distinctly head-final syntax. While the influence of such neighbouring V-final languages – be they Iranian or Turkic – is undeniable, intensive exposure to contact with such languages may not always radically change word order typology. For example, the Arabic and Aramaic varieties – originally – spoken in Iranian Khuzestan

⁷For areal perspectives on Anatolia, see *inter alia* Haig (2001, 2014, 2017); Matras (2009: 270); Haig & Khan (2019); Khan (2019); Donabedian & Sitaridou (2021); on Aramaic and Kurdish specifically, see Noorlander (2014), and on Arabic in Anatolia, e.g. Talay (2007), Procházka (2020) and Akkuş (2020).

are still characterized as VO (Häberl 2011: 735; El Zarka & Ziagos 2020), suggesting that, if correct – which is still a matter of debate –, word order can be remarkably stable. This notwithstanding, local OV languages doubtless affected the peripheral Anatolian Arabic dialects belonging to the Diyarbakir or Kozluk-Sason-Muş cluster and the Neo-Aramaic dialect of Mlaḥso in Diyarbakir and that of Bohtan in Siirt. Furthermore, a higher rate of OV can be indicative of greater word order flexibility for pragmatically driven configurations, which could yet need not result from contact, and this is presumably the situation in the majority of NENA dialects. In fact, it is plausible that continuous interaction with the wider Arabic-speaking world reinforced more rigid VO syntax, thereby serving as an anticatalyst against a shift to OV or more flexible word order, although much more comparative data is needed to establish how frequently, for instance, object topicalization occurs across Arabic dialects. Thus, the rather inflexible VO syntax in Turoyo may well be the result of Arabic influence, and not necessarily an archaic feature. The greatest extent of Arabic influence on NENA, in turn, is observed on the Mosul Plain in northern Iraq (Khan 2002; Coghill 2020).

3.1 Kurdish and Turkish influence

3.1.1 Object/verb

The data suggest that a combination of both the area-specific contact situation and the language-specific syntax of definite objects reinforced OV dominance. Figure 3 shows the relative frequencies in percentages of post-predicate objects in several Arabic and Aramaic dialects with the variables of definiteness and indefiniteness. The more rigid VO varieties are found on the left of the figure, with higher rates of VO overall in Jewish Baghdadi *Qaṭlu*-Arabic (Noorlander 2022b), and the more rigid OV varieties on the right, with the lowest rates of VO overall in Mlaḥso Neo-Aramaic (Diyarbakir). The difference between definite and indefinite objects, as indicated by the first and second bars, respectively, is smallest in those dialects closer to the ends of the spectrum.

Starting from right (OV) to left (VO), significant variation is observed among Mlaḥso speakers. Speaker 2 recorded in Diyarbakir, has conventionalized OV order consistently, showing extensive imposition of Turkic and/or Iranian, much like the Jewish NENA dialect of Urmi (Noorlander 2024 [Chapter 15, this volume]). This is different from the other idiolect of Mlaḥso, Speaker 1, recorded in Qamishli, where the slightly higher rate of VO order is likely due to interference with Arabic and/or Turoyo. In the NENA dialect of Bohtan (Borb-Ruma), the high rate reflects a conventionalization of OV word order, but definiteness remains a

Paul M. Noorlander

factor, and indefinite objects are lagging behind in the VO-to-OV shift. Definiteness is even a stronger factor in the *Qəltu*-Arabic dialect of Daragözü, which is part of Kozluk-Sason-Muş group of Anatolian Arabic, where the OV/VO split depending on definiteness is largely grammaticalized: OV order for definite objects against VO order for indefinite objects. While the same tendency is also reflected in especially the Jewish NENA dialect of Dohok (Molin 2022) and to some extent also in the *Qəltu*-Arabic variety of Ka'bîye, these two varieties waver more strongly towards VO. Finally, the statistics are also given for Cilician Levantine Arabic⁸, showing, like Jewish Baghdadi, no significant difference, presumably due to contact with mainstream Arabic.

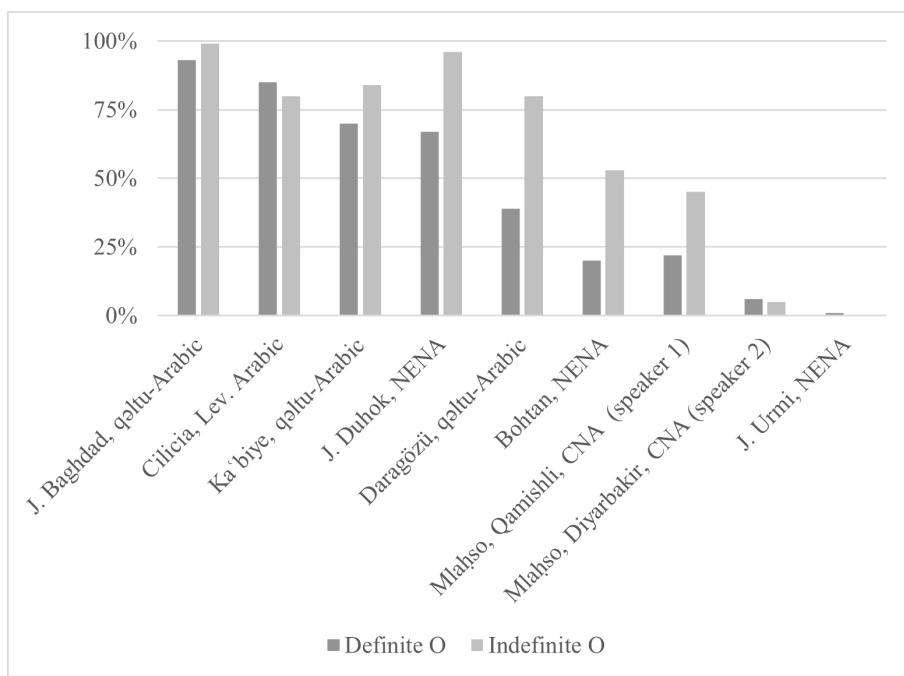


Figure 3: The rate of post-predicate (PP) definite and indefinite objects in Arabic and Aramaic

Historically, the complete syntacticization of OV as in Central Asian Arabic (e.g. Seeger 2002; Jastrow 2004) and in Jewish NENA of Iran (e.g. Khan 2020; Noorlander & Molin 2022; Noorlander 2024 [Chapter 15, this volume]) is only sporadically observed in Anatolia, and definiteness remains a major factor in

⁸Contact with Turkish could still play a role here, see Noorlander (2023).

regulating object placement. While VO is certainly the more archaic order, alternative pragmatically driven configurations were presumably part of Central Semitic syntax as a whole, but perhaps not with equal frequency across the entire subgroup. The shift to OV in Central Asian Arabic is generally explained in terms of the conventionalization and thus increase in frequency of a former topicalization strategy, e.g. *That man – I saw him yesterday*, due to the exposure to intensive contact with Uzbek and Tajik (e.g. Versteegh 1984: 452; Ratcliffe 2005; Lameen Souag 2017: 56); the same holds for OV in NENA under Kurdish influence (Haig 2015: 410–412). These explanations are consistent with the data as well as with the view of contact-induced word order convergence as a result of the extension of a pre-existing parallel construction (e.g. Silva-Corvalán 1994, 2008⁹; Heine 2008).

3.1.2 Possessum/existential

Possessum placement in locative-existential predicative possession correlates with object placement, as illustrated in (34–35). Lower rates of post-predicate possessums correlate with lower rates of post-predicate objects. The dialects are contrasted in Figure 4 where the line indicates the frequency of post-predicate possessums across dialects decreasing significantly from core into periphery, and the bars indicate the frequency of post-predicate definite objects.

- (34) a. Existential-Possessum

Cilician Arabic Çukurova (Procházka 2002: 2.4:§1)

kān il-a ibin

PST.COP.3MSG to-3FSG son.MSG

‘She had a son.’

- b. Possessum-Existential

Qal’tu-Arabic Ka‘biye (Jastrow 2022: XIV:§12)

ənti mādām bayt abu lə-ki

you.FSG because house.MSG father.MSG to-2FSG

‘because you have a father house’

- (35) a. Existential-Possessum

CNA Turoyo (Ritter 1967: 27:§1)

kət-wo šul̩t̩ono kət-wo-le bəstono

EXIST-PST sultan.MSG EXIST-PST-A.3MSG garden.MSG

‘There was once a sultan who had a garden.’

⁹I am indebted to G. Haig for directing my attention to this reference

Paul M. Noorlander

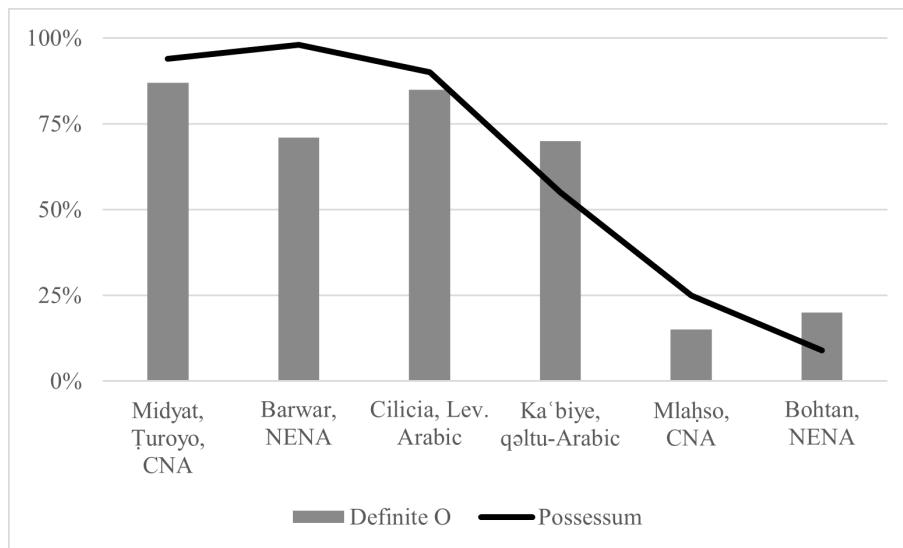


Figure 4: The rate of post-predicate definite and indefinite objects in Arabic and Aramaic

b. Possessum-Existential

CNA Mlahso (Jastrow 1994: §71)

karme hito el-əna

vineyards.PL EXIST to-1PL

‘We have vineyards.’

Sporadically, possessors – otherwise predicative – can even be expressed ad-nominally as they are in Kurdish (cf. Fox 2009: 116 fn. 103) and Turkish, cf. (36) and (37) with (38) and (39).

- (36) Northern Kurdish

bira-yek=î min he-ye
brother-INDEF=EZ.MSG my EXIST-COP.3SG
‘I have a brother.’

- (37) Turkish

oğlu -m yok
son -my NEG.EXIST
‘I have no son.’

- (38) CNA Mlahso (Jastrow 1994: 106.§12)

ah -i hito
brother.MSG -my EXIST

'I have a brother.'

- (39) NENA Bohtan (Fox 2009: 4.1:§1)

oyün iwa baxt -əw=u abr -əw
he PST.COP.3SG wife.FSG -his=and son.MSG -his

'He **had** a wife and a son.'

3.1.3 Light-verb complements

Similarly, the non-referential complement of light verb constructions follows the verb where VO predominates, as given in (40–42).¹⁰

- (40) T. *banyo etmek*

Qəltu-Arabic Mardin (Jastrow 1981: I.1:§60)

t-a-ği a-sawiy-u bāñyo
FUT-S.1SG-come A.1SG-do-O.3MSG bathroom

'I shall come to wash him.'

- (41) T. *telefon etmek*, K. *telefon kirin*

CNA Midyat, Turoyo (Ritter 1967: 7:§13)

səm-li talafón l-ú= həkimo d-áh= həyewən
did.PFV-A.1SG telephone to-DEF.MSG= doctor.MSG GEN-DEF.PL= animal.PL

'I called the vet.'

- (42) T. *idare etmek*

NENA Hertevin (Jastrow 1988: 156.§505)

∅-ʔod-ah-be ʔidara
SBVJ-do-A.3MSG-by.it management

'so that we come through it'

The complement regularly precedes the light verb in dialects with a higher OV rate:

¹⁰For more examples, see e.g. Talay (2007: 184); Akkuş (2020: 150); Procházka (2020: 97).

Paul M. Noorlander

- (43) T. *keyf etmek*, K. *kēf kirin*
Qəltu-Arabic Ka‘biye (Jastrow 2022: XIII:§4)
kēf saw-ōn
 joy did.PFV-A.3PL
 ‘They celebrated.’
- (44) K. *kar kirin*
 CNA Mlahso (Jastrow 1994: 106.§17)
l-á=tay-e kar sim-no
 for-DEF=muslim-PL labour do-1MSG
 ‘I shall work for the Muslims.’
- (45) Russ. *sobraniye*
 NENA Bohtan (Fox 2009: 4.2:§2)
sabroni yawd-i
 meeting do-A.3PL
 ‘They held a meeting.’

3.1.4 Addressee/verb & verb/goal

The Addressee placement in Mlahso also converges with Kurdish word order typology. In Mlahso the post-predicate rate of addressees is only 56% (18/32), whereas this rate is a 100% in Turopyo (Midyat; 26/26). Mlahso also shows a higher rate of Beneficiary-Verb order (11/23) as opposed to Verb-Recipient order (16/17). Addressee-Verb and Beneficiary-Verb order as opposed to Verb-Goal order corresponds to the Northern Kurdish word order pattern in the same region (Haig 2022). Imposition from Iranian—rather than Turkish—is thus the most likely explanation for this syntactic split in Mlahso. Oblique-Verb order in Mlahso (§2.2.4) could be due to contact with either Iranian or Turkish.

3.1.5 Wh-in-situ

Wh-elements, or interrogatives, regularly remain in-situ in Kurdish, as given in (46a) for direct objects and (46b) for goals, although the latter can also undergo fronting as in (46c) (Haig 2022: 339). The same order would be obtained for Turkish, although, here, most arguments, including goals, regularly precede the predicate contrary to Kurdish (see Haig et al. 2024 [Chapter 1, this volume]).

16 Arabic and Aramaic in eastern Anatolia

(46) Northern Kurdish

- a. Object *wh*-in-situ
tu di-zan-î min çi kir
 A.DIR.2SG IND-know-A.2SG A.OBL.1SG what did.PST
 'You know what I did.'
- b. Goal *wh*-in-situ
tu di-č-î kîve
 A.DIR.2SG IND-go-S.2SG where
 'Where are you going?'
- c. Goal *wh*-fronted
tu kîve di-č-î
 A.DIR.2SG where IND-go-S.2SG
 'Where are you going?'

Generally, *wh*-fronting occurs in the relevant Arabic and Aramaic dialects, as expected for VO typology. Occasionally, the *wh*-element stays in situ, as illustrated in (47). In the NENA dialect of Bohtan – and the CNA dialect of Mlaħso – the object interrogative, however, stays in situ in line with their OV typology, as shown in (48). When *wh*-fronting occurs, the clause-initial slot remains open for a topical element, which usually is the subject. The resulting order of Subject-Interrogative-Predicate converges with that found in Northern Kurdish and Turkish, as illustrated in (48–50) below, and in §3.2.

(47) CNA Midən (Ritter 1967: 115:§7)

- adlalyo g-əzz-anو l-ayko*
 tonight FUT-go-S.1PL to-where
 'Where shall we go tonight?'

(48) NENA Bohtan (Fox 2009: 4.3:§38)

- yad-ət ona moy wid-ena*
 know-A.2MSG I what do.PERF-A.1MSG
 'You know what I have done.'

(49) CNA Midən (Ritter 1967: 73:§273)

- hat mə ko-saym-ət*
 you.SG what IND-do-A.2MSG
 'What are you doing?'

Paul M. Noorlander

- (50) *Qəltu*-Arabic Hasköy (Talay 2002: I.2.4)
ina šəna āsi
 I what A.1SG.do
 'What should I do?'

3.1.6 Postpositions?

The relevant Aramaic and Arabic dialects in contact with OV languages have maintained prepositional marking. In one case, however, the NENA dialect of Borb-Ruma (Bohtan) developed a postposition *=ləl* out of the preposition *lal* (Fox 2009: 101–102), e.g. (51a). There is, however, no direct correspondence to a postposition in any of the neighbouring languages, which, in fact, would not generally use a posposition with inanimate goals, cf.(52b). When it attaches to the predicate, this is presumably an instance of convergence with the Northern Kurdish directional particle *=e* (Fox 2009: 101–102), cf. (51a) with (52a).

- (51) a. Postposition
 NENA Bohtan (Fox 2009: 126:§139)
üzü-Ø-wa *matwota=ləl*
 go.ANT-S.3MSG-PST village.PL=DRCT
 'He had gone to the villages.'
- b. Directional particle
 NENA Bohtan (Fox 2009: 118:§35)
duwa *yar-o=lal* *gawr-aw*
 woman.FSG say-A.3FSG=DRCT man.MSG-her
 'His mother says to her husband...'
- (52) a. Directional particle and oblique
 Bahdini, Northern Kurdish
ez *di-çû-m=e* *mal-ê*
 1SG.DIR IND-go-S.1SG=DRCT house-OBL.F
 'I'm going home.'
- b. Directional particle and oblique
 Bahdini, Northern Kurdish
min *got=e* *Mesûd-î*
 1SG.OBL say.PST=DRCT Masoud-OBL.M
 'I said to Masoud.'

3.1.7 Other OV correlates

Several other phenomena are related to the head-final typology of especially Turkish, which are again imposed more strongly in the northern and western periphery. A case in point is copula placement: in Mlahso Neo-Aramaic and the *Qəltu*-Arabic dialects of Diyarbakir and Kozluk-Sason-Muş areas, the post-predicate position has been conventionalised for also the negated copula. In the dialect of Hasankeyf, in turn, the exact parallel to Kurmanji occurs: the negator itself is pre-predicate but the copula post-predicate (see 5 in §2.3.1). This tendency is reflected in the statistics of the doculects: the rate of post-predicate copula complements is only 3% (2/65) in Mlaḥso (CNA) and 5% (4/79) in Ka'biye (qəltu-Arabic) against 20% (14/71) in Turoyo (CNA) and 35% (54/156) in C. Barwar (NENA).

While it is difficult to determine the language which ultimately provided the model for the development of post-predicate copulas in these Semitic languages, it is reasonable to assume an interplay of language-internal changes as well as contact-induced reinforcement and areal diffusion. The placement of a pronoun serving as the subject of a non-verbal clause, for instance, was not entirely fixed and its post-predicate position was part of the repertoire of Central Semitic. The starting point could have been interrogative clauses, as in the *Qəltu*-Arabic dialect of Siirt: the copula otherwise precedes the predicate but it is placed after the interrogative, which incidentally converges with Northern Kurdish syntax, as compared in (53–56). *Subject-Interrogative-Copula* is the common order in the majority of other varieties of Anatolian Arabic besides Neo-Aramaic. One can contrast this with the dialects of Arabic that did not develop an analytical copula, such as (55).

- (53) Northern Kurdish (p.c. with Ergin Öpentin)

ev q̥i-qas=e
DEM what-value=COP.3SG
'How much is this?'

- (54) CNA Turoyo

hano məq-qa=yo
DEM.MSG what-value=COP.3MSG
'How much is this?'

- (55) *Qəltu*-Arabic Āzəx (Jastrow 1978: 135)

hāza b-áš-qad=u
DEM.MSG at-what-value=COP.3MSG
'How much is this?'

Paul M. Noorlander

- (56) *Gələt*-Arabic Khawetna (Talay 1999: 54)

b-əš-qadd hāða
at-what-value DEM.MSG
'How much is this?'

The further extension of this post-predicate position to other contexts and its increasing obligatorisation was presumably not only due to contact with clause-final copula languages such as Iranian *par excellence*, but also embedded in a cluster of changes in the verbal system, and this applies especially to Aramaic. See Noorlander & Stilo (2015) for further parallel developments in the verbal system of Eastern Neo-Aramaic, which is completely derived from original verbal adjectives and enclitic pronouns that used to be mobile clitics, for example in Syriac (e.g. Noorlander 2018: 15), and that of other languages in the area, such as Northern Kurdish, where present tense endings, e.g. *-im* as in *diçim* 'I go,' are identical to the original verb 'to be,' e.g. *=im* as in *li vir=im* 'I am here'.

Moreover, Adjective-Noun order would be highly marked in all relevant languages. Nevertheless, the Turkish loan adjective *dēri* 'another, last, next,' i.e. Turkish *diğeri* 'the other,' has been transferred with its corresponding Adjective-Noun order, e.g.

- (57) *Qəltu*-Arabic Āzəx (Wittrich 2001: 121)

dēri yawm
next day.MSG
'the next day'

- (58) CNA Turoyo

deri yawmo
next day.MSG
'the next day'

In Ka'biye *Qəltu*-Arabic, Adjective-Noun order sporadically occurs under the influence of Turkish (Jastrow 2022: 7–8), cf. (59) and a tentative Turkish rendering in (60). Further research is necessary to investigate its frequency and distribution.

- (59) *Qəltu*-Arabic Ka'biye (Jastrow 2022: VI:§45)

ktir kwayyəs faqad ʂūf y-ʂīr-∅
very nice INDEF wool.MSG S.3M-become-S.SG
'It will become some very nice wool.'

16 Arabic and Aramaic in eastern Anatolia

- (60) Turkish

çok güzel *bir* yün ol-acak-∅
 very nice INDEF wool become-FUT-S.3SG
 'It will become some very nice wool.'

Similarly, there are numerous cases of pre-predicate final states of change-of-state verbs (§2.2.3) as shown in example (59) in peripheral dialects like Ka‘biye Arabic due to Turkish influence. Thus, the rate of post-predicate final states is 60% (15/25) in Ka‘biye (*qəltu*-Arabic) and 67% (24/36) in Mlahso (CNA) against 90% (18/20) in C. Barwar (NENA) and 100% (20/20) in Turoyo (CNA).

Finally, in both Aramaic and Arabic, the standard of comparison, introduced with the source preposition *mən*- ‘from,’ seems to *precede* the adjective in Diyarbakir, as it does in local Turkish and Northern Kurdish varieties, which is consistent with the higher rate of OV order. The same also holds for Sason Arabic (Akkuş 2020: 144–145).

- (61)
- Qəltu*
- Arabic Ka‘biye (Jastrow 2022: IX:§19)

mən sáyn-na=ste ɻáxrab=we
 from language-our=ADD worse=COP.3MSG
 'It is even worse than our language.'

- (62) CNA Mlahso (Jastrow 1994: 112.§48)

hay-ó taw *m-á=tay-e-zi* tə
 become.PERF-S.3SFG Muslim.MSG from-DEF.PL.Muslim-PL=ADD more
ħarb-ó
 bad-MSG
 'She became Muslim, worse than the Muslims themselves.'

The opposite Adjective-Standard order predominates elsewhere, cf. (63–64) (and see Waltisberg 2016: 50–51, 117–118 for more examples), even in the NENA dialect of Bohtan (Borb-Ruma) where OV order is the most common, as shown in (65).

- (63)
- Qəltu*
- Arabic Mardin (Jastrow 1981: I2:§32)

famm-i agbar *mən abū-y* kān
 uncle.MSG-my bigger from father.MSG-my COP.PST.3MSG
 'My uncle was older than my father.'

Paul M. Noorlander

- (64) CNA Midən, Turoyo (Ritter 1967: 83:§39)
 $ono\;rab-\emptyset\;mín-ux=no$
 I big-CMPR from-2MSG=COP.1SG
 'I am older than you.'
- (65) NENA C. Bohtan (Fox 2009: 95)
 $ay\;brotə\;to\;qaryan-ita=la\;mənn-ət\;d-aw$
 DEM.FSG girl.SG more short-FSG=COP.3FSG from-CSTR GEN-DEM.MSG
 $abra$
 boy.MSG
 'This girl is shorter than that boy.'

3.2 Levant-Anatolia continuum

Several typological features indicate diffusion into eastern Anatolia from the Levant and Mesopotamia, resulting in many parallels between Aramaic and Arabic (see e.g. Weninger 2012 and Procházka 2020), and to some extent also Iranian, to name a few: First of all, differential object indexing (also known as clitic doubling) possibly combined with the preposition *l-* is a feature shared by Aramaic (e.g. Coghill 2014; Noorlander 2021: 290–294, 307–308, 350–370) and Arabic (e.g. Lameen Souag 2017); this, however, correlates with pre-posed objects especially in Anatolian *qəltu*-Arabic and Turoyo. The correlation between differential object indexing and word order requires further investigation, but see also §3.1.1 on definiteness, of which indexing may be an epiphenomenon.

Verb-Goal and Become-Complement order is shared by Semitic and Kurdish more widely (Haig 2015, 2022), more specifically Verb-Addressee placement converges with Bahdini, i.e. southeastern varieties of Northern Kurdish (Haig 2022: 354–359).

In nominal syntax, Arabic adjectives such as *ʔawwəl* 'first', *θəni* 'next, another', *gēr* 'other', and *flān* 'so-and-so' are borrowed with their respective Adjective-Noun order in Neo-Aramaic (see also Waltisberg 2016: 40–41), e.g. NENA Hertevin (Jastrow 1988) *plan dokta* 'such-and-such a place', NENA Bohtan (Fox 2009) *fəllan mota* 'such-and-such a village', and oftentimes also in Kurdish, e.g. *filan kes* 'such-and-such a person'. Noun-Numeral order for the numeral 'one', as illustrated in (4–5), as well as the development of a prefixal definite article have presumably been reinforced in Turoyo through contact with Arabic. In Mlahso, when only the genitive noun is marked for definiteness, this is presumably based on an Arabic model, cf. (11) and (13) in §2.1.

16 Arabic and Aramaic in eastern Anatolia

Semitic and Iranian converge in Noun-Attribute order. Here, the attachment of proclitic determiners to the following adjective in Aramaic (see Waltisberg 2016 for more examples), as shown in (68) and (69), converges not only with the *ezafe* in Northern Kurdish, e.g. (66), but also with the definite article in Arabic dialects, e.g. (67).

- (66) Northern Kurdish

biray=ê min=ê mezin
brother=EZ.MSG my=EZ.MSG big
'my elder brother'

- (67) *Qəltu*-Arabic Ka'bkiye (Jastrow 2022: III:§3)

axū-y lə-gbīr-∅=ste
brother.of.MSG-my DEF-big-MSG=ADD
'my elder brother'

- (68) CNA Midyat (Ritter 1967: 11:§36)

ʔaħun-i ú=rab-o
brother.MSG-my DEF.MSG-big-MSG
'my eldest brother'

- (69) NENA Upper Barwar (Talay 2009: 516.§2)

xon-i ʔo=gor-a
brother.MSG-my DEM.MSG-big-MSG
'my eldest brother'

The effects of convergence with both Arabic and Iranian can be further illustrated by the divergent usage patterns of post-predicate person markers. This pronominal series, often cliticized to the immediately preceding predicate, occurs across Arabic and Aramaic dialects to indicate both the present affirmative copula and the pronominal theme-object in ditransitive constructions (e.g. Retsö 1987, Birnstiel 2022). The first is partly modelled on the clause-final copula in the neighbouring Iranian languages. The second, however, suggests close interaction with the Arabic-speaking Levant and Arabia. While the post-predicate copula is a feature common to all languages of the West Asian transition zone (e.g. Haig 2017: 404–405), there are notable differences, such as the pre-predicate placement of negated copulas and relative copulas (see §2.3.1) in the majority of both Aramaic and Arabic dialects. In Syriac, however, the enclitic copula and the bound pronominal objects of the third person plural were also identical in

Paul M. Noorlander

form, cf. *šappirin=ennun* ‘they are beautiful’ and *qtal=ennun* ‘he killed them’, derived from *hennun* ‘they’. This copula-object syncretism, compared in Table 6, applies especially to the *Qəltu*-Arabic and Neo-Aramaic dialects of Mardin (Grigore (2007)) and Siirt provinces in Turkey and that of the Mosul Plain (Jastrow 1979; Khan 2002) in Iraq, but is also common in the Levant and Hejaz (Retsö 1987). The Mardini dialects in Syria have enclitic pronouns only for the third person in both the copula and the object marking function (Isaksson & Lahdo 2002). They are confined to the object marking function in Mosul *Qəltu*-Arabic (Jastrow 1979). Other *Qəltu*-Arabic dialects do not have such enclitic copulas, notably in Iraq and Syria, although they may be restricted to the negative copula, e.g. *Gələt*-Arabic *Khawetna ma-hi* ‘she is not’ (Talay 1999: 54–55).

Table 6: Comparison of copula placement in *qəltu*-Arabic and Central Neo-Aramaic

| Syrian Arabic | | <i>Qəltu</i> -Arabic | |
|-----------------------|----------------------|----------------------|------------------------|
| Cilician | Mosul | Mardin | |
| <i>faṭā-ni hinni</i> | <i>faṭā-nī=yəm</i> | <i>faṭā-nī=nne</i> | ‘he gave them to me’ |
| <i>hinni fəl-bayt</i> | <i>hiyəm fəl-bət</i> | <i>fəl-báyt=ənne</i> | ‘they are at home’ |
| NENA | | CNA | |
| Qaraqosh | | Turoyo | |
| <i>kewi-li=na</i> | | <i>kobí-li=ne</i> | ‘they give them to me’ |
| <i>tawe=na</i> | | <i>ṭawwe=ne</i> | ‘they are good’ |

Pre-predicate deictic copulas are a shared feature of Arabic, Aramaic and southeastern Northern Kurdish (Bahdini), compared in Table 7. Deictic copulas characterized by an initial deictic morpheme *k-* occur across *Qəltu*-Arabic dialects, Turoyo and the NENA dialects of the Mosul Plain, denoting a situation in the immediately observable present or the imminent future. The Bahdini future particle *=ē*, derived from *dē* and *wē* – presumably eroded forms of the 3sg. present form of ‘want’ – may also have been influenced by preverbal TAM markers in the same region. At the same time, the morpheme attaches to the subject pronoun and effectively inflects it for TAM similarly to the pre-predicate *ezafe*-based copula and similarly to the pre-predicate deictic copulas in Arabic and Aramaic. For a discussion of the situation in Bahdini Kurdish, see Chyet (1995: 247–249) and Haig (2017: 405–407). Since NENA dialects in general have a plethora of deictic copulas, it is conceivable that these deictic copulas spread from Aramaic into *Qəltu*-Arabic – unless they are a parallel development – and possibly from Semitic even also into Bahdini varieties of Northern Kurdish.

16 Arabic and Aramaic in eastern Anatolia

Table 7: Comparison of deictic copula and Auxiliary-Verb order

| | Bəhzani Qəltu-Arabic (Jastrow 1978: 139) | Qaraqosh NENA | Midyat CNA | Bahdini Kurdish |
|------------------|---|--------------------------------|--------------------------------|--|
| Copula-Predicate | <i>kū fəl-bayt</i> 'He is at home.' | <i>kile b-beθa</i> | <i>kəlē bū=bayto</i> | <i>ew=ê li malê</i> |
| Auxiliary-Verb | <i>kū Ø-yakəl</i> 'He is eating/he is about to eat.' (Arabic/Aramaic.) | <i>kile k-axəl^a</i> | <i>kəlē k-oxəl^a</i> | <i>ew=ê bi-xwe^b</i> 'He will eat.' (Kurdish) |

^aThe verbal forms in Neo-Aramaic are in the realis/indicative, lit. 'Here he is, he eats', as opposed to the unrealis/subjunctive in Arabic and Kurdish.

^bThe future particle =ê in Bahdini Kurdish does not inflect or number/gender in contradistinction to the *ezafe* copula =ê that does inflect for number/gender.

Paul M. Noorlander

Abbreviations

| | | | |
|-------|------------------------|-------|---|
| A | agent | PP | post-predicate |
| ADD | additive | PST | past |
| CMPR | comparative | R | recipient |
| COP | copula | REL | relative |
| CSTR | construct state | S | subject (intransitive) |
| DEF | definite article | SBJV | subjunctive |
| DEIC | deictic | SG | singular |
| DEM | demonstrative | T | theme |
| DIR | direct case | CNA | Central Neo-Aramaic |
| DRCT | directional | NENA | Northeastern Neo-Aramaic |
| EXIST | existential | V | verb |
| EZ | ezafe | Loc | locative |
| F | feminine | Lev. | Levantine |
| FUT | future | Abl | ablative |
| GEN | genitive | Ben | beneficiary |
| IND | indicative | Addr | Addressee |
| M | masculine | Instr | Instrumental |
| n | total number of tokens | WOWA | = Haig et al. (2022) |
| NEG | negator | ZAL | Zeitschrift für Arabische Linguistik |
| O | object | 1 | first person |
| OBL | oblique case | 2 | second person |
| PERF | perfect | 3 | third person |
| PFV | perfective | | |
| PL | plural | | |

Acknowledgements

This research was made possible by the generous contribution of the European Research Council. I am grateful to Nikita Kuzin for giving me access to several texts from the Turoyo corpus and to Masoud Mohammadirad and especially Geoffrey Haig for their helpful comments.

References

Abu-Haidar, Farida. 1991. *Christian Arabic of Baghdad*. Wiesbaden: Harrassowitz.

16 *Arabic and Aramaic in eastern Anatolia*

- Akkuş, Faruk. 2017. Peripheral Arabic dialects. In Elabbas Benmamoun & Reem Bassiouney (eds.), *The Routledge handbook of Arabic linguistics*. London/New York: Routledge. DOI: [10.4324/9781315147062-26](https://doi.org/10.4324/9781315147062-26).
- Akkuş, Faruk. 2020. Anatolian Arabic. In Christopher Lucas & Stephano Manfredi (eds.), *Arabic and contact-induced change*, 135–158. Berlin: Language Science Press.
- Arnold, Werner. 1998. *Die arabischen Dialekte Antiochiens*. Wiesbaden: Harrassowitz.
- Arnold, Werner. 2015. Die arabischen Dialekte der Christen in der Türkei. *Mediterranean Language Review* 22. 105–117.
- Bar-Moshe, Assaf. 2019. *The Arabic dialect of the Jews of Baghdad*. Wiesbaden: Harrassowitz.
- Behnstedt, Peter. 1992. Qəltu-dialekte in Ost-Syrien. *Zeitschrift für Arabische Linguistik* 24. 35–59.
- Birnstiel, Daniel. 2022. Copulas and target phrase positioning in the Arabic dialects of Kurdistan. In Hiwa Asadpour & Thomas Jügel (eds.), *Word order variation*, 197–234. Berlin: De Gruyter Mouton. DOI: [10.1515/9783110790368-010](https://doi.org/10.1515/9783110790368-010).
- Blanc, Haim. 1964. *Communal dialects in Baghdad*. Cambridge, MA: Harvard University Press.
- Camilleri, Maris, Shaimaa Elsadek & Louisa Sadler. 2014. A cross dialectal view of the Arabic dative alternation. *Acta Linguistica Hungarica* 61(1). 3–44. DOI: [10.1556/ALing.61.2014.1.1](https://doi.org/10.1556/ALing.61.2014.1.1).
- Chyet, Michael. 1995. Neo-Aramaic and Kurdish: An interdisciplinary consideration of their influence on each other. *Israel Oriental Studies* 15. 219–252.
- Coghill, Eleanor. 2014. Differential object marking in Neo-Aramaic. *Linguistics* 52(2). 335–364. DOI: [10.1515/ling-2013-0065](https://doi.org/10.1515/ling-2013-0065).
- Coghill, Eleanor. 2018. Information structure in the Neo-Aramaic dialect of Telkepe. In Evangelia Adamou, Katharina Haude & Martine Vanhove (eds.), *Information structure in Lesser-described languages*, 293–327. Amsterdam: Benjamins.
- Coghill, Eleanor. 2020. Neo-Aramaic. In Christopher Lucas & Stephano Manfredi (eds.), *Arabic and contact-induced change*, 371–402. Berlin: Language Science Press.
- Cohen, Eran. 2012. *The syntax of Neo-Aramaic: The Jewish dialect of Zakho*. Piscataway, NJ: Gorgias Press. DOI: [10.31826/9781463234737](https://doi.org/10.31826/9781463234737).
- Dahlgren, Sven-Olaf. 1998. *Word order in Arabic*. Göteborg: Acta Universitatis Gothoburgensis.

Paul M. Noorlander

- Donabedian, Anaïd & Ioanna Sitaridou. 2021. Anatolia. In Evangelia Adamou & Yaron Matras (eds.), *The Routledge handbook of language contact*, 404–433. Milton Park/Abingdon/Oxon: Routledge.
- El Zarka, Dina & Sandra Ziagos. 2020. The beginnings of word order change in the Arabic dialects of Southern Iran in contact with Persian: A preliminary study of data from four villages in Bushehr and Hormozgan. *Iranian Studies* 53(3–4). 465–488. DOI: [10.1080/00210862.2019.1690433](https://doi.org/10.1080/00210862.2019.1690433).
- Fassberg, Steven E. 2010. *The Jewish Neo-Aramaic dialect of Čalla*, vol. 54. Leiden: Brill. DOI: [10.31826/9781463211615-005](https://doi.org/10.31826/9781463211615-005).
- Fink, Andreas. 2020. *Der arabische Dialekt von Hasankeyf am Tigris (Osttürkei) (Semitica Viva)*. Wiesbaden: Harrassowitz. DOI: [10.2307/j.ctv11sn58j](https://doi.org/10.2307/j.ctv11sn58j).
- Fox, Samuel Ethan. 2009. *The Neo-Aramaic dialect of Bohtan*. Piscataway, NJ: Gorgias Press. DOI: [10.31826/9781463217327](https://doi.org/10.31826/9781463217327).
- Grigore, George. 2007. *L'arabe parlé à Mardin: Monographie d'un parler arabe "périphérique"*. Bucharest: Editura Universității din București.
- Häberl, Charles G. 2011. Neo-Mandaic. In Stefan Weninger, Geoffrey Khan, Michael P. Streck & Janet C. E. Watson (eds.), *The Semitic languages*, 725–737. Berlin: De Gruyter. DOI: [10.1515/9783110251586.725](https://doi.org/10.1515/9783110251586.725).
- Haig, Geoffrey. 2001. Linguistic diffusion in present-day East Anatolia: From top to bottom. In A. Aikhenvald & R.M.W. Dixon (eds.), *Areal diffusion and genetic inheritance: Problems in comparative linguistics*, 195–224. Oxford: Oxford University Press.
- Haig, Geoffrey. 2014. East Anatolia as a linguistic area? Conceptual and empirical issues. In Lale Behzadi, Patrick Franke, Geoffrey Haig, Christoph Herzog, Birgitt Hoffmann, Lorenz Korn & Susanne Talabardon (eds.), *Bamberger orientstudien*, vol. 1, 13–35. Bamberg: University of Bamberg Press. file:///C:/Users/ba4as01/Downloads/Bost1HerzogopusseA2.pdf.
- Haig, Geoffrey. 2015. Verb-goal (VG) word order in Kurdish and Neo-Aramaic: Typological and areal considerations. In Geoffrey Khan & Lidia Napiorkowska (eds.), *Neo-Aramaic and its linguistic context*, 407–425. Piscataway, NJ: Gorgias Press.
- Haig, Geoffrey. 2017. Western Asia: East Anatolia as a transition zone. In Raymond Hickey (ed.), *The Cambridge handbook of areal linguistics*, 396–423. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Haig, Geoffrey. 2022. Post-predicate constituents in Kurdish. In Yaron Matras, Geoffrey Haig & Ergin Öpengin (eds.), *Structural and typological variation in the dialects of Kurdish*, 335–377. Cham: Springer International Publishing. DOI: [10.1007/978-3-030-78837-7_8](https://doi.org/10.1007/978-3-030-78837-7_8).

16 Arabic and Aramaic in eastern Anatolia

- Haig, Geoffrey & Geoffrey Khan. 2019. *The languages and linguistics of Western Asia: An areal perspective*. Berlin: De Gruyter Mouton.
- Haig, Geoffrey, Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand, Donald Stilo, Laurentia Schreiber & Nils N. Schiborr. 2024. Post-predicate elements in the Western Asian Transition Zone: Data, theory, and methods. In Geoffrey Haig, Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand, Donald Stilo, Laurentia Schreiber & Nils N. Schiborr (eds.), *Post-predicate elements in the Western Asian Transition Zone: A corpus-based approach to areal typology*, 1–49. Berlin: Language Science Press.
- Haig, Geoffrey, Donald Stilo, Mahîr C. Doğan & Nils N. Schiborr. 2022. *WOWA – Word Order in Western Asia: A spoken-language-based corpus for investigating areal effects in word order variation*. Bamberg. multicast.aspra.uni-bamberg.de/resources/wowa/.
- Heine, Bernd. 2008. Contact-induced word order change without word order change. In Peter Siemund & Noemi Kintana (eds.), *Language contact and contact languages*, 33–60. Amsterdam: Benjamins. DOI: [10.1075/hsm.7.04hei](https://doi.org/10.1075/hsm.7.04hei).
- Isaksson, Bo & Ablahad Lahdo. 2002. Three border towns between Turkey and Syria: ‘Āmûda, Dərbəssiyye and Rās əl-‘Ayn. In Werner Arnold & Harmut Bobzin (eds.), „Sprich doch mit deinen Knechten aramäisch, wir verstehen es!“ 60 Beiträge zur Semistik Festschrift für Otto Jastrow zum 60. Geburtstag, 311–335. Wiesbaden: Harrassowitz.
- Jastrow, Otto. 1978. *Die mesopotamisch-arabischen qəltu-Dialekte. Vol. 1: Phonologie und Morphologie*. Wiesbaden: Steiner.
- Jastrow, Otto. 1979. Zur arabischen Mundart von Mossul. *ZAL* 2. 76–99.
- Jastrow, Otto. 1981. *Die mesopotamisch-arabischen qəltu-Dialekte. Vol. 2: Volkskundliche Texte in elf Dialekten*. Wiesbaden: Steiner.
- Jastrow, Otto. 1985. *Laut- und formenlehre des neuaramäischen Dialekts von Midin im Tur ‘Abdin*. Wiesbaden: Harrassowitz.
- Jastrow, Otto. 1988. *Der neuaramäische Dialekt von Hertevin (Province Siirt)*. Wiesbaden: Harrassowitz.
- Jastrow, Otto. 1990. *Der arabische Dialekt der Juden von ‘Aqra und Arbîl*. Wiesbaden: Harrassowitz.
- Jastrow, Otto. 1994. *Der neuaramäische Dialekt von Mlaħsô*. Wiesbaden: Harrassowitz.
- Jastrow, Otto. 2003. *Arabische Texte aus Kinderib*. Wiesbaden: Harrassowitz.
- Jastrow, Otto. 2004. Uzbekistan Arabic: A language created by Semitic-Iranian-Turkic linguistic convergence. In Éva Ágnes Csató, Bo Isaksson & Carina Jähni (eds.), *Linguistic convergence and areal diffusion: Case studies from Iranian, Semitic and Turkic*, 133–189. London/New York: Routledge. DOI: [10.4324/9780203327715](https://doi.org/10.4324/9780203327715).

Paul M. Noorlander

- Jastrow, Otto. 2006. Arabic dialects in Turkey: Towards a comparative typology. *Türk Dilleri Araştırmaları* 16. 153–164.
- Jastrow, Otto. 2007. Where do we stand in the research on the Anatolian qeltu dialects? *Romano-Arabic* 7. 63–69.
- Jastrow, Otto. 2022. *Der arabische Dialekt der Christen von Ka'bīye (Diyarbakir)*. Wiesbaden: Harrassowitz.
- Khan, Geoffrey. 2002. *The Neo-Aramaic dialect of Qaraqosh*. Leiden: Brill.
- Khan, Geoffrey. 2008a. *The Jewish Neo-Aramaic dialect of Urmi*. Piscataway, NJ: Gorgias Press.
- Khan, Geoffrey. 2008b. *The Neo-Aramaic dialect of Barwar*. Leiden: Brill. <http://dx.doi.org/10.1163/ej.9789004167650.i-2198>.
- Khan, Geoffrey. 2019. The Neo-Aramaic dialects of eastern Anatolia and north-western Iran. In Geoffrey Haig & Geoffrey Khan (eds.), *The languages and linguistics of Western Asia: An areal perspective*, 190–236. Berlin: De Gruyter Mouton.
- Khan, Geoffrey. 2020. Contact and change in Neo-Aramaic dialects. In Bridget Drinka (ed.), *Historical linguistics 2017: Selected papers from the 23rd international conference on historical linguistics, San Antonio, Texas, 31 July – 4 August 2017*, 387–407. Amsterdam: Benjamins.
- Lahdo, Ablahad. 2009. *The Arabic dialect of Tillo in the region of Siirt (south-eastern Turkey)*. Uppsala: Uppsala University.
- Lameen Souag. 2017. Clitic doubling and language contact in Arabic. *Zeitschrift für Arabische Linguistik* (66). 45–70. DOI: [10.13173/zeitarabling.66.0045](https://doi.org/10.13173/zeitarabling.66.0045).
- Leitner, Bettina. 2024. Khuzestani Arabic. In Geoffrey Haig, Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand, Donald Stilo, Laurentia Schreiber & Nils N. Schiborr (eds.), *Post-predicate elements in the Western Asian Transition Zone: A corpus-based approach to areal typology*, 387–404. Berlin: Language Science Press.
- Lyavdansky, Alexey K., Nikita Kuzin, Yulia Furman, Sergey Loesov, M. Kalinin, S. Koval, Eugene Barsky & Y. Kirpianovich. 2020. *Turoyo corpus*. http://neoaramaic.web-corpora.net/turoyo_corpus/search (5 July, 2022).
- Matras, Yaron. 2009. *Language Contact*. Cambridge: Cambridge University Press.
- Mohammadmirad, Masoud. 2024. Zagros region: The Kurdish-Gorani continuum. In Geoffrey Haig, Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand, Donald Stilo, Laurentia Schreiber & Nils N. Schiborr (eds.), *Post-predicate elements in the Western Asian Transition Zone: A corpus-based approach to areal typology*, 231–264. Berlin: Language Science Press.
- Molin, Dorota. 2021. *The Jewish Neo-Aramaic dialect of Dohok: A comparative grammar*. Cambridge: University of Cambridge. (Doctoral dissertation).

16 *Arabic and Aramaic in eastern Anatolia*

- Molin, Dorota. 2022. NE Neo-Aramaic (Jewish Dohok). In Geoffrey Haig, Donald Stilo, Mahîr C. Doğan & Nils N. Schiborr (eds.), *WOWA – Word Order in Western Asia: A spoken-language-based corpus for investigating areal effects in word order variation*. Bamberg: University of Bamberg. multicast.aspra.uni-bamberg.de/resources/wowa (5 July, 2023).
- Molin, Dorota. 2024. *The Neo-Aramaic dialect of the Jews of Dohok: A comparative-typological grammar*. Leiden: Brill.
- Nakano, Aki'o. 1973. *Conversational texts in Eastern Neo-Aramaic (Gzira dialect)*. Tokyo: Institute for the Study of Languages, Cultures of Asia & Africa.
- Noorlander, Paul M. 2014. Diversity in convergence: Kurdish and Aramaic variation entangled. *Kurdish Studies* 2(2). 201–224.
- Noorlander, Paul M. 2018. *Alignment in Eastern Neo-Aramaic languages from a typological perspective*. Leiden: Leiden University. (Doctoral dissertation).
- Noorlander, Paul M. 2021. *Ergativity and other alignment types in Neo-Aramaic: Investigating morphosyntactic microvariation*. Leiden: Brill.
- Noorlander, Paul M. 2022a. Arabic (Christian, Ka'biye). In Geoffrey Haig, Donald Stilo, Mahîr C. Doğan & Nils N. Schiborr (eds.), *WOWA – Word Order in Western Asia: A spoken-language-based corpus for investigating areal effects in word order variation*. Bamberg: University of Bamberg. multicast.aspra.uni-bamberg.de/resources/wowa/.
- Noorlander, Paul M. 2022b. Arabic (Jewish, Baghdad). In Geoffrey Haig, Donald Stilo, Mahîr C. Doğan & Nils N. Schiborr (eds.), *WOWA – Word Order in Western Asia: A spoken-language-based corpus for investigating areal effects in word order variation*. Bamberg: University of Bamberg. multicast.aspra.uni-bamberg.de/resources/wowa/.
- Noorlander, Paul M. 2022c. Central Neo-Aramaic (Mlahso). In Geoffrey Haig, Donald Stilo, Mahîr C. Doğan & Nils N. Schiborr (eds.), *WOWA – Word Order in Western Asia: A spoken-language-based corpus for investigating areal effects in word order variation*. Bamberg: University of Bamberg. multicast.aspra.uni-bamberg.de/resources/wowa/.
- Noorlander, Paul M. 2022d. Central Neo-Aramaic (Turoyo, Midyat). In Geoffrey Haig, Donald Stilo, Mahîr C. Doğan & Nils N. Schiborr (eds.), *WOWA – Word Order in Western Asia: A spoken-language-based corpus for investigating areal effects in word order variation*. Bamberg: University of Bamberg. multicast.aspra.uni-bamberg.de/resources/wowa/.
- Noorlander, Paul M. 2023. Object verb orderings in Arabic dialects of Anatolia: A quantitative approach to contact-induced word order change. *Zeitschrift für arabische Linguistik* 77. 32–52. DOI: <https://doi.org/10.13173/ZAL.77.2.032>.

Paul M. Noorlander

- Noorlander, Paul M. 2024. Neo-Aramaic in Iran and northeastern Iraq. In Geofrey Haig, Mohammad Rasekh-Mahand, Donald Stilo, Laurentia Schreiber & Nils N. Schiborr (eds.), *Post-predicate elements in the Western Asian Transition Zone: A corpus-based approach to areal typology*, 405–441. Berlin: Language Science Press.
- Noorlander, Paul M. & Dorota Molin. 2022. Word order typology in North Eastern-Neo-Aramaic: Towards a corpus-based approach. In Hiwa Asadpour & Thomas Jügel (eds.), *Word order variation Semitic, Turkic and Indo-European languages in contact*, 235–258. Berlin: De Gruyter Mouton.
- Noorlander, Paul M. & Donald Stilo. 2015. On the convergence of verbal systems of Aramaic and its neighbours. Part I: Present-based paradigms. In Geoffrey Khan & Lidia Napiorkowska (eds.), *Neo-Aramaic in its linguistic context*, 426–452. Piscataway, NJ: Gorgias Press. DOI: <https://doi.org/10.31826/9781463236489-027>.
- Procházka, Stephan. 2002. *Die arabischen Dialekte der Çukurova (Südtürkei)*. Wiesbaden: Harrassowitz.
- Procházka, Stephan. 2003. The Bedouin Arabic dialects of Urfa. In Ignacio Fernando & Sánchez Sandoval. Juan José (eds.), *Association internationale de dialectologie Arabe (AIDA) 5th conference proceedings Cádiz, September 2002*, 75–88.
- Procházka, Stephan. 2019. The Arabic dialects of Eastern Anatolia. In Geofrey Haig & Geoffrey Khan (eds.), *The languages and linguistics of Western Asia: An areal perspective*, 159–189. Berlin: De Gruyter Mouton. DOI: [10.1515/9783110421682-005](https://doi.org/10.1515/9783110421682-005).
- Procházka, Stephan. 2020. Arabic in Iraq, Syria, and southern Turkey. In Christopher Lucas & Stefano Manfredi (eds.), *Arabic and contact-induced change*, 83–114. Berlin: Language Science Press.
- Ratcliffe, Robert R. 2005. Bukhara Arabic: A metatypized dialect of Arabic in Central Asia. In Éva Csató, Bo Isaksson & Carina Jahani (eds.), *Linguistic convergence and areal diffusion. Case studies from Iranian, Semitic and Turkic*, 141–160. Routledge Curzon. DOI: [10.4324/9780203327715](https://doi.org/10.4324/9780203327715).
- Retsö, Jan. 1987. Copula and double pronominal objects in some Semitic languages. *Zeitschrift der Deutschen Morgenländischen Gesellschaft* 137. 219–245.
- Ritter, Helmut. 1967. *Türōyō: Die Volksprache der syrischen Christen des Tür 'Abdīn A. Texte I–III*. Beirut: Steiner.
- Seeger, U. 2002. Zwei Texte im Dialekt der Araber von Chorasan. In Werner Arnold & Hartmut Bobzin (eds.), „*Sprich doch mit deinen Knechten aramäisch, wir verstehen es!*“ 60 Beiträge zur Semitistik Festschrift für Otto Jastrow zum 60. Geburtstag, 629–646. Wiesbaden: Harrassowitz.

16 Arabic and Aramaic in eastern Anatolia

- Silva-Corvalán, Carmen. 1994. *Language contact and change: Spanish in Los Angeles*. Oxford: Clarendon.
- Silva-Corvalán, Carmen. 2008. The limits of convergence in language contact. *Journal of Language Contact* 2(1). 213–224.
- Sinha, Jasmin. 2000. *Der neuostaramäische Dialekt von Bēşpən*. Wiesbaden: Harrassowitz.
- Stilo, Donald. 2022. NE Neo-Aramaic (Christian) Barwar. In Geoffrey Haig, Donald Stilo, Mahîr C. Doğan & Nils N. Schiborr (eds.), *WOWA – Word Order in Western Asia: A spoken-language-based corpus for investigating areal effects in word order variation*. Bamberg: Bemberg University. multicast.aspra.uni-bamberg.de/resources/wowa/.
- Talay, Shabo. 1999. *Der arabische Dialekt der Khawētna. Vol. 1: Grammatik*. Wiesbaden: Harrassowitz.
- Talay, Shabo. 2002. Der arabische Dialekt von Hasköy (Dēr Khāṣ), Ostanatolien, II: Texte und Glossar. *ZAL* 41. 46–86.
- Talay, Shabo. 2007. The influence of Turkish, Kurdish and other neighbouring languages on Anatolian Arabic. *Romano-Arabica* 7. 179–189.
- Talay, Shabo. 2008. *Die neuaramäischen Dialekte der Khabur-Assyrer in Nordostsyrien: Einführung, Phonologie und Morphologie*. Wiesbaden: Harrassowitz.
- Talay, Shabo. 2009. *Neuaramäische Texte in den Dialekten der Khabur-Assyrer in Nordostsyrien*. Wiesbaden: Harrassowitz.
- Talay, Shabo. 2012. Arabic dialects of mesopotamia. In Stefan Weninger, Geoffrey Khan, Michael P. Streck & Janet C. E. Watson (eds.), *The Semitic languages: An international handbook*, 909–920. Berlin: De Gruyter. DOI: [10.1515/9783110251586.909](https://doi.org/10.1515/9783110251586.909).
- Talay, Shabo. 2014. The Mesopotamian-Levantine dialect continuum. In Tal Davidovich, Ablahad Lahdo & Torkel Lindquist (eds.), *From Tur Abdin to Hadramawt: Semitic studies festschrift in honour of Bo Isaksson on the occasion of his retirement*, 179–188. Wiesbaden: Harrassowitz. DOI: [10.2307/j.ctvc2rm3d.17](https://doi.org/10.2307/j.ctvc2rm3d.17).
- Tsereteli, Konstantin. 1963. Образцы современной ассирийской речи (вавилонские тексты). In G.Sh. Sharbatov (ed.), *Семитские языки: сборник статей I*, 202–218. Moskva: Nauka.
- Versteegh, Kees. 1984. Word order in Uzbekistan Arabic and universal grammar. *Orientalia Suecana* 33. 443–453.
- Waltisberg, Michael. 2016. *Syntax des Turoyo*. Wiesbaden: Harrassowitz. DOI: [10.2307/j.ctv11qdtv](https://doi.org/10.2307/j.ctv11qdtv).
- Weninger, Stefan. 2012. Aramaic-Arabic language contact. In Stefan Weninger, Geoffrey Khan, Michael P. Streck & Janet C. E. Watson (eds.), *The Semitic lan-*

Paul M. Noorlander

- guages: An international handbook*, 747–755. Berlin: De Gruyter. DOI: [10.1515/9783110251586.747](https://doi.org/10.1515/9783110251586.747).
- Wittich, Michaela. 2001. *Der arabische Dialekt von Azəx*. Wiesbaden: Harrassowitz.

Name index

- Abolhasanizadeh, Vahideh, 93, 100
Abu-Haidar, Farida, 461
Adibifar, Shirin, 218
Akkuş, Faruk, 462, 469, 475, 479, 484, 490
Alawi, Bozorg, 409, 415
Alexiadou, Artemis, 336
Anonby, Christina van der Wal, 12, 131
Anonby, Erik, 171, 172
Apridonidze, Šukia, 278, 279
Ardali, Mortaza Taheri, 93, 100
Arkadiev, Peter M., 300, 302, 303, 318, 320
Arkhangelskiy, Timofey, 300
Arnold, Jennifer E., 232, 233
Arnold, Werner, 461, 463
Aronson, Howard, 276
Arora, Aryaman, 172
Asadpour, Hiwa, 8, 12, 14, 53, 55, 139, 142, 203, 243
Asatiani, Rusudan, 277
Ashkhamaf, Daud A., 300, 303, 314
Askar, Kawther N., 435
Asztalos, Erika, 292
Axenov, Serge, 117, 118, 120, 124, 125, 127
Backus, Ad, 53
Badikyan, Khachik, 365, 367
Bailey, Denise, 241, 242, 246, 249
Bar-Moshe, Assaf, 46, 461, 462, 480
Baranzehi, Adam Nader, 120
Barbera, Gerardo, 150
Barjasteh Delforooz, Behrooz, 118, 120, 170
Bates, Douglas, 61
Bazhukov, M. O., 292
Bağrıaçık, Metin, 7–9, 328, 330, 331
Behaghel, Otto, 232, 339
Behnstedt, Peter, 461
Belyaev, Oleg, 85, 87, 88, 289, 291, 292
Benedictsen, Åge Meyer, 265
Berez-Kroeker, Andrea L, 2
Bickel, Balthasar, 5
Billings, Stephanie Kay, 292, 318
Birnstiel, Daniel, 463, 471, 474, 492
Blanc, Haim, 401, 461, 462
Boeder, Winfried, 83, 84, 104, 277
Boersma, Paul, 91
Bogomolova, Natalia, 287
Borise, Lena, 87, 88, 91, 92, 97, 104
Boyajian-Sureniants, Vahe, 150
Bozsahin, Cem, 100
Brendemoen, Bernt, 341, 351
Brustad, Kristen, 407, 409, 412–414
Buddruss, Georg, 120
Bugenhagen, Robert D., 289–291
Camilleri, Maris, 471
Campbell, Lyle, 5
Chafe, Wallace, 16, 58, 278
Chang, Franklin, 27, 232

Name index

- Cheng, Lisa Lai-Shen, 107
Chirikba, Viacheslav A., 319, 320
Christensen, Arthur, 265
Chyet, Michael, 493
Coghill, Eleanor, 422, 464, 471, 480, 491
Cohen, Eran, 422, 425, 464, 474
Colarusso, John, 318, 320
Comrie, Bernard, 11, 87, 88
Craevschi, Alexandru, 31, 46, 352, 462, 480
Creissels, Denis, 290
Croft, William, 68
Cruse, D. Alan, 68
Csató, Éva Ágnes, 53
Dabir Moghaddam, Mohammad, 11, 88
Dahl, Eystein, 169
Dahlgren, Sven-Olaf, 460, 463, 466, 469
Dawkins, Richard M., 327, 328, 350
De Morgan, Jacques, 241
Deffner, Michael, 328
Delforooz, Behrooz Barjasteh, 87
Der-Houssikian, Haig, 367
Dillard, J. L., 216
Dogan, Mahîr, 16, 46, 72, 80
Dolatian, Hossep, 96
Donabedian, Anaïd, 479
Donabedian-Demopoulos, Anaïd, 87, 100, 104, 373, 390
Downing, Laura J., 107
Doğruöz, A. Seza, 53
Drettas, Georges, 328, 330, 332, 345
Dryer, Matthew S., 3, 5, 6, 8, 185, 189, 247, 261, 318, 330, 367, 422, 434, 438, 451
Du Bois, John, 8, 9, 371
Dum-Tragut, Jasmine, 96, 365, 367
Duval, M. Rubens, 422
El Zarka, Dina, 415, 460, 469, 480
Emâdi, Nezam, 117
Erguvanlı, Eser, 57, 58, 317
Erschler, David, 87, 88
Etebari, Ahmed, 172
Faarlund, Jan Terje, 27
Faghiri, Pegah, 11, 19, 27, 189, 217, 226, 227, 232, 367, 368
Fanselow, Gisbert, 87, 106
Fassberg, Steven E., 463, 477
Fattah, Ismaïl Kamandâr, 241, 249
Feer, Rainer, 301, 307
Fenwick, Rohan S. H., 318
Field, Henry, 402
Fink, Andreas, 472, 477
Forker, Diana, 9, 85, 87, 88, 287, 289–293, 311, 315, 321
Fox, Samuel Ethan, 460, 463, 465, 473, 477, 483–487, 491
Frascarelli, Mara, 331
Fretheim, Thorstein, 331
Friedman, Jerome H., 205, 208
Friedman, Victor A., 4
Frommer, Paul, 6, 10, 11, 25, 33, 189–198, 205, 207, 213–218, 223, 226
Futrell, Richard, 9
Féry, Caroline, 90–92, 95, 97, 100, 101, 106, 107
Gandon, Ophélie, 335, 351
Ganenkov, Dmitry, 286, 288
Garbell, Irene, 419, 420, 422, 428, 432, 433, 436, 439, 447–451
Gazsi, Dénes, 402

Name index

- Genç, Nuran Sevim, 284
 Gerdes, Kim, 9, 19
 Gershevitch, Ilya, 46, 150, 152
 Giorgi, Alessandra, 367
 Givón, Talmy, 371, 381
 Gosby, Geoffrey, 87
 Grenoble, Lenore A., 292
 Grigore, George, 493
 Gundel, Jeanette K., 331
 Gutman, Ariel, 422, 425, 444, 448, 449
 Göksel, Aslı, 88, 100, 317, 331, 339
 Gündoğdu, Songül, 53, 55, 56, 65, 67, 73, 75
 Güneş, Güliz, 95, 101
 Hadank, Karl, 265
 Haider, Hubert, 292
 Haig, Geoffrey, 2, 4–7, 9, 12–15, 20, 25, 26, 28, 31, 46, 53–56, 60, 65, 67, 73, 75, 84, 86, 117–119, 121–125, 127–135, 137–139, 141–143, 149, 158, 160, 162, 163, 180, 181, 185, 186, 189, 190, 195, 197, 202, 205, 206, 210, 213, 217, 219, 235, 242, 243, 251, 252, 255, 256, 259, 262, 266, 280, 281, 287, 288, 291, 329, 330, 370, 371, 385, 386, 422, 431, 433, 434, 442, 447, 452, 460, 479, 482, 485, 491–493, 495
 Haiman, John, 195
 Hakeem, Salam N.H., 443
 Haroutyunian, Sona, 367
 Harris, Alice C., 5, 276, 280, 284, 286
 Hasan, Aveen Mohammed, 92
 Haspelmath, Martin, 26, 431
 Hassan, Mohebbi Bahmani, 171, 172
 Hawkins, John A., 6, 189, 232, 233, 255, 262, 367
 Hayrapetyan, Sergo A., 366
 Heine, Bernd, 53, 442, 482
 Hinterhölzl, Roland, 331
 Hodgson, Katherine, 31, 131, 341, 351, 366, 367, 369, 371, 373, 381, 390, 395
 Holisky, Dee A., 276, 284–286
 Holton, David, 329
 Hopkins, Simon A., 422, 425, 428, 432
 Horrocks, Geoffrey, 330, 332
 Hosseini, Seyed Ayat, 93
 Häberl, Charles G., 419, 480
 Höhlig, Monika, 301, 310, 312–314, 316, 318
 Iefremenko, Kateryna, 46, 53, 54, 60, 61, 64–67, 70, 75, 141, 317, 351
 Ingham, Bruce, 401, 402, 412, 414
 Ipek, Canan, 100
 Isaksson, Bo, 493
 Izadi, Elham, 20, 46, 190, 195–202, 204, 205, 215, 217
 Izadifar, Raheleh, 16, 17, 46
 Jahani, Carina, 12, 116, 118, 119, 125–127, 133, 135, 136, 142, 143, 197
 Jakovlev, Nikolaj F., 300, 303, 314
 Janse, Mark, 327, 328, 331, 332, 338, 369, 394
 Jastrow, Otto, 460–468, 470–475, 477–479, 481–485, 488–494
 Jing, Yingqi, 6, 138
 Johanson, Lars, 52
 Joseph, Brian D., 4

Name index

- Jun, Sun-Ah, 91, 97, 100
Junker, Heinrich F. J., 409, 415
Jügel, Thomas, 14, 142, 163
Kahnemuyipour, Arsalan, 87, 88, 93, 367
Kaltsa, Maria, 332
Kamali, Beste, 95, 100, 101
Kapeliuk, Olga, 420
Karatsareas, Petros, 327, 336
Karimi, Simin, 87, 88, 103, 104
Kaufman, Terrence, 52, 53, 58
Kent, Roland, 142
Kerasheva, Zajnab I., 300, 303, 305, 310, 311
Kerslake, Celia, 317, 331, 339
Keskin, Cem, 53
Khalilova, Kh. M., 289
Khan, Geoffrey, 2, 15, 16, 25, 181, 241, 250, 257, 259, 265, 370, 371, 385, 419, 420, 422–428, 431–434, 436–440, 443–447, 449–451, 462–464, 474, 478–481, 493, 494
Khurshudyan, Victoria, 367, 371
Kilicaslan, Yilmaz, 87
Kimmelman, Vadim I., 302
Komen, Erwin R., 88, 288–291
Korn, Agnes, 12, 46, 115–122, 125–129, 133–136, 139, 141, 143, 149, 150, 152–156, 159, 163, 197, 202
Kornfilt, Jaklin, 57
Kozintseva, Natalia, 367
Krifka, Manfred, 312, 314
Kumakhov, Mukhadin A., 300, 303, 304, 318–320
Kural, Murat, 100, 101
Kutscher, Silvia, 284, 351
Kiral, Filiz, 447
Labov, William, 216
Lacroix, René, 46, 87, 88, 284, 286, 351
Ladd, D. Robert, 90
Lahdo, Ablahad, 477, 493
Lameen Souag, 482, 491
Lander, Yury A., 300–303, 318
Lazard, Gilbert, 11, 190, 224
Leitner, Bettina, 46, 339, 401, 402, 404–411, 413–415, 462
Letuchiy, Alexander B., 308
Levshina, Natalia, 6, 9, 10, 27, 29, 276, 292–294
Liljegren, Henrik, 174
Lyavdansky, Alexey K., 462
MacKenzie, David N, 13, 14, 244, 266, 445
Mackridge, Peter, 328
Mahjani, Behzad, 92
Mahmoudveysi, Parvin, 241, 242, 248, 249, 265
Maisak, Timur A., 286, 288, 302
Majidi, Setareh, 88
Mann, Oskar, 265
Marr, Nikolaj, 84
Masica, Colin P., 173, 174
Matras, Yaron, 54–56, 402, 434, 479
McCarus, Ernest, 249
Megerdoomian, Karine, 87, 367
Menz, Astrid, 53
Mettouchi, Amina, 10
Minassian, Martiros, 367
Mithun, Marianne, 6
Modarresi, Fereshteh, 106
Mohammadirad, Masoud, 12, 15, 46, 181, 217, 240–242, 244–261,

Name index

- 265, 266, 268, 440–442, 447, 465
- Molin, Dorota, 9, 46, 422, 427, 428, 430–433, 435, 460, 462, 464, 466, 469, 471, 477, 481
- Motlokhov, Alexander V., 309
- Mutalov, Rasul O., 290
- Mutzafi, Hezy, 420, 425, 435, 436, 439, 451
- Nadjmabadi, Shahnaz Razieh, 402
- Nakano, Aki'o, 463
- Namboodiripad, Savithry, 318
- Napiorkowska, Lidia, 425, 426, 436, 444
- Nejatian, Mohammad Hossein, 402
- Neocleous, Nicolaos, 7, 8, 328, 330–332, 335–337, 344–346, 348, 351, 355
- Nichols, Johanna, 288
- Nivre, Joakim, 9
- Noorlander, Paul M., 31, 46, 131, 266, 419–423, 427, 428, 430–433, 442, 460, 462–464, 466, 469, 471, 472, 478–481, 489, 491
- Nourzaei, Maryam, 4, 12, 31, 46, 116–118, 120–129, 132, 133, 135–138, 154, 163, 169–184, 210, 217, 433
- Oppenheim, Max Freiherr von, 402
- Panoussi, Estiphan, 419, 422, 424, 429, 430, 434, 444, 447
- Papadopoulos, Anthimos A., 328, 332
- Parcharidis, Ioannis, 328
- Paris, Catherine, 301, 302, 308, 322
- Parizadeh, Mehdi, 11, 12, 31, 46, 217, 227–230
- Patil, Umesh, 174
- Paul, Ludwig, 223, 224
- Pelevin, Mikhail, 150
- Pescuma, Valentina N., 216
- Petersen, Jan Heegård, 5
- Pierrehumbert, Janet B., 90
- Pourtskhvanidze, Zakharia, 276, 277
- Procházka, Stephan, 411, 461, 463, 479, 482, 484, 491
- Pöchtrager, Markus A., 351
- Querry, Amédée, 241
- Quirk, Randolph, 232
- R Core Team, 61
- Rafiyenko, Dariya, 330
- Rahmani, Hamed, 100
- Ralli, Angela, 327, 332
- Rasekh-Mahand, Mohammad, 2, 9, 11, 12, 20, 31, 86, 118, 142, 189, 190, 195, 205, 213, 217, 224, 226, 227, 232–234, 280, 337, 339, 370, 377
- Ratcliffe, Robert R., 482
- Retsö, Jan, 492, 493
- Revithiadou, Anthoula, 328
- Ritter, Helmut, 462, 463, 465, 466, 468, 471, 474–476, 478, 482, 484, 486, 491, 492
- Robbeets, Martine, 4
- Roberts, John R., 88
- Rogava, Georgij V., 300, 303, 305, 310, 311
- Ross, Malcolm, 266
- Rostovtsev-Popiel, Alexander, 284, 285
- Sadat-Tehrani, Nima, 85–87, 92–94, 100, 103

Name index

- Samvelian, Pollet, 19, 27, 87, 88, 189, 217, 227, 232, 366–369, 371, 377, 380, 394–396
- Savory, R.M., 402
- Schiborr, Nils N., 5, 9, 10, 25–28, 233, 287
- Schmidt, Karl H., 276, 284, 285
- Schnell, Stefan, 2, 7, 9, 10, 27, 28, 233
- Schreiber, Laurentia, 12, 16, 20, 46, 141, 327–352, 354, 355, 369, 394
- Schroeder, Christoph, 53, 58, 74
- Schröter, Stefanie, 87, 94
- Seddiqi Nejad, Bakhtiar, 150
- Seeger, U., 481
- Seifart, Frank, 10
- Selkirk, Elisabeth, 90, 107
- Serdobolskaya, Natalia V., 306, 309, 315
- Seržant, Ilja A., 330
- Setatos, Michalis, 332
- Shabibi, Maryam, 402
- Sheyhislami, Jaffer, 54
- Siewierska, Anna, 7–9
- Sigler, Michele, 373
- Silva-Corvalán, Carmen, 442, 482
- Sinha, Jasmin, 463
- Sinnemäki, Kaius, 293
- Sitaridou, Ioanna, 327, 328, 330, 332, 345, 346, 479
- Skjærvø, Prods O., 149, 150, 156
- Skopeteas, Stavros, 12, 30, 85, 87, 91, 92, 94, 97, 100, 106, 205, 277, 278
- Soltic, Jorie, 331, 332
- Song, Jae Jung, 6
- Spyropoulos, Vasilis, 328
- Stallings, Lynne M., 232, 233
- Steingass, Francis Joseph, 409
- Stilo, Donald, 2, 4, 11, 12, 16, 25, 46, 84, 128, 135, 197, 247, 277, 284, 286, 351, 365, 367–371, 377, 386, 394, 396, 423, 440, 441, 462, 489
- Stokhof, Martin, 85
- Strobl, Carolin, 211
- Stronski, Krzysztof, 169
- Suleymanov, Murad, 155
- Sumbatova, Nina R., 290
- Szeto, Pui Yiu, 2
- Szucsich, Luka, 292
- Talay, Shabo, 460–464, 472, 479, 484, 487, 489, 492, 493
- Talibov, Bukar B., 290
- Tamrazian, Armine, 367
- Taylan, Eser Erguvanlı, 87, 100, 103
- Testelets, Yakov G., 85, 87, 276, 277, 284, 287, 289, 300, 303, 309
- Thiele, Hannah, 12–14, 54, 56, 142
- Thomason, Sarah G., 52, 53, 58, 352
- Tombaidis, Dimitrios E., 328
- Tomlin, Russell, 292
- Toparlak, Tabita, 96
- Trudgill, Peter, 216
- Trumpp, Ernst, 173
- Tsereteli, Konstantin, 422, 463
- Tuite, Kevin, 276, 284, 285
- Vamling, Karina, 300, 303, 304, 318–320
- van den Berg, Helma, 287
- van Emde Boas, Evert, 329
- van Lambalgen, Michiel, 85
- Vanhove, Martine, 10
- Vaux, Bert, 351
- Versteegh, Kees, 482
- Vicenik, Chad, 91, 97, 100

Name index

- Vogt, Hans, 277
Voskanian, Vardan, 150
- Waltisberg, Michael, 463, 465, 466,
471, 474, 490–492
- Wasow, Thomas, 27, 29, 30, 232
- Weenink, David, 91
- Weninger, Stefan, 491
- Westbury, Josh, 312
- Wickham, Hadley, 61
- Wiese, Heike, 59, 68
- Wittrich, Michaela, 469, 489
- Wälchli, Bernhard, 9, 10
- Xu, Yi, 93, 100
- Yamashita, Hiroko, 27, 232
- Yao, Yao, 27, 30
- Yağmur, Kutlay, 52
- Younansardaroud, Helen, 425, 426,
429–431, 448
- Yurayong, Chingduang, 2
- Zarrinküb, Abd Al-Husain, 401
- Ziagos, Sandra, 415, 460, 469, 480
- Öpengin, Ergin, 249, 254, 259, 266
- Özge, Umut, 100
- Özsoy, A. Sumru, 88
- Öztürk, Balkız, 351
- İşsever, Selçuk, 87, 103, 104

Language index

- Achomi, see Bastaki/Lārestāni, 172
- Arabic, 171–173, 443, 459
- Central Asian, 462, 481, 482
 - Cilician, 460, 482
 - Cypriot, 462
 - Modern Standard, 402
- Arabic (Gələt)
- Baghdad (Jewish), 23, 46, 48–50
 - Iraqi, 401, 405, 412, 415
 - Khawetna, 489
 - Khuzestani, 34, 401–411, 413–415, 462
 - Southern Iranian, 415
- Arabic (Qəltu), 460–462, 464, 469, 471, 474, 476, 493
- Daragözü, 481
 - Diyarbakir, 488
 - Hasankeyf, 472
 - Hasköy, 472, 487
 - J. Baghadtı, 480
 - Ka'bıye, 464–468, 470, 472, 474, 478, 481, 482, 485, 489, 490, 492
 - Kinderib, 464, 471, 473
 - Mardin, 461, 484, 490
 - Qartmin, 475
 - Siirt, 461, 488
 - Āzəx, 466, 469, 488, 489
- Aramaic, 264
- Armenian, 53, 56, 243, 247, 440, 447
- Armenian (Classical), 366, 371, 385, 392, 396
- Armenian (Eastern), 84, 87, 88, 96, 97, 107, 365, 367, 371, 373–375, 392, 396
- Agulis, 25
 - Lori, 370
 - Stepanakert, 370
 - Yerevan, 368, 370, 394, 395
- Armenian (Western), 87, 100, 103–105
- Erzurum, 370
 - Hemshinli, 351
 - Homshetsma, 351
- Balochi, 31, 33, 149, 152, 154, 156, 163, 210, 217
- Coastal, 23, 46, 48–50, 116, 117, 119–126, 128–138, 140, 143
 - Koroshi, 23, 33, 46, 48–50, 116–118, 120–129, 132, 133, 135, 137–140, 142, 175
 - Sarawani, 120
 - Sistani, 118, 120, 125, 126
 - Turkmen, 4, 23, 46, 48–50, 116–118, 120–125, 127–129, 132–134, 137, 141, 142
- Bashkardi, 150
- North, 23, 46, 48–50, 150, 152–155, 157–159, 161–163
 - South, 23, 46, 48–50, 149, 152–154, 156–158, 160, 161, 163
 - South Dahwast, 150
 - South Garu, 150

Language index

- Bastaki, 171–173
- Caucasian (East)
 Budukh, 289, 290
 Chechen, 88, 92, 104, 288, 291, 292
 Chirag Dargwa, 276, 287–289, 292, 294
 Hinuq, 276, 287–293
 Icari Dargwa, 290
 Ingush, 288, 289, 291
 Lak, 289
 Sanzhi Dargwa, 276, 287–289, 292–294
 Tabasaran, 276, 287–289, 293, 294
- Circassian, 92, 104
 Abaza, 318–320
 Abkhaz, 318–320
 Adyghe, 34, 92, 104, 287, 291, 293, 299–316, 318–321
 Adyghe Abzakh, 316
 Adyghe Shapsug, 316
 Adyghe Temirgoy, 316
 Kabardian, 318–320
 Ubykh, 318, 321
- CNA
 Mlaħso, 463, 464, 466, 467, 469–474, 480, 483–485, 488, 490
 Turoyo, 463, 464, 466, 471, 473, 474, 480, 482, 488–491, 493, 495
 Turoyo Anħel, 465
 Turoyo Kfarze, 465
 Turoyo Midyat, 466, 468, 471, 478, 484, 485, 492
 Turoyo Midən, 464, 465, 475, 476, 486, 491
CNA Turoyo, 488
- Dravidian, 4
- English, 27, 84
- German, 8, 16, 84, 392
- Gorani, 154, 441, 445
 gawraju, 23, 48–50
 Gawraju, 239, 241, 242, 244–246, 248–255, 257, 259, 260, 262–267, 269
 Hawrami Takht, 260, 268
 Zarda, 249
- Hawrami, 250
- Hellenic, 4
 Cappadocian, 327, 328, 332, 336, 338, 346, 349
 Koine, 327
 Pharasiot, 327, 328, 330, 332
 Pharasiot Greek, 9
 Pontic Greek, 327, 328
 Romeyka, 34, 327–338, 340–350, 352, 354–356, 368, 394
- Indic
 Gujarati, 173
 Jadgali, 169, 170, 185
 Kalasha, 5
 Kholosi, 23, 33, 46, 48–50, 169–187
 Palula, 174
 Sinhalese, 173, 174
- Japanese, 5, 27
- Kartvelian, 292, 293
 Georgian, 83–85, 87, 88, 91, 92, 94, 97–100, 104–107, 275–278, 280–286, 288, 291, 293
 Georgian (Old), 84, 104, 276

- Georgian Tbilisi, 277
- Laz, 87, 88, 276, 284–286, 292, 293, 321, 351
- Laz Arhavi, 23, 46, 48–50, 351
- Megrelian, 276, 277, 284–286
- Svan, 276, 284, 285
- Khodemuni, see Bastaki/Lārestāni, 172
- Korean, 5
- Kumzari, 24
- Musandam, 23, 46, 48–50
- Kurdish, 12–15, 26, 34, 118, 135, 139, 142, 154, 162, 422, 431, 440, 442, 445, 447, 459, 465, 479, 480, 482, 483, 485, 491
- Kurdish (Central), 34, 441, 447
- Bingird, 266, 267
- Mukri, 53, 55, 241, 259, 266–268
- Sanandaj, 15, 23, 24, 46, 48–50, 241, 245–249, 251–260, 262–269
- Shaqlawa, 259
- Kurdish (Northern), 12, 13, 51–56, 58–62, 64–69, 72–75, 92, 123, 447, 479, 483, 485–492
- Akre, 13, 14
- Ankara, 23, 46, 48–50, 61, 64–67, 75, 243
- Bahdini, 493
- Elbistan, 55
- Erzurum, 13
- Gulli, 13, 14
- Karakoçan, 54
- Lachin, 23, 46, 48–50
- Midyat, 13
- Muš, 13, 23, 25, 46, 48–50
- Pertek, 56
- Siirt, 55
- Tatvan, 55, 56
- Yavuzeli, 54
- Kurdish (Southern)
- Bijar, 15, 23, 46, 48–50, 239, 241, 244–246, 248, 250–259, 261, 263–267, 269
- Lārestāni, 171–173
- Mandaic, 419
- Mandarin, 27
- Mazandarani, 4
- kordxeyl, 23, 46, 48–50
- NENA, 34, 54, 243
- C. Barwar, 16, 23, 46, 48–50, 443, 446, 460, 463, 464, 488, 490, 492
- C. Bohtan, 465, 473, 479, 484–487, 491
- C. Diyana, 426, 436, 444
- C. Diyana-Zariwaw, 425
- C. Hertevin, 465, 466, 471, 478, 484
- C. Koy Sanjaq, 435
- C. Sanandaj, 424, 427, 429, 430, 433, 434, 444, 447
- C. Sardarid, 425, 431, 448
- C. Shaqlawa, 426, 427, 429, 437, 438, 443–445
- C. Txuma, 464
- C. Urmi, 422, 424, 425, 427, 428, 435–441, 443, 446–449, 451
- Hertevin, 467
- J. Arbel, 436, 440, 445
- J. Challa, 477
- J. Dohok, 23, 46, 48–50, 460, 477
- J. Duhok, 24
- J. Koy Sanjaq, 13, 425, 435, 436, 439, 451

Language index

- J. Sanandaj, 23, 46, 48–50, 422, 424, 427, 428, 432, 433, 437, 443, 445, 449
- J. Shino, 436, 451
- J. Solduz, 432, 433, 451
- J. Sulemaniyya, 425, 436, 439
- J. Urmi, 13, 15, 34, 419, 422, 428, 431, 432, 435, 439, 443, 446–450
- J. Zakho, 422
- Neo-Aramaic, 243, 392
- Ossetic, 87, 88
- Persian, 11, 12, 31–33, 84, 85, 87, 88, 92–94, 100, 103–106, 117, 118, 121, 122, 125, 126, 140, 143, 150, 152, 154–156, 158, 163, 169, 171–174, 176, 177, 179, 180, 185, 264, 370, 377, 444, 445, 447
- Persian (colloquial), 2, 10–12, 20, 24, 33, 118, 134, 142, 163, 190–192, 194, 195, 197–205, 207, 212, 217, 218, 223, 226, 234, 415, 447
- Persian (Early Judeo), 224
- Persian (Early New), 11, 23, 33, 46, 48–50, 143, 217, 223–230, 232, 233
- Persian (Judeo), 224
- Persian (Middle), 163, 223
- Persian (New), 23, 48, 189–191, 194, 195, 197, 205, 213, 215–218, 223, 224, 226, 402, 403, 405, 407, 409, 411, 412, 415
- Persian (Old), 142, 223
- Romance, 4
- Russian, 84, 299–301, 309, 316–318, 321
- Talyshi
- Lerik, 23, 46, 48–50
- Tat
- Daykuscu, 23, 48–50
- Hazarrudi, 16, 17
- Tati
- Hazarrudi, 23, 48–50
- Turkic, 4, 8, 11–13, 243, 247, 419, 447–449, 451
- Azeri, 53, 241, 269, 419, 428, 440, 442, 447, 449
- Caucasian Urum, 84, 87, 94, 95, 97, 105, 107
- Dukhan, 5
- Qashqai, 4, 16, 23, 46, 48–50
- Sakha, 292
- Turkish, 32, 34, 52, 54–61, 68–75, 84, 87, 88, 94, 100–106, 243, 284, 286, 299–301, 309, 317, 318, 328–331, 335, 339, 340, 346–349, 351, 354–356, 459, 479–481, 483, 485, 486, 488–490
- Turkish Adana, 461
- Turkish Anatolian, 350
- Turkish Ankara, 23, 32, 46–50, 72, 75, 323, 351
- Turkish Bayat, 23, 46–50
- Turkish Erzincan, 13
- Turkish Erzurum, 16, 23, 32, 46, 48–50, 72, 74, 75
- Turkish Gagauz, 23, 46, 48–50
- Turkish Hatay, 461
- Turkish Istanbul, 351
- Turkish Lice, 463
- Turkish Mersin, 461

Language index

- Turkish Tabriz, 23, 46, 48–50
Turkish Trabzon, 331, 339, 341,
350, 351
- Vafsi
Gurchani, 23, 25, 46, 48–50
- Zazaki, 239, 243, 265
Cewlig, 23, 24, 48–50
Siwereg, 23, 48–50

Post-predicate elements in the Western Asian Transition Zone

This volume explores word-order phenomena across a phylogenetically diverse sample of languages covering a region loosely referred to as the Western Asian Transition Zone, approximately corresponding to western Iran, northern Iraq, eastern Turkey and the Caucasus. The sample includes representatives from four branches of Indo-European (Iranian, Hellenic, Armenian, Indo-Aryan) as well as Turkic, Semitic, Kartvelian, Northwest Caucasian and Northeast Caucasian. Methodologically, we apply a corpus-based approach to word-order, building on two purpose-built and fully accessible data-bases of spoken language corpora, WOWA (Word Order in Western Asia), and HamBam (Hamedan-Bamberg Corpus of Contemporary Spoken Persian). The majority of the languages are historically OV, yet exhibit high rates of post-verbal elements, and these constitute the primary focus of the volume. One of the major findings is the importance of semantic role in determining pre- versus post-verbal placement of clausal constituents: We identify a consistent bias towards post-verbal placement of spatial Goals, which is amplified by increasing areal proximity to the VO languages of the southwestern periphery of the region (Semitic). In the languages in and adjacent to the Caucasus, on the other hand, we find stronger effects of information structure in triggering post-verbal position. Along with contributions on individual languages and varieties, the volume includes an overview chapter outlining the theoretical background and the data sources, summary chapters on sub-regions, as well as contributions from an experimental and psycholinguistic perspective.